

UNIVERSITY  
OF PITTSBURGH  
LIBRARY



THIS BOOK PRESENTED BY

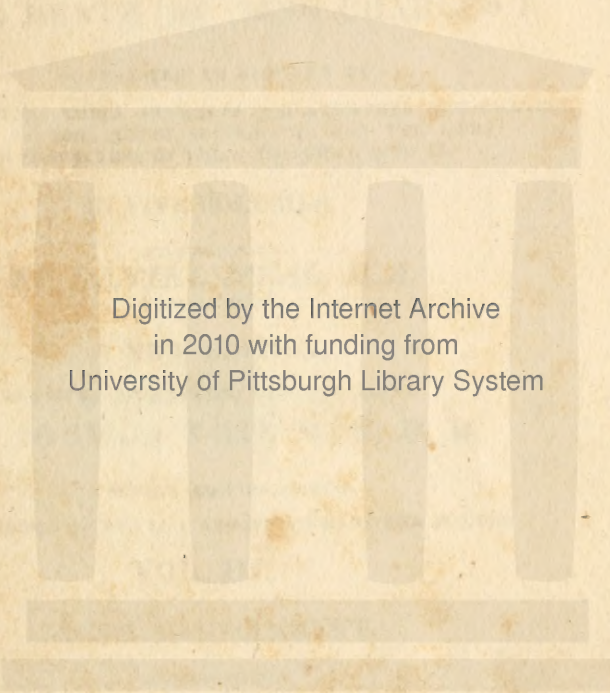
T. R. Parker











Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2010 with funding from  
University of Pittsburgh Library System

THE HISTORY

OF THE

PURITANS

AND

PROTESTANT REFORMATION

FROM THE

BATTLE OF EDGEHILL

TO THE DEATH OF KING CHARLES I.

COMPILED BY

SIR JOHN ECCLES, BART. AUTHOR OF A HISTORY OF THE  
PURITAN REFORMATION IN THE CHURCH OF ENGLAND, AND THE  
HISTORY OF THE PURITAN REFORMATION IN THE CHURCH OF  
SCOTLAND.

IN FIVE VOLUMES.

BY

A NEW EDITION

WITH A HISTORY OF THE PURITAN REFORMATION

BY JOHN ECCLES, BART.

AND

A HISTORY OF THE PURITAN REFORMATION IN THE CHURCH OF

SCOTLAND.

WITH A SUPPLEMENT.

AND A HISTORY OF THE PURITAN REFORMATION IN THE CHURCH OF

SCOTLAND.

AND

A HISTORY OF THE PURITAN REFORMATION



THE HISTORY  
OF THE  
**PURITANS,**  
OR  
*PROTESTANT NON-CONFORMISTS,*  
FROM THE  
BATTLE OF EDGE-HILL,  
TO THE DEATH OF KING CHARLES I.

CONTAINING AN ACCOUNT OF  
THEIR PRINCIPLES; THEIR ATTEMPTS FOR A FURTHER REFORMATION  
IN THE CHURCH; THEIR SUFFERINGS; AND THE LIVES  
AND CHARACTERS OF THEIR PRINCIPAL DIVINES.

IN FIVE VOLUMES.

---

---

BY DANIEL NEAL, M. A.

---

---

A NEW EDITION,  
REVISED, CORRECTED, AND ENLARGED,  
BY JOSHUA TOULMIN, D. D.

TO WHICH ARE PREFIXED,  
SOME MEMOIRS OF THE LIFE AND WRITINGS OF THE AUTHOR.

VOL. III.

WITH A SUPPLEMENT.

---

---

*But if ye bite and devour one another, take heed that ye be not consumed one of another. Gal. v. 15.*

---

---

PUBLISHED  
BY CHARLES EWER, BOSTON; AND WILLIAM B. ALLEN & CO.  
NEWBURYPORT, MS.

1817.

Wm. B. Allen & Co. Printers.

Par.

BX9333

N339

1816

v.3

cop.1



# CONTENTS OF THE THIRD VOLUME.

## CHAPTER I.

*From the Battle of Edge-Hill to the calling of the Assembly of Divines at Westminster.*

THE king pursues his march to London. Motives of it. Remarks. Encouraging prospect of the king's affairs. Ordinance of the parliament exhorting to repentance. Treaty of Oxford. The parliament's propositions. Bill against innovations: for punishing scandalous clergy: against pluralities and non-residence. The king's proposals.—Death and character of Dr. *Crisp*. Lord *Brooke's* death. *Tomkins's* plot. A new oath or covenant. Proclamation against the city of London. The people reduced to great hardships. Success of the king's affairs.—Sufferings of the puritan clergy, and of the episcopal. Committees for religion: for scandalous ministers. Cases of the Rev. Mr. *Symonds*, Rev. Mr. *Squire*, and Rev. Mr. *Finch*. Committee for plundered ministers: their proceedings censured. Country committees: their instructions. Quality of the persons ejected: sequestration of their estates: a further explanation of it. Abjuration oath. The effects of this ordinance. The king makes reprisals. Vacant benefices filled up. Strict observation of the sabbath. Manner of keeping the monthly fast. Occasional fasts. The king dissolves the parliament fast, and appoints another. Removal of monuments of superstition: ordinance for that purpose: manner of the execution of it. Orders for restraining the press.

## CHAPTER II.

*From the calling the Assembly of Divines at Westminster to the Oxford Parliament.*

Ordinance for calling an assembly of divines. Names of the lay-assessors; of the divines. Reasons of the episcopal divines against the assembly; character of it: it opens: rules agreed to by it. Regulations sent them by the parliament. Assembly's petition for a fast.—Alterations in the thirty-nine articles. Censures of antinomianism.—Parliament and assembly apply to the Scots. Reasons of the general assembly of Scotland for assisting the English parliament. Committee appointed to frame a solemn league and covenant. Mr. *Marshall's* and *Nye's* letter to the assembly at Westminster. Debates upon it. The solemn league and covenant. Manner of taking it. An exhortation to taking the solemn league and covenant: answered. Instructions for taking the covenant in the country. The influence it had on the clergy. The king brings over forces from Ireland. Ill consequences of it. The king's protestation. Assembly's letter to the foreign churches. The king's reply. Remarks. Discipline of the church dis-

solved. Parliament nominates men to livings. Committee to examine clergymen. Their method of examination. Death of Mr. *Chillingworth*. Character of Mr. *Hampden* and of Mr. *Pym*.

## CHAPTER III.

*The Oxford Parliament. Progress of the War. Visitation of the University of Cambridge by the Earl of Manchester. Committee for plundered, sequestered, and scandalous Ministers.*

The Oxford parliament. The king's letter to the queen. Scots army enters England. Earl of *Essex* defeated in Cornwall. Rise of the clubmen. Character of the king's officers, and soldiers. Fight of Newbury. Character of the parliament army. State of affairs at the end of the year. Affairs of the church. Behavior of the university of Cambridge. Cambridge visitation. Ordinance for the committee of sequestration. Character of the earl of *Manchester*. Manner of his proceeding. Covenant not tendered to the whole university. Numbers ejected. Reasonableness of it. Characters of the ejected professors: and of their successors. Remarks. Form of induction of the new master; the oath: and of the fellows. Committee for scandalous ministers. Earl of *Manchester's* warrant empowering them to act: instructions to them. The earl's letter. Their method of proceeding. Remarks. Numbers ejected: compared with the ejected ministers in 1662. The fifths. The hardships on both sides.

## CHAPTER IV.

*Of the several Parties in the Assembly of Divines. Presbyterians, Erastians, Independants. Their Proceedings about Ordination, and the Directory for Divine Worship. The Rise, Progress, and Sufferings of the English Anabaptists.*

Parties in the assemblies of Divines. Of the Presbyterians; the Erastians; the Independants. Remarks. Vindication of the Independants. Of the Anabaptists. Proceedings of the assembly. Order to confer about discipline. Of ordination. Advice of the assembly.—Directory for public worship. Preface to it. Variations in it from the common prayer. The success of it. Ordinance for enforcing the use of the directory. Remarks. King forbids the use of it. Rise and progress of the English anabaptists. Their confession of faith: their character and sufferings. Mr. *Clarkson's* recantation. Remarks.—The *Palatinate* family favorites of the puritans. State of religion. Ordinance for better observation of the Lord's-day: for laying aside the observation of Christmas. Remarks. The death of bishop *Westfield*, and of Dr. *Bowning*.

## CHAPTER V.

*Abstract of the Trial of Archbishop Laud; and of the Treaty of Uxbridge.*

Trial of Archbishop *Laud*. Articles of impeachment. Archbishop's answer. Order and method of the trial. Summary of the charge.—



Serj. *Wild* opens the impeachment. The archbishop's speech. First branch of the charge for subverting the rights of parliament. Manager's charge. Archbishop's reply. Arbitrary speeches made for the king by the archbishop. King's speech March 29 and May 11, 1620, and March 27, 1629. Archbishop's reply. Arbitrary speeches of the archbishop himself. Archbishop's reply. Parliament's power in matters of religion. Archbishop's reply. Of the king's prerogative, and canons of the church. Archbishop's reply. Second charge: attempt to set aside the laws: of ship-money, tonnage, and poundage. Archbishop's reply. Depopulations and pulling down houses. Archbishop's reply. Illegal commitments and prohibitions in the spiritual courts. Archbishop's reply. Bribery objected to the archbishop.—His reply. Commutation of penance. Alterations in the coronation oath. Archbishop's reply. Attempt to set up an independent power in the clergy. Archbishop's reply. Sitting of the convocation after the parliament. Archbishop's reply. Remarks. Third general charge: subverting religion. Paintings, and images, and crucifixes.—Archbishop's answer. Managers' reply to the antiquity of images in churches. Consecration of churches and altars, and feasts of dedication. Archbishop's answer on consecrating churches: on feasts of dedication: on consecrating altars and their furniture. Manager's reply on the antiquity of consecrating churches: on consecrating altars and their furniture: on the antiquity of feasts of dedication. Antiquity of altars, their situation, and railing them in. Archbishop's answer.—Managers' reply on the antiquity of altars, and railing them in: on their situation: altars not anciently fixed to the east wall of the chancel: on their furniture. Antiquity of bowing towards the altar. Archbishop's answer. Bowing at the name of Jesus. Of copes. Managers' reply on bowing to the altar: on the *Gloria Patri*, and bowing at the name of Jesus. On reading the second service: on copes: and the university statutes. Book of sports. Archbishop's answer. Managers' reply. Remarks. Doctrinal errors. Arminianism. Archbishop's answer. Managers' reply. Preaching on the five points. Abuse of the press by prohibiting books: by castrating them: by licensing popish books, and conniving at their importation. Archbishop's answer. Managers' reply. Prosecuting puritans. Archbishop's answer. Managers' reply. Reconciling the church of England with Rome, and assuming papal titles, and discouraging foreign protestants. Archbishop's answer: on his assuming papal titles: on the church of Rome being a true church: on unchurching foreign protestants: on corresponding with popish priests. Managers' reply. On his assuming papal titles and honors: on his forbidding to pray for the queen's conversion: on the church of Rome no true church: on his reconciling the church of England to Rome: on his unchurching foreign protestants: on his countenancing popish priests: and discountenancing their prosecutors: on his concealing *Habernfield's* plot. The managers' conclusion. The archbishop's speech at the close of the trial. Points of law debated. Mr. *Hearn's* argument. Censures of the archbishop's behavior. His character of the witnesses. His censure of the managers. Petitions for justice against him. Condemned by bill of at-



tainer. His last speech and prayer. His character. Treaty of Uxbridge. The king's cabinet opened. The commissioners. The treaty begins. Mr. Love's sermon. Of the militia: of Ireland: of religion: The king's instructions to his commissioners. Parliament's instructions. Mr. Henderson's speech against bishops. Dr. Steward's reply. The king's concessions. Remarks. The parliament's reply. Remarks. The treaty breaks up. Reasons of it. Remarks. Earl of Glamorgan's treaty with the Irish. Death of Mr. White.

## CHAPTER VI.

*The Progress of the War. Debates in the Assembly about Ordination. The Power of the Keys. The Divine Right of Presbyterian Government. Committees for Comprehension and Toleration of the Independants.*

Earl of Essex removed, and the army new-modelled. Character of the generals. Rise of enthusiasm in the army. Their strict discipline. Progress of the king's forces. Battle at Naseby. Parliament's care for a regular clergy. Directory for ordination of ministers. Former ordinations invalid. Debates upon it with the independants. Power of ordination given to the assembly *pro tempore*. The divine right of presbytery. Objections of the erastians: and of the independants. Presbyterians' reply. Subordination of synods. Complaints of the independants. Conduct of the erastians. The clause of the divine right lost in the house of commons. Several petitions of the parliament to admit it. Of the power of the keys in excommunication: opinion of the independants, of Selden, and of Whitlocke.—The ordinance for suspension and excommunication. Parliament's proviso. Presbyterians dissatisfied. Ordinance for erecting presbyteries. Remarks. Exceptions of the Scots to the new discipline.—Parliament's reply. English presbyterians' petition against the ordinance. They are threatened with a *præmunire*. Questions sent to the assembly relating to the *jus divinum*. Remarks. They are terrified, and appoint a fast. Committee of accommodation. The committees revived. Proposals of the independants. Reply of the presbyterians. Answer of the independants. The presbyterians' reply.—Answer of the independants. Conclusion of the presbyterians. Remarks. Debates about toleration and liberty of conscience. Scots declaration against toleration. Independants for a limited toleration. Answer to the reasons of the London clergy. The king foment their divisions. Censures of Paul Best. Ordinance to seize the revenues of cathedrals. Revenues of the university of Cambridge preserved.—Death of Dr. Featly: of Mr. Dod.

## CHAPTER VII.

*The Conclusion of the first Civil War, by the King's surrendering his Royal Person to the Scots. Petitions of the Assembly and City Divines against Toleration, and for the Divine Right of the Presbyterian Government, which is erected in London. Debates between the*

*King, Mr. Henderson, and the Scots Commissioners. His Majesty is removed from Newcastle to Holmby-house. Further account of the Sectaries.*

The king's melancholy condition at Oxford: surrenders his person to the Scots. Conclusion of the first civil war. Articles of peace with the Irish papists. Parliament's commissioners protest against it. Presbyterians petition against sectaries: and are seconded by the Scots. Parliament's answer. Independants oppose it. Assembly's sentiments of the *jus divinum*. Sentiments of the London ministers. Their paper of considerations and cautions. Classical division of the province of London. Remarks. Scots behavior to the king at Newcastle.—Conference between the king and Mr. *Henderson*. The king's first paper. Mr. *Henderson's* first reply. King's second paper. Mr. *Henderson's* second reply. King's third paper. Mr. *Henderson's* third reply. King's last papers. Remarks. Mr. *Henderson's* pretended recantation: the falseness of it. Parliament's propositions to the king at Newcastle. Great intercession is made with the king to comply: but he refuses. His conference with the Scots commissioners. Scots kirk will not trust the king. Their solemn warning and declaration. Proceedings of the Scots parliaments relating to the king. They deliver him up, and publish their reasons. English commissioners receive the king, and convey him to Holmby. Remarks. The king at Holmby-house. Ordinance for abolishing archbishops and bishops: and for sale of their lands. Presbyterians petition against the sectaries. Proceedings of the parliament upon it. Further account of the sectaries. *Edward's Grangræna*. Mr. *Baxter's* account of them: lord *Clarendon's*. Bishop *Bramhall*, of the papists. Death of the earl of *Essex*: of Mr. *Colman*: of Dr. *Twisse*: and Mr. *Jeremiah Burroughs*.

#### CHAPTER VIII.

*Proceedings of the Assembly upon their Confession of Faith and Catechisms. Provincial Assemblies of London. The King taken out of the Parliament's custody and conveyed to the Army. His Majesty's conduct. He escapes from Hampton-Court, and is confined in the Isle of Wight.*

Proceedings of the assembly upon their confession of faith. They present it to the parliament. Debates of the commons upon it. Articles of discipline rejected: but the whole received by the Scots assembly and parliament. Censures of it. Assembly's larger and shorter catechisms. Scots commissioners take leave of the assembly. They appoint a fast for the distractions of England. First provincial assembly. The second. Their petition to parliament. London ministers, testimony to truth and against error. Dr. *Hammond's* vindication: and Mr. *John Goodwin's*: his reply to the Rev. Mr. *Jenkins*. Views of the different parties concerned in the war: of the king: of the parliament and presbyterians: of the army and independants. Controversy between the parliament and army. Council of the officers and agitators. The king's answer to the propositions at Newcastle: seized

and carried to the army: which strikes the two houses with surprise. Declaration of the army. The presbyterians in parliament resolve to oppose the army. Eleven of their members impeached. Commotions in the city. Tumults in the parliament house: which occasion several of the members to retire to the army. Proceedings of the remainder. Army resolves to march to London. City submits. Presbyterian ministers' vindication of themselves. Remarks. *Mr. Baxter's* opinion. The king's motions with the army. *Cromwell's* and *Ireton's* conference with the king. His majesty's mistaken conduct: which proves his ruin. Reasons of the army's deserting the king.—The king escapes from Hampton-Court: and is confined in the Isle of Wight. Proposals of the army. Agreement of the lords, and of the commons. Proposals of the presbyterians. Motive of the king's escape from Hampton-Court. Private treaty with the Scots. The king's concessions from the Isle of Wight. Remarks. The army unite with the parliament. Votes of non-addresses. Parliament's remonstrance. Ordinance for abolishing the observation of Christmas and other saints' days. Time allotted for servants' recreation. The king disapproves of it. It occasions tumults. The king's clergy petition to be restored to their livings. *Fairfax's* answer. Counter-petition of the presbyterians. Ordinance in their favor.

## CHAPTER IX.

*The Visitation of the University of Oxford. State of Religion at the end of the year.*

Condition of the university of Oxford. Parliament sends ministers to reform it. Their conduct and success. Parliament resolves on a visitation. Ordinance for that purpose. Abstract of the university's reasons against the covenant. Exceptions against the preface: against the covenant in general: against the first article: against the second: against the third: against the fourth: against the fifth: against the sixth: the conclusion. Contradictions in the covenant: doubtful expressions in it: absurdities. Salvoes for taking it. Objections to the negative oath and directory. Remarks. Visitation opened. The university uses the visitors ill, and will not submit. Parliament resolve to support their visitors. Their visitation received. The university will not submit. They are heard by their council: but are cast. Their stubborn behavior. Earl of *Pembroke*, chancellor, visits in person. His proceedings: reports the behavior of the university to the parliament. Numbers ejected. Insolence of the scholars. The garrison searches the colleges for arms. Scholars expelled. Heads of the colleges that submitted and kept their places: their characters. Characters of the professors that submitted. Heads of the colleges ejected: their characters. Professors ejected. New heads of colleges that succeeded. New professors. Their behavior. Remarks. Vacancies in the university filled up. Causes of the increase of lay-preachers. Petition for unordained preachers. Stage-plays put down. State of religion. Death of *Mr. Herbert Palmer*, of *Mr. Henry Wilkinson*, of *Mr. Saltmarsh*.



## CHAPTER X.

*The second Civil War. The conclusion of the Assembly of Divines. The progress of Presbytery. The Treaty of the Isle of Wight. The Death and Character of King Charles I. His Works. And the Authors of his unhappy Sufferings.*

The second civil war. The Scots army enters England: and is defeated by *Cromwell*. Proceedings of the parliament; which is entirely presbyterian. Remarks on the confusion of the times. Conclusion of the assembly of divines. Their works. Their character. Proceedings of the third provincial assembly: of the fourth. Provincial assembly of Lancashire. Agreement of the people. Country associations. Ordinance against blasphemy and heresy. Remarks. Ordinance for settling the presbyterian discipline. Treaty of the Isle of Wight. Parliament's proposals, and the king's reply. His concessions on the article of religion. Conference between the king's and parliament's divines. The king's first paper to the parliament divines. Abstract of their reply. The king's second paper. Parliament divines' reply. The king's last paper. Remarks. Of the coronation oath. The king's final concessions. Arguments and motives of the parliament commissioners to gain the king's consent. States of Scotland press the king's consent. The king's speech to the commissioners. Remarks. Archbishop *Usher's* sentiments. Conclusion of the treaty. King's letter to the prince. Remarks. The case of the army. Their proceedings. Their remonstrance. They seize the king's person a second time. They march to London, and purge the parliament. Votes of the remainder of the house of commons. The army resolves to try the king. Voice of the nation. Dr. *Gauden's* and Dr. *Hammond's* protestations: and the whole body of presbyterian ministers in London: their further vindication. Behavior of the independants: and of the Scots. Proceedings of the army and parliament. The king's trial and execution. His character. His works. *Eikon Basilike* a spurious performance. Books published for and against the king's death. Authors of the king's death. Of the king and his divines. Of the presbyterians. Of the independants. Sentiments of Dr. *Du Moulin*: Mr. *Baxter*: Bishop *Burnet*: of the papists: and of the convention parliament.

## SUPPLEMENT.

The extent of Mr. *Neal's* design. An apology for Mr. *Neal*. Complaints of the baptists and the quakers. Number and variety of heresies in the reign of *Charles I.* Increase of the antitrinitarians. The case of *Thomas Webb*: of *Paul Best*: of *John Fry*. Intolerance of the times. The number of antitrinitarian assemblies and publications. The imprimatur of *John Bachiler*. A pamphlet entitled "Religious Peace." *Edwards's* Gangræna. English baptists: their origin: the number of their congregations: their first secession: the church of them at *Shrewsbury*: at *Bickenhal*: and at *Chesterton*. Their in-

crease impeded. Their revival. Their publications. Their confession of faith. Two divisions of them. Their opinions defended by Lord Brooke, Mr. Daniel Rogers, and bishop Taylor. Severe ordinances and invectives directed against them. Their sufferings: those of Mr. Vavasor Powel, Mr. Edward Barber, Mr. Cox, Mr. Henry Denne, Mr. Coppe, Mr. Lamb, Mr. Paul Hobson, Mr. Hanserd Knollys, Mr. John Sims, Mr. Andrew Wyke, and Mr. Samuel Oates. The imprudence and impetuosity of their zeal. The iniquity of persecution, but one good effect of it. The writings of the baptists in favor of toleration. Distinguished preachers among them: Mr. Helwise, Mr. John Morton. Mr. Neal's representation of the baptists censured by Mr. Crosby. Origin of the quakers. A stricture on Mr. Neal's account of it.

## CONTENTS OF THE NOTES.

### CHAPTER I.

PAGE 28, The sincerity of the parliament in their petition for peace; the charge of treachery in the king confirmed; and Mr. Neal vindicated against Dr. Grey. p. 29, Who of the Brentford prisoners were condemned to die, ascertained. Dr. Downing and Mr. Marshall defended against a charge of Dr. Grey. p. 30-1, Mr. Neal's charge of the king's want of faith supported. A stricture of Dr. Grey considered. The king's violation of his word. p. 33, Mr. Neal's veracity defended. p. 34, The policy and design of the cessation of arms granted to the Irish. p. 35, The nature of the king's proposals for the ease of tender consciences. p. 40, The preamble of the king's reply to the propositions from the parliament. p. 42, The king's civility to the commissioners of the parliament. p. 46, The different constructions put on the death of lord Brooke. p. 48, A reference. p. 66, The length of the religious services of the parliament party. A proposal for a round-head's feast. p. 68, The banter cast on the zeal with which crosses were pulled down. p. 71, References from Dr. Grey.

### CHAPTER II.

Page 73, The constitution of the Westminster assembly. p. 80, A reference from Dr. Grey. p. 82, Dr. Grey's censure of the Westminster divines. p. 82, 83, Selden's sentiments concerning convocations. p. 87, An error corrected. p. 88, A ground of the king's resentment. p. 90, Bishop Burnet's reflection on the unanimity and speed with which the assembly adopted the proposed solemn league and covenant. p. 98, Bishop Warburton animadverted on. p. 103, The charges of cruelty brought by Dr. Grey against the English adherents to the parliament. p. 110, A remark adopted from bishop Warburton. p. 113, On the precedence granted to the English bishop at the synod of Dort. p. 114, Mr. Baxter's reflection on the imprisonment of Dr. Featly. p. 118, Dr. Cheynel's treatment of Chillingworth: the spirit of his book against him. A counter-part to it in Dr. Snape's writings. An excellent reflection of bishop Hoadley. p. 119, 20, Particulars concerning Mr. Hamden. p. 120, 21, Mr. Pym's character vindicated.

### CHAPTER III.

Page 122, The parliament vindicated from the charge of high-treason. Its power to raise contributions. The king's impolicy in calling the Oxford parliament, and Mr. Selden's representation of it. p. 123, A date supplied. p. 124, Bishop Warburton's opinion of the king's views. p. 126, Mr. Neal's account of prince Rupert's cruelty supported by authorities. p. 127, Mr. Neal's character of lieut.-general Wilmot vindicated, and an instance of the generosity of the general considered. p. 129, The character of the parliament army. The same according to Dr. Grey. Mr. Baxter's character of the same explained. p. 130, Dr. Grey's misapplication of his authorities. p. 139,



Anecdote of Dr. Lazarus Seaman. Dr. Cudworth's intellectual system. Who was his daughter. p. 140, Character of Dr. Whichcot. Archbishop Laud's friendship to Mr. Palmer. p. 141, Character of Dr. Anthony Tuckney.

## CHAPTER IV.

Page 155, The name, Puritan, lost in other distinctions, p. 164, Bishop Hall's complaint of being restrained in his power of ordination, and Dr. Grey's conclusion from it. p. 169, The Westminster assembly set aside dipping, and declare sprinkling sufficient in the administration of baptism. p. 175, Mr. Baxter's character of the baptists. p. 177, A reflection on recantations. Mr. Clarkson's case. p. 179, The elector Palatine's views. On his pension. p. 180, High repute of the covenant. p. 182, Observation of Christmas appointed.

## CHAPTER V.

Page 189, Dr. Grey's vindication of archbishop Laud's speech. p. 197, A charge against Mr. Neal. p. 207, Archbishop Laud's explanation of a passage from the psalms, used at the consecration of Creed-Church. p. 216, Mrs. Macaulay's remark on the ceremonies and measures adopted by archbishop Laud. p. 218, Dr. Grey's opinion of the authority of the canons, when licensed by the king. p. 220, Mrs. Macaulay's reflections on the manner in which the reformation was conducted. p. 222, On the connexion between arminianism and despotism. p. 233, Reflections on Laud's disavowal of popery. p. 240, The length and expences of Laud's trial. p. 243, The defect of the law in not providing for the punishment of attempting to introduce a despotic government. p. 244, The frivolousness of Laud's plea from the concurrence of others in his measures. p. 245, Laud's charge against Prynne of instructing witnesses. p. 246-7, The conduct of the council against Laud. The character of serjeant Wild, and the charges against him examined. p. 248, On Prynne's management of the trial of Laud. p. 249, Dr. Grey's remark on the bill of attainder against Laud. The severity of the parliament to the archbishop. p. 250, Mrs. Macaulay's remarks on his last speech. p. 252, The same on his being executed. p. 253, On the archbishop's learning. His munificent acts. p. 254, His superstition, and the publication of his Diary. p. 255, Mrs. Macaulay's delineation of his character. p. 256, The reception which the king gave to the commissioners. p. 257, Mr. Neal vindicated, and the subterfuges of the king. The same, and the proceedings against Mr. Love. p. 260, A quotation from Rapin explained. p. 261, Reply to a stricture of bishop Warburton; and his defence of the king. p. 265, The inaccuracy of a reference. Earl of Pembroke's judgment on episcopacy and presbyterianism. p. 266, A mistake concerning the design of Hooker's ecclesiastical polity. p. 270, A reference to Dr. Grey. p. 270-1, Mr. Neal's veracity vindicated. The earl of Southampton rides post to the king. The Marquis of Montrose's letters. p. 272, The queen's influence over the king. p. 273-4, On the earl of Glamorgan's commission to the Irish rebels. p. 275, White's character defended.

## CHAPTER VI.

Page 276, Remarks on the self-denying ordinance, and the power given to sir Thomas Fairfax. p. 282-3, One instance of liberality in the assembly at Westminster. p. 290, On the insolence of majorities. p. 313, Toleration opposed by the presbyterians. p. 319, 20, Dr. Featley's spirit in his work against the baptists, and his disputation with his fellow-prisoner, Mr. Denne. p. 322, An instance of the happy influence of Dod's sayings.

## CHAPTER VII.

Page 325, The agreement the Scots made with the king. p. 326, The king's letter to the Irish papists June 11. The articles of the treaty with them, their number, and tenor. p. 327, The ninth article. The remonstrance of the clergy on these articles. p. 328, The truth of Mr. Neal's assertion, that the king refused to deliver up the Irish forts, discussed. p. 329 The intolerance of presbyterianism. p. 336, The boldness of a Scotch minister preaching before the king at Newcastle. p. 337, The abilities displayed by the king in his controversy with Henderson. p. 346, The same, and Dr. Harris's reflection on the subject. p. 347, The cause of Henderson's death. p. 349, Henderson's character of Charles I. proved a forgery. p. 350, The importance of it, if genuine. p. 353, The humble and earnest solicitations of the commissioners. p. 354, Mr. Neal's omission, and Dr. Grey's fears. p. 355, A reference to Dr. Grey. p. 359, The tranquillity of the king's temper. p. 360, The question, whether the Scots sold the king, considered. From whom the money paid to the Scots was borrowed. p. 361, The infelicities of the king's situation at Holmby-house. p. 366, Some account of Mr. Thomas Edwards. p. 374, Anecdotes concerning Dr. Twisse and Mr. Jeremiah Burroughs.

## CHAPTER VIII.

Page 379, The number of copies of the assembly's confession printed. p. 379, The remark of Mr. Robinson on the directory's instructions to preachers. p. 379, The plan of Scots presbyterianism. p. 386, The intolerant principle of the assembly's catechism. p. 387, One instance of the liberality of the Westminster assembly, in not requiring subscription to their confession, and negating the motion for subscription to the shorter catechism. p. 399, The causes of the secession of the members of both houses. p. 401, The Westminster assembly's petition for peace. p. 403-4, A remark of bishop Warburton on the intolerance of presbyterians. The liberality of modern presbyterian establishments inimical to liberty. p. 401, A reference to Dr. Grey. p. 422, A reference to Dr. Grey.

## CHAPTER IX.

Page 425, The names of those who drew up a paper of reasons against the covenant. p. 442, Anecdotes of Dr. Morley and a generous reply of his. p. 449, An anecdote of Dr. Pocock. p. 451, Charitable and munificent acts of Dr. Sheldon. p. 452, An omission in Mr. Neal. p. 453, Dr. Sanderson's modesty and mode of lending money. p. 454, Mr. Greaves, enquiries after antiquities. p. 455, Character of bishop

Wilkins, his institutions, philosophical chimæras and witty reply to the dutchess of Newcastle. p. 459, Dr. Seth Ward's character, benefactions and endowments. p. 460, Dr. John Wallis's inventions.

## CHAPTER X.

Page 461, The reasons of the execution of Sir Charles Lucas and Sir George Lisle. The king's grief for the former. Bishop Burnet's vindication of the duke of Hamilton. p. 462, The number of the Scots' forces that entered England, July 8, 1648. p. 465, Cromwell's victory, and the spirit of Dr. Grey's remarks. p. 479, Bishop Warburton's question answered. p. 481, A stricture on bishop Warburton. p. 485, A fact stated by the bishop, and Cromwell's reply to the London ministers. p. 484, The ordinance of the parliament against heresy censured. Dr. Disney's reflection on the punishment it appointed. p. 486, The opposition to it. p. 488, Who were allowed to attend the king at Hampton court. p. 489, The attachment of the parliament to presbyterianism. p. 490, The sum granted to the king in lieu of the court of wards. His adherence to the delinquents. p. 501-2, A reference to Dr. Grey. p. 505-6, Mr. Neal's reasons for the unsuccessfulness of the treaty at Newport defended against Dr. Grey's remarks: and his reflection on the king's insincerity and dilatoriness supported. p. 511, Mr. Neal's character of the officers of the army explained. p. 512, Ludlow's state of the question in dispute between the king and the parliament. p. 514, The number of representatives proposed in a paper called "The Agreement of the People." The vote of the 5th of December reversed. p. 515, The protest of the secluded members. p. 523, The king tries his fortune by the *Sortes Virgilianæ*. p. 524, The king's insincerity in the treaty at Newport. Some remarkable circumstances, which attended the execution of the king. p. 525, Bishop Warburton's remark on the anniversary sermons of 30th of January. p. 526, A concession of bishop Warburton concerning the king's breaches of faith. p. 527, The great sale of the *Eikon Basilike*, and the effects it produced. p. 529, Bishop Warburton's sentiments on its authenticity. p. 531, Bishop Warburton's description of the operations of the army. p. 533, Bishop Warburton's construction of the conduct of the presbyterians with respect to the death of the king. p. 535, Bishop Warburton's opinion, who had the greatest hand in it.

## THE SUPPLEMENT.

Page 547, Republication of bishop Taylor's defence of the baptists. p. 553, A letter of Mr. Hanserd Knollys. p. 555, Some account of the church in Deadman's-place; and of its ministers, Mr. Hubbard and Mr. Stephen Moore.



## AUTHOR'S PREFACE.

NO period of civil history has undergone a more critical examination than the last seven years of king *Charles I.* which was a scene of such confusion and inconsistent management between the king and parliament, that it is very difficult to discover the motives of action on either side ; the king seems to have been directed by secret springs from the queen and her council of papists, who were for advancing the prerogative above the laws, and vesting his majesty with such an absolute sovereignty as might rival his *brother of France*, and enable him to establish the Roman-catholic religion in England, or some how or other blend it with the protestant. This gave rise to the unparalleled severities of the *star-chamber* and *high-commission*, which, after twelve years triumph over the laws and liberties of the subject, brought on a fierce and bloody war, and after the loss of above a hundred thousand lives, ended in the sacrifice of the king himself, and the subversion of the whole constitution.

Though all men had a veneration for the person of the king, his MINISTERS had rendered themselves justly obnoxious, not only by setting up a new form of government at home, but by extending their jurisdiction to a neighboring kingdom, under the government of distinct laws, and inclined to a form of church discipline very different from the English : This raised such a storm in the *North*, as distressed his majesty's administration ; exhausted his treasure ; drained all his arbitrary springs of supply ; and (after an intermission of twelve years) reduced him to the necessity of returning to the constitution, and calling a parliament ; but when the public grievances came to be opened, there appeared such a collection of ill-humors, and so general a distrust between the king and his two houses, as threatened all the mischief and desolation that followed. Each party laid the blame on the other, and agreed in nothing but in throwing off the odium of the *civil war* from themselves.

The affairs of the *church* had a very considerable influence on the welfare of the state : The episcopal character was grown into contempt, not from any defect of learning in the bishops, but from their close attachment to the *prerogative* and their own insatiable thirst of power, which they strained to the utmost in their *spiritual courts*, by reviving old and absolute customs, levying large fines on the people for contempt of their canons, and prosecuting good men and zealous protestants, for rites and ceremonies tending to superstition, and not warranted by the laws of the land. The king supported them to the utmost ; but was obliged, after some time, to give way, *first*, to an act for abolishing the

*high commission*, by a clause in which the power of the bishops, *spiritual courts* was in a manner destroyed; and at last to an act depriving them of *their seats in parliament*. If at this time any methods could have been thought of, to restore a mutual confidence between the king and his two houses, the remaining differences in the church might easily have been compromised; but the spirits of men were heated, and as the flames of the civil war grew fiercer, and spread wider, the wounds of the church were enlarged, till the distress of the parliament's affairs obliging them to call in the Scots, with their *solemn league and covenant*, they became incurable.

When the king had lost his cause in the field, he put himself at the head of his divines, and drew his learned pen in defence of his prerogative, and the church of England; but his arguments were no more successful than his sword. I have brought the debates between the king and Mr. *Henderson*, and between the divines of both sides at the treaties of Uxbridge and Newport upon the head of episcopacy, into as narrow a compass as possible; my chief design being to trace the proceedings of the parliament and their assembly at Westminster, which (whether justifiable or not) ought to be placed in open view, though none of the historians of those times have ventured to do it.

The Westminster assembly was the parliament's *grand council* in matters of religion, and made a very considerable figure both at home and abroad through the course of the civil war, till they disputed the power of the keys with their superiors, and split upon the rocks of *divine right* and *covenant uniformity*. The records of this venerable assembly were lost in the fire of London; but I have given a large and just account of their proceedings, from a manuscript of one of their members, and some other papers that have fallen into my hands, and have entered as far into their debates with the *erastians*, *independants*, and others, as was consistent with the life and spirit of the history.

Whatever views the Scots might have from the beginning of the war, the parliament would certainly have agreed with the king upon the foot of a limited episcopacy, till the calling the assembly of divines, after which the *solemn league and covenant* became the standard of all their treaties, and was designed to introduce the presbyterian government in its full extent, as the established religion of both kingdoms. This tied up the parliament's hands, from yielding in time to the king's most reasonable concessions at Newport, and rendered an accommodation impracticable; I have therefore transcribed the *covenant* at large, with the reasons for and against it. Whether such obligations upon the consciences of men are justifiable from the *necessity of affairs*, or binding in all events and revolutions of government, I shall not determine; but the imposing them upon others was certainly a very great hardship.

The remarkable trial of archbishop Laud, in which the antiquity and use of the several innovations complained of by the *puritans*, are stated and argued, has never been published entire to the world.



The archbishop left in his diary a summary of his answer to the charge of the commons, and Mr. Prynne in his *Canterbury's doom*, has published the first part of his *grace's* trial, relating principally to points of religion; but all is imperfect and immethodical. I have therefore compared both accounts together, and supplied the defects of one with the other; the whole is brought into a narrow compass, and thrown into such a method, as will give the reader a clear and distinct view of the equity of the charge, and how far the archbishop deserved the usage he met with.

I have drawn out abstracts of the several ordinances relating to the rise and progress of presbytery, and traced the proceedings of the committee for plundered and scandalous ministers, as far as was necessary to my general design, without descending too far into particulars, or attempting to justify the whole of their conduct: and though I am of opinion that the number of clergy who suffered purely on the account of religion, was not very considerable, it is certain that many able and learned divines, who were content to live quietly, and mind the duty of their places, had *very hard measure* from the violence of parties, and deserve the compassionate regards of posterity; some being discharged their livings for refusing the *covenant*, and others plundered of every thing the unruly soldiers could lay their hands upon, for not complying with the change of the times.

In the latter end of the reign of Queen *Ann*, Dr. *Walker* of Exeter published an attempt to recover the number and sufferings of the clergy of the church of England; but with notorious partiality, and in language not fit for the lips of a clergyman, a scholar, or a christian; every page or paragraph, almost, labors with the cry of rebellion, treason, parricide, faction, stupid ignorance, hypocrisy, cant, and downright knavery and wickedness on one side; and loyalty, learning, primitive sanctity, and the glorious spirit of martyrdom, on the other. One must conclude from the doctor, that there was hardly a wise or honest patriot with the parliament, nor a weak or dishonest gentleman with the king. His preface\* is one of the most furious invectives against the seven most glorious years of Queen ANN that was ever published; it blackens the memory of the late King WILLIAM III. to whom he applies that passage of scripture, *I gave them a king in my anger, and took him away in my wrath*; it arraigns the great duke of MARLBOROUGH, the GLORY of the English nation, and both houses of parliament, as in a confederacy to destroy the church of England, and dethrone the queen. "Rebellion, says the doctor, was esteemed the 'most necessary requisite to qualify any one for being intrusted with the government, and disobedience the principal recommendation for her majesty's service.——' Those were thought the most proper persons to guard the throne, who, on the first dislike, were every whit 'as ready to guard the scaffold; yea, her majesty was in effect told all 'this to her face, in the greatest assembly of the nation. And to say

\* Preface, p. 8, 9, 10, 11.



“all that can be said of this matter, all the principles of 1641, and even those of 1648, have been plainly and openly revived.”

Thus has this obscure clergyman dared to affront the great AUTHOR, under GOD, of all our present blessings; and to stigmatize, the MARLBOROUGHs, the GODOLPHINS, the STANHOPES, the SUNDERLANDS, the COWPERS and others, the most renowned HEROES and STATESMEN of the age.

It must be confessed, that the tumults and riotous assemblies of the lower sort of people, are insufferable in a well-regulated government; and without all question, some of the leading members of the *long parliament* made an ill use of the populace, as tools to support their secret designs; but how easy were it to turn all this part of the doctor's artillery against himself and his friends; for *Prynne*, *Burton*, and *Bastwick*, in their return from their several prisons, were not attended with such a numerous cavalcade, as waited upon the late Dr. *Sacheverel*, in his triumphant progress through the western counties of England and Wales; nor did they give themselves up to the same excess of licentiousness and rage. If the mob of 1641 insulted the bishops, and awed the parliament, so did the doctor's retinue in 1710; nay, their zeal outwent their predecessors, when they pulled down the *meeting-houses* of protestant dissenters, and burnt the materials in the open streets, in maintenance of the doctrines of passive obedience and non-resistance, which their pious confessor had been preaching up; “a bold insolent man, (says bishop *Burnet*) with a very small measure of religion, virtue, learning, or good sense:” but to such extremes do men's passions carry them, when they write to serve a cause! I have had occasion to make some use of Dr. *Walker's* confused heap of materials, but have endeavored carefully to avoid his spirit and language.

No man has declaimed so bitterly against the proceedings of parliament upon all occasions, as this clergyman; nor complained more loudly of the unspeakable damage the liberal arts and sciences sustained, by their purging the two universities; the new heads and fellows of Oxford are called, “a colony of presbyterian and independent novices from Cambridge; a tribe of ignorant enthusiasts and schismatics; an illiterate rabble swept from the plough-tail, from shops and grammar-schools, &c.”\* The university of Cambridge is reported by the same author, “to be reduced to a mere *muster* by the *knipper-dolings* of the age, who broke the heart-strings of learning and learned men, who thrust out one of the eyes of the kingdom, and made eloquence dumb; philosophy, sottish; widowed the arts; drove away the muses from their ancient habitation, and plucked the reverend and orthodox professors out of their chairs.—They turned religion into rebellion, changed the apostolical chair into a desk for blasphemy.—They took the garland from off the head of learning, and placed it on the dull brows of ignorance.—And having unhived a numerous swarm of laboring bees, they placed in their room swarms of senseless drones.—”† Such is the language of our historian, transcribed from Dr. *Burwick*!

\* Walker's *Introduct.* p. 139, 140.

† Ibid. p. 115. *Querela Cant.*

I have carefully looked into this affair, and collected the characters of the old and new professors from the most approved writers, that the disinterested reader may judge, how far religion and learning suffered by the exchange.

The close of this volume, which relates the disputes between the parliament and army; the ill success of his majesty's arms and treaties; the seizure of his royal person a second time by the army; his trial before a pretended *high court of justice*, and his unparalleled execution before the gates of his royal palace by the military power, is a most melancholy and affecting scene; in which, next to the all disposing providence of God, one cannot but remark the king's inflexible temper, together with the discretion of his friends, especially his *divines* at a time when his crown was lost by the fortune of war and his very life at the mercy of his enemies; nor is the unwarrantable stiffness of the parliament less unaccountable, when they saw the victorious army drawing towards London, flushed with the defeat of the Scots and English *loyalists*, and determined to set aside that very uniformity they were contending for. If his majesty had yielded at first what he did at last, with an appearance of sincerity; or, if the two houses had complied with his concessions while *Cromwell* was in Scotland; or if the army had been made easy by a general indulgence and toleration, with the distribution of some honors and bounty-money among the officers, the crown and constitution might have been saved; "but so many miraculous circumstances contributed to his majesty's ruin, (says 'lord Clarendon\*') that men might well think that heaven and earth 'conspired it.'"

The objections to the *first volume of the History of the Puritans*, by the author of *The Vindication of the government, doctrine and worship of the Church of England*, obliged me to review the principal facts in a small pamphlet, wherein I have endeavored to discharge myself as an historian, without undertaking the defence of their several principles, or making myself an advocate for the whole of their conduct. I took the liberty to point out the mistakes of our first reformers, as I passed along, but with no design to blacken their memories; for, with all their foibles, they were glorious instruments in the hand of Providence, to deliver this nation from anti-christian bondage; but they were free to confess, the work was left imperfect; that they had gone as far as the times would admit, and hoped their successors would bring the reformation to a greater perfection.

But the state of the controversy was entirely changed in the time of the civil wars; for after the coming in of the Scots, the puritans did not fight for a reformation of the hierarchy, nor for the generous principles of *religious liberty to all peaceable subjects*; but for the same spiritual power the bishops had exercised; for when they had got rid of the oppression of the spiritual courts, under which they had groaned almost fourscore years, they were for setting up a number of *presbyterian consistories* in all the parishes of England, equally burthensome and oppres-

\* Vol. v. p. 253,



sive. Unhappy extreme! That wise and good men should not discover the beautiful consistency of truth and liberty! Dr. *Barrow* and others have observed, that in the first and purest ages of christianity, the church had no coercive power, and apprehend that it may still subsist very well without it.

The body of protestant dissenters of the present age have a just abhorrence of the persecuting spirit of their predecessors, and are content that *their* actions be set in a fair light, as a warning to posterity. They have no less a dread of returning into the hands of *spiritual courts*, founded on the bottomless deep of the *canon law*, and see no reason why they should not be equally exposed, till they are put upon a better foot: though it is an unpardonable crime, in the opinion of some churchmen, to take notice, even in the most respectful manner, of the least blemish in our present establishment, which, how valuable soever in itself, is allowed by all to be capable of amendments. Some little essays of this kind have fired the zeal of the bishop of *Litchfield and Coventry*,\* who, in a late charge to the clergy of his diocese, is pleased to lament over the times in the following mournful language: "At so critical a juncture, (says his lordship) when common christianity is treated with an avowed contempt and open profaneness: when an undisguised immorality prevails so very generally; when there is scarce honesty enough to save the nation from ruin; when, with regard to the established church in particular, the *royal supremacy* is professedly exposed, as inconsistent with the rights of conscience, even THAT SUPREMACY, which was the ground-work of the reformation among us from popery, which was acknowledged, and sworn to by the *old puritans*, though now, inconsistently enough, disowned and condemned in the new history, and vindication of them and their principles:—When so destructive an attempt has been made on the legal maintenance of the clergy, by the late *tithe bill*, and consequently, on the fate of the christian religion among us:—When an attempt has been lately made on the important outworks of our ecclesiastical establishment; the *corporation and test acts*, with the greatest insolences towards the church, and most undutiful menaces to the civil government:—When the *episcopal authority* has been well nigh undermined, under pretence of reforming the ecclesiastical courts; and if that order had been rendered useless, as it must have been, when it had lost its authority, then the *revenues* would have been soon thought useless; and in the result of things, the order itself might have been considered as superfluous, and perhaps in due time thought fit to be abolished:—When churches have been put into such a method of repair, as would end in their ruin in a little time; and when the correction of the abuses of the matrimonial licenses has been labored in so absurd a manner, as to permit the marriage of minors without consent of their parents or guardians:—When these melancholy circumstances have so lately concurred, it is natural to infer, our zeal for the church should be in proportion to its danger; and if these are not proper occasions for zeal for our ecclesiastical constitution, it is not easy to assign circumstance that may justly demand it."† How fine and subtle are these

\* Dr. *Smallbrook*.

† Charge, p. 41, 42, 44.



speculations ! I have not observed any insolences towards the church, or undutiful menaces to the civil government, in the late writings of the dissenters ; but if one pin of the hierarchy be removed by the wisdom of the legislature, the whole building is supposed to fall, and all religion along with it. His lordship therefore advises his clergy to study the bishop of London's *codex*, in order to defend it ; and it can do them no real prejudice to examine at the same time, the principles of law and equity, on which it is founded † As to the *dissenters*, his lordship adds, “ however ‘ it will become us of the clergy, in point of *prudence*, not to give any ‘ just suspicions of our *disgust* to the legal toleration of them, while ‘ they keep within due bounds ; that is, while they do not break in upon ‘ the privileges and rights of the established church, by declaring ‘ against all legal establishments, or the legal establishment of the ‘ church of England in particular, or by not being quiet with the present limits of their toleration, or by affecting posts of authority, and ‘ thereby breaking down the fences of the church, and placing themselves on a level with it.”\* But whether this would remain a point of *prudence* with his lordship, if the boundaries of his episcopal power were enlarged, is not very difficult to determine.

The dissenters have no envy nor ill-will to the churches of England or Scotland, established by law, (attended with a toleration of all peaceable dissenters,) any further than they encroach on the natural or social rights of mankind ; nor are they so weak as not to distinguish between high dignities, great authority, and large revenues secured by law, and a poor maintenance arising from the voluntary contributions of the people, that is, between an *establishment* and a *toleration*.

But I am to attend to the charge of inconsistency brought against myself : I had observed, upon the reign of the bloody Queen *Mary*, § that an absolute supremacy over the consciences of men, lodged with a single person, might as well be prejudicial as serviceable to true religion : And in the beginning of the reign of Queen *Elizabeth*, || that the powers then claimed by the kings and queens of England, were in a manner the same with those claimed by the popes in the times preceding the reformation, except the administration of the spiritual offices of the church. This was THAT SUPREMACY, which was the ground-work of the reformation ; of which I say, let the reader judge how far these HIGH POWERS are agreeable or consistent with the natural rights of mankind. His lordship calls this a professed exposing the royal supremacy, and the rather, because “ THAT SUPREMACY was acknowledged, and sworn ‘ to by the old puritans themselves, though now inconsistently enough ‘ disowned and condemned by their historian.” But surely his lordship should have informed his clergy at the same time, in what sense the puritans took the oath, when it was before his eyes, in the same page ; and my words are these : “ The whole body of the papists refused the ‘ oath of supremacy, as inconsistent with their allegiance to the pope ; ‘ but the puritans took it under all these disadvantages, with the queen’s

† Dr. Gibson.

‡ See a late excellent Examination of the *Codex Juris Eccl. Angl.*

\* Charge, p. 46.

§ Hist. Pur. vol. i. p. 55.

|| Ibid. p. 85, 86.

‘explication in her injunctions, that is, that no more was intended, than that her majesty, under God, had the sovereignty and rule over all persons born in her realm, either ecclesiastical or temporal, so as no foreign power had, or ought to have any superiority over them.’\* Where is the inconsistency of this conduct of the old puritans, or their new historian? Or, where is the dissenter in England, who is not ready to swear to it with this explication?

But his lordship is pleased to reason upon this head, and in order to support *that absolute supremacy*, which was the ground-work of the reformation, affirms, that “all christian kings and emperors have the same power of reforming religion, and are under the same obligations, as the Jewish kings were in cases of the like nature,”† without producing the least evidence or proof; whereas his lordship knows, that the government of the Jews was a *theocracy*; that God himself was their king, and the laws of that nation strictly and properly the laws of God, who is Lord of conscience, and may annex what sanctions he pleases; their judges and kings were chosen and appointed by God, not to make a new *codex* or book of laws, either for church or state, but to keep the people to the strict observation of those laws and statutes that he himself had given them by the hand of *Moses*.

His lordship is pleased to ask, “if any high pretender to spiritual liberty, and the rights of conscience, should enquire what authority the respective Jewish and Christian powers had to interpose in matters that regarded the rights of conscience; since in fact their assumed supremacy was an usurpation of those natural rights?”§—I answer, that with regard to the Jews, it was no usurpation, for the reasons before mentioned; and when his lordship shall prove a transfer of the same power to all christian princes, the controversy will be brought to a short issue. “—But will it not be replied (says the bishop) that those kings and emperors were intrusted by God with the care of the ecclesiastical, as well as civil constitution?”|| If, by the care of the constitution, be meant no more than the preserving their subjects in the enjoyment of their unalienable rights, nobody denies it; but if, under this pretence, they assume a sovereign and arbitrary power of modelling the ecclesiastical constitution, according to their pleasure, and of enforcing their subjects obedience by canons and penal laws, I should doubt whether they are obliged to comply, even in things not absolutely sinful in themselves, because it may derogate from the kingly office of Christ, who is sole king and lawgiver in his own kingdom, and has not delegated this branch of his authority to any vicar general upon earth. But I readily agree with his lordship, that if any high pretender to the rights of conscience, should have asked the FIRST CHRISTIAN EMPERORS, by what authority they took on themselves the alteration or change of religion? THEY would have thought the question unreasonable, and worthy of censure; they would have affirmed their own sovereignty, and have taught the bold enquirers, as *Gideon* did the men of Succoth, with briars and thorns of the wilderness.

\* Hist. Pur. p. 81. See Strype's Ann. vol. i. p. 159.

† Charge, p. 20.

§ Charge, p. 21.

|| Ibid. p. 22.



The bishop goes on; "*Let us now transfer this power of Jewish kings and Christian emperors to our own kings, and the case will admit of an easy decision.*"† If indeed an absolute supremacy in matters of religion, be the natural and unalienable right of every christian king and emperor, the dispute is at an end; but if it depend upon a *transfer*, we must beg pardon, if we desire his lordship to produce his commission for transferring the *same powers*, that Almighty God gave the Jewish kings of his own appointment, to the first *Christian emperors*, who were neither chosen by God, nor the people, nor the senate of Rome, but usurped the supreme authority, by the assistance of the military arm, and were some of them the greatest tyrants and scourges of mankind.

His lordship adds, "*Have not the English kings, since the reformation, actually been invested with the SAME SUPREMACY, as the Jewish kings and Christian emperors were?*"† I answer, *such a supremacy is*, in my judgment, inconsistent with our present constitution, and the laws in being. *The supremacy claimed by King Henry VIII. and his successors, at the reformation, was found by experience too excessive, and therefore abridged in the reigns of King Charles I. and King William III.* No one doubts but the kings of England are obliged to protect religion, and defend the *establishment*, as long as the legislature think fit to continue it; but as they may not suspend or change it by their sovereign pleasure, so neither may they publish edicts of their own to enforce it, as was the case of the first christian emperors: The reader will excuse this digression, as necessary to support a principal fact of my history.

I am sufficiently aware of the delicacy of the affairs treated of in this volume, and of the tenderness of the ground I go over; and though I have been very careful of my temper and language, and have endeavored to look into the mysterious conduct of the several parties, with all the indifference of a spectator, I find it very difficult to form an exact judgment of the most important events, or to speak freely without offence; therefore if any passionate or angry writer should appear against this, or any of the former volumes, I humbly request the reader to pay no regard to personal reflections, or to insinuations of any ill designs against the established religion, or the public peace; which are entirely groundless. I am as far from vindicating the spirit and conduct of the warmer puritans, as of the governing prelates of those times; there was *hard measure* on both sides, though, if we separate politics from principles of pure religion, the balance will be very much in favor of the puritans. In historical debates, nothing is to be received upon *trust*, but *facts* are to be examined, and a judgment formed upon the authority by which *those facts* are supported; by this method we shall arrive at truth; and if it shall appear, that in the course of this long history, there are any considerable mistakes, the world may be assured, I will take the first opportunity to retract or amend them; having no private or party views, no prospect of preferment, or other

† Charge. p. 27.



reward for my labors, than the satisfaction of doing some service to truth, and to the religious and civil liberties of mankind; and yet, after all, I must bespeak the indulgence and candor of my readers, which *those*, who are sensible of the labor and toil of collecting so many materials, and ranging them in their proper order, will readily allow to *one*, who sincerely wishes the prosperity and welfare of all good men, and that the violence and outrage of these unhappy times, which brought such confusion and misery both on king and people, may never be imitated by the present, or any future age.

DANIEL NEAL.

London, Nov. 4, 1735.

## EDITOR'S ADVERTISEMENT.

FROM the two volumes of this edition of Mr. *Neal's* History of the Puritans, which are already before the public, it sufficiently appears in what manner it hath been conducted, so as to preclude any further explanation of the Editor's design and method. This volume will shew, that he has continued to examine the strictures of Bishop *Warburton* and Dr. *Grey*. He is not conscious of having been backward to meet the severest animadversions of those writers. The reader will judge with what care he has investigated, and with what success he has attempted to obviate, their objections.

The chief thing which the Editor has now to observe is, that in this volume he has pursued the History of some Sectaries, who sprang up among the *Puritans*, more fully than in the preceding ones; particularly that of the *English Baptists*; whose history has been written by Mr. *Crosby*, in four volumes octavo; a performance which is scarce; and, though not judiciously composed, it contains materials which, it is hoped, will form an acceptable addition to Mr. *Neal's* work, and render this edition of it more complete and valuable; as it will contain an abstract and the substance of the former to the period of time with which the latter concludes.

*Taunton, 11th February, 1795.*

CHAPTER II

THE HISTORY OF THE

CHAPTER III

THE HISTORY OF THE

THE HISTORY OF THE

THE HISTORY OF THE

THE HISTORY OF THE

THE HISTORY OF THE

THE HISTORY OF THE

THE HISTORY OF THE

THE HISTORY OF THE

THE HISTORY OF THE

THE HISTORY OF THE

THE HISTORY OF THE



THE  
HISTORY  
OF THE  
PURITANS.

---

CHAP. I.

*From the Battle of Edge-Hill to the Calling the Assembly of Divines at Westminster.*

THE king having recruited his army at Oxford, after the battle of Edge-Hill, by the assistance of the university, who now gave his majesty all their money, as they had before done their plate, resolved to pursue his march to London, in order to break up the parliament, and surprise the city; while the earl of *Essex*, imagining the campaign was ended, lay quiet about Warwick, till being informed of the king's designs, he posted to London, and ordered his forces to follow with all expedition. The earl arrived Nov. 7, 1642, and was honorably received by both houses of parliament, who presented him with a gratuity of five thousand pounds, and to strengthen his army passed an ordinance, that such apprentices as would list in their service should be entitled to a freedom of the city at the expiration of their apprenticeship, equally with those who continued with their masters. In the beginning of November, the king took possession of Reading without the least resistance, the parliament garrison having abandoned it, which alarmed both houses, and made them send an express to desire a safe conduct for a committee of lords and commons,

to attend his majesty with a petition for peace ;\* the committee waited on his majesty at Colnbrook, fifteen miles from London, and having received a favorable answer,§ reported it to the two houses, who immediately gave orders to forbear all acts of hostility, and sent a messenger to the king, to desire the like forbearance on his part ; but the committee had no sooner left Colnbrook, than his majesty, taking the advantage of a thick mist, advanced to Brentford about seven miles from London,† which he attacked with his whole army, Nov. 13, and after a fierce and bloody rencounter with the parliament garrison, wherein considerable numbers were driven into the Thames and slain, he got possession of the town, and took a great many prisoners. The consternation of the citizens on this occasion was inexpressible, imagining the king would be the next

\* Rushworth, vol. v. p. 58.

§ “ He seemed to receive the petition with great willingness ; and ‘ called God to witness, in many protestations, that he was tenderly ‘ compassionate of his bleeding people, and more desirous of nothing ‘ than a speedy peace.’ ” May’s Parliamentary History, b. iii. p. 33.— The immediate subsequent conduct of the king was, certainly, not consistent with such professions : yet Dr. Grey is displeased with Mr. Neal, for insinuating that it was a breach of promise, and accuses him of not giving the fairest account of this action, which he says, the king sufficiently justified. But, when the doctor passed this censure, it seems that he had not looked forward to the next paragraph, where the motives of the king’s behavior are stated. The committee, deputed by the parliament to Colnbrook, consisted of the earls of Northumberland and Pembroke, lord Wainman, Mr. Pierpont, sir John Ipsley, and sir John Evelyn : when the king refused to admit the last gentleman, because he had named him a traitor the day before, the parliament, though extremely displeased with the exception, so as to vote it a breach of privilege, yet, from their ardent desire of accommodation, permitted the petition to be presented without sir John Evelyn. May, b. iii. p. 32.— This yielding conduct leaves the king more inexcusable, as it serves to shew the sincerity of the parliament in *their* overtures ; and lord Clarendon says, that it was believed by many, that had the king retired to Reading, and waited there for the answer of the parliament, they would have immediately withdrawn their garrison from Windsor, and delivered that castle to his majesty for his accommodation to have carried on the treaty he had proposed. History, vol. ii. p. 73.— The motives, on which the king acted, in the action at Brentford, which Mr. Neal has compressed into one paragraph, Dr. Grey, by large quotations on different authorities, has extended through four pages, which affords a parade of confuting Mr. Neal. *Ed.*

† Whitlocke, p. 62.



morning at their gates ; upon which the lord-mayor ordered the trained bands immediately to join the earl of *Essex's* forces, which were just arrived at Turnham-Green, under the command of major-general *Skippon* ; and there being no further thoughts of peace, every one spirited up his neighbor, and all resolved as one man to live and die together. Major *Skippon* went from regiment to regiment, and encouraged his troops with such soldier like speeches as these ; *Come, my boys ! my brave boys ! I will run the same hazards with you ; remember the cause is for God and the defence of yourselves, your wives and children. Come, my honest brave boys ! let us pray heartily, and fight heartily, and God will bless us.* When they were drawn up, they made a body of about twenty-four thousand men eager for battle ; but their orders were only to be on the defensive, and prevent the king's breaking through to the city. The two armies having faced each other all day, his majesty retreated in the night to Kingston, and from thence to Reading, where having left a garrison, he returned to Oxford about the beginning of December with his Brentford prisoners, the chief of whom were condemned to die,|| and had been executed for high treason, if the two houses had not threatened to make réprisals.‡ The parliament,

|| Rushworth, vol. v. p. 93.

|| The persons named by Rushworth, whom Mr. Neal quotes, were Clifton Catesby, John Lilburne, and Robert Vivers. Dr. Grey says, that "it does not appear that these three were taken prisoners at Brentford." He should have added from *this* place in Rushworth, to which the reference is here made. For, in p. 83, Rushworth informs his readers with respect to Lilburne in particular, that *he* owned that *he* was at Brentford : and by the others being included in the same sentence, it is probable, that they were involved in the same charge of acting against the king at Brentford.

‡ On the authority of lord Clarendon and Mr. Eachard, Dr. Grey charges the chaplains of the parliament army, Dr. Downing and Mr. Marshall, with publicly avowing, "that the soldiers lately taken at Brentford, and discharged by the king upon their oaths that *they would never again bear arms against him*, were not obliged by that oath." and with absolving them from it. The doctor is also displeased with Mr. Oldmixon for treating this account as a falsehood. But he suppresses the grounds of Mr. Oldmixon's censure of it, which are these ; in the first place, that there was no occasion to use these arts, when the prisoners amounted to but 150 men, which could not be wanted

to prevent a like surprise of the city for the future, impowered the lord-mayor to cause lines of circumvallation to be drawn around it, and all the avenues fortified.

It was not without reason that the two houses complained of the king's extraordinary conduct on this occasion, which was owing to the violent counsels of prince *Rupert* and lord *Digby*, animated by some of his majesty's friends in the city, who imagined, that if the royal army appeared in the neighborhood of London, the parliament would accept of his majesty's pardon and break up; or else the confusions would be so great, that he might enter and carry all before him; but the project having failed, his majesty endeavored to excuse it in the best manner he could: he alleged, that there being no cessation of arms agreed upon, he might justly take all advantages against his enemies. He insisted further upon his fears of being hemmed in by the parliament's forces about Colnbrook, to prevent which, it seems, he marched seven miles nearer the city. Lord *Clarendon* says, § prince *Rupert* having advanced to Hounslow without order, his majesty at the desire of the prince marched forward, to disengage him from the danger of the forces quartered in that neighborhood; which is so very improbable, that in the opinion of Mr. *Rapin*, it is needless to refute it. || Upon the whole, it is extremely probable, the king came from Oxford with a design of surprising the city of London before the earl of *Essex's* army could arrive; but having missed his aim, he framed the best pretences to persuade the people, that his marching to Brentford was only in his own defence.

Though his majesty took all occasions to make offers of peace to his parliament, in hopes the nation would compel them to an agreement, by leaving him in possession of all his prerogatives, it is sufficiently evident he had no intentions to yield any thing to obtain it,\* for in his letter to duke *Hamilton*, dated December 2, 1642, he says, "He

when the city of London was pouring out recruits:—and then priestly absolution was not the practice, nor the power of it the claim, of puritan divines. Rushworth, vol. v. p. 59. Oldmixyn's History of the Stuarts, p. 214. Ed.

§ History, p. 21.

|| Rapin, vol. ii. p. 465, folio.

\* Without controverting Mr. Neal's authority, Dr. Grey calls this a bold assertion, and appeals to various messages for an accommodation,



‘ had set up his rest upon the *justice of his cause*, being resolved that no extremity or misfortune should make him yield, for (says his majesty) I will be either a glorious king or a patient martyr; and as yet not being the first, nor at this present apprehending the other, I think it no unfit time to express this my resolution to you.”\* The justice of the cause upon which his majesty had set up his rest, was *his declaration and promise to govern for the future according to the laws of the land*; but the point was, to know whether this might be relied upon. The two houses admitted the laws of the land to be the rule of government,† and that the executive power in time of peace was with the king;‡ but his majesty had so often dispensed with the laws by the advice of a corrupt ministry, after repeated assurances to the contrary thereof, that they durst not confide in his royal word, and insisted upon some additional security for themselves, and for the constitution.||

which the king sent to the parliament. But of what avail, to prove a yielding and accommodating temper, are speeches without actions; or softening overtures, unless they be followed up by mild and pacific measures, adopted with sincerity, and adhered to with firmness? Did Charles I. act with this consistency? Let them who are acquainted with the history of his reign answer the question. Even lord Clarendon owns his belief, that in matters of great moment, an opinion that the violence and force used in procuring bills rendered them absolutely void, influenced the king to confirm them. History, vol. i. p. 430.—What confidence could be placed in the profession and sincerity of a man who could be displeased with the earl of Northumberland, because he would not perjure himself for lord lieutenant Strafford? “Sidney’s State Papers” quoted by Dr. Harris, “Life of Charles I.” p. 79. who has fully stated the evidence of Charles’s dissimulation and want of faith. See also “An Essay towards a true idea of the character and ‘reign of Charles I.” p. 93, &c. *Ed.*

\* Duke of Hamilton’s Memoirs, b. iv. p. 203. † Rapin, vol. ii. p. 466.

‡ “Our laws have no where (that I know of) distinguished,” says Dr. Grey, “between times of peace or war, with regard to the king’s *executive power*.” This is true; but it was the infelicity of the times, of which Mr. Neal writes, that there arose new questions out of the present emergency for which the standing laws had made no provision; and difficulties to which they did not apply. *Ed.*

|| “Mr. Neal,” says Dr. Grey, “has not produced one single proof ‘in support of this assertion, and I challenge him to instance in particulars.” This may appear a bold challenge from a writer, who professed to be conversant in the history of those times. But the Doctor



On the other hand, his majesty averred the constitution was in no danger from him, but from themselves, who were acting every day in defiance of it. To which it was answered, that it was impossible the laws should have their due course in time of war as in the height of peace, because this must effectually tie up their hands. Neither party by *law* could raise money upon the subject, without each other's consent; the king could not do it without consent of parliament, nor the parliament without the royal assent, and yet both had practised it since the opening of the war. To have recourse, therefore, to the laws of a well-settled government in times of general confusion, was weak and impracticable. Besides, his majesty refused to give up any of his late ministers to the justice of parliament; for in his letter to duke *Hamilton*, he says, that *his abandoning the earl of Strafford had gone so near him, that he was resolved no consideration should make him do the like again*. Upon these resolutions, he declined the mediation of the Scots commissioners, which gave the several parties engaged against him, a fair opportunity of uniting their interests with that nation.

This was a nice and curious affair; the friends of the parliament, who were agreed in the cause of civil liberty, were far from being of one mind in points of church discipline; the major part were for episcopacy, and desired no more than to secure the constitution, and reform a few exorbitances of the bishops; some were *Erastians*, and would be content with any form of government the magistrate should appoint; the *real presbyterians*, who were for an entire change of the hierarchy upon the foot of *divine right*, were as yet but few, and could carry nothing in the house; it was necessary therefore in treating with the Scots, who contended earnestly for their kirk government, to deliver themselves in such general expressions, that each party might interpret them as they were inclined, or as should be expedient. This contented the Scots for the present, and left the parliament at full liberty, till they saw

has thrown it out, we will produce an instance of the king's violation of his word. He gave his assent to the *Petition of Right*, a kind of *MAGNA CHARTA*; which he immediately violated, and continued to do for twelve years together. "*Essay towards a True Idea,*" &c. p. 94. *Ed.*

what terms they could make with the king. Nor could the *church-men* be dissatisfied, because they knew if they could put a period to the war without the Scots, the two houses would not call in their assistance, much less submit to a kirk discipline they had no manner of acquaintance with ; and therefore lord *Clarendon* was of opinion, § that even at the treaty of Uxbridge, if the parliament could have obtained an act of oblivion for what was past, and good security for the king's governing by law, the *affair of religion* might easily have been compromised ; but it required all the prudence and sagacity the two houses were masters of, to keep so many different interests in points of religion, united in one common cause of liberty and the constitution, at a time when great numbers of the king's friends in the very city of London, were forming conspiracies to restore him without any terms at all.

The king's affairs had a promising aspect this winter ; his forces in the north under the earl of *Newcastle* were superior to those of lord *Ferdinando Fairfax*. In the western and midland counties there were several sieges and rencounters with various success, but nothing decisive. Divers counties entered into associations for their mutual defence on both sides.† The four northern counties, of Northumberland, Cumberland, Westmoreland, and Durham, associated for the king ;\* after which the two houses encouraged the like in those that owned their authority, and appointed generals to command their troops ; the chief of which was the eastern association of Essex, Cambridge-shire, the isle of Ely, Hertford, Norfolk, Suffolk, and the city of Norwich, whose militia were trained, and ready to march where necessity should require within their several limits. In some parts of England the inhabitants resolve

§ Dr. Grey asks, "where does lord Clarendon discover this opinion?" "As he" i. e. Mr. Neal, "is faulty even when he quotes his authorities. I am unwilling to take his word, when he makes no reference at all." What will the reader think of the candor of this insinuation, when he is told, that the passages to which Mr. Neal refers are to be found in p. 581 and 594 of the second volume of lord Clarendon's History ; and that they are expressly quoted, and the references are pointed out, in Mr. Neal's account of the treaty at Uxbridge? *Ed.*

† Rushworth, vol. v. p. 66.

\* Ibid. p. 94.



to stand neuter, and not be concerned on either side ; but the parliament condemned and disannulled all such agreements.

As the two houses depended upon the assistance of the Scots, his majesty had expectations of foreign aids from the queen, who had endeavored, by the influence of her son-in-law the prince of *Orange*, to engage the states of *Holland* in the king's interest, but they wisely declared for a neutrality ; however, they connived at her private negotiations, and gave her a general passport, by virtue whereof she transported a very large quantity of arms and ammunition to *Burlington-Bay*, and conveyed them to the king at *York*. His majesty also, in order to bring over the Irish forces under the command of the duke of *Ormond*, consented to a truce with the Irish rebels, [signed Sept, 15, 1643,] in which he allowed the *catholics* to remain in possession of what they had conquered since the rebellion, to the great grief of the protestants, who by this means were legally dispossessed of their estates : A most unpopular action, in favor of a people who, by their late massacre, were become the very reproach and infamy of human nature !\* Thus the whole kingdom was marshalled into parties, with their drawn swords eager to plunge them into each other's breasts. §

The parliament's cause having a dark and threatening aspect, the lords and commons were not forgetful to im-

\* To wipe off the reflections which this transaction brings on the character of Charles I. Dr. Grey is large in producing authorities to shew, that the situation of the protestants and of the army, in Ireland, through the length of the war, and the failure of supplies from England, required a cessation of arms. But, if the reader would see a full investigation of this business, he should consult Mrs. Macaulay's History, vol. iv. 8vo. p. 63—90. Two circumstances will afford a clue into the policy and design of this truce. To prevent opposition to it in the Irish council, the members who were suspected of an attachment to the parliament of England, were committed close prisoners to the Castle. And the king derived from it, as the price of granting it, 28,000*l.* to assist him to carry on the war against his protestant subjects in England. I will only add, that the main point aimed at by the rebels, and which the king encouraged them to expect, was a new parliament ; which, as the kingdom was circumstanced, would have put the whole power of government into their hands.

Mrs. Macaulay, p. 845. Ed.

§ Rushworth, vol. v. p. 537, 538, 539, 548.



plore the divine blessing upon their counsels and arms ; for which purpose they published an ordinance, Feb. 15, 1642-3, exhorting to the duty of *repentance*, as the only remedy to prevent public calamities. It was drawn up by some of the puritan divines ; and because bishop *Kennet* has branded it with the reproachful characters of *cant*, *broad hypocrisy*, and a *libel against the church*, I will transcribe the substance of it in their own words.

“ That flourishing kingdoms have been ruined, by im-  
‘ penitent going on in a course of sin, the sacred story  
‘ plainly tells us ; and how near to ruin our sinful nation  
‘ now is, the present lamentable face of it does too plainly  
‘ shew. And though we should feel the heavy strokes of  
‘ God’s judgments yet seven times more, it is our duty to  
‘ accept the punishment of our iniquities, and to say, *Righ-*  
‘ *teous art thou, O Lord, and just are thy judgments*. Yet,  
‘ because the Lord, who is just, is also merciful, and in his  
‘ infinite mercy has left the excellent and successful reme-  
‘ dy of *repentance* to nations brought near to the gates of  
‘ destruction and despair, O ! let not England be negli-  
‘ gent in the application of it. Humble addresses of a  
‘ penitent people to a merciful God have prevailed with  
‘ him : They have prevailed for Nineveh when sentence  
‘ seemed to be gone out against her ; and may also pre-  
‘ vail for England.

“ It is therefore thought necessary, by the lords and  
‘ commons in parliament assembled, that all his majesty’s  
‘ subjects be stirred up to lay hold of this only and unfaill-  
‘ ing remedy of *repentance*, freely acknowledging, and  
‘ heartily bewailing with deepest humiliation, both their  
‘ own personal sins, and those of the nation ; a confession  
‘ of national sins being most agreeable to the national judg-  
‘ ments under which the land groans, and most likely to  
‘ be effectual for the removing of them.

“ Among the national sins are to be reckoned, *the con-*  
‘ *tempt of God’s ordinances, and of holiness itself ; gross*  
‘ *ignorance, and unfruitfulness under the means of grace ;*  
‘ *multitudes of oaths, blasphemies, profanation of the sab-*  
‘ *bath by sports and games ; luxury, pride, prodigality in*  
‘ *apparel, oppression, fraud, violence, &c. a connivance,*  
‘ *and almost a toleration of the idolatry of popery, the mas-*

‘sacre of Ireland, and the bloodshed of the martyrs in queen Mary’s time, which, having been a national sin, still calls for a national confession.

“Now, that all the sin and misery of this polluted and afflicted nation may be bitterly sorrowed for, with such grief of heart, and preparedness for a thorough reformation, as God may be pleased graciously to accept, it is ordained that all preachers of God’s word do earnestly inculcate these duties on their hearers, that at length we may obtain a firm and happy peace, both with God and man; that glory may dwell in our land; and the prosperity of the gospel, with all the privileges accompanying it, may crown this nation unto all succeeding ages.”\*

The reverend prelate abovementioned makes the following remark upon this ordinance. “When once the two houses could descend to have such fulsome penitential forms put upon them, to adopt, and to obtrude in their name upon the nation, it was a sure sign, that all that was sound and decent in faith and worship was now to be commanded into enthusiasm and endless schisms.” I leave the reader to examine, whether he can find any ground for so severe a censure.

Though the king had rejected the Scots mediation, and set up his rest upon the justice of his cause, he was pleased before the beginning of the campaign to admit of a treaty with his two houses, for which purpose he sent a safe conduct to six lords, and as many commoners, with their attendants, to repair to him at Oxford, who, being admitted to an audience in one of the colleges, produced the following *proposals*, which were read by the earl of Northumberland:—

1. “That the armies may be disbanded on both sides, and the king return to his parliament.
2. “That delinquents may submit to a legal trial, and judgment of parliament.
3. “That all papists be disbanded and disarmed.
4. “That his majesty will please to give his consent to the five bills hereafter mentioned.

\* Rushworth, vol. v. p. 141.

5. "That an oath may be established by act of parliament, wherein the papists shall abjure and renounce the pope's supremacy, transubstantiation, purgatory, worshipping the consecrated host, crucifixes and images; and the refusing such oath lawfully tendered shall be a sufficient conviction of recusancy.—That your majesty will graciously please to consent to a bill for the education of the children of papists in the protestant religion.—And to another bill for the better putting the laws in execution against them.

6. "That the earl of *Bristol*, and lord *Herbert*, may be removed from your majesty's counsels, and from the court.

7. "That the militia may be settled in such manner as shall be agreed upon by both houses.

8. "That the chief justices and judges of the several courts of law may hold their places *quam diu se bene gesserint*.

9. "That such persons as have been put out of the commissions of the peace since April, 4, 1642, may be restored, and that those whom the parliament shall except against be removed.

10. "That your majesty will please to pass the bill now presented, to secure the privileges of parliament from the ill consequences of the late proceedings against the lord *Kimbolton* and the five members.

11. "That an act may be passed for satisfying such public debts as the parliament has engaged the public faith for.

12. "That your majesty will please to enter into alliances with foreign protestant powers, for the defence of the protestant religion, and recovering the *Palatinate*.

13. "That in the general pardon, all offences committed before the 10th of Jan. 1641, which have been, or shall be questioned in the house of commons before the 10th of Jan. 1643, be excepted.—That all persons concerned in the Irish *rebellion* be excepted; as likewise *William* earl of *Newcastle*, and *George* lord *Digby*.

14. "That such members of parliament as have been turned out of their places since the beginning of this parliament may be restored, and may have some reparation, upon the petition of both houses."\*

\* Rushworth, vol. v. p. 165, 166.



These things being granted and performed, we shall be enabled (say they) to make it our hopeful endeavor, that your majesty and your people may enjoy the blessings of peace, truth, and justice.—

The bills mentioned in the fourth proposition were these :

The first is entitled, *an act for the suppression of divers innovations in churches and chapels in and about the worship of God ; and for the due observation of the Lord's day, and the better advancement of preaching God's holy word in all parts of this kingdom.*

It enacts, “That all altars and rails be taken away out of churches and chapels before April 18, 1643, and that the communion table be fixed in some convenient place in the body of the church. That all tapers, candlesticks, basons, crucifixes, crosses, images, pictures of saints, and superstitious inscriptions in churches, or church-yards, be taken away or defaced.

“That all damages done to the churches, or windows of churches, by the removal of any of the aforesaid innovations, be repaired by the proper officers of the parish or chapel.

“This act is not to extend to any image, picture, or monument for the dead.

It enacts further, “That all bowing towards the altar, or at the name of *Jesus*, shall be forborne ; and for the better observation of the sabbath, that all dancing, gaming, sports and pastimes, shall be laid aside. That every minister that has cure of souls shall preach, or expound the scriptures, or procure some other able divine to preach to his congregation every Lord's day in the forenoon ; and it shall be lawful for the parishoners to provide for a sermon in the afternoon, and a lecture on the week-day, where there is no other lecture, or preaching at the same time ; and if any person oppose or hinder them, he shall forfeit forty shillings to the poor.”†

The second, entitled *an act for the utter abolishing, and taking away of all archbishops, bishops, their chancellors, and commissaries, &c.* has been already inserted in the former part of this history.‡

† Husband's Collections, fol. 449.

‡ Vol. ii. p. 545, 6.

The third is entitled, *an act for punishing scandalous clergymen, and others.*

It ordains, "That the lord-chancellor, or lord-keeper, for the time being, shall award commissions under the great seal, to persons of worth and credit in every county of England and Wales; which commissions, or any three or more of them, shall have power to enquire by the oaths of twelve lawful men of the said county of the following offences in the clergy, viz. not preaching six times at least in a year, by any ecclesiastical person having cure of souls under the age of sixty, and not hindered by sickness or imprisonment; of blasphemy, perjury, or subornation of perjury, fornication, adultery, common ale-house or tavern hunting, drunkenness, profane swearing or cursing, done or committed within three years past, by any parson or vicar, or other person having cure of souls, or by any lecturer, curate, stipendiary, schoolmaster, or usher of any school. The commissioners shall take information by articles in writing; the party complaining to be bound in a recognizance of ten pounds to prosecute at a time appointed: the articles of complaint being first delivered to the party complained of, twenty days before the trial, that he may prepare for his defence. Upon conviction, by the verdict of twelve men, the party complained of shall be deprived of his spiritual promotions, and be adjudged a disabled person in law, to have and enjoy the same incumbency or ecclesiastical promotion. This act to continue till Nov. 4, 1645, and no longer."\*

The fourth is entitled, *an act against the enjoying pluralities of benefices by spiritual persons, & non-residence.*

It enacts, "That all persons that have two or more benefices with cure of souls, of what yearly value soever they be, shall resign them all but one, before April 1, 1643, any licence, toleration, faculty, or dispensation to the contrary notwithstanding.

"That if any spiritual person, having cure of souls, shall be absent from his cure above ten Sundays, or eigh-

\* Husband's Collections, fol. 140.

‘ty days in a year, except in case of sickness, imprisonment, or except he be a reader in either university, or be summoned to convocation; and be thereof lawfully convicted in any court of justice, that his *living* shall be deemed void, and the patron have power to nominate another person, as if the former incumbent was dead.”

The fifth, *for calling an assembly of learned and godly divines to be consulted with by the parliament, for the settling of the government and liturgy of the church, and for the vindication and clearing of the doctrine of the church of England from false aspersions and interpretations*, will be inserted at large, when we come to the sitting of the assembly.

To the forementioned propositions and bills, his majesty, after a sharp reply\* to the preamble, returned the following answer: That though many of them were destructive of his just power and prerogative, yet because they might be mollified and explained upon debates, he is pleased to agree that a time and place be appointed for the meeting of commissioners on both sides to discuss them, and to consider the following proposals of his own.

1. “That his majesty’s revenues, magazines, towns, forts, and ships, may be forthwith restored.

2. “That whatsoever has been done or published, contrary to the known laws of the land, and his majesty’s legal rights, may be renounced and recalled.

3. “That whatever illegal power over his majesty’s subjects has been exercised by either, or both houses, or any committee, may be disclaimed, and all persons that have been imprisoned by virtue thereof be forthwith discharged.

4. “That a good bill may be framed, for the better preserving the book of *common prayer* from the scorn and violence of *Brownists*, *Anabaptists*, and other sectaries,

\* Dr. Grey disputes the propriety of this epithet, applied to the king’s reply. The reader may judge of it by referring to Lord Clarendon’s History, vol. ii. p. 123, &c. *Ed.*



‘with such clauses for the ease of tender consciences as his majesty has formerly offered.’]

5. “That all persons to be excepted out of the general pardon shall be tried *per pares*, according to common course of law, and that it be left to that, to acquit or condemn them.

6. “That in the mean time there be a cessation of arms, and free trade for all his majesty’s subjects for twenty days.”

His majesty desired the last article might be first settled, by which he proposed not only to gain time, but to provide himself with several necessaries from London, and to convoy safely to Oxford the ammunition and other stores the queen had lately landed at Burlington Bay ;† but the parliament were too sensible of his designs to consent to it. They therefore empowered their commissioners to begin with the first proposition, concerning, *restoring the revenues of the crown, and the delivery of his majesty’s magazines, towns, forts, and ships, &c.* All which they were authorized to agree to, on condition the persons with whom he would intrust them were such as they could confide in. To which the king replied, that the oaths of the officers were a sufficient security, and if they abused their trust he would leave them to the law. The commissioners then went upon the other articles, and spun out the treaty till the 12th of April, without concluding one single point. The king would be restored to the condition he was in before the war, upon a bare promise, that he would govern for the future according to law ; but the parliament were resolved not to trust themselves nor the constitution in his hands, without the redress of some grievances, and a better security. Mr. *Whitlock* says, that the commissioners (of which he was one) having been with the king one evening till midnight, gave his majesty such reasons to consent to a very material point, which would have much conduced to an happy issue, and success of the treaty, that *he told them, he was fully satisfied, and promised to let them have his answer in writing, accord-*

|| The king had never made any offer of this kind but in general terms. Mrs. Macaulay. *Ed.*

† Rapin, vol. ii. p. 476. folio.

*ing to their desire next morning.\** But when the commissioners were withdrawn, some of the king's bed-chamber, and they went higher, fearing the king's concessions would tend to peace, never left persuading him, till he had altered his resolution, and gave orders for the following answer to be drawn up, directly contrary to what he had promised the commissioners.†

“As soon as his Majesty is satisfied concerning his own revenue, magazines, ships, and forts, in which he desires nothing, but that the just known legal rights of his Majesty, devolved to him from his progenitors, and of the persons trusted by him, which have violently been taken from both, be restored to him and them——

“As soon as all the members of both houses shall be restored to the same capacity of sitting and voting in parliament as they had on the 1st of Jan. 1644, the same right belonging unto them by their birthrights, and the free elections of those that sent them; and having been voted from them for adhering to his Majesty in these distractions; his Majesty not intending that this should extend either to the bishops, whose votes have been taken away by bill; or to such in whose places, upon new writs, new elections have been made.

“As soon as his Majesty and both houses may be secured from such tumultuous assemblies, as to the great breach of the privileges, and the high dishonor of parliaments, have formerly assembled about both houses, and

\* Whitlock's Memoirs, p. 65.

† Dr. Grey censures Mr. Neal, for not giving his reader Mr. Whitlock's account of the king's great civility to the parliament commissioners. We will supply the omission. “The commissioners were allowed by his majesty, a very free debate with him, and had access to him at all times. He used them with great favor and civility; and his General Ruthen and divers of his lords and officers came frequently to their table. The king himself did them the honor sometimes to accept of part of their wine and provisions, which the earl (viz. of Northumberland) sent to him when they had any thing extraordinary.” Whitlock adds; “In this treaty the king manifested his great parts and abilities, strength of reason, and quickness of apprehension, with much patience in hearing what was objected against him; wherein he allowed all freedom.” Memorists, p. 65. *Ed.*

‘awed the members of the same ; and occasioned two several complaints from the house of lords, and two several desires of that house to the house of commons, to join in a declaration against them, the complying with which desire might have prevented all the miserable distractions which have ensued ; which security his majesty conceives can be only settled by adjourning the parliament to some other place, at the least twenty miles from London, the choice of which his majesty leaves to both houses.

“ His majesty will then most cheerfully and readily consent, that both armies be immediately disbanded, and give a present meeting to both his houses of parliament, at the same time and place, at and to which the parliament shall agree to be adjourned.

“ His majesty, being confident that the law will then recover its due credit and estimation, and that upon a free debate, in a full and peaceable convention of parliament, such provisions will be made against seditious preaching and printing against his majesty, and the established laws, which hath been one of the chief causes of the present distractions ; and such care will be taken concerning the legal and known rights of his majesty, and the property and liberty of his subjects, that whatsoever hath been published or done in, or by color of any illegal declarations, ordinances, or order of one or both houses, or any committee of either of them, and particularly the power to raise arms without his majesty’s consent, will be in such manner recalled, disclaimed, and provided against, that no seed will remain for the like to spring out of for the future, to disturb the peace of the kingdom, and to endanger the very being of it.”§

This resolute answer broke off the treaty, and left the quarrel to be decided by the sword ; upon which bishop *Kennet* makes the following remark : “ It is to be lamented, that some of the king’s most intimate friends were against his concluding a peace, and others were against his obtaining an absolute victory. They were afraid he should comply, lest his prerogative might not be great enough to protect him ; and yet afraid he should conquer,



‘lest he might be tempted to assume an arbitrary power.’\* It is plain from hence, that by *peace* the king meant nothing but being restored to all the prerogatives of his crown as before the war, without any additional security ; and that there was no room for a treaty till the previous question was determined, *Whether there was just reason to confide in the king, and restore him to his rights upon his bare promise of governing by law for the future ?* For all the propositions necessarily led to this point, and till this was decided it was in vain to lose time upon the others.

Thus ended the year 1642, in which died the famous *Tobias Crisp*, D. D. third son of *Ellis Crisp*, of London, esq. he was born in Bread-street, London, 1600. educated at Eton-school, and having taken the degree of bachelor of arts at Cambridge retired to Oxford, and was incorporated into Baliol college in the beginning of Feb. 1626. In the year 1627, he became rector of Brinkworth in Wiltshire, and a few years after proceeded D. D. At Brinkworth he was much followed for his edifying manner of preaching, and for his great hospitality. Upon the breaking out of the war he was obliged to fly to London, to avoid the insolencies of the king’s soldiers ; where his peculiar sentiments about the doctrines of *grace* being discovered, he met with a vigorous opposition from the city divines. The doctor in his younger years had been a favorer of *arminianism*, but changing his opinions, he ran into the contrary extreme of *antinomianism*. He was certainly a learned and religious person, modest and humble in his behavior, fervent and laborious in his ministerial work, and exact in his morals. Mr. Lancaster, the publisher of his works, says, “That his life was so innocent and harmless from all evil, so zealous and fervent in all good, that it seemed to be designed as a practical confutation of the slander of those who would insinuate, that his doctrine tended to licentiousness.” The doctor was possessed of a very large estate, with which he did a great deal of good ; but being engaged in a grand dispute against several opponents (if we may believe Mr. *Wood*) he overheated himself, and fell sick of the small-pox, of which he

died Feb. 27, 1642, and was buried in the family vault in Bread-street, London.\* In his last sickness he was in a most comfortable and resigned frame of mind, and declared to them that stood by, his firm adherence to the doctrines he had preached; that as he had lived in the belief of the free grace of God through Christ, so he did now with confidence and great joy, even as much as his present condition was capable of, resign his life and soul into the hands of his heavenly father. He published nothing in his lifetime, but after his death his sermons were published in three volumes from his notes, which, with some additions, were reprinted by his son, in one volume quarto, about the year 1689, and gave occasion to some intemperate heats among the non-conformist ministers of those times.

Towards the end of this year died *Robert* lord *Brooke*, a virtuous and religious gentleman, a good scholar, and an eminent patriot, but a determined enemy of the hierarchy. In the beginning of the war he took part with the parliament, and being made lord lieutenant of the counties of Warwick and Stafford, put himself at the head of twelve hundred men, and marched against the earl of *Chesterfield* at Litchfield, whom he dislodged from the town, March 1, but the next day, as he was looking out of a window with his beaver up, and giving direction to his soldiers to assault St. Chad's church, adjoining to the close where the earl of *Chesterfield's* forces lay, a musket-ball struck him near the left eye, of which he instantly died. The Parliamentary Chronicle§ calls him "the most noble, and ever-to-be honored, and renowned, pious lord *Brooke*, whose most illustrious name and memory, both for his piety, prudence, incomparable magnanimity, and heroic martial spirit, for his loyalty to the king, and fidelity to his country, deserves to remain deeply engraven in letters of gold on high-erected pillars of marble."† On the other hand archbishop *Laud*, in his Diary,|| has some very remarkable observations upon his death, which shew the superstition of that prelate. "*First*, (says his grace) I observe, that this great and known enemy to cathedral churches died

\* Wood's Athen. Oxon. vol. ii. p. 12, 13. § P. 272.

† Parliamentary Chronicle, p. 272. || P. 211.



‘thus fearfully, in the assault of a *cathedral*; a fearful manner of death in such a quarrel! *Secondly*, That this happened upon St. Chad’s day, of which saint the cathedral bears the name. *Thirdly*, That this lord coming from dinner about two years since from the lord *Herbert’s* house in Lambeth, upon some discourse of St. *Paul’s* church then in their eye upon the water, said to some young lords that were with him, that he hoped to live to see that one stone of that building should not be left upon another; but that church stands yet, and that eye is put out, that hoped to see the ruins of it.”†

While the treaty of Oxford was depending, his majesty’s friends in the city were contriving to bring him to London, and deliver the parliament into his hands.‡ Mr. *Tomkins*, *Chaloner*, and *Waller* a member of the House of Commons, in conjunction with some others, were to carry off the king’s children, to secure the most active members of the house of commons, as Mr. *Pym*, *Hampden*, *Strode*, &c. to seize the Tower and the gates of the city, with the magazines, and to let in a party of the royal forces, who were to be at hand; for all which they had the king’s commission, dated March 16, 1643. The day of rising was to be the last Wednesday in May: but the plot being discovered by a servant of *Tomkins’s* before it was ripe for execution, the conspirators were apprehended and tried; *Tomkins* and *Chaloner* confessed the facts, and were executed; but *Waller* purchased his life for ten thousand pounds, and was banished.||

Upon this discovery both houses resolved to strengthen themselves by a new *covenant* or *vow*, which was tendered first to their own members, then to the army, and such of

† “It was the opinion of some of the royalists, and especially of the Roman Catholics, that the bullet was directed by St. Chad. It is observable, that the same man who was by one party looked upon as a monument of divine vengeance, (see South’s Sermons, i. 270) was by the other revered as a saint. Baxter has placed him in heaven (Saint’s Everlasting Rest, p. 82, 83, edit. 1649) together with White, Pym, and Hampden.” Granger’s History of England, vol. ii. p. 144, 8vo. See also Mrs. Macaulay’s History, v. iii. p. 417, 18, note, 8vo. *Ed.*

‡ Rushworth, vol. v. p. 322. Rapin, vol. ii. p. 487, folio.

|| Rushworth, p. 326, 27.



the people as were willing to take it. § In it they declare 'their abhorrence of the late plot, and engage not to lay 'down their arms as long as the papists were protected 'from justice, but to assist the parliament according to their 'abilities in the just defence of the protestant religion, and 'the liberties of the subject, against the forces raised by 'the king without their consent.' Nevertheless the king's friends were not disheartened from entering into several other combinations against the parliament; one was discovered in August, and another towards the latter end of the year: even the lower sort of women, to the number of two or three thousand, with white silk ribbons in their hats, went in a body to Westminster with a petition for peace upon the king's terms, and could not be dispersed without the military arm: † all which was occasioned by the correspondence the king held in London, notwithstanding the ordinance the parliament had published in April last, to prevent spies and intelligencies from Oxford or the royal army, coming to any part of the parliament's quarters.

The king, having failed in his designs of surprising the city, resolved at last to starve the citizens into their duty, for which purpose he issued a proclamation, July 17, prohibiting all intercourse of trade and commerce with them, and expressly forbidding all persons to travel to London, or to carry any goods, merchandize or provisions thither, without special license from himself. ‡ By another proclamation [Oct. 17,] his majesty forbids his subjects of Scotland, and all foreign kingdoms and states in amity with him, to bring any ammunition, provision, goods, or merchandize, of any sort to London, or any other town or city in rebellion against him. The prohibiting foreign merchandizes had very little influence upon the trade of the city, because the parliament were masters of the seas; but the town of Newcastle being garrisoned by the king, the Londoners were distressed the following winter for coals, which obliged them to have recourse to the digging turf, and cutting down all *fell wood* on the estates of *delinquents* within sixty miles of London. By another proclamation his

§ Rushworth, vol. v. p. 325.

† Ibid. p. 357.

‡ Husband's Collections, folio, 237, 366.

majesty forbid all his subjects, upon pain of high treason, to obey the orders of parliament; and all tenants to pay their rents to such landlords as adhered to the rebellion, but to reserve them for his majesty's use.

After this account of things, it is reasonable to suppose that very extraordinary burdens must be laid upon the people on both sides to support the expences of the war. The parliament at Westminster excised every thing, even the necessaries of life: all *butchers meat* paid one shilling in twenty; every *rabbit* an halfpenny; and *pigeons* one penny in the dozen. The king's parliament at Oxford did the like in his majesty's quarters; and by an ordinance of March 26th following, all persons within the cities of London and Westminster, and the bills of mortality, were to pay the weekly value of *one meal* a week, on every Tuesday, for the public service, which they were supposed to abate in their families.\* Such were the hardships of the times!

The king's affairs this summer were very prosperous, and threatened the ruin of his enemies; for besides his army, which had been recruiting in the winter, the queen furnished him with foreign money, and with two thousand foot, a thousand horse, a hundred waggons laden with ammunition of all sorts, six pieces of cannon, and two mortars.† Upon which the house of commons impeached her of *high treason*, for levying forces without consent of parliament. In the month of April the earl of *Essex* besieged and took the town of Reading, from whence he marched within ten miles of Oxford, where prince *Rupert* with a party of horse beat up his quarters, and killed the famous Mr. *Hampden* in Chalgrave Field, after which *Essex* retired, and put his sickly forces into quarters of refreshment. In the north the king's armies had a train of successes. Lord *Fairfax* was defeated by the earl of *Newcastle* at Atherston Moor, June 30, and sir *William Waller* at the battles of Lansdown and Roundaway-down, July 5th and 13th, which was followed with the loss of Weymouth, Dorchester, Portland Castle, Exeter, and al-

\* For a more minute detail of the ways by which the parliament raised money, see Dr. Grey, vol. ii. p. 42, &c. and "Historical Account of all Taxes," p. 296, 7.

† Rapin, vol. ii. p. 477, folio.



most all the west. About the latter end of July prince *Rupert* besieged and took the city of Bristol, and the king himself sat down before Gloucester, [Aug. 10th] which so alarmed the two houses, that the shops in London were ordered to be shut till the siege was raised, and a strong body of the trained bands dispatched to join the earl of *Essex's* broken troops, who, by this means, was in a condition in fifteen days to march to the relief of that important city; upon the earl's approach the king raised the siege, and *Essex* entered the town, when reduced to the last extremity; and having supplied it with necessaries, after three days returned towards London. The king being joined by prince *Rupert* with five thousand horse, got before him to Newbury, where both armies engaged with pretty equal success, till night parted them, when his majesty retired to Oxford, and left the way open for the earl to pursue his march.\* In this battle the city trained bands, by their undaunted bravery, are said to have gained immortal honor. But it is the opinion of most historians, that if, instead of sitting down before Gloucester, the king had marched his victorious army directly to London after the taking of Bristol, he might have put an end to the war, the parliament being in no readiness to oppose him; however, it is certain, that about this time the royal cause was in the height of its prosperity, and the parliament's at so low an ebb, that they were obliged to throw themselves into the hands of the Scots. It is no part of my design to give a particular description of sieges and battles, or a recital of the military exploits of the heroes of these times, any further than to inform the reader of the true situation of affairs, and to enable him to form a just idea of the grounds and reasons of those extraordinary measures that each party took for the support of their cause. Let us now, therefore, attend the affairs of the church.

The clergy on both sides had a deep share in the calamities of the times, being plundered, harrassed, imprisoned, and their livings sequestered, as they fell into the hands of the enemy. 'The king's party were greatly incensed against the *puritan clergy*, as the chief incendiaries

\* Rushworth, vol. v. p. 293, 94.



of the people and trumpeters of rebellion. Such as refused to read the king's proclamations and orders against the parliament were apprehended, and shut up in the common gaols of York, and other places within his majesty's quarters. When any parties of the royal army got possession of a town that adhered to the parliament, they enquired presently for the *minister's house*, which was rifled and plundered of every thing that was valuable, and himself imprisoned, if he could be found; but the *incumbents* usually took care to avoid the danger, by flying to the next parliament garrison. Above thirty puritan ministers took shelter in the city of Coventry after the fight of Edge-Hill. Great numbers came to London with their families in a naked and starving condition, leaving their books, and every thing they could not bring away, to the mercy of the king's soldiers. The prisoners underwent uncommon hardships, and would have been executed as *rebels*, if the parliament had not threatened reprisals.

On the other hand, the *episcopal clergy* were no less harrassed by the parliament soldiers; these being in possession of the best livings in the church, were liable to suffer the greatest damage; multitudes of them left their cures, and took sanctuary in the king's armies or garrisons, having disposed of their goods and chattels in the best manner they could. Others, who had rendered themselves obnoxious by their sermons, or declarations for the king, were put under confinement in Lambeth, Winchester, Ely, and most of the bishops' houses about London; and for want of room about twenty (according to Dr. *Walker*) were imprisoned on board of ships in the river Thames, and shut down under decks, no friend being suffered to come to them.\* The same writer observes, that about one hundred and ten of the London clergy were turned out of their livings in the year 1642, and 1643, and that as many more fled to prevent imprisonment: yet it ought to be remembered, that none were turned out or imprisoned, for their adhering to the doctrine or discipline of the church of England, till after the imposing of the Scots covenant, but for immorality, false doctrine, non-residence, or for taking part with the king against the parliament. How-

\* Walker's Suffering Clergy, part ii. p. 180.

ever, it is to be lamented that several pious and worthy bishops, and other clergymen, who withdrew from the world, and were desirous to live peaceably without joining either side, suffered afterwards in common with the rest of their brethren; their estates and livings being sequestered, their houses and goods plundered by ungovernable soldiers, and themselves reduced to live upon the *fifths*, or a small pension from the parliament, either because they could not take the *covenant*, or comply with the new directory for public worship. Among these we may reckon the most reverend archbishop *Usher*, bishop *Morton*, *Hall*, and many others. When the bishops' lands were seized for the service of the war, which was called *Bellum Episcopale*, or the *Bishops' War*, it was not possible to shew favor to any under that character; and though the two houses voted very considerable pensions to some of the bishops, in lieu of their lands that were sequestered, due care was not taken of the payment; nor would several of their lordships so far countenance the votes of the houses as to apply for it.

In order to account for these things, it will be necessary to set before the reader the proceedings of the several committees of religion from the beginning of the present parliament. It has been remembered, that a grand committee, consisting of the whole house of commons, was appointed November 6th, 1640, to enquire into the *scandalous immoralities of the clergy*,\* of which the famous *Mr. White*, member of parliament for Southwark, a good lawyer, and, according to *Mr. Whitlock*, an honest, learned, and faithful servant of the public, was chairman. Great numbers of petitions, with articles of misbehavior, were brought before them, relating to superstition, heresy, or the immorality of their ministers, insomuch that the house was forced to branch the committee into several sub-divisions, for the quicker dispatch of business. November 19, 1640, a *sub-committee* was appointed "to consider how there may be *preaching ministers* set up where there are none; how they may be maintained where there is no maintenance, and all other things of that nature; also to enquire into the true grounds and causes of the great scarcity of preach-

\* Walker's Attempt, p. 63.



‘ing ministers throughout the kingdom, and to consider of ‘some way of removing scandalous ministers, and putting ‘others in their places.” For which purposes the knights of shires and burgesses of the several corporations were ordered to bring informations within six weeks, of the state of religion in their respective counties. The sub-committee consisted of sixty-one members, together with the knights and burgesses of Northumberland, Wales, Lancashire, Cumberland, and the burgesses of Canterbury. Mr. *White* was chairman of this, as well as of the grand committee; they had their regular meetings in the *Court of Wards*, and from the *powers* abovementioned, were sometimes called the committee for *preaching ministers*, but more usually for *scandalous ministers*. They had the inspection of all hospitals and free-schools, and were authorised to consider of the expediency of sending commissions into the several counties, to examine such clergymen as were accused, and could not with convenience be brought up to London.

But presentments against the clergy came in so fast, that for the dispatch of business they were obliged to divide again into several smaller committees, which from the names of the gentlemen in the respective chairs, were called Mr. *White’s*, *Corbet’s*, Sir *Robert Harlow’s* and Sir *Edward Deering’s* committees, &c.\* Within a short space above two thousand petitions were brought before them, of which Mr. *Corbet’s* committee had no less than nine hundred. Great complaints have been made of their severity, by those who will not believe the clergy were so corrupt as really they were; nor remember the political principles for which most of them suffered. The forms of proceeding in the committee were certainly unexceptionable, for they were obliged to give proper notice to the party accused to make his appearance; the witnesses were usually examined upon oath in his presence; a copy of the articles was given him if desired, and a reasonable time assigned to prepare for his defence.† The articles of enquiry on which they proceeded were, 1. Scandalous immoralities of life, as drunkenness, swearing, incontinency, and sometimes blasphemy and sodomy. 2. False or scandalous doctrine,

\* Walker’s Attempt, p. 65.

† Ibid. p. 81.



*i. e.* popish and arminian, these being understood to be inconsistent with the articles of the church of England. 3. Profanation of the sabbath, by reading and countenancing the book of sports. 4. Practising and pressing the late innovations, after they had been censured by the parliament as illegal. 5. Neglect of their cures, by not preaching according to their duty. 6. Malignancy and disaffection to the parliament, discovered by their assisting his majesty with money, and persuading others to do so; by reading the king's declarations, and refusing to read the parliament's; by not observing the parliament's fasts, but calling them *rebels, traitors, and wishing the curse of God upon them and their cause*. These were apprehended reasonable matters of enquiry, and just grounds of exception, as matters stood between the king and the two houses.—And after all, the final determination was not with the committee; their opinion, with the evidence, was first laid before the grand committee, then it was reported to the whole house, and finally referred to the house of lords before it was decisive. One would think, here should be little room for complaint, and yet there was too much passion and prejudice on both sides, which was owing to the confusion of the times, and the violent resentments of each party. The commissioners were too forward in exposing the failings of the clergy, and encouraging witnesses of slender credit; on the other hand, the clergy were insufferably rude to the committee, defaming their witnesses, and threatening revenge, for being obliged to plead their cause before laymen. However, few clergymen were sequestered by the committee for scandalous ministers before it was joined with that for *plundered ministers*; an account of which I shall lay before the reader, after I have given two or three examples of the proceedings of the present committee, from the relations of those clergymen who have left behind them an account of their sufferings.

The first is Mr. *Symmonds*, of Rayne in Essex, who acknowledges, that he was sequestered for preaching and publishing, that “the king being the supreme magistrate hath immediate dependance on God, to whom alone he is accountable——That authority is a sacred thing, and essential to the king's person——That resistance is against

‘the way of God, destructive to the whole law of God, inconsistent with the spirit of the gospel, the perpetual practice of Christianity, the calling of ministers, common prudence, the rule of humanity, nature itself, reason, the oath of allegiance, and even the late protestation.’\* Besides, he had notoriously defamed the parliament, and pressed his auditors to believe the king’s declarations, *because a divine sentence was in his mouth, and he cannot err.* And that if *David’s* heart smote him for cutting off *Saul’s* garment, what would it have done if he had kept him from his castles, towns, and ships? For which reasons the lords and commons in parliament assembled, ordered [March 3, 1642,] his living to be sequestered into the hands of *Robert Atkins*, M. A. who was appointed to preach every Lord’s day till further order. Mr. *Symmonds* endeavored to discredit the evidence, but was so far from disowning the charge, that he afterwards vindicated it in a pamphlet entitled, *The loyal Subject’s Belief.*

A second gentleman, who has left an account of his sufferings, is the reverend Mr. *Squire* of Shoreditch; he was articulated against for “practising and pressing the late innovations, for saying the papists were the king’s best subjects, because of their loyalty and liberality; for declaring that none should come to the sacrament, unless they were as well affected to the king as the papists; for comparing his majesty to the man that fell among thieves, being wounded in his honor, and robbed of his castles, and of the hearts of his people; that the priest passing by, was the protestant; the forward professor the levite, but the papist was the good *Samaritan*; and for affirming, that the king’s subjects, and all that they had were at his command.”† Mr. *Squire* denied some of these articles, and extenuated others; he procured a certificate from several of his parishioners of his diligence in preaching, in catechising, and in beating down popery, for thirty years past, all which might be true; but Dr. *Walker* admits,|| that from the beginning of the war he was a most strenuous champion for *allegiance*; that is, for passive-obedience and non-resistance, and most earnestly exhorted his people to the practice of it, which, as the times then were,

\* Walker’s Suffering Clergy, p. 67.    † Ibid.    || Ibid. p. 176.



might be a sufficient reason for the parliament to silence him.

The other clergyman is Mr. *Finch* of Christ-Church, who was articled against for *extortion, superstition, non-residence, and neglect of his cure, and for being a common swearer, tavern-hunter, and drunkard*, which was proved by very substantial evidence. Dr. *Walker's* defence of this gentleman is very remarkable: "Common charity" (says he) will oblige every one to give more credit to the bare word of a clergyman, though in his own vindication, than to that of his known and professed enemies."\* And yet, in the next page,† he owns he was not satisfied in Mr. *Finch's* character, nor in some parts of his defence, in which he thinks he does by no means acquit himself from having been a man of an ill life. His case was reported by the grand committee to the house of commons, and by them to the *lords*, who all agreed he was unfit to hold any ecclesiastical living.

It must be left with the impartial world to judge, whether the parliament had reason to sequester these clergymen, in their own defence? The last was a man of an immoral life, and the two former, allowing them to be otherwise good men, were certainly incendiaries against the two houses, and preached up those doctrines which were inconsistent with the constitution and freedom of this country, as most of the parochial clergy at that time did.

The committee for *Plundered Ministers* took its rise from those puritan clergymen, who, being driven from their cures in the country by the king's soldiers, fled to London with their families, leaving their substance and household furniture to the mercy of the enemy: these being reduced to very great exigencies, applied to the parliament for relief; the commons first ordered a charitable collection for them at their monthly fast, and four days after, viz. December 31, 1642, appointed a committee to consider of the fittest way for the relief of such godly and well-affected ministers as have been plundered; and what malignant clergymen have benefices in and about the town, whose benefices being sequestered may be supplied by others who may receive their profits. The committee consisted of Mr.

\* Walker's Attempt, p. 71.

† Ibid. p. 72.



*Solicitor General, Mr. Martyn, Sir Gilbert Gerrard, Sir William Armyn, Mr. Prideaux, Mr. Holland, Mr. Rouse, Mr. Case, Mr. Knightly, Sir William Hayman, Mr. Wentworth, Mr. Ruthen, Mr. Wheeler, and Mr. Spurstow*, to whom were afterwards added some others; among whom Dr. Walker supposes was the famous Mr. White, who sat in the chair of this committee, March 2, 1642-3. The commissioners were upon their oath; any four had a power to act; they were distinguished by the name of the *committee for plundered ministers*; but the royalists, by way of reproach, calling them the *committee for plundering ministers*. They began their meetings in the court of Exchequer, Jan. 2, in the afternoon; two days after, they were ordered to examine the complaints against Dr. Soam, minister of Twittenham and Stains, to send for parties and witnesses, to consider of proper persons to supply the cures, to apply the revenues to their use if they found it necessary, and to report the proceedings to the house.— July 27, 1643, they were impowered to consider of informations against *scandalous ministers*, though there were no *malignancy* proved against them and to put out such whose scandal was sufficiently proved; from which time the committee for *scandalous and plundered ministers* were in a sort united, and so continued to the end of the long parliament.

In order to silence the clamors of the royalists, and justify the severe proceedings of these committees, it was resolved to print the cases of those whom they ejected, and submit their conduct to the public censure; accordingly, towards the latter end of the year Mr. White the chairman published a pamphlet, entitled, *The first Century of scandalous malignant Priests, made and admitted into benefices by the prelate, in whose hands the ordination of ministers and government of the church hath been; or, a narration of the causes for which the parliament has ordered the sequestration of the benefices of several ministers complained of before them, for vitiousness of life, errors in doctrine, contrary to the articles of our religion, and for practising and pressing superstitious innovations against law, and for malignancy against the parliament.* The author

in his preface says, the reason of his appearing in print was, *that the parliament might appear just in their doings, that the mouth of iniquity might be stopt; that all the world might see, that the tongues of them that speak evil of the parliament are set on fire of hell; that they hide themselves under falshood, and make lies their refuge.* And then adds, *that the grossest faults which were charged on the clergy were proved by many witnesses, seldom less than six.* The whole century were convicted of malignity, or disaffection to the parliament; and about eighty of them of scandalous immoralities in their lives. Dr. *Walker* has endeavored to recover the reputation of seven or eight, and would insinuate that the rest were convicted upon too slender evidence, the witnesses not being always upon oath, nor in his opinion of sufficient credit to impeach a *clergyman*; that some of the crimes were capital, and therefore if they had been proved, must have touched not only the livings but the lives of the criminals; and that the parliament who set up for precise morals, accepted the mere verbal evidence of the most infamous people. However, the doctor himself has admitted and confirmed the *centurist's* account of many of these scandalous ministers, by the enquiries he has made into their characters in the places from whence they were ejected. Mr. *Fuller* confesses, “that several of the offences of the clergy were so ‘foul that it is a shame to report them, crying to justice ‘for punishment.’” But then adds, in favor of others, “that witnesses against them were seldom examined on ‘oath. That many of the complainers were factious people. That some of the clergy were convicted for delivering doctrines that were disputable, and others only for ‘their loyalty.’”† Bishop *Kennet* says, that several of them were vicious to a scandal. And Mr. archdeacon *Eachard* is of the same mind. But Mr. *Baxter's* testimony is more particular and decisive, who says, “that in all ‘the countries where he was acquainted, *six to one at least*, ‘if not many more, that were sequestered by the committees, were by the oaths of witnesses proved insufficient or ‘scandalous, or especially guilty of drunkenness and

† Church History, b. xi. p. 207.



‘swearing. *This I know* (says the reverend author) *will displease the party, but I am sure that this is true.*’\*

It is impossible to account for the particular proceedings of all the committees, of which great outeries have been made by the friends of the sufferers. “If the meanest and most vicious parishioners could be brought to prefer a petition against their *parson* to the house of commons, how falsely soever, (says lord *Clarendon*) he was sure to be prosecuted for a scandalous minister.”† His lordship adds, “that the committees accepted of the evidence not only of mean people, but of them who were professed enemies of the discipline of the church; that they baited the clergy with rude and uncivil language; that they obliged them to a long and tedious attendance, and were very partial in voting them out of their livings, right or wrong.” In another place he says, “that these complaints were frequently exhibited by a few of the meanest of the people against the judgment of the parish.” The like representation is made by most of the royalists; but the writers on the side of the parliament deny the charge, and complain as loudly of the contemptuous behavior of the king’s clergy to the commissioners, treating them as a combination of illiterate laymen, who had nothing to do with the church; nay as rebels and traitors. Some refused to obey their summons, and others who appeared took up their time in examining the spelling of words, the propriety of grammar and other little evasions, foreign to the purpose. They declared roundly, they did not own the tribunal before which they stood; they insulted the witnesses, and threatened reprisals out of court, when things should revert to their former channel; and upon the whole behaved as if they had engrossed all the law, learning, and good sense of the nation to themselves. The commissioners, provoked with this usage, were obliged to behave with some sharpness, in order to support their own authority; they would not indulge them the peculiar privilege they claimed as clergymen, nor allow them as scholars to debate the truth of those doctrines, of which they were accused, but confined them to matters of fact. When they excepted against the witnesses as ignorant mechan-

\* Baxter’s Life, p. 74.

† Sufferings of the Clergy, p. 64.



ics, factious, schismatical, enemies to the church, &c. they over-ruled their exceptions, as long as there were no legal objections to their competency or credibility.

With regard to the *country committees*, the commissioners were chosen out of the deputy lieutenants, and the best country gentlemen in the parliament interest. Most of the crimes for which the clergy were sequestered were confessed by themselves; superstition and false doctrine were hardly ever objected, far the greatest part being cast out for *malignity*; and yet the proceedings of the sequestrators were not always justifiable; for whereas a court of judicature should rather be counsel for the prisoner than the prosecutor, the commissioners considered the king's clergy as their most dangerous enemies, and were ready to lay hold of all opportunities to discharge them their pulpits.

But whatever might be the excesses, or partiality of particular committees, no reasonable blame can be laid upon the two houses, whose instructions were, in my opinion, unexceptionable; the words of the ordinance are these:—  
“And to the end that those who will appear before the committee may have the witnesses examined in their presence, it is further ordained, that summonses, with sufficient warning of the time and place when and where the charge against them shall be proved, be either given to their persons, or left at their houses; and if they desire it, they shall have a copy of the articles against them, with a convenient time to give in their answer under their hands, which together with their charge, and the proofs upon every particular of it, the said deputy lieutenants, and committees of parliament, shall send up to the committee of this house, appointed to provide for plundered ministers; which committee shall from time to time transmit them to this house.”\* And further to prevent all abuses, it is ordained, in the ordinance for sequestration, “that if any person or persons find themselves aggrieved with any acts done by the sequestrators, their agents or deputies, and shall not therein be relieved by the sequestrators, upon complaint made to them, or any two or more of them; then upon information given to both house of parliament, or to the committee of lords and commons aforementioned,

\* Husband's Collections, p. 311.

‘such further order shall be taken therein as shall be agree-  
 ‘able to justice.”\* Here was an appeal from a lower to a  
 higher court; and to prevent a scrutiny into the lives and  
 manners of the clergy, when their witnesses might be dead,  
 they were limited to such crimes as had been committed  
 within three years before the beginning of the present par-  
 liament; so that if the committees observed their orders  
 there could be little cause of complaint; yet as no one will  
 undertake to vindicate all their proceedings, we must not,  
 on the other hand, give ear to the petulant and angry  
 complaints of every discontented clergyman.† I shall on-  
 ly observe further, that these country committees hardly  
 began to sit till the latter end of the year 1643, or the be-  
 ginning of 1644; that they exercised their power very  
 sparingly while the war was in suspense, but when the  
 royal forces had been beat out of the field, and victory de-  
 clared on their side, they proceeded with more freedom,  
 especially against those who had made themselves parties  
 in the war.

Very different accounts are given of the numbers and  
 quality of the ejected clergy by their several friends. Lord  
*Clarendon* says, that all the learned and orthodox divines  
 of England were deemed scandalous. And Dr. *Walker*  
 has taken a great deal of pains to increase their numbers,  
 and vindicate their characters. By this account one would  
 think most of them were of the first rank and character;  
 but Mr. *Baxter*,‡ who was much better acquainted with  
 them, says, “that when the parliament purged the minis-  
 ‘try, they cast out the grosser sort of insufficient and scan-  
 ‘dalous ones, and also some few civil men who had as-  
 ‘sisted in the wars against the parliament, or set up bow-  
 ‘ing to altars, and such innovations; but they left in near  
 ‘one half of the ministers that were not good enough to do  
 ‘much service, nor bad enough to be utterly intolerable.  
 ‘These were a company of poor weak preachers, who  
 ‘had no great skill in divinity, nor zeal for godliness, but  
 ‘preached weekly that that was true, and were free from  
 ‘notorious sins.” This seems a pretty fair relation of the  
 matter; however we shall have occasion to consider it  
 more fully hereafter.

\* Husband’s Collections, p. 15.

† *Sufferings of the Clergy*, p. 84.

‡ *Life*, p. 95.



Besides the sequestration of *benefices*, the parliament considered the king's clergy as *parties in the war*, and seized their estates both real and personal under that character, towards defraying the expenses of it ; for this purpose they passed the following ordinance, April 1, 1643, the preamble to which sets forth,\* “ that it is most agreeable to common justice, that the estates of such notorious delinquents as have been the causers or instruments of the public calamities, which have hitherto been employed to the fomenting and nourishing of this miserable distraction, should be converted and applied towards the support of the commonwealth.

“ Be it therefore enacted, that the estates, as well real as personal, of *all such bishops, deans, deans and chapters, prebends, archdeacons, and of all other persons ecclesiastical or temporal, who have, or shall raise arms against the parliament ; or have been, or shall be in actual war against the same ; or who have, or shall voluntarily contribute money, horse, plate, arms, ammunition, or other aid or assistance, towards the maintenance of any force raised against the parliament, or for the plundering the king's subjects, who have willingly contributed, or yielded obedience to the commands of both houses of parliament, and of all such who have joined, or shall join in any oath or association against the parliament, &c.* shall be seized into the hands of sequestrators, to be named by both houses of parliament, which sequestrators, or their deputies, are to seize into their hands, as well all the money, goods, chattels, debts, and personal estates, and all the manors, lands, tenements, hereditaments, rents, revenues, and profits, of all the said delinquents before specified ; and also two parts of all the personal and real estates of every papist, and to let, set, and demise the same from year to year, as the respective landlords or owners thereof might have done. And the authority of both houses is engaged to save them harmless from paying any rents to their landlords being delinquents : and all the monies, rents, and revenues, that shall arise from this ordinance, shall be applied to the maintenance of the army and forces raised by the parliament, and such other uses as shall be direc-



“ted by both houses of parliament for the benefit of the  
‘commonwealth.”

August 19th, 1643, this ordinance was further explained, as including in the number of delinquents, *such as absented from their usual places of abode, or betook themselves to the king's forces, such as should embezzle or conceal any of their effects, to avoid payment of taxes, and assessments to the parliament ; or who kept out of the way so that no tax could be levied upon them ; or who concealed or harbored the goods or persons of delinquents ; or who should seize or molest any person for obeying or executing any of the parliament's orders.*† A clause was then added to the ordinance, empowering the commissioners to allow to the wives and children of such delinquents, for their maintenance, any portion of their goods, provided it did not exceed *one fifth part*. This clause was construed to extend to the wives and children of all clergymen who were ejected their livings, on any account whatsoever. The commissioners were also to seize two thirds of the estates of *papists*, both real and personal, and for the discovering of them, were to tender to such whom they suspected, the following oath :—

“ I *A. B.* do abjure and renounce the pope's supremacy, and authority over the catholic church in general, and  
‘over myself in particular. And I do believe that there is  
‘not any transubstantiation in the sacrament of the Lord's  
‘supper, or in the elements of bread and wine after consecration thereof by any person whatsoever. And I do also  
‘believe that there is not any purgatory, or that the consecrated host, crucifixes, or images, ought to be worshipped ; or that any worship is due to any of them. And I  
‘also believe, that salvation cannot be merited by works ;  
‘and all doctrines in affirmation of the said points, I do  
‘abjure, and renounce, without any equivocation, mental  
‘reservation, or secret evasion whatsoever, taking the  
‘words by me spoken according to the common meaning of  
‘them. “*So help me GOD.*”

Divers clergymen of considerable learning, and blameless lives, sound protestants, and good preachers, lost their

† Seebel's Collections, p. 49.

estates and livelihoods, by falling within the compass of this ordinance. How far such severities are justifiable by the law of arms, in a time of civil war and confusion, I shall not determine. It had been well, if those who would have given security for their peaceable behavior, could have been distinguished. But what could the parliament do in their circumstances with men who were always dealing in politics, privately sending the king money, preaching publicly that he was above law, and stirring up the people to sedition and disaffection to those powers by whom they were protected? If *others* suffered in this manner it was a very *hard measure*; their estates might have been double taxed, as those of papists and nonjurors have since been; but to take away their whole property, and reduce them to a *fifth*, and this at the mercy of sequestrators, was extremely rigorous and severe.

However his majesty pursued the same measures, and gave directions to seize the lands and goods of the parliamentarians, as appears by his proclamation of April 7, and May 8, wherein he forbids all his subjects to submit to their orders; and by another dated May 15, 1643, complains, “that divers of his clergy, eminent for piety and learning, because they publish his royal and just commands and declarations, and will not (against the known laws of the land, and their own consciences) submit to contri-  
‘butions, nor publicly pray against us and our assistants, but conform to the book of common prayer established by law, and preach God’s word according to the purity of it, and in their sermons will not teach sedition, nor publish illegal commands and orders for fomenting the unnatural war levied against us, are some of them driven from their cures and habitations, others silenced and discharged from their cures, and persecuted, and their curates, if *orthodox*, displaced, in whose places factious and seditious persons are introduced.—His majesty therefore forbids all his subjects to hinder any of his clergy from exercising their functions, or to displace them; and if any transgress this command his majesty declares them assistants of the rebellion, and will proceed against them according to law, as soon as he can apprehend them, and in the mean time will give direction for taking their lands



‘and goods into safe custody.’\* Such were the extremities on both sides !

The silencing so many clergymen at once made it very difficult to find persons qualified to fill the vacant pulpits. This was an inconvenience that attended the reformation of queen *Elizabeth*, and was the case of the established church again in the year 1662, when near two thousand ministers were ejected on account of their non-conformity. Lord *Clarendon*, with his usual candor, says, *that from the beginning of this parliament he is confident not one learned or orthodox man was recommended by them to any church in England* ; and yet some of the greatest ornaments of the church for learning and good sense, in the reign of king *Charles II.* were of their promotion, as bishop *Reynolds*, bishop *Wilkins*, Dr. *Lightfoot*, Dr. *Cudworth*, Dr. *Wallis*, and others. Mr. *Baxter*, who was a more competent judge in this respect, says, ‡ “That though ‘now and then an unworthy person, by sinister means, ‘crept into the places of the ejected ministers, yet commonly those whom they put in were such as set themselves ‘laboriously to seek the saving of souls. Indeed the one ‘half of them were very young, but that could not be helped, because there were no others to be had ; the parliament could not make men learned or godly, but only put ‘in the learnedest and ablest they could have ; and though ‘it had been to be wished, that they might have had leisure to ripen in the universities, yet many of them did (as ‘*Ambrose*) teach and learn at once so successfully, as that ‘they much increased in learning themselves whilst they ‘profited others, and proportionably more than many in the ‘universities do.” Those clergymen who had been silenced and imprisoned by archbishop *Laud* were set at liberty and promoted ; some who had fled to Holland and New-England on account of non-conformity returned home, and were preferred to considerable lectures in the city, or to livings that had been sequestered. The parliament entertained and promoted several Scots divines, and yet, after all, wanted a supply for several vacant benefices, which obliged them to admit of some unlearned persons, and pluralists, not of choice, but through necessity ; for when things

\* Husband’s Collections, p. 177. ‡ Hist. of Life and Times, p. 74.



were more settled, the assembly of divines declared against both; and it deserves to be remembered, that the parliament, instead of giving their divines an absolute and full possession of the sequestered livings, reserved to themselves a right in their warrants to displace them if they saw occasion, which shews their great prudence and caution; for by this means it was in their power, upon the conclusion of a peace, to restore those who had been ejected merely for their attachment to the king, without any injustice to the present possessor. To put some stop to the clamors of the royalists at Oxford, who gave out, that the parliament admitted *butchers, cobblers, bricklayers*, and those who had no call from God or men, they ordained July 27, 1643, "That the committees should not nominate any person to 'vacant benefices, but such as should be examined and 'approved by the assembly of divines then sitting at Westminster." Upon the whole it is evident, that the two houses did the best they could in their present circumstances, and perhaps better than the royalists did at the restoration 1660, when, according to Dr. *Walker*, all the sequestered clergy who survived were restored to their livings, even those who had been convicted of the most scandalous immoralities, without any marks of repentance or amendment.

The parliament's affairs being low, and their counsels divided, they not only applied to heaven by extraordinary fastings and prayers, but went on vigorously with their intended reformation. They began with the sabbath, and on March 22, 1642-3, sent to the lord-mayor of the city of London, to desire him to put in execution the statutes for the due observation of the Lord's day; his lordship accordingly issued his precept the very next day to the aldermen,\* requiring them to give strict charge to the churchwardens and constables within their several wards, that from henceforth "they do not permit or suffer any person 'or persons, in time of divine service, or at any time on the 'Lord's day, to be tipling in any tavern, inn, tobacco-shop, 'ale-house, or other victualling-house whatsoever; nor 'suffer any fruiterers or herb-women to stand with fruit, 'herbs, or other victuals or wares in any streets, lanes, or

\* Husband's Collections, p. 7.

‘alleys, or any other ways to put things to sale, at any time of that day, or in the evening of it; or any milk-woman to cry milk; nor to suffer any persons to unlade any vessels of fruit, or other goods, to carry them on shore; or to use any unlawful exercises or pastimes; and to give express charge to all inn-keepers, taverns, cook-shops, ale-houses, &c. within their wards, not to entertain any guests to tipple, eat, drink, or take tobacco in their houses on the Lord’s day, except inn-keepers, who may receive their ordinary guests or travellers, who come for the dispatch of their necessary business; and if any persons offend in the premises, they are to be brought before the lord-mayor, or one of his majesty’s justices of the peace, to be punished as the law directs.” This order had a very considerable influence upon the city, which began to wear a different face of religion to what it had formerly done.\* May 5. the book tolerating sports upon the Lord’s day was ordered to be burnt by the hands of the common hangman in Cheapside, and other usual places; and all persons having any copies in their hands were required to deliver them to one of the sheriffs of London to be burnt.

Next to the *Lord’s day* they had a particular regard to their monthly fast: April 24, all constables, or their deputies, were ordered to repair to every house within their respective liberties, the day before every public fast, and charge all persons strictly to observe it according to the said ordinances. And upon the day of the public fast, they were enjoined to walk through their said liberties, to search for persons who either by following the work of their calling, or sitting in *taverns*, *victualling*, or *ale-houses*, or any otherways should not duly observe the same; and to return their names to the committee for examination, that they might be proceeded against for contempt. The fast was observed the last *Wednesday* in every month, the public devotions continued with little or no intermission from nine in the morning till four in the afternoon,† and (as has been already observed) with uncommon strictness and rigor.

\* Husband’s Collections. p. 159.

† These services were protracted, undoubtedly, to a tiresome and unreasonable length; and became the subject and ridicule to the roy-



Besides the *stated* fasts, it was usual upon extraordinary emergencies to appoint *occasional* ones; as when the army was going upon any hazardous enterprize, or were within sight of the enemy, or under very disadvantageous circumstances. When the earl of *Essex* was shut up in Cornwall, the two houses appointed a day of fasting and prayer in six churches within the lines of communication, and in such other churches where it should be desired; and the crowds of serious and attentive hearers on such occasions is almost incredible.

The king apprehending the parliament's monthly fast was perverted from its original design, and turned into a nursery of rebellion, was pleased to dissolve it, and appoint another, for the reasons contained in the following proclamation from Oxford, dated October 5, 1643. "When 'a general fast was first propounded to us in contemplation 'of the miseries of our kingdom of Ireland, we readily 'consented to it.—But when we observe what ill use has 'been made of these public meetings, in pulpits, in prayers, 'and in the sermons of many seditious lecturers, to stir up 'and continue the rebellion raised against us within this 'kingdom;—We thought fit to command that such an 'hypocritical fast, to the dishonor of God, and slander of 'true religion, be no longer continued and countenanced 'by our authority.—And yet we being desirous to express 'our own humiliation and the humiliation of our people, 'for our own sins, and the sins of the nation, are resolved 'to continue a monthly fast, but not on the day formerly 'appointed.—We do therefore hereby command, that from 'henceforth no fast be held on the last *Wednesday* in the 'month, as for many months it has been; nor on any other day than is hereby appointed by us.—But we do expressly charge and command, that in all churches and 'chapels, &c. there be a solemn fast religiously observed

al party. Of which this proposal in a pamphlet entitled, "New Orders New" is a proof: viz. "That every year there shall be the 'round-heads feast celebrated, a well-lunged, long-breathed cobbler shall preach a sermon six hours, and his prayers two hours long, and 'at every messe in this feast shall be presented a godly dish of *turnips*, because it is very agreeable to our natures; for a turnip hath a 'round-head, and the anagram of a puritan is a TURNIP." Dr. Grey, p. 76. Note. *Ed.*



‘on the second *Friday* in every month, with public prayers and preaching where it may be had, that as one man we may pour out our prayers to God, for the continuance of his gracious presence and blessing upon us, and for establishing a happy peace; for which purpose we have caused devout forms of prayer to be composed and printed, and intend to disperse them, that they may be used in all parts of our kingdom.”\* Agreeably to this proclamation, the king’s friends in the counties of Cornwall and Devonshire took an oath, and entered into an association upon sundry articles, of which this was one, That if any minister shall refuse, or wilfully neglect to observe the fast appointed by his majesty, or shall not read the service and prayers appointed for that fast, and being carried before a justice of peace, shall not promise and protest for their future conformity, he shall be forthwith secured, and *his estates sequestered*; the like course to be taken with such ministers as absent themselves that day, unless upon sickness, or other cause allowed by two justices of peace; and with those that will not read such books as shall be appointed to be read by his majesty; and the constables are to certify their defaults to the next justice of peace. This was a new hardship upon clergy and people, for the parliament having enjoined the continuance of the fast on *Wednesday*, the royalists were obliged to an open separation, by changing it to *Friday*. Thus the devotions of the kingdom were divided, and Almighty God called into the quarrel on both sides.

The next thing the parliament undertook, was the removal of those monuments of superstition out of churches, &c. which had been voted down the last year, but without any considerable effect, because of the dissent of the house of lords. In the beginning of May, sir *Robert Harlow*, by order of the two houses, took down the crosses in Cheapside, Charing-Cross, and St. Paul’s Cross, § which was a pulpit of wood covered with lead, in form of a cross, and

\* Husband’s Collections, p. 353. || Rushworth, vol. v. p. 884, 72.

§ The zeal shewed for pulling down the crosses gave occasion for the publication of an humorous piece, entitled, “A dialogue betwixt the Cross and Cheap and Charing-Cross, comforting each other, as

mounted on several steps of stone about the middle of St. Paul's church-yard, where the first reformers used to preach frequently to the people ; and upon a further representation of the assembly of divines, they passed the following ordinance " that before the first of November all altars and tables of stone shall be utterly taken away and demolished ; and all communion-tables removed from the east end of every church, chapel, or place of public worship, and be set in some other fit and convenient place or places of the body of the church or chapel ; and all rails whatsoever which have been erected near to, or before, or about any altar or communion-table, in any of the said churches or chapels, shall before the said day be taken away, and the chancel ground of every such church, or chapel, or other place of public prayer, which has been within these twenty years raised for any altar or communion-table to stand upon, shall before the said day be laid down and levelled as it was before ; and all tapers, candlesticks, and basins, shall before the said day be removed and taken away from the communion-table in every church, chapel, or place of public prayer, and not be used again afterwards. And all crucifixes, crosses, images, and pictures, of any one or more persons of the Trinity, or of the Virgin *Mary* ; and all other images, and pictures of saints, or superstitious inscriptions in, or upon any of the said churches, church-yards, or other places belonging to the said churches or church-yards, or in any

'fearing their fall in these uncertain times." It was also bantered in a pamphlet, with this title. " New Orders New, agreed upon by the parliament of Round-Heads, confirmed by the brethren of the new separation, assembled at Round-Heads' Hall, without Cripplegate, with the great discretion of master LONG-BREATH, an upright, new inspired cobbler, speaker of the house. Avowed by ANANIAS DULMAN, alias PRICK EARS." Of the strain of this piece the following passage is a specimen : " That we have no *Crosses*, for they are meer popery, and tend to the confusion and opposition of scripture : especially let the sight of *Cheapside-Cross* be a detestation unto you all, and let these streets that are called *Crosses*, as *Red-Cross-street*, and *White-Cross-street*, &c. be turned otherwise and called after the name of some of our own family, as *Green*, *Spencer*, &c. and call it rather *Green-street*, than *Red-Cross-street*, &c. That thus all profaneness being rooted and extirpated from our conventions, nothing but holiness may remain amongst us." Dr. Grey, vol. ii. p. 80, 81, note. *Ed.*

‘other open place, shall, before the said first of November, be taken away and defaced by the proper officers that have the care of such churches. And it is further ordained, that the walls, windows, grounds, and other places that shall be broken, impaired, or altered by any the means aforesaid, shall be made up and repaired in good and sufficient manner, in all and every the said parish churches, chapels, or places of public prayer belonging to the parish, by the church-wardens for the time being, and in any cathedral or collegiate church or chapel by the deans or sub-deans, and in the inns of court, by the benchers and readers of the same, at the cost and charge of all and every such person or persons, bodies politic, or corporations, to whom the charge of repair does usually belong, upon penalty of forty shillings to the use of the poor, for the space of twenty days after such default; and if default be made after December 1, the justice of peace of the county or city shall have power to perform it. Provided that this ordinance shall not extend to any image, picture, or coat of arms in glass, stone, or otherwise, in any church, chapel, or church-yard, set up by, or engraven for a monument of any king, prince, nobleman, or other dead person, which has not been commonly reputed or taken for a saint.”\*

This ordinance is of the same tenor with the bill against innovations, presented to the king at the treaty of Oxford, and does not much differ from queen *Elizabeth's* injunctions at the reformation: there were some disorders and tumults in putting it in execution, and great neglect of repairs; but if the reader will look back to the superstitious decorations and ornaments of the cathedrals, mentioned in the former volume of this work, he will see there was some need of a reformation. Dec. 14, the commissioners cleared the cathedral of Canterbury of all the images, and paintings in the windows. *Heylin* says, the rabble violated the monuments of the dead, spoiled the organs, took down the rails, &c. and affronted the statue of our blessed Saviour. § Dec. 30, they removed the pictures, images and crucifixes in *Henry* the 7th's chapel; and about *Lady-day* the paintings about

\* Husband's Collections, fol. 267.

§ Hist. Presbytery, p. 450.



the walls and windows were defaced, and the organs taken down in the presence of the committee of the house. The cathedral of St. *Paul's* was stripped about the same time, the candlesticks, crucifixes, and plate, being sold for the service of the war; and within a few months most of the cathedrals throughout England underwent the same fate.\* If the parliament, instead of leaving this work to the officers of every parish, had put it into the hands of some discreet persons, to give directions what might remain, and what was fit to be removed, all the mischiefs that have been complained of might have been prevented; the monuments of the dead might have remained entire, and a great many fine paintings been preserved. Dr. *Heylin* charges the officers with sacrilege, and fixes the divine vengeance upon them as a terror to others, one of them being killed in pulling down the cross in Cheapside, and another hanged soon after he had pulled down the rich cross in Abingdon. But without remarking on the doctor's prognostications, it might be very proper to remove these images and crosses, because of the superstitious resort of great numbers of people to them; though it ought to have been done in a peaceable manner, without any damage to the truly venerable remains of antiquity.

The paper combat between the two parties at Oxford and London, was carried on with no less fury than the war itself; numberless pamphlets were scattered up and down the kingdom, big with disaffection and scandal against the two houses; to put a stop to which, the commons, by an order of March 6, 1642-3, had impowered the committee of examinations to search for printing presses, in such places where they had cause to suspect they were employed against the parliament, and to break them in pieces, and destroy the materials. They were also to seize the pamphlets, and to commit the printer and vender to prison. But this order not being effectual, another was published June 14, 1643, the preamble to which sets forth, "that the former orders of parliament to pre-

\* Dr. Grey gives various examples of the rude violence and indiscriminate destruction with which this was done. His authorities are bishop Hall, Heylin, Dugdale, and a work entitled, *Mercurius Rusticus*. *Ed.*

‘vent the printing and dispersing scandalous pamphlets  
 ‘having been ineffectual, it is ordained, that no person or  
 ‘persons shall print any book or pamphlet without licence  
 ‘under the hands of such persons as shall be appointed  
 ‘by parliament, nor shall any book be reprinted without  
 ‘the licence and consent of the owner, and the printer to  
 ‘put his name to it; the company of *stationers*, and the  
 ‘committee of examinations, are required to make strict  
 ‘enquiry after private presses, and to search all suspected  
 ‘shops and warehouses for unlicensed books and pam-  
 ‘phlets, and to commit the offenders against this order to  
 ‘prison, to be punished as the parliament shall direct.”||  
 The names of the licensers appointed by this ordinance  
 were these :—

*For books of divinity.*

<i>The Rev. Mr. Tho. Gataker</i>	<i>The Rev. Mr. Carter, of Yorkshire</i>
<i>The Rev. Mr. J. Downham</i>	<i>The Rev. Mr. Ch. Herle</i>
<i>The Rev. Mr. Callient Downing</i>	<i>The Rev. Mr. Ja. Cranford</i>
<i>The Rev. Dr. Tho. Temple</i>	<i>The Rev. Mr. Obad Sedgwick</i>
<i>The Rev. Mr. Jos. Caryl</i>	<i>The Rev. Mr. Batchelor</i>
<i>The Rev. Mr. Edmund Calamy</i>	<i>The Rev. Mr. John Ellis, jun.</i>

*For law books.*

Sir John Brampton	Mr. Serj. Phesaut
Mr. Serj. Rolls	Mr. Serj. Jermyn.

*For physic and surgery.*

The president and four censors of the college of physicians, for the time being.

*For civil and canon law.*

Sir Nath. Brent or any three doctors of the civil law.

*For heraldry, titles of honor, and arms.*

One of the three kings at arms.

*For philosophy, history, poetry, morality, and arts.*

Sir Nath. Brent, Mr. Langly, and Mr. Farnaby, school-masters of St. Paul's.

*For small pamphlets, pictures, &c.*

The clerk of the company of *stationers*, for the time being; and

*For mathematics, almanacs, and prognostications.*

The reader of Gresham college for the time being.

But neither this, nor any other regulation of the press, could restrain the Oxonians from dispersing their *mercures* and *diurnals* over the whole kingdom, as long as the university was in the king's hands.

## CHAP. II.

*From the Calling the Assembly of Divines at Westminster to the Oxford Parliament.*

IT has been observed, that at the setting down of this parliament, the resolution of the leading members was to remove the grievances of the church as well as state, and for this purpose to address the king to call an assembly of divines to reform the liturgy and discipline. To forward this design the London ministers, in their petitions in the year 1641, prayed the houses to be mediators to his majesty for a free synod, and the commons accordingly mentioned it in their grand remonstrance of December 1, 1641. *“We desire (say they) that there may be a general synod of the most grave, pious, learned, and judicious divines of this island, assisted with some from foreign parts professing the same religion with us, who may consider of all things necessary for the peace and good government of the church, and to represent the result of their consultations to be allowed and confirmed, and to receive the stamp of authority.”* In the treaty of Oxford a bill was presented to the same purpose and rejected: some time after Dr. Burges, at the head of the puritan clergy, applied again to parliament, but the houses were unwilling to take this step without the king's concurrence, till they were reduced to the necessity of calling in the Scots, who insisted, that *there should be an uniformity of doctrine and discipline between the two nations.* To make way for which the houses turned their bill into an ordinance, and convened the assembly by their own authority.\*

\* It is a just remark of Mr. Palmer, that the assembly of divines at Westminster, was not a convocation according to the diocesan way of government, nor was it called by the votes of the ministers according to the presbyterian way; but the parliament chose all the members themselves, merely with a view to have their opinion and advice for settling the government, liturgy, and doctrine of the church of England. And they were confined in their debates to such things as the parliament proposed.

Nonconformists Memorial, vol. i. introduction, p. 7. ED.



The ordinance bears date June 12, 1643, and is the very same with the Oxford bill, except in the point of lay-assessors, and of restraining the assembly from exercising any jurisdiction or authority ecclesiastical whatsoever. It is entitled,

*An ordinance of the lords and commons in parliament, for the calling of an assembly of learned and godly divines, and others, to be consulted with by the parliament. for settling the government and liturgy of the church of England, and for vindicating and clearing of the doctrine of the said church, from false aspersions and interpretations.\**

The preamble sets forth,

‘That whereas amongst the infinite blessings of Almighty God upon this nation, none is, or can be more dear to us, than the purity of our religion ; and forasmuch as many things as yet remain in the discipline, liturgy, and government of the church, which necessarily require a more perfect reformation. And whereas it has been declared and resolved, by the lords and commons assembled in parliament, that the present church government by archbishops, bishops, their chancellors, commissaries, deans, deans and chapters, archdeacons, and other ecclesiastical officers depending on the hierarchy, is evil, and justly offensive and burdensome to the kingdom, and a great impediment to reformation, and growth of religion, and very prejudicial to the state and government of this kingdom, that therefore they are resolved, the same shall be taken away, and that such a government shall be settled in the church as may be agreeable to God’s holy word, and most apt to procure and preserve the peace of the church at home, and nearer agreement with the church of Scotland, and other reformed churches abroad. And for the better effecting hereof, and for the vindicating and clearing of the doctrine of the church of England from all false calumnies and aspersions, it is thought fit to call an assembly of learned, godly, and judicious divines, to consult and advise of such matters and things touching the

\* Rushworth, vol. ii. part iii, or vol. v. p. 337.

‘premises, as shall be proposed to them by both, or either  
‘houses of parliament; and to give their advice and coun-  
‘sel therein to both, or either of the said houses, when and  
‘as often as they shall be thereunto required.”

“BE it therefore ordained by the lords and commons  
‘in this present parliament assembled, that all and every  
‘the persons hereafter in this ordinance named [the ordin-  
‘ance here names the persons] and such other persons as  
‘shall be nominated by both houses of parliament, or so  
‘many of them as shall not be letted by sickness, or other  
‘necessary impediment, shall meet and assemble, and are  
‘hereby required and enjoined upon summons signed by  
‘the clerks of both houses of parliament left at their sev-  
‘eral respective dwellings, to meet and assemble at West-  
‘minster, in the chapel called king *Henry* the seventh’s  
‘chapel, on the first of July 1643, and after the first meet-  
‘ing, being at least of the number of forty, shall from time  
‘to time sit, and be removed from place to place; and al-  
‘so, that the said assembly shall be dissolved in such man-  
‘ner as by both houses of parliament shall be directed.  
‘*And the said assembly shall have power and authority,*  
‘*and are hereby enjoined from time to time, during this*  
‘*present parliament, or till further order be taken by both*  
‘*the said houses, to confer and treat among themselves of*  
‘*such matters and things concerning the liturgy, disci-*  
‘*pline, and government of the church of England, or the*  
‘*vindicating and clearing of the doctrine of the same from*  
‘*all false aspersions and misconstructions, as shall be pro-*  
‘*posed by either or both houses of parliament, and no other;*  
‘and to deliver their advices and opinions touching the  
‘matters aforesaid, as shall be most agreeable to the word  
‘of God, to both or either houses from time to time, in such  
‘manner as shall be required, and not to divulge the same  
‘by printing, writing, or otherwise, without consent of  
‘parliament.”

If any difference of opinion arose, they were to repre-  
sent it to parliament with their reasons, that the houses  
might give further direction. Four shillings per day was  
allowed for each one during his attendance. Dr. *William*  
*Twisse* of Newbury was appointed prolocutor, and in case

of his sickness or death the parliament reserved to themselves the choice of another. The ordinance concludes with the following proviso : “ *Provided always, that this ordinance shall not give them, nor shall they in this assembly assume or exercise any jurisdiction, power, or authority ecclesiastical whatsoever, or any other power than is herein particularly expressed.*”

Then follow the names of thirty *lay-assessors*, (viz.) ten lords, and twenty commoners, and one hundred twenty-one divines.

N. B. The *lay-assessors* had an equal liberty of debating and voting with the divines, and were these ;

*Peers.*

Algernon E. of Northumberland  
William E. of Bedford  
William E. of Pembroke and  
Montgomery  
William E. of Salisbury  
Henry E. of Holland  
Edward E. of Manchester  
William Lord Vis. Say and Seal  
Edward Lord Vis. Conway  
Philip Lord Wharton  
Edward Lord Howard of Eserick

Humphry Salway, Esq.  
Oliver St. John, Esq.  
Sir Benjamin Rudyard, knt.  
John Pym, Esq.  
Sir John Clotworthy, knt.  
Sir Thomas Barrington, knt.  
William Wheeler, Esq.  
William Pierpoint, Esq.  
Sir John Evelyn, knt.  
John Maynard, Esq.  
Mr. Serjeant Wild  
Mr. Young  
Sir Matth. Hale, afterwards Lord  
*chief justice of the King's-Bench*  
[*appeared, says Anthony Wood,*  
*among the lay-assessors.*]

*Commoners.*

John Selden, Esq.  
Francis Rouse, Esq.  
Edmund Prideaux, Esq.  
Sir Henry Vane, knt. sen.  
Sir Henry Vane, knt. jun.  
John Glynne, Esq. Recorder of  
London  
John White, Esq.  
Bulstrode Whitlocke, Esq.

*Lay-assessors from Scotland.*

Lord Maitland, afterwards Duke  
Lauderdale  
E. Lothian  
A. Johnston, called Lord Warris-  
ton.

The divines were chosen out of such lists as the knights and burgesses brought in, of persons best qualified in their several counties, out of which the parliament agreed upon two ; though according to Dr. *Calamy* some counties had only one.



## A LIST OF THE ASSEMBLY OF DIVINES AT WESTMINSTER, IN ALPHABETICAL ORDER.

*Those with ~ gave constant attendance ; those with § sat in the assembly and took the Protestation, but withdrew, or seldom appeared ; those with no mark did not appear at all.*

*To supply the vacancies that happened by death, secession, or otherwise, the parliament named others from time to time, who were called Superadded Divines.*

~ *The Rev. Dr. WILLIAM TWISSE of Newbury, was appointed by parliament, Prolocutor.*

~ *The Rev.* { *Dr. CORNELIUS BURGESS, of Watford,*  
*Mr. JOHN WHITE, of Dorchester. A. M.* } *Assessors.*

§ *The Rev.* { *Mr. HENRY ROBOROUGH,*  
*Mr. ADONIRAM BYFIELD, A. M.* } *Scribes, but had no Votes.*

~ *The Rev. John Arrowsmith, of Lynne, afterwards D. D. and Master of Peter-House, Cambridge*

~ *Mr. Simeon Ash, of St. Brides, or Basingshaw*

~ *Mr. Theodore Backhurst, of Overton Waterville*

~ *Mr. Tho. Bayly, B. D. of Manningford-Bruce*

~ *Mr. John Bond, a superadded Divine*

§ *Mr. Boulton, superadded*

~ *Mr. Oliver Bowler, B. D. of Sutton*

~ *Mr. William Bridge, A. M. of Yarmouth*

*The Right Rev. Dr. Ralph Brownrigg, bishop of Exon*

*Mr. Richard Buckley*

~ *Mr. Antony Burgess, A. M. of Sutton-Coldfield*

~ *Mr. Jer. Burroughs, A. M. of Stepney*

~ *Mr. Richard Byfield, A. M. superadded*

~ *Edmund Calamy, B. D. Aldermanbury*

~ *Mr. Tho. Case, Milk-street*

*Mr. Richard Capel, of Pitcheombe, A.M.*

~ *Mr. Joseph Caryl, A. M. Lincoln's-Inn*

~ *Mr. William Carter, of London*

~ *Mr. Thomas Carter, of Oxon*

~ *Mr. William Carter, of Dynton, Bucks*

~ *Mr. John Cawdrey, A. M. St. Mart. Fields, superadded*

~ *Humph. Chambers, D. D. of Claverton*

~ *Francis Cheynel, D. D. of Petworth*

~ *Mr. Peter Clarke, A. M. of Carnaby*

~ *Mr. Richard Clayton, of Showel*

- ~ Mr. Francis Coke, of Yoxhall
- ~ Mr. Thomas Coleman, A. M. of Bliton
- ~ John Conant, of Lymington, D. D. afterwards Archdeacon of Norwich, and *Preb.* of Worcester
- ~ Mr. Edw. Corbet, A. M. Merton Coll. Oxon.
- § Rob. Crosse, D. D. *aft.* Vicar of Chew, Somerset
- ~ Mr. Philip Delme, *superadded*  
Mr. Tho. Dillingham, of Dean
- § Calibute Downing, D. D. of Hackney
- Mr. William Dunning, of Godalston
- ~ The Rev. Mr. John Drury, *superadded*  
Mr. Edward Ellis, B. D. Gilfield
- Mr. John Erle of Bishopstone
- § Dan. Featly, D. D. of Lambeth
- ~ Mr. Tho. Ford, A. M. *superadded*
- ~ Mr. John Foxcroft, of Gotham
- Mr. Hannibal Gammon, A. M. of Cornwall
- ~ Tho. Gataker, B. D. Rotherhithe
- ~ Mr. Samuel Gibson, of Burleigh
- ~ Mr. John Gibbon, of Waltham
- ~ Mr. George Gippes, of Aylston
- ~ Tho. Goodwin, D. D. of London, *aft.* *Presi.* Mag. C. Oxon.
- ~ Mr. William Goad, *superadded*
- ~ Mr. Stanley Gower, of Brampton-Bryan
- ~ William Gouge, D. D. of Black-Friars
- ~ Mr. William Greenhill, of Stepney
- ~ Mr. Green, of Pentecomb  
John Hacket, D. D. of St. Andrew's, Holborn, afterwards bishop of Lichfield
- Henry Hammond, D. D. of Penshurst, Kent
- ~ Mr. Henry Hall, B. D. Norwich
- ~ Mr. Humphrey Hardwicke, *superadded*
- § John Harris, D. D. *Preb.* of Winchester, *Warden* of Wickham
- ~ Rob. Harris, D. D. of Hanwell, *Presi.* of Trinity College, Oxon
- ~ Mr. CHARLES HERLE, A. M. Winwick, afterwards *Proloc.*
- ~ Mr. Richard Heyrick, A. M. of Manchester
- ~ Thomas Hill, D. D. of Tichmarsh, afterwards *Master* of Trinity College, Cambridge
- § Samuel Hildersham, B. D. of Felton
- ~ Mr. Jasper Hickes, A. M. of Lawrick
- ~ Mr. Tho. Hodges, B. D. of Kensington  
Richard Holdsworth, D. D. M. Eman. College, Cambridge
- ~ Joshua Hoyle, D. D. of Dublin, Ireland
- Mr. Henry Hutton
- ~ Mr. John Jackson, A. M. of Queen's College, Cambridge
- § Mr. Johnson  
Mr. Lance, Harrow, Middlesex
- ~ Mr. John Langley, of West Tuderley, *Preb.* Gloucester
- ~ Mr. John Ley, A. M. Great Budworth

- ~ *The Rev. John Lightfoot, D. D. of Ashby, M. Cath. H.*
- § Rich. Love, D. D. of Ekinton
- § Mr. Christopher Love, A. M. *superadded*  
Mr. William Lyford, A. M. Sherbourne.
- § Mr. John de la March, *Minister of the French Church*
- ~ Mr. Stephen Marshal, B. D. of Finchingsfield
- § Mr. William Massam, *superadded*  
Mr. John Maynard, A. M. *superadded*
- ~ Mr. William Mew, B. D. of Effington
- ~ Mr. Tho. Micklethwait, Cheriburton  
George Morley, D. D. *afterwards Bishop of Winchester*  
Mr. William Moreton, Newcastle
- § Mr. Moore
- ~ Mr. Matth. Newcomen, Dedham
- § Mr. William Newscore, *superadded*  
William Nicholson, D. D. *afterwards Bp. of Gloucester*  
Mr. Henry Nye, of Clapham
- ~ Mr. Philip Nye, of Kimbolton  
Mr. HERBET PALMER, B. D. Ashwel, *aft. Assessor*  
Mr. Henry Painter, of Exeter  
Mr. Christopher Parkly, of Hawarden
- ~ Mr. Edw. Peal, of Compton
- ~ Mr. Andrew Pern, of Wilby, Northampton
- ~ Mr. John Philips, Wrentham
- ~ Mr. Benj. Pickering, East-Hoatly
- § Mr. Samuel de la Place, *Min. of French Church*
- ~ Mr. William Price, of St. Paul's, Covent-Garden  
John Prideaux, D. D. *bishop of Worcester*
- ~ Mr. Nicholas Proffet, of Marlborough  
Mr. John Pyne, of Bereferrars
- ~ Mr. William Rathband, of Highgate
- ~ Mr. William Reyner, B. D. Egham
- ~ Edw. Reynolds, of Brampton, D. D. *aft Bp. Norwich*
- ~ Mr. Arthur Salway, Severn-Stoke  
Rob Saunderson, D. D. *afterwards bishop of Lincoln*
- ~ Mr. Henry Seudder, of Colingbourne
- ~ Lazarus Seaman, B. D. of Lond. *M. Peter. h. Cambridge*
- ~ Mr. Obadiah Sedgwick, B. D. Coggeshall  
Mr. Josias Shute, B. D. Lombard-street
- ~ *The Rev. Mr. Sydrach Simpson, London*
- ~ Peter Smith, D. D. of Barkway
- ~ William Spurstow, D. D. of Hampden
- ~ Edmund Staunton, D. D. of Kingston
- ~ Mr. Peter Sterry, London
- ~ Mr. John Strickland, B. D. New Sarum, *superadded*
- ~ Math. Styles, D. D. Eastcheap
- § Mr. Strong, Westminster, *superadded*
- ~ Mr. Francis Taylor, A. M. Yalding
- ~ Tho. Temple, D. D. of Battersey



- ~ Mr. Tho. Thoroughgood, Massingham
- ~ Mr. Christopher Tisdale, Uphurst-Bourne
- § Mr. Henry Tozer, B. D. Oxon
- ~ Anthony Tuckney, D. D. of Boston, afterwards Master of Saint John's Coll. Oxon, and Regius Professor
- ~ Mr. Tho. Valentine, B. D. Chalfort Saint Giles's
- ~ Mr. Rich. Vines, A. M. of Calcot, *M. Pemb.-h. Camb.*
- ~ The most Rev. Dr. James Usher, Archbp. of Armagh
- ~ Mr. George Walker, B. D. St. John Evan.
- ~ Samuel Ward, D. D. Master of Sidney Coll. Camb.
- ~ Mr. John WALLIS, afterwards D. D. and Scribe
- ~ Mr. John Ward, *superadded*
- ~ Mr. James Welby, Sylatten
- § Thomas Westfield, D. D. bishop of Bristol
- ~ Mr. Jeremiah Whitaker, A. M. Stretton
- ~ Mr. Francis Whiddon, Moreton
- ~ Henry Wilkinson, sen. D. D. Waddesdon, afterwards Margaret Professor, Oxon
- ~ Mr. Henry Wilkinson, jun. B. D. St. Dunstons
- ~ Mr. Thomas Wilson, Otham
- § Tho. Winecop, D. D. Elesworth
- ~ John Winecop, D. D. St. Martin's in the Fields
- ~ Mr. Francis Woodecock, Proctor of the University of Cambridge
- ~ Mr. Thomas Young, Stow-Market
- ~ *Ministers from Scotland.*
- ~ Mr. Alexander Henderson
- ~ Mr. George Gillespie
- ~ Mr. Samuel Rutherford
- ~ Mr. Robert Bayly.

Before the assembly sat, the king, by his royal proclamation of June 22, forbade their meeting for the purposes therein mentioned; and declared, that no acts done by them ought to be received by his subjects; he also threatened to proceed against them with the utmost severity of the law;\* nevertheless, sixty-nine assembled in King Henry the seventh's chapel the first day, according to summons, not in their canonical habits, but chiefly in black coats and bands in imitation of the foreign protestants. Few of the episcopal divines appeared, and those who did, after some time, withdrew for the following reasons.

\* Dr. Grey refers to the 25th of Henry VIII, c. 19, or the act of submission of the clergy, to prove this assembly illegal. *Ed.*

*Obj.* 1. “Because the assembly was prohibited by the ‘royal proclamation; which Dr. *Twisse*, in his sermon ‘at the opening the assembly, lamented, but hoped in due ‘time his majesty’s consent might be obtained.

*Ans.* To which it was replied, “That the constitution ‘at present was dissolved; that there were two sovereign ‘contending powers in the nation; and if the war in which ‘the parliament was engaged was just and necessary, they ‘might assume this branch of the prerogative, till the nation was settled, as well as any other.

*Obj.* 2. “Because the members of the assembly were ‘not chosen by the clergy, and therefore could not appear ‘as their representatives.

*Ans.* To which it was answered, “That the assembly was not designed for a *national synod*, or *representative body of the clergy*, but only as a committee, or council to the parliament, to give their opinion touching such church matters as the houses should lay before them; they ‘had no power of themselves to make laws or canons, or ‘determine controversies in matters of faith. They were ‘to enter upon no business but what the parliament appointed, and when they had done they were to offer it to ‘the two houses only as their *humble advice*; and surely ‘the parliament might choose their own council, without ‘being obliged to depend upon the nomination of the clergy.

*Obj.* 3. “But as great an exception as any, was their ‘dislike of the company, and of the business they were to ‘transact; there was a mixture of *laity* with the *clergy*; ‘the *divines* were for the most part of a puritanical stamp, ‘and enemies to the hierarchy; and their business (they ‘apprehended) was to pull down that which they would ‘uphold.

*Ans.* “This being not designed for a legal convocation, but for a *council* to the parliament in the reformation of the church, they apprehended they had a power ‘to join some of their own members with such a *committee* ‘or *council*, without intrenching upon the rights of convocation.—The *divines*, except the *Scots* and *French*, ‘were in episcopal orders, educated in our own universi-

‘ties, and most of them graduates; their business was only to advise about such points of doctrine and church discipline as should be laid before them, in which the episcopal divines might have been of service, if they had continued with the assembly, to which they were most earnestly invited.”

I believe no set of clergy since the beginning of christianity have suffered so much in their characters and reputations,\* as these, for their *advice*s to the two houses of parliament. In his majesty’s proclamation of June 22, the far greatest part of them are said to be *men of no learning or reputation*. Lord Clarendon admits,† “about twenty of them were reverend and worthy persons, and episcopal in their judgments; but as to the remainder, they were but pretenders to divinity; some were infamous in their lives and conversations, and most of them of very mean parts and learning, if not of scandalous ignorance, and of no other reputation than of malice to the church of England.” His lordship would insinuate, that they understood not the original text, because the learned Mr. Selden sometimes corrected the English translation of their little pocket bibles, and put them into confusion, by his uncommon acquaintance with *Jewish* antiquities; as if that great man would have treated a convocation with more decency or respect.‡ But archbishop Laud’s account is

\* “And no set of clergy,” says Dr. Grey, “ever deserved it more:” and to shew this, he quotes a virulent invective against them by Greg. Williams, bishop of Ossory. *Ed.*

† Clarendon, vol. i. p. 530.

‡ Bishop Warburton has no doubt but Mr. Selden would have treated a convocation with more decency and respect. For his lordship adds, “he had infinitely more esteem for the learning of the *episcopal* clergy though, perhaps, no more love for their persons.” In what estimation Mr. Selden held the learning of the episcopal clergy, has been shewn vol. ii. p. 139, the note. With what respect he was likely to speak of a convocation, the reader will judge from the following passage, in his *Table-Talk*, p. 37, in the edition of 1777, under the word CLERGY. “The clergy and laity together are,” says he, “never like to do well; it is as if a man were to make an excellent feast, and should have his apothecary and his physician come into the kitchen: the cooks, if they were let alone, would make excellent meat, but then comes the apothecary, and he puts rhubarb into one sauce, and agar-



still more extravagant ; for though it is notorious the assembly would not allow a toleration to those whom they called sectaries, yet his grace says, “ the greatest part of ‘ them were *Brownists* or *independants*, or New-England ‘ ministers, if not worse, or at best enemies to the doctrine ‘ and discipline of the church of England ; ” whereas in truth there was not above six *independants* in the assembly, and not one New-England minister that I know of. If the reader will carefully peruse the list, he will find in it some of the most considerable lawyers and ablest divines of the last age ; and though they might have mistaken notions of church discipline, and were no better acquainted with the rights of conscience and private judgment, than their predecessors the bishops, yet with all their faults, impartial posterity must acknowledge the far greater number were men of exemplary piety and devotion, who had a real zeal for the glory of God, and the purity of the christian faith and practice. Mr. *Eachard* confesses, that lord *Clarendon* had perhaps with too much severity said, that some of these divines were infamous in their lives and characters ; but Mr. *Baxter*, who was better acquainted with them than his lordship, or any of his followers, affirms, “ that they were men of eminent learning, godliness, ministerial abilities, and fidelity.”

The assembly was opened on Saturday July 1, 1643, with a sermon preached by Dr. *Twisse* in king *Henry* the seventh’s chapel, both houses of parliament being present. The ordinance for their convention was then read, and the names of the members called over, after which they adjourned to Monday, and agreed on the following rules :

- (1.) “ That every session begin and end with a prayer.
- (2.) “ That after the first prayer, the names of the as-

‘ ie into another sauce. *Chain up the clergy on both sides.*” That he had no high opinion of the power and authority of a convocation, may be concluded from his comparing it to “ a court-leet, where they have ‘ a power to make bye-laws as they call them ; as that a man shall ‘ put so many cows or sheep in the common ; but they can make nothing that is contrary to the laws of the kingdom.” Under the word CONVOCATION, p. 45. Ed.

‘sembly be called over, and those that are absent marked ;  
 ‘but if any member comes in afterwards, he shall have li-  
 ‘berty to give in his name to the *scribes*.

(3.) “That every member before his admission to sit  
 ‘and vote, do take the following vow or protestation :

“I *A. B.* do seriously and solemnly, in the presence  
 ‘of Almighty God, declare that in this assembly whereof  
 ‘I am a member, I will not maintain any thing in matter  
 ‘of doctrine but what I believe in my conscience to be most  
 ‘agreeable to the word of God ; or in point of discipline,  
 ‘but what I shall conceive to conduce most to the glory of  
 ‘God, and the good and peace of his church.”

And to refresh their memories this *protestation* was read  
 in the assembly every *Monday* morning.

(4.) “That the appointed hour of meeting be ten in the  
 ‘morning ; the afternoon to be reserved for committees.

(5.) “That three of the members of the assembly be  
 ‘appointed weekly as chaplains, one to the house of lords,  
 ‘another to the house of commons, and a third to the com-  
 ‘mittee of both kingdoms.” The usual method was to  
 take it by turns, and every *Friday* the chaplains were ap-  
 pointed for the following week.

(6.) “That all the members of the assembly have liberty  
 ‘to be covered, except the scribes ;” who sometime after  
 had also this liberty indulged them.

Besides these, the parliament on *Thursday* following  
 sent them some further regulations. As,

(1.) “That *two assessors* be joined with the prolocutor,  
 ‘to supply his place in case of absence or sickness, viz.  
 ‘Dr. *Cornelius Burges*, and the reverend Mr. *John White*  
 ‘of *Dorchester*.

(2.) “That *scribes* be appointed, who are not to vote  
 ‘in the assembly, viz. the reverend Mr. *Roborough* and  
 ‘Mr. *Byfield*.

(3.) “That every member at his first entrance into the  
 ‘assembly take the forementioned *protestation*.

(4.) "That no resolution be given upon any question the same day wherein it was first proposed.

(5.) "What any man undertakes to prove as a necessary truth in religion he shall make good from the holy scriptures.

(6.) "No man shall proceed in any dispute, after the prolocutor has enjoined him silence, unless the assembly desire he may go on.

(7.) "No man shall be denied the liberty of entering his dissent from the assembly, with his reasons for it, after the point has been debated; from whence it shall be transmitted to parliament, when either house shall require it.

(8.) "All things agreed upon, and prepared for the parliament, shall be openly read, and allowed in the assembly, and then offered as their judgment, if the majority assent; provided, that the opinions of the persons dissenting, with their reasons, be annexed, if they desire it, and the solution of those reasons by the assembly."

The proceedings being thus settled, the parliament sent the assembly an order to review the XXXIX articles of the church; but before they entered upon business, viz. July 7th, they petitioned the two houses for a fast, on a day when the reverend Mr. *Bowles* and *Matth. Newcomen* preached before them. Upon which petition bishop *Kennet* passes the following severe censure, *Impartially speaking, it is stult with schism, sedition, and cruelty: I will therefore set the substance of the petition before the reader in their own language, that he may form his own judgment upon it, and upon the state of the nation.*

*To the Right Honorable the Lords and Commons assembled in parliament.*

*The humble petition of divers ministers of Christ, in the name of themselves, and sundry others,*

*Humbly sheweth,*

"THAT your petitioners upon serious consideration, and deep sense of God's heavy wrath lying upon us, and hanging over our heads, and the whole nation, manifested particularly by the two late sad and unexpected defeats of our forces in the north and in the west, do appre-



‘hend it to be our duty, as watchmen for the good of the  
 ‘church and kingdom, to present to your religious and pru-  
 ‘dent consideration these ensuing requests, in the name of  
 ‘*Jesus Christ*, your Lord and ours.

*First*, “That you will be pleased to command a public  
 ‘and extraordinary day of humiliation this week, through-  
 ‘out the cities of London, Westminster, the suburbs of  
 ‘both, and places adjacent within the weekly bills of mor-  
 ‘tality, that every one may bitterly bewail his own sins,  
 ‘and cry mightily to God, for Christ’s sake, to remove his  
 ‘wrath, and to heal the land; with professedly new reso-  
 ‘lution of more full performance of the late covenant, for  
 ‘the amendment of our ways.

*Secondly*, “That you would vouchsafe instantly to take  
 ‘into your most serious consideration, how you may more  
 ‘speedily set up *Christ* more gloriously in all his ordinan-  
 ‘ces within this kingdom, and reform all things amiss  
 ‘throughout the land, wherein God is more specially, and  
 ‘more immediately dishonored, among which we humbly  
 ‘lay before you these particulars :

1. “That the brutish ignorance, and palpable darkness  
 ‘possessing the greatest part of the people, in all places  
 ‘of the kingdom, may be remedied, by a speedy and strict  
 ‘charge to all ministers, constantly to catechise all the  
 ‘youth and ignorant people within their parishes.

2. “That the grievous and heinous pollution of the  
 ‘Lord’s supper, by those who are grossly ignorant, and no-  
 ‘toriously profane, may be henceforth, with all christian  
 ‘care and due circumspection, prevented.

3. “That the bold venting of corrupt doctrines, direct-  
 ‘ly contrary to the sacred law of God, may be speedily  
 ‘suppressed.

4. “That the profanation of any part of the Lord’s  
 ‘day, and the days of solemn fasting, by buying, selling,  
 ‘working, sporting, travelling, or neglecting of God’s or-  
 ‘dinances, may be remedied, by appointing special officers  
 ‘in every place for the due execution of all good laws and  
 ‘ordinances against the same.

5. “That there may be a thorough and speedy proceed-  
 ‘ing against blind guides, and scandalous ministers; and  
 ‘that your wisdom would find out some way to admit in-

‘to the ministry such godly and hopeful men as have prepared themselves, and are willing thereunto, without which there will suddenly be such a scarcity of able and faithful ministers, that it will be to little purpose to cast out such as are unable, idle, or scandalous.

6. “That the laws may be quickened against swearing and drunkenness, with which the land is filled and defiled, and under which it mourns.

7. “That some severe course be taken against fornication, adultery, and incest, which do greatly abound.

8. “That all monuments of idolatry and superstition, but more especially the whole body and practice of popery may be totally abolished.

9. “That justice may be executed on all delinquents, according to your religious *vow* and *protestation* to that purpose.

10. “That all possible means may be used for the speedy relief and release of our miserable, and extremely distressed brethren, who are prisoners in Oxford, York, and elsewhere, whose heavy sufferings cry aloud in the ears of our God; and it would lie very heavy on the kingdom should they miscarry suffering as they do for the cause of God.

“That so God, who is now by the sword avenging the quarrel of his covenant, beholding your integrity and zeal, may turn from the fierceness of his wrath, hear our prayers, go forth with our armies, perfect the work of reformation, forgive our sins, and settle truth and peace throughout the kingdom.

“*And your petitioners shall ever pray, &c.*†

Pursuant to this petition, Friday July 21,\* was appointed for a fast, when the reverend Mr. *Hill*, Mr. *Spurstow*, and Mr. *Vines*, preached before both houses of parliament and the assembly together; and the fast was observed with great solemnity in all the churches within the limits above mentioned.

† Rushworth, vol. v. p. 344.

\*“July 7th,” Dr. Grey says, “was the day on which Mr. Bowles and Newcomen preached. *Ed.*”

Next day a committee of divines was appointed to consider what amendments were proper to be made in the doctrinal articles of the church of England, and report them to the assembly, who were ten weeks in debating upon the first *fifteen*, before the arrival of the Scots commissioners; the design was to render their sense more express and determinate in favor of *calvinism*. It is not necessary to trouble the reader with the theological debates; but the articles, as they were new modelled, being rarely to be met with, I have placed them in the appendix, with the original articles of the church, in opposite columns, that the reader, by comparing them, may judge whether the alterations are real improvements.\*

As the assembly were for strengthening the doctrines of the church against *arminianism*, they were equally solicitous to guard against the opposite extreme of *antinomianism*, for which purpose they appointed a committee to peruse the writings of Dr. *Crisp*, *Eaton*, *Saltmarsh*, and others; who having drawn out some of their most dangerous positions, reported them to the assembly, where they were not only condemned, but confuted in their public sermons and writings.

At this time the interest of the parliament was so reduced, they were obliged to call in the assistance of the Scots. The conservators of the peace of that kingdom had appointed a convention of the states, June 22, under pretence of securing their country against the power of the royal army in the north; § and a general assembly, Aug. 2, to consider the state of religion. His majesty would have prevented their meeting, but that being impracticable, he gave orders to limit their consultations to the concerns of their own country; but the parliament of England sent the earl of *Rutland*, sir *William Armyn*, sir *H. Vane*, Mr. *Hatcher*, Mr. *Darley*, and two divines from Westminster, viz. Mr. *Marshal* and Mr. *Ney*, with letters to each of these

\* Appendix, No. VII.

§ Yet these conservators issued out, in the *king's name*, a proclamation for all persons, from 16 to 60 years old, to appear in arms. "At which," says *Rushworth*, "the king was much incensed." Dr. *Grey* Who will not own, that he had great reason to resent his name being used against himself? *Ed.*



assemblies, desiring their assistance in the war, and the assistance of some of their divines with those at Westminster, to settle an uniformity of religion and church government between the two nations. To enforce these requests they delivered a letter from the assembly, “setting forth ‘the deplorable condition of the kingdom of England, which ‘was upon the edge of a most desperate precipice, ready ‘to be swallowed up by Satan and his instruments; they ‘represent the cruelty of their enemies against such as fall ‘into their hands, being armed against them, not only as ‘men, but as christians, as protestants, and as reformers, ‘and that if they should be given up to their rage, they ‘fear it will endanger the safety of all the protestant churches. In a deeper sense of this danger (say they) than we ‘can express, we address you in the bowels of Christ, for ‘your most fervent prayers and advice, what further to do ‘for the making our own and the kingdom’s peace with ‘God, and for the uniting the protestant party more firmly, ‘that we may all serve God with one consent, and stand ‘up against antichrist as one man.”\*

The commissioners arrived at Edinburgh August 9, and were favorably received by the assembly, who proposed as a preliminary, that the two nations should enter into a perpetual *covenant* for themselves and their posterity, that all things might be done in God’s house according to his will; and having appointed some of their number to consult with the English commissioners about a proper form, they chose delegates for the Westminster assembly, and unanimously advised the *convention of states* to assist the parliament in the war, for the following reasons :

1. “Because they apprehend the war was for religion.
- ‘2. Because the protestant faith was in danger. 3. Grati-
- ‘tude for former assistances at the time of the Scots’ refor-
- ‘mation, required a suitable return. 4. Because the
- ‘churches of Scotland and England being embarked in one
- ‘bottom, if one be ruined the other cannot subsist. 5. The
- ‘prospect of uniformity between the two kingdoms in dis-
- ‘cipline and worship, will strengthen the protestant inter-
- ‘est at home and abroad. 6. The present parliament had

\* Rushworth, vol. v. p. 463, 466, 469.

‘been friendly to the Scots, and might be so again. 7. ‘Though the king had so lately established their religion ‘according to their desires, yet they could not confide in ‘his royal declarations, having so often found *facta verbis* ‘*contraria*.’\*’

The instructions of the commissioners sent to the assembly at Westminster, were to promote the extirpation of popery, prelacy, heresy, schism, scepticism and idolatry, and to endeavor an union between the two kingdoms in one confession of faith, one form of church government, and one directory of worship.

The committee for drawing up the solemn league and covenant delivered it into the assembly, Aug. 17, where it was read and highly applauded, by the ministers and *lay-elders*, none opposing it except the king’s commissioners; so that it passed both the assembly and convention in one day,§ and was dispatched next morning to Westminster, with a letter to the two houses, wishing that it might be confirmed, and solemnly sworn and subscribed in both *kingdoms*, as the surest and strictest obligation to make them stand and fall together in the cause of religion and liberty.

Mr. *Marshal* and *Nye* in the letter to the assembly of Aug. 18, assure their brethren, the Scots clergy were entirely on the side of the parliament in this quarrel, against the popish and episcopal faction; that there were between twenty and thirty of the prime nobility present, when the *covenant* passed the *convention*; and that even the king’s commissioners confessed, that in their private capacity they were for it, though as his majesty’s commissioners they were bound to oppose it. So that if the English parliament (say they) comply with the form of this *covenant*, we

\* Rushworth, vol. v. p. 472, &c.

§ “Wise observers.” bishop Burnet adds, “wondered to see a matter ‘of that importance, carried through upon so little deliberation, or debate. It was thought strange to see all their consciences of such a ‘size, so exactly to agree as the several wheels of a clock; which ‘made all apprehend, there was some first mover that directed all those ‘other motions: this by the one party was imputed to God’s extraordinary providence, but by others to the power and policy of the leaders, and the simplicity and fear of the rest.” *Memoirs of the Duke of Hamilton*, p. 239. *Ed.*

are persuaded the whole body of the Scots kingdom will live and die with them, and speedily come to their assistance.

When their commissioners arrived at London, they presented the *covenant* to the two houses, who referred it to the assembly of divines, where it met with some little opposition; Dr. *Featly* declared, he durst not abjure prelacy *absolutely*, because he had sworn to obey his bishop in all things lawful and honest, and therefore proposed to qualify the second article thus, *I will endeavor the extirpation of popery, and all antichristian, tyrannical, or independent prelacy*; but it was carried against him. Dr. *Burges* objected to several articles, and was not without some difficulty persuaded to subscribe, after he had been suspended. The *prolocutor* Mr. *Gataker*, and many others, declared for primitive episcopacy, or for *one stated president with his presbyters to govern every church*; and refused to subscribe till a parenthesis was inserted, declaring what sort of prelacy was to be abjured, viz. [*church government by archbishops, bishops, deans and chapters, archdeacons, and all other ecclesiastical officers depending upon them.*]<sup>†</sup> The Scots, who had been introduced into the assembly Sept. 15, were for abjuring episcopacy as simply unlawful, but the English divines were generally against it.

Bishop *Burnet* says, our commissioners pressed chiefly for a *civil league*, but the Scots would have a *religious one*, to which the English were obliged to yield, taking care, at the same time, to leave a door open for a latitude of interpretation.\* Sir *Henry Vane* put the word *league* into the title, as thinking that might be broken sooner than a *covenant*; and in the first article he inserted that general phrase, of reforming *according to the word of God*; by which the English thought themselves secure from the inroads of presbytery; but the Scots relied upon the next words, *and according to the practice of the best reformed churches*; in which they were confident their discipline must be included. When Mr. *Colman* read the *covenant* before the house of lords, in order to their subscribing it, he declared, that by *prelacy* all sorts of episcopacy were not in-

<sup>†</sup> Calamy's Abridg. p. 81.

\* Duke of Hamilton's Memoirs, p. 237, 240.



tended, but only the form therein described. Thus the wise men on both sides endeavored to outwit each other in wording the articles ; and with these slight amendments the covenant passed the assembly and both houses of parliament ; and by an order dated September 21, was printed and published as follows :

*A solemn League and Covenant for reformation, and defence of religion, the honor and happiness of the king, and the peace and safety of the three kingdoms of England, Scotland, and Ireland.*

“ WE noblemen, barons, knights, gentlemen, citizens, ‘burgesses, ministers of the gospel, and commons of all ‘sorts, in the kingdoms of England, Scotland, and Ireland, ‘by the providence of God, living under one king, and being of one reformed religion, having before our eyes the ‘glory of God, and the advancement of the kingdom of our ‘Lord and Savior Jesus Christ, the honor and happiness ‘of the king’s majesty, and his posterity, and the true public liberty, safety and peace of the kingdoms, wherein ‘every one’s private condition is included ; and calling to ‘mind the treacherous and bloody plots, conspiracies, attempts, and practices of the enemies of God, against the ‘true religion, and professors thereof in all places, especially in these three kingdoms, ever since the reformation of ‘religion ; and how much their rage, power, and presumption, are of late and at this time increased and exercised, ‘whereof the deplorable estate of the church and kingdom ‘of Ireland, the distressed estate of the church and kingdom ‘of England, and the dangerous estate of the church and ‘kingdom of Scotland, are present and public testimonies ; ‘we have (now at last) after other means of supplication, remonstrance, protestations, and sufferings, for the preservation of our lives, and our religion, from utter ruin and ‘destruction, according to the commendable practice of ‘these kingdoms in former times, and the example of God’s ‘people in other nations, after mature deliberation, resolved and determined to enter into a mutual and solemn league and covenant, wherein we all subscribe and ‘each one of us for himself, with our hands lifted up to ‘the most high God, do swear,

## I.

“That we shall sincerely, really, and constantly, through the grace of God, endeavor in our several places and callings, the preservation of the reformed religion in the church of Scotland, in doctrine, worship, discipline and government, against our common enemies; the reformation of religion in the kingdoms of England and Ireland, in doctrine, worship, discipline and government, according to the word of God, and the example of the best reformed churches; and we shall endeavor to bring the church of God in the three kingdoms to the nearest conjunction, and uniformity in religion, confessing of faith, form of church government, directory for worship, and catechising, that we, and our posterity after us, may, as brethren, live in faith and love, and the Lord may delight to dwell in the midst of us.

## II.

“That we shall in like manner, without respect of persons, endeavor the extirpation of popery, prelacy, (that is, church government by archbishops, bishops, their chancellors and commissaries, deans, deans and chapters, archdeacons, and all other ecclesiastical officers depending on that hierarchy) superstition, heresy, schism, profaneness, and whatsoever shall be found to be contrary to sound doctrine, and the power of godliness, lest we partake in other men’s sins, and thereby be in danger to receive of their plagues; and that the Lord may be one, and his name one, in the three kingdoms.

## III.

“We shall, with the same reality, sincerity and constancy, in our several vocations, endeavor with our estates and lives, mutually to preserve the rights and privileges of the parliaments, and the liberties of the kingdoms, and to preserve and defend the king’s majesty’s person and authority, in the preservation and defence of the true religion and liberties of the kingdoms, that the world may bear witness with our consciences, of our loyalty, and that we have no thoughts or intentions to diminish his majesty’s just power and greatness.

## IV.

“ We shall also, with all faithfulness, endeavor the discovery of all such as have been or shall be incendiaries, malignants, or evil instruments, by hindering the reformation of religion, dividing the king from his people, or one of the kingdoms from another, or making any factions or parties among the people, contrary to the league and covenant, that they may be brought to public trial, and receive condign punishment, as the degree of their offences shall require or deserve, or the supreme judicatories of both kingdoms respectively, or others having power from them for that effect, shall judge convenient.

## V.

“ And whereas the happiness of a blessed peace between these kingdoms, denied in former times to our progenitors, is by the good providence of God granted unto us, and has been lately concluded and settled by both parliaments, we shall, each one of us according to our places and interests, endeavor that we may remain conjoined in a firm peace and union to all posterity, and that justice may be done on all the wilful opposers thereof, in manner expressed in the precedent articles.

## VI.

“ We shall also, according to our places and callings, in this common cause of religion, liberty, and peace of the kingdom, assist and defend all those that enter into this league and covenant, in the maintaining and pursuing thereof; and shall not suffer ourselves, directly or indirectly, by whatsoever combination, persuasion, or terror, to be divided and withdrawn from this blessed union and conjunction, whether to make defection to the contrary part, or give ourselves to a detestable indifferency or neutrality in this cause, which so much concerneth the glory of God, the good of the kingdoms, and honor of the king; but shall, all the days of our lives, zealously, and constantly continue therein against all opposition, and promote the same according to our power, against all lets and impediments whatsoever; and what we are not able



‘ourselves to suppress or overcome, we shall reveal and  
‘make known, that it may be timely prevented or removed.

“ And because these kingdoms are guilty of many sins  
‘and provocations against God, and his son Jesus Christ,  
‘as is too manifest by our present distresses and dangers,  
‘the fruits thereof, we profess and declare, before God  
‘and the world, our unfeigned desire to be humbled for  
‘our own sins, and for the sins of these kingdoms ; espe-  
‘cially that we have not, as we ought, valued the inesti-  
‘mable benefit of the gospel ; that we have not labored for  
‘the purity and power thereof ; and that we have not en-  
‘deavored to receive Christ in our hearts, nor to walk wor-  
‘thy of him in our lives, which are the cause of other sins  
‘and transgressions so much abounding amongst us ; and  
‘our true and unfeigned purpose, desire, and endeavor,  
‘for ourselves and all others under our charge, both in  
‘public and private, in all duties we owe to God and man,  
‘to amend our lives, and each one to go before another in  
‘the example of a real reformation, that the Lord may  
‘turn away his wrath and heavy indignation, and estab-  
‘lish these churches and kingdoms in truth and peace.  
‘And this covenant we make in the presence of Almighty  
‘God, the searcher of all hearts, with a true intention to  
‘perform the same, as we shall answer at that great day  
‘when the secrets of all hearts shall be disclosed ; most  
‘humbly beseeching the Lord to strengthen us by his ho-  
‘ly spirit for this end, and to bless our desires and pro-  
‘ceedings with such success as may be a deliverance and  
‘safety to his people, and encouragement to the christian  
‘churches, groaning under, or in danger of the yoke of  
‘antichristian tyranny, to join with the same, or like attes-  
‘tation and covenant, to the glory of God, the enlargement  
‘of the kingdom of Jesus Christ, and the peace and tran-  
‘quillity of christian kingdoms and commonwealths.”\*

Monday Sept. 25, 1643, was appointed for subscribing  
this covenant, when both houses, with the Scots commis-  
sioners, and assembly of divines, being met in the church  
of *St. Margaret's* Westminster, the reverend Mr. *White*,

\* Rushworth, vol. v. p. 478.

of Dorchester, opened the solemnity with prayer; after him Mr. *Henderson* and Mr. *Nye* spoke in justification of taking the covenant from scripture precedents, and displayed the advantage the church had received from such sacred combinations. Mr. *Henderson* spoke next, and declared that the states of Scotland had resolved to assist the parliament of England, in carrying on the ends and designs of this *covenant*; then Mr. *Nye* read it from the pulpit with an audible voice, article by article, each person standing uncovered, with his right hand lifted up bare to heaven, worshipping the great name of God, and swearing to the performance of it.\* Dr. *Gouge* concluded the solemnity with prayer, after which the house of commons went up into the chancel, and subscribed their names in one roll of parchment, and the assembly in another, in both which the *covenant* was fairly transcribed. *Lord's day* following it was tendered to all persons within the bills of mortality, being read in the several churches to their congregations as above. October 15, it was taken by the house of lords, after a sermon preached by Dr. *Temple*, from *Nehemiah* x. 29, and an exhortation by Mr. *Coleman*, Oct. 29, it was ordered by the committee of states in Scotland to be sworn to, and subscribed all over that kingdom, on penalty of the confiscation of goods and rents, and such other punishment as his majesty and the parliament should inflict on the refusers. § All the lords of the council were summoned to sign the covenant Nov. 2, and those who did not, to appear again the 14th of the same month, under the severest penalties, when some of the king's party not attending were declared enemies to religion, and to their king and country; Nov. 17, their *goods* were ordered to be seized, and their persons apprehended; upon which they fled into England. Such was the unbounded zeal of that nation! February 2, following, the covenant was ordered to be taken throughout the kingdom of England, by all persons above the age of eighteen years; and the assembly were commanded to draw up an exhortation to dispose people to it, which being approved by both houses, was published under the title of

\* Rushworth, vol. v. p. 475. § Duke of Hamilton's *Memoirs*, p. 240.

*An Exhortation to the taking of the solemn League and Covenant, for reformation and defence of religion, the honor and happiness of the king, and the peace and safety of the three kingdoms of England, Scotland, and Ireland, and for satisfying such scruples as may arise in the taking of it; assented to by the house, and ordered to be printed.*

*Die Veneris, Feb. 9, 1643.*

“IF the power of religion, or solid reason; if loyalty to the king, and piety to their native country, or love to themselves, and natural affection to their posterity; if the example of men touched with a deep sense of all these; or extraordinary success from God thereupon, can awaken an embroiled bleeding remnant to embrace the sovereign and only means of their recovery, there can be no doubt but this solemn league and covenant will find, wheresoever it shall be tendered, a people ready to entertain it with all cheerfulness and duty.

“And were it not commended to the kingdom by the concurrent encouragement of the honorable houses of parliament, the assembly of divines, the renowned city of London, multitudes of other persons of eminent rank and quality of this nation, and the whole body of Scotland, who have all willingly sworn and subscribed it with rejoicing at the oath, so graciously seconded from heaven already, by blasting the counsels, and breaking the power of the enemy more than ever, yet it goeth forth in its own strength with such convincing evidence of equity, truth, and righteousness, as may raise in all (not wilfully ignorant, or miserably seduced) inflamed affections to join with their brethren in this happy bond, for putting an end to the present miseries, and for saving both king and kingdom from utter ruin, now so strongly and openly labored by the popish faction, and such as have been bewitched and besotted by that viperous and bloody generation. §—

It then proceeds to answer objections against taking the covenant; as,

§ Rushworth, vol. v. p. 475. Husband's Collections, p. 424.



*Obj. 4. That it obliges to the extirpation of prelacy, which stands as yet by the known laws of the land.*

*Ans.* The life and soul of the hierarchy is already taken away; nothing of jurisdiction remaining; and since it is but a human constitution, if it be found a grievance, we may certainly endeavor its extirpation in a lawful way.

*Obj. 2. It is said to be inconsistent with the oath of canonical obedience.*

*Ans.* If men have sworn obedience to the laws of the land, may they not endeavor by lawful means the repealing those laws, if they are found inconvenient? or if any ministers have taken oaths not warranted by the laws of God and the land, ought they not to repent of them?

*Obj. 3. But the covenant crosses the oaths of supremacy and allegiance.*

*Ans.* This is false, for it binds to the preservation of the king's person and authority, in the defence of the religion and liberties of the kingdom.

*Obj. 4. But it is done without the king's consent.*

*Ans.* So was the protestation of May 5, which went through the whole kingdom, his majesty not excepting against it, though he was then at Whitehall. The same has been done by the united Netherlands under King Philip; and more lately in Scotland, his majesty himself declaring by act of parliament, that they had done nothing but what became loyal and obedient subjects.

Dr. Barwick says,† that some persons in the university of Cambridge published an answer to this exhortation, which I have not seen; but if the reader will look forward to the year 1647, he will find the reasons of the university of Oxford against it, confirmed in convocation, the validity of which he will judge of for himself. It is certain most of the religious part of the nation, who apprehended the

† Life of Barwick, p. 35.

§ "That is," says bishop Warburton, "the puritan: for puritanism and religion are convertible terms with this historian." This evidently appears to be remarked with a sneer, and to impeach the impartiality of Mr. Neal. But in answer to the remark it may be observed, that it is not candid to interpret Mr. Neal's words, as if he limited all seriousness of character to the puritans:—and then the question is, whether the fact was not as Mr. Neal states it? if it were, his language is irreprehensible. *Ed.*

protestant religion in danger, and were desirous of reducing the hierarchy of the church, were zealous for the *covenant*. Others took it only in obedience to the parliament, being sensible of the distressed circumstances of their affairs, and that the assistance of the Scots was to be obtained on no other terms.† But as it was a test of a mixed nature, and contained some obligations upon conscience, which wise and honest men might reasonably scruple, who were otherwise well affected to the protestant religion, and the liberties of their country, the imposing it as a test can never be justified, though it appears, most of the episcopal divines who made the greatest figure in the church after the restoration, did not refuse it.

Together with the *exhortation of the assembly*, the following orders\* and instructions were dispersed over the kingdom.

*Ordered*, “That copies of the covenant be sent to all commanders in chief, and governors of towns, forts, garrisons, and soldiers, that it may be taken by all soldiers under their command.

“That copies be sent to the committees of parliament, in the several counties that are under the power of the parliament, and that the committees within six days disperse the said copies, and cause them to be delivered to the ministers, church-wardens, or constables of the several parishes.

“That the several ministers be required to read the covenant to the people, the next Lord’s day after they have prepared the people to take it.

“That the committees of parliament take it themselves within seven days after they have received the copies; and then disperse themselves throughout their counties, so as three or four of them may be together at the several places appointed for the people to take it. That they summon all the ministers, churchwardens, constables, and other officers, to that place, and after a sermon preached by a minister whom they shall appoint, they shall cause the said minister to tender the covenant to all such ministers, and other officers, to be taken and subscribed in presence of the committee.

† Rapin, vol. xii. p. 133.

\* Husband’s Collection, p. 420.

“The said ministers are then to be required to tender the covenant to all the rest of their parishioners next Lord’s day, and if any minister refuse, or neglect to appear at the said summons, or refuse to take the said covenant, the committee shall appoint another minister to do it in his place.

“If any minister refuse to take, or tender the covenant; or if any other person refuse to take it after a second tender, upon two Lord’s days, their names shall be returned to the committee, and by them to the house of commons; and all persons that absent themselves after notice given, shall be returned as refusers.”

The English in foreign parts were not exempted from this test; directions were sent to Mr. *Strickland*, the parliament’s agent at the Hague, to tender it to all the English in those countries, and to certify the names of such as refused.\* Here the elector *Palatine* took it, and after some time came into England, and condescended to sit in the assembly of divines. December 20, 1643, it was ordered by the lords and commons, that no person should be capable of being elected a common-council-man of the city of London, or so much as have a voice in such elections, who has not taken the covenant.† On the 29th of Jan. 1644, it was ordered by the commons, that the solemn league and covenant be, upon every day of fasting and public humiliation, publicly read in every church and congregation within the kingdom; and every congregation is enjoined to have *one* fairly printed in a large letter, in a table fitted to be hung up in a public place of the church or congregation, to be read by the people. All young ministers were required to take the covenant at their ordination; none of the laity were continued in any office of trust, either civil or military, who refused it. When the war was ended, all the noblemen, knights, gentlemen, and officers who had opposed the parliament, were obliged to submit to it, before they were admitted to composition. Notwithstanding all this severity, Dr. *Calamy* says, Mr. *Baxter* kept his people from taking the covenant, as fearing it might be a snare to their consciences; nay, he prevented it being much taken

\* Whitlocke, p. 79. Parliamentary Chronicle, p. 172.

† Husband’s Collections, p. 404.



in the county he lived in, by keeping the ministers from offering it their people, except the city of Worcester, where he had no great interest.†

The king could not be unacquainted with these proceedings, for the *covenant* lay before the parliament and assembly almost a month, during which time his majesty took no public notice of it; but a fortnight after it had been subscribed by both houses, and by all the clergy and laity within the bills of mortality, he issued out the following proclamation, dated from Oxford, October 9, in the nineteenth year of his reign.

*By the King.*

“WHEREAS there is a printed paper, entitled a *solemn league and covenant, for reformation and defence of religion, &c.* pretended to be printed by order of the house of commons, September 21, which covenant, tho’ it seems to make specious expressions of piety and religion, is in truth nothing else but but a traitorous and seditious combination against us and the established religion and laws of this kingdom, in pursuance of a traitorous design and endeavor to bring in foreign force to invade this kingdom: We do therefore straitly charge and command all our loving subjects, of what degree or quality soever, upon their allegiance, that they presume not to take the said seditious and traitorous covenant. And we do likewise hereby further inhibit and forbid all our subjects to impose, administer, or tender the said covenant, as they, and every one of them, will answer the contrary at their utmost and extremest perils.”\*

His majesty sent the like declaration into Scotland, to which the states of that kingdom paid no further regard, than to send him the reasons of their conduct, with their advice to his majesty to take the *covenant* himself.

Great complaints have been made, and not without reason, of the execution this test did upon the king’s clergy throughout the kingdom. It was a new weapon put into the hands of the committees, which enabled them with more ease and certainty to detect *malignant or disaffected*

† Abridg. p. 104.

\* Rushworth, vol. v. p. 482.

*ministers* ; for instead of producing a number of witnesses, as had been the method hitherto, they now tendered the *covenant*, which the others refusing, gave occasion to the general report, that the clergy were turned out of their livings *only for refusing the covenant*, whereas their sequestration was grounded upon other causes : or at least the articles of immorality or disaffection to the parliament were almost always joined with it. When the *covenant* passed through the parliament quarters, in some towns it was neglected, in others the incumbent avoided it, by withdrawing for a few weeks, and getting another to officiate. Some who refused were displaced, and the names of those who absented were returned to the parliament, but little or nothing came of it. The writer of the life of bishop *Saunderson* says, that in the associated counties of Cambridgeshire, &c. all were ejected who refused the *covenant*, that is, all to whom it was tendered ; for though it was pressed pretty closely in some places notorious for disaffection, in others, that had been quiet, it was little regarded. The earl of *Manchester* had particular instructions to tender the *covenant* to the Cambridge scholars, and yet the commissioners imposed it only upon such who had adhered to the king, or of whose disaffection they had sufficient evidence, several who behaved peaceably being permitted to keep their places, who would certainly have refused it. It has been observed already, that Mr. *Baxter* prevented its being much taken in Worcestershire ; and no doubt, there were men of moderation and influence who did the same in other counties. Those clergymen who had declared for the king were usually put to the trial ; but reputed *calvinists*, of sober lives, who had stood neuter, were frequently overlooked ; so that the beneficed clergy suffered by the *covenant*, rather as *parties in the war*, than as friends of the hierarchy. However, it being a *religious test*, the imposing it was, in my opinion, unwarrantable, and a very great hardship, especially as it was for some time a door of entrance into ecclesiastical preferments, for such young divines as had no concern in the war. A test of a civil nature would have answered all the ends of civil government, without shackling the consciences of men, which ought always to be left free, and open to conviction.

But if the puritan powers bore hard upon the loyalists, in *imposing* the *covenant*, the king's clergy were even with them at the restoration, when they obliged them publickly to *abjure* it, or quit their preferments.

The necessity of the king's affairs having obliged him to arm the papists, and commission the duke of *Ormond* to agree to a cessation of arms with the Irish *catholics*, in order to draw off his forces from thence, his majesty fell under the suspicion of favoring that religion, especially when it appeared that not only the protestant soldiers, but the Irish rebels, were transported with them. Mr. *Whitlocke*\* says, several of their officers and soldiers came over with the king's army; that a month or two after, eight hundred native Irish rebels landed at Weymouth, under the lord *Inchequin*, and another party at Beaumaris, which committed great spoils, destroying with fire what they could not carry off. Another party landed near Chester, under the earl of *Cork*, and fifteen hundred were cast away at sea: these wretches brought hither the same savage disposition, which they had discovered in their own country; they plundered and killed people in cold blood, observing neither the rules of honor, nor the law of arms. § The Scotch forces, in the north of Ireland, entered into a confederacy to stand by each other against the cessation; the parliament of England protested against it, and published a declaration informing the world, that his majesty had broke through his royal promise, of leaving the Irish war to them; they forbid all masters of ships to bring over

\* P. 75, 76, 78, 79. Rapin, vol. ii. p. 486, folio. Clarendon, vol. ii. part i. p. 439.

§ Dr. Grey contrasts this charge against the Irish rebels with instances of the conduct of the English, adherents to the parliament. He brings forward with this view the murder of Dr. Walter Raleigh, dean of Windsor, by the man to whose custody he was committed; and of Col. Bulkley, by Major Cheadle: the perpetrators, in each case, were acquitted. The doctor also refers to the petition of the Irish catholics to the king in 1642, complaining of the violences and cruelties of which they were the objects. It is sufficient to observe, that the cruelty of one party does not exculpate the other. On which ever side acts of injustice and cruelty are committed, humanity will lament it, and equity will reprobate it. Such is the nature of war, such is the envenomed spirit that irritates civil contests, each party is, generally, very guilty; and it may not be often easy to ascertain the proportion of guilt. *Ed.*



any officers or soldiers, on penalty of the forfeiture of their vessels, and gave letters of marque to merchants and others, who would fit out ships at their own expense, empowering them to take to their own profit all such ships and goods as they should meet coming over with soldiers or warlike stores for the king. Next year an ordinance was published, that no quarter should be given to any Irish papist taken in arms against the parliament; all officers were to except them out of their capitulations, and upon making them prisoners, were immediately to put them to death.

This unhappy management of the king alienated the affections of great numbers of his friends who had the protestant religion at heart; many who wished well to his person deserted him upon this occasion, and made their peace with the parliament, as the earls of *Holland*, *Bedford*, *Clare*, *Carlisle*, sir *Edward Deering*, and others; this last gentleman published the reasons of his conduct to the world, the principal of which were, the Irish cessation; his majesty preferring popish officers to chief places of trust and honor; and the language of the Oxford clergy and others, that *the king should come no other way to his palace but by conquest*.<sup>\*</sup> There was certainly a very malignant spirit among those gentlemen at this time, as appears by their form of thanksgiving, or rather imprecation, for the taking of Bristol, and the success of the earl of *Newcastle's* army in the north: "O Lord (say they) 'though our sins cry aloud, hear them not, but look to the 'righteousness of our cause; see the seamless coat of thy 'son torn; the throne of thine anointed trampled upon; 'thy church invaded by sacrilege, and thy people miserably deceived by lies; see it, O God, as see it thou dost, 'and vindicate what thou seest on the heads of those who 'lead these wretches.'" Many of the earl of *Newcastle's* soldiers in the north, upon news of the Irish *cessation* threw down their arms, and offered a composition; and if we may believe the Parliamentary Chronicle,<sup>†</sup> this single action lost the king all the northern counties. To put a stop to the clamors of the people, and prevent any farther desertions, his majesty resolved to support his own char-

<sup>\*</sup> Rushworth, vol. v. p. 383.

<sup>†</sup> Part iii. p. 86.

acter as a *protestant*, and accordingly made the following protestation in presence of the congregation at Christ-church, Oxford, immediately before his receiving the sacrament from the hands of archbishop *Usher*.

“*My Lord;*

“I espy here many resolved protestants, who may declare to the world the declaration I do now make. I have, to the utmost of my power, prepared my soul to be a worthy receiver, and may I so receive comfort from the blessed sacrament, as I do intend the establishment of the true reformed protestant religion, as it stood in its beauty in the happy days of queen *Elizabeth*, without any connivance at popery. I bless God that, in the midst of these public distractions, I have still liberty to communicate. And may this sacrament be my damnation, if my heart do not join with my lips in this protestation.”\*

How consonant was this with his majesty's actions, when within a few days he agreed to a cessation with the Irish papists for a year, and a toleration of their religion? All men knew, that his majesty not only connived at popery, but indulged it as far as was in his power; historians therefore are at a loss to reconcile this solemn appeal to heaven, with the king's piety and sincerity. The parliament was so apprehensive of the consequences of bringing over the Irish papists, that, by an order of November 22, they desired the assembly of divines to write letters to the foreign churches of Holland, France, and Switzerland, and other places, to inform them of the artifices of his majesty's agents; of the constant employment of Irish rebels, and other papists, to be governors, commanders, and soldiers in his armies; of the many evidences of their intentions to introduce popery; to hinder the intended reformation, and to condemn other protestant churches as unsound because not prelatiical; and that the Scots commissioners be desired to join with them. In pursuance of this order, the assembly wrote the following letter, dated November 30, 1643:—

\* Rushworth, p. 346. Rapin, vol. ii. p. 490, folio.

“ *To the Belgick, French, Helvetian, and other reformed Churches.*

“ *Right reverend and dearly beloved in our Lord Jesus Christ,*

“ WE the assembly of divines, and others, convened by the authority of both houses of parliament, with the commissioners from the general assembly of the church of Scotland, do heartily salute you in the Lord. We doubt not, but the sad reports of the miseries under which the church and kingdom of England do bleed, and wherewith we are ready to be swallowed up, is long since come to your ears; and it is probable, the same instruments of satan and anticrist have, by their emissaries, endeavored to represent us as black as may be among yourselves.\*—And we sometimes doubt whether we have not been wanting to our own innocence, and your satisfaction, in being thus long silent; but pardon us, *dear brethren*, if this cup of trembling wherewith our spirits have been filled to amazement, and our wrestling with extreme difficulties ever since our meeting, has hindered from that which was our duty; and give us leave now a little to ease our grief, while we relate the desolation made by the antichristian faction, who are for hindering the work of reformation, and for introducing and cherishing popery; and are now arrived to that strength, that if the Lord do not speedily help us, we shall be altogether laid waste by them.

“ How great a hand they [the prelates] have had, in the miseries of other reformed churches, in the destruction of the *Palatinate*, in the loss of *Rochel*, are so fully known and felt by you all, that we need not speak any thing of them. And we suppose their inveterate hatred against you all is sufficiently manifest, in that multitudes of them have refused to acknowledge any of you for churches of Christ because you are not prelatical, and thereby (as they conceive) want a lawful vocation of ministers. Sure we are, that among ourselves, scarce one thing can be thought of which may be supposed an argument of their design to advance popery, that has not been

\* Rushworth, p. 371.



‘ attempted. The laws against popery have been suspended ; *judges* forbid to proceed against condemned priests ; jesuits set free ; houses of superstition in Ireland and England have been set up and not discountenanced ; notorious papists harbored about the court and preferred ; many released from legal penalties, and their prosecutors discountenanced ; agents have been sent into Italy, and nuncios from Rome received, while the most zealous protestants have been persecuted ; many prelates and clergymen have publicly preached, and endeavored to leaven the people with all points of popery, except the *supremacy*, and introduced abundance of corrupt innovations into the worship of God ; for non-compliance with which many have been forced to fly for refuge to the remote parts of the world.

“ They imposed upon the kingdom of Scotland a new popish service book and canons, to which, when that nation would not submit, they prevailed with his majesty to proclaim them rebels, and raise an army against them, to which all the papists, and those who were popishly affected, contributed ; and had not the Lord, by his blessing on the Scots arms, and by the calling of this parliament, prevented it, the two nations had been embruing their hands in each others blood.

“ But though we hoped through the goodness of God, and his blessing upon this parliament, whose hearts were inclined to a more perfect reformation, that our winter had been past, yet, alas ! we find it to be quite otherwise. We know our sins have deserved all, and if we die and perish, the Lord is righteous ; to his hand we submit, and to him alone we look for healing. The same antichristian faction not being discouraged, by their want of success in Scotland, have stirred up a bloody rebellion in Ireland, wherein above one hundred thousand protestants have been destroyed in one province, within a few months. They have alienated the heart of his majesty from his parliament, and prevailed with him to withdraw and raise an army, which at first pretended only to be made up of protestants—but soon after papists were armed by commission from the king ; many great papists were put into places of public command, and the body of

‘ all the papists have joined his majesty with all their  
‘ might; they profess and exercise their religion publicly  
‘ in several parts of the kingdom, and go up and down  
‘ plundering, murdering and spoiling of their goods, all  
‘ such as adhere to the parliament, and to the cause of re-  
‘ ligion. Nor has the parliament been able, by their peti-  
‘ tions and remonstrances, to recover his majesty out of their  
‘ hands, or bring these men to deserved punishment, but the  
‘ sword rages almost in every corner of this woful land.

“ And to complete our miseries, they have prevailed  
‘ with his majesty so far to own the *rebels* in Ireland, as  
‘ not only to call them his Roman catholic subjects now in  
‘ arms, but to grant them a cessation of arms for a year,  
‘ and to hold what they have gotten, with liberty to strength-  
‘ en themselves with men, money, arms, ammunition, &c.  
‘ whereby they are enabled not only to destroy the remnant  
‘ of protestants in Ireland, but to come over hither, (as ma-  
‘ ny of them are already) to act the same butchery upon us.

“ In the midst of these troublesome times the two hous-  
‘ es of parliament have called this assembly, to give them  
‘ our best council for the reformation of the church, re-  
‘ quiring us to make God’s word only our rule, and to  
‘ endeavor the nearest conformity to the best reformed  
‘ churches, and uniformity to all the churches of the three  
‘ kingdoms.

“ The church and kingdom of Scotland have made of-  
‘ fer of their humble mediation to the king for a *pacifica-  
‘ tion*, which being rejected, both nations have entered in-  
‘ to a mutual *league and covenant*; and the Scots have re-  
‘ solved to join in arms with their brethren in England,  
‘ for their mutual preservation from the common enemy,  
‘ and so far as in them lieth for the safety of their native  
‘ king. They have also sent their commissioners hither, for  
‘ uniformity of religion in the churches of both kingdoms.

“ And we their commissioners do exceedingly rejoice,  
‘ to behold the foundation of the house of God, not only in  
‘ doctrine, but in church government, laid before our eyes  
‘ in a reverend assembly of so wise, learned, and godly di-  
‘ vines. And we find ourselves bound in all christian duty,  
‘ as well as by our late *covenant*, to join in representing

‘to the reformed churches abroad, the true condition of affairs here, against all mistakes and misinformations.

“And now, dear brethren, we beg of you, *first*, to judge aright of our innocence and integrity in this our just defence; if our enemies say, that we are risen up in rebellion to deprive the king of his just power and greatness, and to bring anarchy and confusion into the church of Christ, we doubt not but our *solemn covenant* (a copy of which we humbly present you herewith) will sufficiently clear us. Let the righteous Lord judge between us, whom we implore to help us no further than we can plead these things in sincerity.

*Secondly*, “That you would sympathize with us as brethren, who suffer in and for the same cause wherein yourselves have been oppressed.

*Thirdly*, “That you would conceive of our condition as your own common cause, which, if it be lost with us, yourselves are not like long to escape, the quarrel being not so much against men’s persons, as against the power of godliness—and the purity of God’s word. The way and manner of your owning us we leave to yourselves, only we importunately crave your fervent prayers, both public and private, that God would bring salvation to us; that the blessings of truth and peace may rest upon us; that these three nations may be joined as one stick in the hands of the Lord; and that we ourselves, contemptible builders, called to repair the house of God, in a troublesome time, may see the pattern of this house, and commend such a platform to our *Zerubbabels* as may be most agreeable to his sacred word, nearest in conformity to the best reformed churches, and to establish uniformity among ourselves; that all mountains may become plains before them, and us; that then all who now see the plummet in our hands, may also behold the top stone set upon the head of the Lord’s house among us, and may help us with shouting to cry, *Grace, grace*, to it.

“Thus much we have been commanded to inform you of, reverend brethren, (and by you all faithful christians under your charge) by the honorable house of commons, in whose name, and in our own, we bid you heartily farewell in the Lord.



*"Your most affectionately devoted brethren in Christ,*

William Twisse, *prolocutor,*

Cornelius Burges, }  
John White, } *assessors,*

Henry Roborough, }  
Adoniram Byfield, } *scribes,*

John Maitland, }  
A. Johnston, } *Commissioners of*  
Alex. Henderson, } *the church of Scot-*  
Sam. Rutherford, } *land."*  
Rob. Bailie, }  
Geo. Gillespie, }

The inscription was, "*To the reverend and learned pastors and elders of the classes and churches of the province of Zealand, our much honored brethren.*"

Letters of the same import were sent to the several churches of the *seven provinces*; to the churches of Geneva; the protestant cantons of Switzerland; the churches of Hesse, Hanau, and Hainault; and to the protestant congregation at Paris; all which were received with respect, and answered by the several classes.\* But the churches of Bohemia, Transylvania, Poland, Silesia, and Austria, and other cities and principalities of Germany, were not written to. The answer from the French church at Paris was read in the assembly the beginning of March; from Switzerland June 12, 1644; and from Geneva§ at the same time; from the classes of Amsterdam and Guelderland June 29; and Mr. *Whitlocke* observes, that the Netherland divines expressed not only their approbation of the proceedings of the parliament and assembly touching the covenant, but desired to join with the two kingdoms therein.

The king, apprehending himself misrepresented to the foreign churches, in that part of the assembly's letter which

\* History of the Stuarts, p. 232.

§ "Diodati, the prince of divinity there," bishop Warburton says, "returned a very temperate answer, no way inconsistent with the re-establishment of episcopacy." *Ed.*

insinuates a design to introduce popery, and being advised to vindicate his character from that imputation, caused a manifesto to be drawn up in Latin and English, to all foreign protestants: which, though not published till the beginning of next year, may be properly inserted in this place.

CHARLES *by the especial providence of Almighty God, king of England, Scotland, France, and Ireland, defender of the faith, &c. to all those who profess the true reformed protestant religion, of what nation, degree, or condition soever they be, to whom this present declaration shall come, greeting.*

“WHEREAS we are given to understand, that many false rumors and scandalous letters, are spread up and down among the reformed churches in foreign parts, by the politic, or rather the pernicious industry of some ill-affected persons, that we have an inclination to recede from that orthodox religion which we were born, baptized, and bred in, and which we have firmly professed and practised throughout the whole course of our life to this moment; and that we intend to give way to the introduction, and public exercise of popery again, in our dominions; which most detestable calumny being grounded upon no imaginable foundation, hath raised these horrid tumults, and more than barbarous wars, throughout this flourishing island, under pretence of a kind of reformation which is incompatible with the fundamental laws and government of this kingdom; we desire that the whole christian world should rest assured, that we never entertained the least thought to attempt such a thing, or to depart a jot from that holy religion, which when we received the crown and sceptre of this kingdom, we took a most solemn sacramental oath to profess and protect. Nor does our constant practice, and daily presence in the exercise of this religion, with so many asseverations at the head of our armies, and the public attestation of our barons, with the *circumspection used in the education of our royal offspring*, besides divers other undeniable arguments, only demonstrate this, but also that happy alliance of marriage we contracted between our eldest daughter and the illustrious prince

‘of *Orange*, most closely confirms the reality of our intentions herein; by which it appears, that our endeavors are not only to make a profession thereof in our own dominions, but to strengthen it abroad as much as lieth in our power.\*

“This most holy religion of the *Anglicane* church, ordained by so many convocations of learned divines, confirmed by so many acts of parliament, and strengthened by so many royal proclamations, together with the ecclesiastical discipline and liturgy, which the most eminent protestant authors, as well as Germans, French, Danes, and Swedes, Dutch and Bohemians, do with many eulogies, and not without a kind of envy, approve and applaud in their public writings, particularly in the transactions of the synod of Dort, wherein, (besides others of our divines who were afterwards prelates) one of our bishops assisted, to whose dignity all due respect and precedency were given; this religion, we say, which our royal father of blessed memory, doth publicly assert in his famous confession addressed to all christian princes, with the hierarchy and liturgy thereof, we solemnly protest, that by the help of God, we will endeavor to our utmost power, and last period of our life, to keep entire and inviolable; and will be careful, according to our duty to heaven, and the tenor of our oath at our coronation, that all our ecclesiastics, in their several degrees and incumbencies, shall preach and practise. Wherefore we command all our ministers of state beyond the seas, as well ambassadors as residents, agents and messengers; and we desire all the rest of our loving subjects that sojourn in foreign parts, to communicate and assert this our solemn and sincere protestation, when opportunity of time and place shall be offered.

“*Given in our university and city of Oxford,*  
‘*May 14, 1644.*”

This declaration did the king little service among foreign protestants, for though it assured them his majesty would not turn papist, it convinced them that no alteration in the

\* Rushworth, vol. v. p. 752.



English hierarchy was to be expected. His marrying his daughter to the prince of *Orange* was perhaps the only evidence of his charity for the Dutch reformation; but his appeal to the education of his children was trifling, when all the world knew they were under *popish instructors*, in pursuance of a marriage contract, till twelve or fourteen years of age, and had received impressions not to be easily defaced. His insinuating to the foreign churches, that their most learned divines preferred the English hierarchy to the government of their own countries, convinced them they ought to be more sparing of their compliments for the future, to persons who would draw such conclusions from them. As to the synod of Dort, no precedence was given to the bishop on account of his episcopal character, but as a baron of the English parliament.\* Nor is there any thing in the declaration that might encourage the foreign clergy to hope his majesty would own their churches, ministers, or sacraments, or unite with them against the common enemy of the reformation, any more than before these unhappy troubles began.

All the episcopal divines left the assembly before the bringing in of the covenant, except Dr. *Featly*, who was expelled for holding correspondence with archbishop *Usher* at Oxford, and for revealing their proceedings, contrary to the express words of the ordinance, which obliges them *not to divulge by printing or writing, or otherwise, their opinions or advices, touching the matters proposed to*

\* Dr. Grey will have it, that the contrary was the fact; and quotes bishop Carleton. But the quotation goes to prove no more, than that the foreign divines, at the synod, in their conversations with him, expressed their approbation of the episcopal government of the English church, and their wishes to have the same order established among themselves. But Mr. Neal's representation does not seem to be accurate. The case of precedence, according to Brandt, appears to have stood thus: When the synod met, the two commissioners of the states took place near the chimney on the right hand. The English divines sat on the left. An empty seat was kept for the French. The third place was appointed for the deputies of the Palatinate; and so on. Next to the commissioners on the right the professors of divinity took place, and then the ministers and elders of the country, according to the rank of each province. So that the precedence, which the English bishop had, naturally arose from his rank amongst the English divines; to whom, in general, was assigned the first seat on the left hand. History of the Reformation Abridged, vol. ii. p. 397. *Ed.*

them by parliament, without the consent of both or either houses. The doctor was a learned man, and a *calvinist*, upon which account the assembly paid him a high regard, and indulged him in all his speeches in favor of episcopacy, and against the *covenant*, some of which were afterwards published to the world. They appointed him to answer a popish pamphlet called the *Safeguard*; and he bore a part in the annotations on the Bible, which go under the name of the Assembly. Lord *Clarendon* says, the king sent him a letter forbidding him to sit any longer, but that the doctor excused it in a letter to archbishop *Usher*, which being intercepted, he was committed prisoner to lord *Peter's* house in Aldersgate-street as a spy; the archbishop at the same time being declared incapable of sitting in the assembly for the like reason. And here was an end of all the public concern the episcopal party had in the government of the church till the restoration.

From the time of taking the *covenant*, we may date the entire dissolution of the hierarchy, though it was not as yet abolished by an ordinance of parliament. There were no ecclesiastical courts, no visitations, no wearing the habits, no regard paid to the canons or ceremonies, nor even to the common-prayer itself. The archbishop of *Canterbury*, by an ordinance of May 16, had been forbid to collate any benefices in his gift, but to persons nominated by parliament; for disobedience to which he was by another ordinance of June 10, “suspended *ab officio & beneficio*, and ‘from all archiepiscopal jurisdiction, till he should be acquitted, or convicted of the high treason of which he was ‘impeached; and as to such livings, dignities, promotions, ‘&c. in the said archbishop’s gift or collation, as are, or ‘shall hereafter become void, institution or induction shall ‘henceforward be given by the archbishop’s vicar-general, ‘or any other having authority on his behalf, upon the ‘nomination and recommendation of both houses of parliament.” By this extraordinary method the reverend Mr. *Corbet* was inducted into the living of *Chatham*, *ratione*

|| The imprisonment of Dr. Featly, Mr. Baxter observes, “much reflected on the parliament; because whatever the facts were, he was ‘so learned a man, as was sufficient to dishonor those he suffered by.” *Baxter’s Life and Times*, p. 75. *Ed.*

*suspensionis dom. Guil. archiepiscopi Cant. & sequestrationis temporalium archiepiscopatus in manibus supremæ curiæ parliamenti, jam existentis.* By reason of the suspension of the archbishop of Canterbury, and the sequestration of the temporalities of his archbishopric into the hands of the present high court of parliament, the same belonging to their gift. But this ordinance was of no long continuance, for upon the sitting of the assembly of divines, all church business went through their hands; the *parishes* elected their ministers, the *assembly* examined and approved of them, and the *parliament* confirmed them in their benefices without any regard to the archbishop or his vicar. Thus the earl of *Manchester* filled the vacant pulpits in the associated counties; and when lord *Fairfax* was authorized to supply those in the north, by an ordinance of Feb. 27, the preamble says, “the houses being ‘credibly informed that many ministers in the county of ‘York were not only of a scandalous life, but having left ‘their churches and cures, had withdrawn themselves wil- ‘fully from the same, and joined such forces as had been ‘raised against the parliament, and assisted them with ‘men, money, horses, and arms; therefore it is ordained, ‘that lord *Fairfax* be authorized to fill up their places, ‘with such learned and godly divines as he shall think fit, ‘with advice of the assembly.”

This created a great deal of business; for though the assembly had not a parliamentary authority to *ordain*, yet the examination and approbation of such clergymen already in orders, as petitioned for sequestered livings, being by express order of the two houses referred to them, they were obliged to chuse a select committee for this work; their names were,

<i>The Rev. Dr. Gouge</i>	<i>The Rev. Dr. Spurstow</i>	<i>The Rev. Mr. Corbet</i>
Dr. Stanton	Mr. Ley	Mr. Gataker
Dr. Lightfoot	Mr. Reynolds	Mr. Herle
Dr. Smith	Mr. Conant	Mr. Hall
Dr. Temple	Mr. Gower	Mr. Whitaker
Dr. Tuckney	Mr. Colman	Mr. Bathurst
Dr. Hoyle	Mr. Hill	Mr. Cheynel
Dr. Burges		



The method of examination was this ; the names of the ministers who petitioned for livings, or were recommended by either house of parliament, being published in the assembly two or three days before the examination, liberty was given in that time to make exceptions to their characters ; if nothing was objected they were examined by the committee, or any five of them, who reported their qualifications to the house, upon which each candidate received a certificate from the assembly to the following effect :

“ *According* to an order bearing date—from the ‘ committee of the house of commons for plundered ministers, to the committee of divines for the examination ‘ of *A. B.* concerning his fitness to be admitted to the benefit of the sequestration of the church of——, in the county of——, and so to officiate in the cure thereof, these are ‘ to certify the said committee of plundered ministers, that ‘ upon examination of the said *A. B.* and some trial of his ‘ gifts and abilities, we conceive him fit to officiate in the ‘ cure of——, in the county aforesaid. In witness where- ‘ of we have hereunto subscribed our names.”

The scribes of the *assembly* were ordered to keep a record of all orders and certificates concerning ministers recommended to sequestrators, and to enter them in a register book. This continued for about a year, till the new directory and form of church government took place.

Towards the latter end of this year died *William Chillingworth*, A. M. whom I mention not as a *puritan*, but as a witness against some of those hardships the *present dissenters* complain of ; he was born at Oxford, 1602, and educated in Magdalen-College, of which he became fellow in June 1628. He afterwards turned Roman catholic, and went to the jesuits college at St. Omer’s, where not being thoroughly satisfied in some of their principles he returned to England, 1631, and having embraced the religion of the church of England, published an excellent treatise, entitled *The Religion of Protestants a safe Way to Salvation*, for which he was preferred to the chancellorship of the church of Sarum, and made master of Wygston hospital in Leicester. He was inserted in the list with other loyalists to be created D. D. in the year 1642, but came not thither to receive that honour. It was the general opinion of the

times that he was a *socinian*, but in his last letter at the end of his works, he appears an *arian*. It is very certain he refused to subscribe the thirty-nine articles for some years after his conversion, (1.) Because he did not believe the morality of the fourth commandment. (2.) Because he did not agree to the damnatory clauses in the *Athanasian* creed, and therefore could not read the common-prayer. He objected also to the twentieth article, *of the church's power to decree rites and ceremonies*; to the nineteenth article, *that works done before the grace of Christ, &c. are not pleasing to God*; and indeed, says the writer of his life, to the articles in general, as an imposition on men's consciences, much like the authority which the church of Rome assumes.

Mr. *Chillingworth* blesses God, that when he had entertained some thoughts of subscription, two unexpected impediments diverted him from it; "for (says he) I profess 'since I entertained it I never enjoyed quiet day nor night, 'till now that I have rid myself of it again; and I plainly perceive, that if I had swallowed this pill, howsoever 'gilded over with glosses and reservations, and wrapt up 'in conserves of good intentions and purposes, yet it 'would never have agreed nor stayed with me, but I 'should have cast it up again, and with it whatsoever pre-ferment I should have gained as the wages of unrighteousness; but now, I thank God, I am resolved, that I 'will never do that while I am living and in health, which 'I would not do if I was dying; and this I am sure I 'would not do, and therefore whenever I make such a 'preposterous choice, I will give you leave to believe that, 'I am out of my wits, or do not believe in God——." Notwithstanding these resolutions, he was prevailed with to subscribe, by his godfather archbishop *Laud*, to qualify him for the above-mentioned preferments. *How the pill* was gilded over is not certain; the writer of his life says he subscribed as articles of peace, not of belief. Mr. *Chillingworth* was a quick disputant, and of very high principles, for in one of his sermons before the king, he says, that *the most unjust and tyrannical violence of princes may not be*

\* Chill. Life, p. 273.

+ Ibid. p. 79.

rejected; this being unlawful, even though princes be most impious, tyrannical, and idolatrous. But though his political principles were high, he was low enough with regard to the authority of councils, fathers, and convocations, in matters of faith; adhering stedfastly to that celebrated declaration, that the BIBLE alone is the religion of a protestant. He was an excellent mathematician, and served as engineer in Arundel Castle in Sussex, in which he was taken prisoner, and when indisposed had the favor of being lodged in the bishop's house at Chichester, where he died Jan. 20, 1643-4. It is surprising, that lord Clarendon should say, the parliament clergy prosecuted him with all the inhumanity imaginable, so that by their barbarous usage he died within a few days;\* when, as he himself acknowledged, he wanted for nothing; and by the interest of Dr. Cheynel, who attended him in his sickness, was courteously used. § The doctor would have reasoned him

\* Chillingworth's Life, p. 314, 325.

§ Dr. Cheynel's kindness extended to the procuring a commodious lodging for Mr. Chillingworth; to engaging the physician, as his symptoms grew worse, to renew his visits; and to securing for him the rites of burial, which some would have denied him. Yet he held the opinions of Mr. Chillingworth in the greatest detestation, and treated his name and memory with virulence and asperity, as appears from the above speech at the interment of this great man, and by a pamphlet he published, entitled *Chillingworthi Novissima; or the Sickness, Heresy, Death and Burial of William Chillingworth, &c.* which bishop Warburton calls "a villainous book;" and tells us, that "Mr. Locke speaks of it in the harshest terms, but not more severely than it deserves." The fact is, as bishop Hoadley states it, "Dr. Cheynel was a rigid zealous presbyterian; exactly orthodox; very unwilling that any should be supposed to go to heaven, but in the right way. And this was that one way, in which he himself was settled; and in which he seems to be as sincere, and honest, and charitable, as his bigotry and his cramped notions of God's *peculium* could permit him to be." Years after this Dr. Snape, a clergyman, of name, in the church of England, displayed the like temper and spirit to Dr. Cheynel, in the Bangorian controversy; which I mention to introduce bishop Hoadley's excellent conclusion from both these instances of bigotry; namely, "That an intemperate heat scorches up charity in one church, as well as in another; and every where equally lays waste the most amiable duties of christianity: and that men of the most opposite persuasions, agreeing in the same narrowness of principles and notions of zeal, though differing from one another in many particulars, even to a degree of mutual destruction, can kindly and lovingly unite in condemning the best principles of all religion as subtile atheism,



out of some of his principles, but could not prevail, and therefore at his interment, after a reflecting speech upon his character, threw his book, entitled *The Religion of Protestants a safe Way to Salvation*, into the grave, saying, "Get thee gone thou cursed book, which has seduced 'so many precious souls; earth to earth, dust to dust; get thee into the place of rottenness, that thou mayst rot with thy author, and see corruption.'" A most unchristian and uncharitable imprecation!

Among the considerable statesmen who died this year, may be justly reckoned *John Hampden*, Esq. of Buckinghamshire, a gentleman of good extraction, and one of the greatest patriots of his age, as appears by his standing trial with the king in the case of *ship-money*, which raised his reputation to a very great height throughout the kingdom. He was not a man of many words, but a very weighty speaker; his reputation for integrity universal, and his affections so publicly guided, that no corrupt or private ends could bias them. He was indeed a very wise man, of great parts and modesty, and possessed of the most absolute spirit of popularity (says lord *Clarendon*) I ever knew. He was one of the impeached members of the house of commons, and in the beginning of the war took the command of a regiment, and performed the duty of a colonel on all occasions punctually, being a man of great personal courage, not to be tired out by the most laborious, and of parts not to be imposed upon by the most subtle, but because he fought against the court, lord *Clarendon* says (if this be not an interpolation of the editors) that he had *a head to contrive, a tongue to persuade, and a hand to execute any mischief.*§ Which is very unaccount-

"or indifference, or infidelity; and in declaring them to be the principles of all irreligion, when their several schemes and systems are likely to suffer from them." So the sentiments on toleration, charity and free enquiry, as they were defended by *Chillingworth* and by *Hoadley's* friend, were condemned by *Cheynel* and *Snape*. *Hoadley's* works, v. ii. p. 622, folio, and *Palmer's Non-Conformists' Memorial*, ii. p. 466. Ed.

§ *Oldmixon's History of the Stuarts*, p. 227.

*Dr. Grey* endeavors to establish the authenticity of this passage by a large quotation from the "Weekly Miscellany," by *Richard Hooker*, of the Temple, esq.—To *Mr. Neal's* account of *Hampden* it may be added, that he was born in the year 1594, and died the 24th of June

able in one whom his lordship had commended as a person not only of cheerfulness and affability, but of extraordinary sobriety and strictness of life. Mr. *Hampden* was certainly in all respects one of the greatest and best men of his age, and the parliament sustained an irreparable loss in his death, which happened June 24, about a week after his shoulder-bone had been broken by a musket ball, in a skirmish with prince *Rupert's* forces in Calgrave-field.

*John Pym*, Esq. member for Tavistock in all the parliaments of King Charles I. was a man of the greatest experience in parliamentary affairs of any man of his time. He was an admirable speaker, and by the gravity of his countenance and graceful behavior, could turn the house which way he pleased; he was a man of business and for moderate measures, according to lord *Clarendon*, till the king impeached him of high treason. In his private life he was eminent for true piety and exactness of manners; and though inclined to the puritan party, not averse to the hierarchy with some emendations. He was one of the laymembers of the assembly of divines, and at the head of all public business, the fatigue of which wore out his constitution, and put an end to his life, December 8, 1643, in the sixtieth year of his age. The news of no man's death was more welcome to the royalists than his, who spread a report, that he died of the *morbus pediculosus*; † to confute

1643, leaving ten children behind him. The parliament, as a testimony of his service to the public, ordered the sum of 5000*l.* to be paid to his assignees out of the excise. Mr. *Baxter* has placed him with the saints in heaven, (Everlasting Rest. p. 82-3. ;) and lord *Cobham* with the worthies in his Elysium at Stow. Under his bust is this inscription :

“JOHN HAMPDEN.

“Who with great spirit, and consummate abilities, began an opposition to an arbitrary court, in defence of the liberties of his country; “supported them in parliament, and died for them in the field.”

He argued the case of ship-money with the judges for twelve days together, in the exchequer chamber; and “had more reason to triumph,” says Mr. *Granger*, “from his superiority in the argument, “than the crown had for its victory in the cause.” Biographical History of England, vol. ii. p. 212, 8vo. and Mrs. Macaulay's History, 8vo. vol. iii. p. 432-3, note, in which work the character of this great man is fully delineated. Ed.

† Dr. Grey has the candor to discredit this report; and says, from the funeral sermon for Mr. Pym by Mr. Marshall, that it was confuted by the testimony of near a thousand people who saw the corpse,

which aspersion, his body was exposed to public view for many days, and at last interred in the most honorable manner in Westminster-Abbey. A little before his death, he published his own vindication to the world, against the many slanders that went abroad concerning him, wherein “he declares himself a faithful son of the protestant religion, and of the orthodox doctrine of the church of England. He confesses he had been for reforming abuses in the government of the church, when the bishops, instead of taking care of men’s souls, were banishing their bodies into the most desolate places; bringing in new canons, *arminian* and *pelagian* errors, and such a number of rites and ceremonies, as the people were not able to bear.— When since that time they had, as much as in them lay, fomented the civil differences between the king and his parliament, abetting and encouraging malignants with large supplies of men and money, and stirring up the people to tumults by their seditious sermons. For these reasons (says he) I gave my opinion for abolishing their functions, which, I conceive, may as well be done as the dissolution of monasteries, monks and friars, was, in King *Henry* the eighth’s time. He concludes with declaring, that he was not the author of the present distractions; with acknowledging the king for his lawful sovereign, but thinks, when he was proscribed for a traitor, merely for the service of his country, no man can blame him for taking care of his own safety, by flying for refuge to the protection of parliament, who were pleased to make *his case their own.*”

and of eight physicians who were present at the opening of the body. Yet the doctor repeats, from Clarendon, the calumnies of those who accused him of raising considerable sums by dishonest practices, of corrupting witnesses, and selling his protection for bribes. Though he was exculpated before the tribunal of parliament, vindicated his conduct by his own pen, and left his private fortune at so low an ebb, that the parliament expended a considerable sum in the payment of his debts; an evidence sufficient of itself to confute his enemies. Mr. Pym was called, in early life, *Phæbi deliciæ, lepos puelli*. He was commonly called “King Pym;” and from his experience in the forms of parliament, his knowledge of the law and constitution, his powers of argument and elocution, and his known honesty and integrity, he enjoyed an unrivalled authority in the lower house. Mrs. Macaulay, vol. iv. p. 92, 93, and Granger’s Biographical History, vol. ii. p. 111. *Ed.*



## CHAP. III.

*The Oxford parliament. Progress of the War. Visitation of the University of Cambridge by the earl of Manchester. Committees for plundered, sequestered, and scandalous Ministers.*

THE campaign being ended without any prospect of peace, both parties endeavored to strengthen themselves by new and sovereign acts of power. The parliament experiencing the want of a *great seal*, for many purposes, gave orders that one should be made. They continued to list soldiers, to levy taxes, and to use every method to support their cause,\* which their policy suggested, and their necessity urged. On the other hand, the king raised contributions without form of law;|| ordered the removal of the courts of justice from Westminster; and that he might seem to act in a parliamentary way, summoned the members who had been expelled the houses, and all others willing to withdraw from the rebellious city of London, to meet him at Oxford,§ January 22, 1643 4, which was,

† Rushworth, vol. v. p. 560.

\* "What was all this," says Dr. Grey, "but high treason?" To confirm his opinion he refers to Dr. Wood's "Institute of the laws of England," and to the 25th of Edw. III. c. 2. as authorities to shew, that the acts of the parliament were acts of treason. As if laws formed to preserve the allegiance of the subject to a king acting constitutionally and fulfilling faithfully *his* part of the political contract, applied to extraordinary emergencies and to a sovereign who had violated the constitution. As if laws made to restrain individuals bound the majority of the representative body of the nation. See also Rapin, vol. ii. p. 494, folio. *Ed.*

|| "And pray," asks Dr. Grey, "*what form of law* had the rebels for 'raising contributions?'" That form of law, our readers will probably reply, and that spirit of the constitution, which invest the representatives of the people with the power and right of appointing the taxes. *Ed.*

§ The impolicy of this step is forcibly, though somewhat jocularly, represented by Mr. Selden: "The king calling his friends from the 'parliament,'" said this great man, "because he had use of them at

in effect, disannulling the act for continuing of the present parliament. In obedience to the proclamation, there appeared forty-nine peers, and one hundred forty-one of the house of commons, not reckoning those employed in his majesty's service, or absent with leave. Lord *Clarendon* says,† the appearance of both houses with the king was superior in number, as well as quality, to those at Westminster; which must be a mistake; for though the majority of peers were on that side, Mr. *Whitlocke*\* assures us, that upon a call of the house of commons, the very day the others were to meet at Oxford, there were present two hundred and eighty members, not reckoning one hundred more, who were engaged in their service in the several counties. This is a very considerable majority; though if there had been only *forty*, the king could not have prorogued or dissolved them, without their own consent. However, the Oxford members stiled themselves the *parliament*, lord *Littleton* being speaker for the peers, and serjeant *Evers* for the commons.† Their first step was to satisfy the world they desired peace, such a peace, to use the king's own words,§ “wherein God's true religion may be secured from the danger of popery, sectaries, and innovations; the crown may possess those just prerogatives, which may enable me to govern my people according to law, and the subjects be confirmed in those rights which I have granted them in parliament, to which I shall be ready to add such new *graces* as I shall find may most conduce to their happiness.” They laid an excise upon *tobacco, wine, strong-waters, ale, cider, grocery and mercery wares, soap, salt, & butcher's meat*, and subscribed considerable sums of money for support of the war; they declared the Scots then entering England with an army,

‘Oxford is as if a man should have use of a little piece of wood and he runs down into the cellar, and takes the spiggot: in the mean time all the beer runs about the house: when his friends are absent the king will be lost.’ *Table-talk, on the word king. Ed.*

† *Clarendon's Remains*, p. 165.

\* *Memoirs*, p. 76.

† *Rushworth*, p. 567, 688. *Rapin*, p. 496, 502, fol. *Oldmixon's Hist. of the Stuarts*, p. 246.

§ On another occasion, in his speech to the inhabitants of Somersetshire, 13th July 1644. *Ed.*

*traitors*, and the lords and commons at Westminster, guilty of *high treason*, for inviting them, as well as for counterfeiting the *great seal*. On the other hand, the parliament at Westminster would not acknowledge the Oxford members, or receive a message from them under the character of a parliament, but expelled them their house, except they returned to their seats within a limited time.\* April 16, 1644, the king prorogued his Oxford members, to November following, when they fell under his displeasure, for advising to pacific measures at the treaty of Uxbridge, which was then upon the carpet, and in a fair way of producing an accommodation. This was so disagreeable to the queen, and her Roman catholic counsellors, that they never left off teasing the unhappy king, till he had dismissed them, and broke off the treaty; an account of which he sent her in the following letter, which seems to breathe an air of too great satisfaction.

“*Dear heart,*

“WHAT I told thee last week, concerning a good parting with our lords and commons here, was on *Monday* last handsomely performed; now if I do any thing unhandsome, or disadvantageous to myself or friends, in order to a treaty, it will be merely my own fault.—Now I promise thee, if the treaty be renewed (which I believe it will not) without some eminent good success on my side, it shall be to my honor and advantage, I being now as well free from the place of base and mutinous motion† (that is to say, our *mungrel parliament* here) as of the chief causers, for whom I may justly expect to be chidden by thee, for having suffered thee to be vexed by them—”||

Mr. *Whitlocke* says, this assembly sat again at Oxford in the year 1645, and voted against the *directory*, and for the common prayer; but the king's cause being

\* Rushworth, vol. v. p. 383. Rapin, vol. ii. p. 497, 506, folio.

† “There is no circumstance,” observes bishop Warburton, “that bears harder on the king's conduct than this. It is not to be conceived that these men, who hazarded all to support the king's right, could advise him to any thing *base* in a mutinous manner. I doubt that this is too strong a proof that nothing less than arbitrary government would heartily satisfy him.” *Ed.*

|| Rapin, p. 512, folio.



grown desperate, they soon after shifted for themselves, and made their peace at Westminster, upon the best terms they could obtain.

On the 19th of January 1643-4, the Scots army, consisting of twenty-one thousand men, under the command of general *Leven*, crossed the Tweed at Berwick, and entered England. The two houses sent a committee to meet them, which being joined by another of that nation, was called the *committee of both kingdoms*,\* and were a sort of camp parliament, to direct the motions of the army, which after some time united with the lord *Fairfax's* forces, and with those under the command of the earl of *Manchester*, and lieutenant general *Cromwell*, from the associated counties. The united armies laid siege to the city of York, which prince *Rupert* having relieved, occasioned the battle of Marston-Moor, wherein the prince was routed, with the loss of three thousand men and his whole train of artillery; and thereupon the marquis of *Newcastle*, leaving the royal army, embarked with divers lords and gentlemen for Hamburgh, prince *Rupert* retiring towards Chester, and deserting all the northern garrisons to the mercy of the enemy, which falling into their hands next summer, concluded the war in those parts.

His majesty however had better success in the West, where being strengthened by prince *Maurice*, he followed the earl of *Essex*, and shut up his army within the narrow parts of Cornwall, so that he could neither engage or retreat.† Here the king invited the earl to make his peace, but he choosing rather to retire in a boat to Plymouth, left his men to the fortune of war. As soon as the general was gone, the horse under the command of sir *William Balfour* bravely forced their way through the royal quarters by night; but the foot under the command of major-general *Skippon*, were obliged to surrender their arms, artillery, ammunition, and baggage, consisting of forty brass cannon, two hundred barrels of powder, match and ball proportionable, seven hundred carriages, and between eight and nine hundred arms, and to swear not to bear arms against the king, till they came into Hampshire. This was the greatest disgrace the par-

\* Rushworth, vol. vi. p. 603.

† Ib. vol. v. p. 691, 701, 705, 710.

liament's forces underwent in the course of the war, the foot being forced to travel in a naked and starving condition to Portsmouth, where they were supplied with new cloaths and arms. And now again, the king made offers of such a peace as, he says, he had been laboring for, that is, to be restored to his prerogatives as before the war; but the houses would not submit.

Upon the defeat of the earl of *Kissex*, his majesty resolved to march directly for London, and upon the road issued a proclamation, Sept. 30, 1644, requiring all his loving subjects to appear in arms, and accompany him in his present expedition.† This gave rise to a combination of men, distinguished by the name of Club-men, who associated in Worcestershire and Dorsetshire, agreeing to defend themselves against the orders both of king and parliament. Their increase was owing to the prodigious ravages of the king's forces in their march. Prince *Rupert* was a fiery youth, and with his flying squadrons of horse, burnt towns and villages, destroying the countries where he came, and indulging his soldiers in plunder and blood. In Wales he drove away the people's cattle, rifled their houses, and spoiled their standing corn. Aged and unarmed people were stript naked, some murdered in cool blood, and others half hanged, and burnt, and yet suffered to live.‡ “Lord

† Rapin, vol. ii. p. 504, folio. ‡ Whitlocke, p. 62, 87, 103.

‡ The reference here, in the former editions of Mr. Neal, is to p. 87 of Whitlocke's *Memoirs*; where all that is said concerning prince Rupert is, “that he took in Liverpool a garrison of the parliament's in Lancashire, but they first shipped all their arms, ammunition and portable goods, and most of the officers and soldiers went on ship-board, whilst a few made good the fort, which they rendered to the prince upon quarter, yet *were all put to the sword*.” “This indeed” says Dr. Grey, “was bad enough, but not quite so bad as Mr. Neal has represented it. Not one word of *stripping aged and unarmed people naked, or murdering people in cold blood, or of half hanging or burning others*. A dismal character of prince Rupert this indeed, had we not reason to call the truth of it in question.” The references, which we have now supplied, will shew that the truth of this character ought not to have been questioned, and that it was drawn from facts stated by Mr. Whitlocke. From whom we will give another instance of the severity with which prince Rupert, at the commencement of his military career, pursued his conquests and of the cruelty of the royal party from the beginning, before mutual provocations had inflamed their

‘*Goring*, the king’s general of the horse, was one of the most finished debauchees of the age, and wanted nothing but industry to make him as eminent and successful in the highest attempts of wickedness as ever any man was. *Wilmot*, the lieutenant-general, was as great a debauchee as the other, and had no more regard to his promises, or any rules of honor and integrity.”|| Sir *Richard Greenville*, who commanded the army before Plymouth, is represented by the noble historian, as having been exceeding barbarous and cruel in Ireland, hanging up old men and women of quality, even though they were bed-ridden, if he did not find the plunder he expected; when he came into the west, he exercised all kinds of cruelty, and would sometimes make one of the company hang all the rest, contrary to the law of arms. §

The licentiousness of the king’s soldiers, was not inferior to that of their officers; for having no regular pay, they committed rapines and plunders, without distinction of friends or foes; and were infamous for the most execrable oaths, and all kinds of impiety. “*Lord Goring’s* horse ‘(says the noble historian) committed horrid outrages and

passions; or they had been familiarised to scenes of blood. When the prince had taken the magazine of the county at Cirencester, and 1100 prisoners, he sent these captives, tied together with cords, almost naked, beaten and driven along like dogs, in triumph to Oxford; where the king and the lords looked on them, and too many smiled at their misery. *Memoirs*, p. 64. *Ed.*

|| Our reader will be surprised, when he is told, that Dr. Grey discredits this character of the lieutenant-general *Wilmot*, though it is given from lord *Clarendon*, and opposes to it a narrative of his lordship, in which he relates, that *Wilmot*. when he was before *Marlborough*, gave not only his life, but his liberty, to a spy whom he had apprehended. This Dr. Grey extols as a *generous act*, when, according to the statement he himself gives of it from *Clarendon*, it was to be ascribed to *Wilmot’s* policy and generalship. For, before he dismissed the spy, he ordered his forces to be drawn up before him in the most convenient place, and bid the fellow to look well upon them, and observe, and return to the town and report what he had seen, with a threat to the magistrates if the garrison did not surrender, and a promise of security if it submitted. The representations which the man made were of some advantage to the views of the royal party. Yet this conduct of *Wilmot*, which seems to have been a manœuvre only, in order to disparage Mr. *Neal’s* delineation of his *general* character, is pompously represented by Dr. Grey as a singular instance of honor and generosity. *Ed.*



‘barbarities in Hampshire, and infested the borders of  
‘Dorsetshire, Somersetshire, and Devon, with unheard-of  
‘rapines, so that the people who were well devoted to the  
‘king, wished for the accession of any force to redeem  
‘them.’\* They raised vast contributions in several coun-  
ties, without any other pretence but the king’s sovereign  
pleasure. In Cornwall they levied seven hundred pounds  
a week; in Devonshire two thousand two hundred pounds  
a week, and proportionable in other parts.† As the army  
marched along the country, they seized the farmers’ horses,  
and carried them away without any consideration. At  
Barnstable they plundered the town, and hanged the mayor,  
though it was surrendered upon articles. At Evesham the king  
sent the mayor and aldermen prisoners to Oxford. At Woodhouse  
in Devonshire, they seized fourteen substantial west-country  
clothiers, who were not in arms, and hanged them, by way of  
reprisals for some Irish rebels, that had been executed  
according to the ordinance of parliament. In short, wherever  
they came they lived at free-quarter, and took but every  
thing they could, and therefore no wonder the Club-Men  
united in their own defence.

The king thought to have reached London before the  
parliament could recruit their army, but the two houses  
sent immediately six thousand arms, and a train of artillery  
to Portsmouth, with new clothing for the Cornish soldiers.  
They ordered sir *William Waller* and the earl of *Manchester*  
to join them, and dispatched thither five thousand of the  
city train-bands, under the command of sir *James Harington*,  
by which accession they were enabled to face his majesty’s  
army at Newbury, October 27, and having forced the town,  
which the king had fortified, after a smart engagement they  
took nine of his cannon and several colours, but under covert  
of the night, his majesty secured the rest of his artillery in  
Dennington-Castle, and retreated with his broken army to  
Oxford; the parliament generals left a body of troops to  
block up the castle, being assured it must surrender in the  
winter for want of provision; when on a sudden a party of  
the king’s horse raised the blockade, and carried off the  
artillery to Oxford. This occasioned great murmuring at  
London, and quarrels among

\* Clarendon, p. 631.

† Ibid. p. 643.

the generals, *Essex*, *Manchester*, and *Cromwell*, which ended in the new modelling of the army, as will be seen under the next year.

While the royal army was little better than a company of *banditti*, or public robbers; the parliament's were kept under the strictest discipline, and grew up, for the most part, into great diligence and sobriety, which (says lord *Clarendon*) begot courage and resolution in them, and notable dexterity in achievements and exercises.\* Most of their officers were men of religion;§ their soldiers possessed with a belief, that their cause was the *cause of God*,|| and that they fought for the *protestant religion*, and *magna*

\* Vol. ii. p. 384.

\* This, Dr. Grey, argues does not agree with what lord *Clarendon* says in other places: \* and he insinuates that it is not true. As if what Mr. Neal advances must be false, even when he quotes lord *Clarendon* for his assertions, because it is apparently repugnant to the representations elsewhere given by his lordship's pen: as if it were incumbent on Mr. Neal to reconcile this noble writer to himself. But the veracity of Mr. Neal, and the consistency of lord *Clarendon* with himself, would not have been impeached by Dr. Grey, had he examined the passage to which Mr. Neal refers: by which it appears, that both the king's and the parliament's army, at different periods, were of different characters; and the description which they deserved at one time did not apply to another. The passage which Mr. Neal now quotes, referred to a latter, and the passages below, to which Dr. Grey directs his reader, refer to a former period. His lordship says, "those under the king's commanders grew insensibly into all the licence, disorder and impiety, with which they had reproached the rebels: and they into great discipline, diligence and sobriety." *Ed.*

\* History, vol. ii. p. 46, 55.

§ "Of pretended sanctity," says Dr. Grey, "in which none could exceed them. They were praying and preaching when the enemy was at a distance, and literally made long prayers to devour widows' houses." He refers, then, to his own appendix for an instance of their fanatical *honor*; but the authorities, which he here produces, relate to the Scottish, not the English army. *Ed.*

|| This representation, Dr. Grey thinks, is contrary to Mr. Neal's character of them, in ch. 7, from Mr. *Baxter*; who says, "that the greatest part of the common soldiers were ignorant men, of little religion." But the doctor neither adverts to the time when this was said, namely in 1646, after the army had been new modelled; nor observes what follows in Mr. *Baxter*, which shews that these ignorant irreligious were many of them such as had belonged to the royal corps: "abundance of them, such" says he, "as had been taken prisoners, or turned out of garrisons under the king, and had been soldiers in his army." *Baxter's Life* p. 53. *Ed.*

*charta* ; however, there were among them men of dissolute lives, who fought only for pay and plunder ; strange complaints being sent up from Bedfordshire, Buckinghamshire, and Sussex, of the disorders of the common soldiers, the parliament appointed a committee to enquire into the facts, and make examples of the offenders, which put an effectual stop to the growing mischief. And as the parliament were enabled, by the inexhaustible treasure of the city of London, to give their soldiers regular pay, they had them under such strict government, that they were little or no burthen to the towns and villages where they were quartered.†

Upon the whole, the parliament affairs were low at the end of this year, and their counsels divided, by reason of the length of the war, and the king's were much worse ; for though he had triumphed over the earl of *Essex* in Cornwall, and was master of the open country in the west, he had no accession of real strength, nor had taken any considerable garrisons : the entrance of the Scots broke his army in the north, and lost him that part of the kingdom, whereby the parliament were enabled to draw off their forces to the *west* ; and the worst circumstance of all was, that his majesty, having exhausted his treasure, had no way of raising a supply, which obliged him to connive at his soldiers living at free quarter ; his officers being poor, quarrelled in the royal presence, and carried their resentments to such an height, that the king himself could not reconcile them, which had a very ill aspect on the succeeding campaign.\* The parliament generals also were censuring each other's conduct in the house, on occasion of the escape of the king's artillery from Dennington-Castle. The earl of *Essex's* party were charged with a design of protracting the war, in order to an accommodation, while others being weary, were for putting it to a decisive issue. In short, both parties were in confusion and distress ; they were divided among themselves, some being for peace, and others for carrying on the war to the last extremity. All property

† Dr. Grey, to confute these assertions of Mr. Neal, refers to papers, which he has given in the Appendix to his second volume ; but the complaints, brought forward in these papers, are made of the Scottish army, and the transactions of the following year, viz. 1645. *Ed.*

\* Clarendon, vol. ii. p. 389, 391.



was in a manner lost, the farmers paying no rent to their landlords ; nor could any man be secure of what he possessed, except he buried it under ground. The spirits of the contending parties were as much exasperated as ever, and there was no seeing to the end of their troubles.

To return to the church. The state of the controversy about ecclesiastical discipline was now changed ; for whereas before the entrance of the Scots, the parliament insisted only upon a *reformation of the hierarchy*, now they were engaged to attempt the *total extirpation of it*, and to establish another scheme for both kingdoms in its room ; though it was a considerable time before this could be perfected. In the mean while, they resolved to purge the university of Cambridge, which was the head quarters of their forces, that they might have a succession of clergymen training up in the principles they had espoused.

The town of Cambridge was in the interest of the parliament, but the *colleges* were so many little garrisons for the king, and sanctuaries of disaffection ; the university press was at his majesty's disposal, and their sermons filled with evectives against the two houses. Frequent quarrels happened between the townsmen and scholars, which would have ended in the ruin of the university, had not the parliament forbid the offering any violence to the colleges, chapels, libraries, and schools, under severe penalties.† Indeed the *committee* enjoined the proper officers of the parish, to put in execution the ordinance for destroying the relics of superstition, whereby the paintings in windows, images of the deity, and a great deal of carved work, was demolished, at which the masters and fellows were so incensed, that when they were ordered to repair the damages, they peremptorily refused, and were fined forty shillings a college, as the ordinance directed.\*

The heads of the university raised a great clamor, at this pretended invasion of their rights, as if the parliament intended to seize all their revenues, and destroy the very fountains of learning ; whereupon the houses published the following ordinance, Jan. 6, 1643-4, declaring “ that

† Sufferings of Clergy, p. 163.

\* Sufferings of Clergy, p. 111, and Dr. Grey, vol. ii. p. 141.

‘ none of the estates, rents, and revenues of the university, or of the colleges and halls respectively, shall be sequestered or seized upon, or in any wise disposed of, by virtue of the ordinance for sequestering the estates, rents, and revenues of delinquents, but shall remain to the university, and the respective halls and colleges, to all intents and purposes as if the said ordinance had not been made ; and the rents and revenues, &c. are ordered to be approved of by the earl of *Manchester*, and to be applied to their proper uses as heretofore. But if any of the heads, fellows, scholars, or other officers, were convicted of delinquency, the receiver was to pay their dividend into the hands of the committee of sequestrations.”\*

This committee was founded upon an ordinance of Jan. 22, for regulating the university of Cambridge, and for removing scandalous ministers in the seven associated counties ; the preamble sets forth, “ that the service of the parliament was retarded, the people’s souls starved, by the idle, ill-affected, and scandalous clergy of the university of Cambridge, and the associated counties ; and that many who were willing to give evidence against them, not being able to bear the charges of a journey to London, the earl of *Manchester* was therefore empowered to appoint committees in all the associated counties, to consist of ten persons, being deputy-lieutenants, or such as had been nominated to committees, by some former ordinance of parliament ; *five* of these were a quorum, and they were empowered to call before them all provosts, masters, and fellows of colleges, all students and members of the university, all ministers in any of the counties of the association, all school-masters, *that were scandalous in their lives, or ill-affected to the parliament, or fomenters of this unnatural war, or that shall wilfully refuse obedience to the orders of parliament, or that have deserted their ordinary places of residence, not being employed in the service of the king and parliament.* The said committee were also empowered to send for witnesses, and to examine any complaints against the forementioned delinquents upon oath, and to certify the names of the persons accus-

\* Husband’s Collections, p. 409.

‘ed to the earl of *Manchester*, with the charge and proof, who shall have power to eject such as he shall judge unfit for their places; to sequester their estates, means and revenues, and to dispose of them as he shall think fit, and place others in their room, being first approved by the assembly of divines sitting at Westminster. He had also power to order the *covenant* to be administered where he thought fit, and to assign the fifths of sequestered estates for the benefit of their wives and children.”\* The ordinance makes no mention of the doctrine or discipline of the church, seeming to be levelled only against those who took part with the king in the war.

The earl of *Manchester*, who was at the head of these sequestrations, was stiled in the life-time of his father, lord *Kimbolton*, and was one of the impeached members of the house of commons: Lord *Clarendon* observes,§ that ‘he was of a genteel and generous nature; that his natural civility and good manners flowed to all men, and that he was never guilty of any rudeness, even to those whom he was obliged to oppress; that he long and heartily wished for the restoration, and never forfeited that grace and favor, to which his majesty received him after his return.” The earl repaired in person to Cambridge, about the middle of February, with his two chaplains Mr. *Ashe* and Mr. *Good*, and by his warrant of the 24th instant, required the heads of the several colleges and halls to send him their statutes, with the names of all their members, and to certify who were present, and who absent, with the express time of their discontinuance.† Two days after, the officers of each college and hall were ordered to give speedy advertisement to the masters, fellows, scholars, &c. to repair to Cambridge by the 10th of March, in order to answer such enquiries as should be made by himself or his commissioners. But the earl being informed, that this notice was too short, the time was prolonged to the 3d of April, when the earl summoned Mr. *Tunstal* and Mr. *Palgrave*, fellows of Corpus Christi college, to

\* Husband’s Collections, p. 415.

§ Clarendon, vol. i. p. 183. Vol. ii. p. 241, 242.

† Sufferings of the Clergy, p. 112.



appear before the commissioners at the Bear inn, in Cambridge, on penalty of ejection. Warrants of the same nature were sent to several of the fellows of Caius, St. John's, Queen's, Peter-House, Sidney, Trinity, Christ's, Magdalen, and Jesus colleges; and to Pembroke and Clare-hall; who, not appearing according to the summons, were by a warrant of April 8, ejected, to the number of sixty-five. The reasons assigned for their expulsion were, *non-residence, and not returning upon due summons, and several other political misdemeanors.*|| If the parties ejected returned after this, they were required not to continue in the university above three days, on pain of imprisonment, and confiscation of their goods; their names were put out of the *butteries*, and the profits of their places reserved for their successors. Not one fellow or student in Trinity-hall, or Katherine-hall, was turned out, but all Queen's-college was evacuated.

The *covenant* which was read March 18, 1644, in the churches and chapels of the town and university, and tendered to the inhabitants and soldiers, was not offered to the whole university, but only to such of whose disaffection they had sufficient evidence. Archbishop Tillotson says, the greatest part of the fellows of King's-college were exempted, by the interest of Dr. *Whitchcott*; and no doubt others who had behaved peaceably, obtained the same favor.\* Dr. *Barwick*, author of the *Querela Cantabrigien-sis*, a famous loyalist, mentions an *oath of discovery* for the university, like that of the oath *ex officio*; but Mr. *Fuller* the historian, about the year 1653, having requested an account of this oath from Mr. *Ashe* the earl's chaplain, he returned for answer, that he remembered no such thing. Mr. *Fuller* adds, that he is upon just grounds daily confirmed in his confidence, that neither the earl of *Manchester*, nor any other under him by his command or consent, enforced such an oath.†

The whole number of graduates expelled the university in this and the following years, by the earl of *Manchester* and his commissioners, including masters and fellows of

|| *Sufferings of the Clergy*, p. 151, 160.  
*Sufferings of the Clergy*, p. 113.

\* *Introduction to the*  
 † *Appeal*, p. 72.

colleges, were according to Dr. *Walker*, near two hundred, besides inferior scholars, which were something more than one half;|| for the same author tells us in another place,\* there were about three hundred and fifty-five fellowships in the several houses of the university; above one hundred and fifty kept their places, and far the greatest part of the rest had deserted their stations, and fled to the king. There were six heads of colleges out of sixteen that complied, viz. Dr. *Bainbrigge*, of Christ's-college, Dr. *Eden*, of Trinity-hall, Dr. *Richard Love*, of Bennet-college, Dr. *Brownrigge*, of Katherine-hall, ejected in the year 1645, Dr. *Bachcroft*, of Caius-college, and Dr. *Rainbow*, of Magdalen-college. The ten who were ejected by the earl of *Manchester*, March 13, or some little time after, with the names of their successors, are contained in the following table :

<i>Masters turned out.</i>	<i>Colleges.</i>	<i>Succeeded by</i>
Dr. John Cosins, from	<i>Peter-House</i>	Dr. Laz. Seaman,
Dr. Tho. Pask,	<i>Clare-Hall</i>	Dr. R. Cudworth,
Dr. Benj. Laney,	<i>Pembroke-Hall</i>	Mr. Rich. Vines,
Dr. Samuel Collins,	<i>King's-College</i>	Dr. Ben. Whitecote,
Dr. Edw. Martin,	<i>Queen's-College</i>	Mr. Herb. Palmer,
Dr. Rich. Stern.	<i>Jesus-College</i>	Dr. T. Young,
Dr. William Beale,	<i>St. John's College</i>	Dr. J. Arrowsmith,
Dr. Tho. Comber,	<i>Trinity-Hall</i>	Dr. Tho. Hill,
Dr. R. Holdsworth,	<i>Eman. College</i>	Dr. Ant. Tuckney.
Dr. Samuel Ward,	<i>Sidney-College</i>	Dr. Rich. Minshull,
Anno 1645. }		{ Dr. W. Spurstow,
Dr. Ralph Brown-	<i>Kath. Hall</i>	{ and afterwards
rigge,		{ Dr. Lightfoot.

It has been objected to the proceedings of the commissioners, that they were not according to the statutes of the university; to which it was replied, that the nation was in a state of war; that these gentlemen were declared enemies to the proceedings of parliament; that they instilled into their pupils, the unlawfulness of resisting the king upon any pretence whatsoever, and preached upon these subjects to the people. It was therefore necessary to take the education of the youth out of their hands, which could not be

|| Introduction to Sufferings of the Clergy, p. 114.

\* Sufferings of the Clergy, p. 163.

done any other way at present; but in all future elections they returned to the statutes.—It has been said further, that it was a great loss to learning, because those who succeeded were not equal to those who were ejected.\* Had this been true, it is no sufficient reason for keeping them in their places, in a time of war, if they were enemies to the constitution and liberties of their country. But the best way of determining the question as to their learning, is by comparing their respective characters.

Dr. *Cosins* had been sequestered by the parliament in the year 1640, for his high principles, and was retired to France, where he continued till the restoration, and was then preferred to the rich bishopric of Durham: He was a learned man, of an open, frank, and generous temper, and well-versed in the canons, councils, and fathers.†

Dr. *Paske* lived peaceably and cheerfully under the parliament, and was reinstated in all his livings at the restoration, except the mastership of this college, which he quitted to his son. The *Querela Cantab.* says, he was eminent for learning; but I do not remember that he has given any specimens of it to the world.‡

Dr. *Laney* was first chaplain to Dr. *Neil*, and afterwards prebendary of Westminster; he was one of the king's divines at the treaty of Uxbridge, and attended upon King *Charles II.* in his exile; after the restoration he was successively bishop of Peterborough, Lincoln, and Ely, and was more favorable to the non-conformists than some of his brethren. He has some sermons extant, and a small treatise against *Hobbes*.

Dr. *Collins* was *regius professor*, provost of King's college, and rector of Fenny-Ditton; of which last he was deprived by the earl of *Manchester*, for his steady adherence to the royal cause. He kept his provostship till the year 1645, and his professorship much longer. He died in the year 1651, and had the reputation of a great scholar (says Dr. *Barwick*) and his name was famous in foreign universities, though he has transmitted very little down to posterity.||

\* Walker's Attempt, p. 114. § Sufferings of the Clergy, p. 68.

† Ibid. p. 141. ‡ Ibid. p. 153. Calamy's Abridg. p. 173.

|| Sufferings of the Clergy, p. 150.



Dr. *Martin* was one of archbishop *Laud's* chaplains, and one of Mr. *White's* scandalous ministers; he was accused not only of practising the late innovations, and of being in the scheme of reconciling the church of England with Rome; but of stealing wheat-sheaves out of the field in harvest on the sabbath day, and laying them to his tithe stock. He was very high in his principles, and was imprisoned for sending the university plate to the king. After his enlargement, he retired to France, and at the restoration was preferred to the deanry of Ely. *Lloyd* says he was a godly man, and excellently well skilled in the canon, civil, and common law; but Mr. *Prynne* gives him a very indifferent character; and bishop *Kennet* acknowledges his principles were rigid, and his temper sour.\*

Dr. *Stern* was another of archbishop *Laud's* chaplains, and imprisoned for the same reason as the former. He afterwards assisted the archbishop on the scaffold and lived retired till the restoration, when he was made bishop of Carlisle, and in 1664, archbishop of York. || He had a sober, honest, mortified aspect, but was of very arbitrary principles, and a very uncharitable temper; for when Mr. *Baxter*, at the Savoy conference, was intreating the bishops not to cast out so many ministers in the *nation*, he made this mean remark to his brethren, that Mr. *Baxter* would not use the word *kingdom* lest he should own a king. ||

Dr. *Beale* was also imprisoned for sending the university plate to the king; after his enlargement he retired to Oxford, and was one of the preachers before the court, but upon the declining of the king's cause, he retired to Madrid, where he died about the year 1651. He was a man of very high principles; though if we may believe the *Querela*, a person of such worth, as rendered him above the reach of commendation. †

Dr. *Comber* was another of the king's chaplains, though imprisoned and deprived, for sending the university plate to the king; after his enlargement he lived privately till the year 1654, when he died; he was a learned man, and of great piety and charity.

\* *Kennet's Chronicle*, p. 670. || *Sufferings of the Clergy*, p. 146.

† *Sufferings of the Clergy*, p. 148.

Dr. *Holdsworth* had been a celebrated preacher in the city of London, and divinity professor in Gresham-college; he was afterwards chosen master of Emanuel-college, Cambridge, and was a zealous advocate for the king, for which he was sometime under confinement. He attended his majesty at Hampton-Court and the Isle of Wight, and soon after died with grief. He was a pious and charitable man, but high in his principles, and of an hasty passionate temper. He published one sermon in his lifetime, and after his death his friends published his *Prelections*, and a volume of sermons.

Dr. *Ward* was one of the English divines at the synod of Dort, and nominated of the committee of divines that sat in the Jerusalem-Chamber, and of the assembly at Westminster, though he never sat; he was a very learned man, and died soon after his ejection.

Dr. *Brownrigge* was installed bishop of Exeter 1642, and deprived of his mastership in the year 1645, for some expressions in his sermon upon the king's inauguration. He was an excellent man, and of a peaceable and quiet disposition; after the war he was allowed the liberty of the pulpit, and was chosen master of the Temple, where he died about the year 1659.

Far be it from me to detract from the personal merit of any of these sufferers, or from their rank in the commonwealth of learning; but their political principles, like those of archbishop *Laud*, were certainly inconsistent with the constitution and liberties of England, and exposed them very naturally to the resentments of the parliament in these boisterous times.

Those who succeeded the ejected *masters*, having been first examined and approved by the assembly of divines at Westminster, were these:

Dr. *Lazarus Seaman*, a very considerable divine, according to Mr. *Wood*, a complete master of the oriental languages, an excellent casuist, and a judicious moving preacher. He was well versed in the controversy of church government, which made the parliament send him with their commissioners to the Isle of Wight, where his

majesty was pleased to take particular notice of his abilities. § He was ejected out of his mastership of Peter-House in 1662, and died in 1675.\* He printed several sermons, and a *Vindication of the Judgment of the reformed Churches concerning ordination*.

Dr. *Ralph Cudworth* is so universally known in the learned world, for his great learning, which he discovered in his *Intellectual System*,† that I shall only observe, he conformed at the restoration, and a little before resigned his mastership of Clare-Hall into the hands of Dr. *Dillingham*, who continued in it to his death.

Mr. *Richard Vines* was a very learned and excellent divine, a popular and laborious preacher, one of the parliament divines at the treaty of the Isle of Wight, and a most industrious and useful man in his college. He was turned out of his mastership for refusing the *engagement*, and died before the restoration.

Dr. *Benjamin Whitchcot* was fellow of Emanuel college, and upon the ejection of Dr. *Collins* preferred to the mastership of King's college, in which he continued till the restoration, and then conformed. The account archbishop *Tillotson* gives of him is this; "that he was an excellent tutor and instructor of youth, and bred up many persons of quality and others, who afterwards proved

§ Calamy's Abridg. vol. ii. p. 16.

\* He always carried about with him a small Plantin Hebrew Bible without points. He had a deep and piercing judgment in all points of controversial divinity: nor was he less able to defend than find out the truth. Upon the invitation of an honorable lady, who was the head of a noble family, and was often solicited by Romish priests to change her religion, he engaged two of the most able priests they could pick out in a dispute, in the presence of the lord and lady for their satisfaction; and, by silencing them upon the head of *transubstantiation*, was instrumental to preserve that whole family stedfast in the protestant religion. Dr. Grey acknowledges, on Mr. Wood's authority, that he was a learned man, and died much lamented by the brethren. Palmer's Nonconformist's Memorial, vol. i. p. 77. Ed.

† This work, distinguished by the excellence of its reasoning and the variety of its learning, was published to stem the torrent of irreligion and atheism that prevailed in the reign of Charles II. The author, who was superior to all his contemporaries in metaphysics, was father to the learned and accomplished lady Masham, of Oates in Essex, in whose house Mr. Locke spent the last fourteen years of his life. Granger's History of England, vol. iii. p. 283. 8vo. Ed.



‘useful and eminent ; that he contributed more to the forming the students to a sober sense of religion than any man of that age. He never took the *covenant*, and by his particular friendship and interest with some of the chief visitors, prevailed to have the *greatest part of the fellows of his college exempted from that imposition.*”§

Mr. *Herbert Palmer*, B. D. was one of the university preachers in 1632, and clerk in convocation for the diocese of Lincoln, at the beginning of this parliament ; he was one of the assessors of the assembly of divines at Westminster, and on April 11, 1644, constituted master of Queen’s college by the earl of *Manchester*.† He was very careful to appoint such persons for tutors of youth as were eminent for learning and piety ; and being possessed of a good paternal estate was unbounded in his liberality. He was a polite gentleman, a complete master of the French language, in which he could preach as well as in English ; but his constitution being infirm he died in the year 1647, when he was only forty-seven years of age.\*

Dr. *T. Young* was an eminent member of the assembly of divines (says Mr. *Clarke*†) a man of great learning, of much prudence and piety, and of great ability and fidelity in the work of the ministry. He was a preacher at Duke’s-Place in London, from whence he was preferred to the mastership of Jesus college, where he behaved with great prudence and piety, till he was turned out for refusing the engagement. He was one of the authors of the pamphlet called *Smectymnuus*.

§ “His notions of religion were like his charity,” says Mr. *Granger*, exalted and diffusive, and never limited by the narrow prejudices of sects and parties. He was disgusted with the dryness and foolishness of preaching that prevailed in his time ; and encouraged the young students of his college to form themselves after the best models of Greece and Rome.” History of England, vol. iii. p. 283-4. 8vo. Ed.

† *Clarke’s Lives*, p. 183, annexed to his GENERAL MARTYROLOGY.

\* What archbishop *Laud* urged in his defence at his trial, as an instance of his impartiality, ought to be mentioned here to his credit : namely, that he presented Mr. *Palmer*, though professedly of puritan principles, on account of his excellent character, to the vicarage of Ashwell in Hertfordshire, in 1632. *Granger’s History of England*, vol. ii. p. 183. 8vo. Ed.

† *Clarke’s Lives*, p. 194.

Dr. *John Arrowsmith* was fellow of Catherine-hall, and of an unexceptionable character for learning and piety. He was an acute disputant, and a judicious divine, as appears by his *Tactica Sacra*, a book of great reputation in those times. He died before the restoration.

Dr. *Thomas Hill* was fellow of Emanuel college, and one of the assembly of divines at Westminster. He was first constituted master of Emanuel, and afterwards removed to Trinity college, where he employed all his zeal in the advancement of knowledge and virtue, and in keeping up the college exercises. He was twice vice-chancellor, and as solicitous to preserve the honor and privilege of the university as any of his predecessors. He was a zealous *calvinist*, and after about ten year's government of his college died in the year 1653.§

Dr. *Anthony Tuckney* had been vicar of Boston in Lincolnshire, from whence he was called up to sit in the assembly of divines at Westminster. In the year 1645, he was constituted master of Emanuel college.† In 1653, he was chosen master of St. John's, and upon the death of Dr. *Arrowsmith*, regius professor of Oxford, which place he enjoyed till the restoration, when king *Charles II.* by letter under the hand of secretary *Nicholas*, ordered him to resign, promising him, in consideration of his great pains and diligence in discharge of his duty, one hundred pounds *per ann.* which was paid by his successor till his death, in the year 1671. He left behind him the character of a pious and learned man, an indefatigable student, a candid disputant, and a zealous promoter of truth and piety. He published some practical treatises in his life; and his *Prælectiones Theologicæ*, with a volume of sermons, were printed after his death.\*

§ Clarke's Lives, p. 230, ut ante.      † Calamy's Abridg. p. 77.

\* Dr. Tuckney was also vice-chancellor of the university of Cambridge, and after the restoration was appointed one of the commissioners at the conference held at the Savoy. His modesty was as distinguishing as his learning. He presided over his college, which never flourished more than under his government, with great prudence and ability. And is said to have shewn more courage in maintaining the rights and privileges of the university in the lawless time in which he lived, than any of the heads of houses at Cambridge. Granger's History of England, vol. iii. p. 305-6, 8vo. Ed.

Dr. *Richard Minshull* was fellow of Sidney college, and upon the death of Dr. *Ward* chosen regularly, according to the statutes, into the vacant mastership, and continued therein till the restoration, when he conformed, and was confirmed in his place, which he filled with reputation till his death.

Dr. *William Spurstow*, one of the assembly of divines, and one of the commissioners at the Savoy in the year 1662,\* was a person of good learning, of a peaceable and quiet disposition, and of great humility and charity. He was turned out of his mastership of Catherine-hall for refusing the *engagement*, and was succeeded by the famous

Dr. *Lightfoot*, the most complete master of oriental learning of his age; the doctor enjoyed this mastership, with the sequestered livings of Much-Munden, given him by the assembly of divines, till the restoration, when he would have resigned it back into the hands of Dr. *Spurstow*, but he declining it, *Lightfoot* conformed, and upon his application to the king was confirmed in both his preferments till his death. His works were published by Mr. *Strype* in two volumes folio.

If it should be granted, that the new professors were not at first so expert in the learning of the schools as their predecessors, that defect was abundantly supplied by their application and diligence in their places, and by their observing a very strict and severe discipline; the tutors were constant in reading lectures not only in *term-time*, but out of it; the *proctors* and other officers had a strict eye over the students to keep them within bounds, and oblige them to be present at morning and evening prayer. The Lord's-day was observed with uncommon rigor; there were sermons and prayers in all the churches and chapels both morning and afternoon. Vice and profaneness were banished, insomuch that an oath was not to be heard within the walls of the university; and if it may be said without offence, the colleges never appeared more like nurseries of religion and virtue than at this period. || The noble historian confesses, the university of Oxford flourished as much in learning and learned men at the res-

\* Calamy's Abridg. vol. ii. p. 471.

|| Ibid. vol. iii. p. 74.



toration, as before the civil wars, which is equally true of Cambridge. And it ought to be remembered, that most of the considerable divines and philosophers who flourished in the reigns of king *Charles* the second and king *William* the third, owed their education to the tutors of those times, for whom they always retained a great veneration.

Though the form of inducting the new *masters* was not according to the statutes, (as has been observed) because of the distraction of the times, it is evident this was not designed to be a precedent for their successors, as appears by the manner of their investiture, which was this; Mr. *Lazarus Seaman* having been examined and approved by the assembly of divines at Westminster, the earl of *Manchester* came in person into the chapel of Peter-house, April 11, and did there declare and publish Mr. *Lazarus Seaman* to be constituted master of the said Peter house, in the room of Dr. *Cosins*, late master, who had been justly and lawfully ejected; requiring Mr. *Seaman* to take upon him that office, putting him into the master's seat and delivering to him the statutes of the college in token of his investiture, straitly charging the fellows, &c. to acknowledge and yield obedience to him, *notwithstanding he was not elected, nor admitted according to the ordinary course prescribed by the said statutes in this time of distraction and war, there being a necessity of reforming, as well the statutes themselves, as the members of the said house.*† The earl then gave him an instrument under his hand and seal to the same effect, and administered him an oath or protestation, which he took in the following words :

“ I do solemnly and seriously promise, in the presence  
‘ of Almighty God the searcher of all hearts, that during  
‘ the time of my continuance in this charge, I shall faithfully labor to promote learning and piety in myself, the  
‘ fellows, scholars, and students, that do or shall belong to  
‘ the said college, agreeably to the late solemn national  
‘ league and covenant, by me sworn and subscribed, with  
‘ respect to all the good and wholesome statutes of the said

† *Sufferings of the Clergy*, p. 114, 115.

‘college and of the university, correspondent to the said covenant; and by all means to procure the good, welfare, and perfect reformation both of the college and university, so far as to me appertaineth.”

The other masters were introduced into their several chairs after the same solemn manner, their warrants bearing date the 11th, 12th, or 13th of April, 1644; but the clause of the covenant was omitted by those who did not take it, as in the case of Dr. *Whitchcot*, and others.

The vacant fellowships being more numerous were not so quickly filled, though the earl took the most prudent method in that affair; April 10, he directed a paper to the several colleges, declaring that “his purpose was forthwith to supply the vacant fellowships, and desiring that if there were any in the respective colleges, who in regard of degree, learning, and piety, should be found fit for such preferment, they would upon receipt of that paper, return him their names, in order to their being examined by the assembly, and invested in them.” The persons thus examined and presented, were constituted fellows by warrant under the hand and seal of the earl of *Manchester*, to the heads of the several colleges, in the following form :

“WHEREAS *A. B.* has been ejected out of his fellowship in this college; and whereas *C. D.* has been examined and approved by the *assembly of divines*, these are therefore to require you to receive the said *C. D.* as fellow in the room of *A. B.* and to give him place according to his seniority in the university, in preference to all those that are, or shall hereafter be put in by me.”§

I have before me the names of fifty-five persons,† who after they had been examined by the assembly, were presented to the vacant fellowships, in the compass of the year 1644; and within six months more all the vacancies were in a manner supplied, with men of approved learning and piety.

§ Sufferings of the Clergy, p. 114, 115.

† MS. penes me.

From this time the university of Cambridge enjoyed a happy tranquillity ; learning flourished, religion and good manners were promoted, at a time when the rest of the nation was in blood and confusion. And though this alteration was effected by a mixture of the civil and military power, yet in a little time things reverted to their former channel, and the statutes of the university were as regularly observed as ever. Let the reader now judge the candor and impartiality of the famous Dr. *Barwick*, author of the *Querela Cantabrigiensis*, whose words are these : “ Thus the ‘ *knipperdollings* of the age reduced a glorious and renowned university almost to a mere *Munster*, and did ‘ more in less than three years, than the apostate *Julian* ‘ could effect in his reign, viz. broke the heartstrings of ‘ learning, and all learned men, and thereby luxated all ‘ the joints of christianity in this kingdom. We are not ‘ afraid to appeal to any impartial judge, whether if the ‘ *Goths* and *Vandals*, or even the *Turks* themselves, had ‘ over-run this nation, they would have more inhumanly ‘ abused a flourishing university, than these pretended ad- ‘ vancers of religion have done ? Having thrust out one of ‘ the eyes of this kingdom, made eloquence dumb, philos- ‘ ophy sottish ; widowed the arts, drove the muses from ‘ their antient habitation, plucked the reverend and ortho- ‘ dox professors out of the chairs, and silenced them in ‘ prison or their graves ; turned religion into rebellion ; ‘ changed the apostolical chair into a desk for blasphemy ; ‘ tore the garland from off the head of learning to place it ‘ on the dull brows of disloyal ignorance, and unhived those ‘ numerous swarms of laboring bees, which used to drop ‘ honey-dews over all this kingdom, to place in their room ‘ swarms of senseless drones.”† Such was the rant of this reverend clergyman ; and such the language and the spirit of the ejected loyalists !

While the earl was securing the university to the parliament, he appointed commissioners for removing scandalous ministers in the seven associated counties, empowering them to act by the following warrant :

† *Querela*, Pref. p. 2, 26, 27. Walker’s Attempt, p. 115.  
VOL. III. 19



“March 15, 1644.

“BY virtue of an ordinance of both houses of parliament, bearing date January 22, 1643-4, I do authorize and appoint you ———, or any five of you, to call before you all ministers or school-masters within the counties of ———, *that are scandalous in their lives, or ill-affected to the parliament, or fomenters of this unnatural war; or that shall wilfully refuse obedience to the ordinances of parliament; or that have deserted their ordinary places of residence, not being employed in the service of the king and parliament,* with full power and liberty to send for any witnesses, and to examine complaints upon oath.— And you are to certify the names of such ministers, with the charge and proof against them to me.”†

It is to be observed, that the *warrant* is pointed only against those *who are immoral, or disaffected to the parliament, or had deserted their cures*; and was accompanied with *instructions*, and a *letter*, exhorting them to the faithful and effectual discharge of their trust. The instructions were to this effect.

*First*, “That they should be speedy and effectual in executing the ordinances, and sit in such places within the county that all parties, by the easiness of access, may be encouraged to address themselves to them with their complaints.

*Secondly*, “That they should issue their warrants, to summon before them such ministers and witnesses, as the articles preferred against them should require.

*Thirdly*, “That the party accused should not be present at the taking the depositions, because of discountenancing the witnesses, and disturbing the service;\* but when the depositions were taken upon oath the party accused should have a copy, and have a day given him to return his answer in writing, and to make his defence within fourteen days, or thereabouts.

† *Sufferings of the Clergy*, p. 117.

\* This was owing to the insolent and unmannerly behavior of some of the clergy before the commissioners: for the ordinance of Sept. 6, 1643, appoints, that the witnesses shall be examined in their presence; and that sufficient warning shall be given of the time and place where the charge against them should be proved.

*Fourthly*, "They were to return both the accusation and defence to Mr. *Good* and Mr. *Ashe*, the earl's chaplains, and upon such receipts they should have further directions.

*Fifthly*, "If the party accused would not appear to make his defence, they were to certify the cause of his absence, because if they were non-residents, or in arms against the parliament, the earl would proceed against them.\*

*Sixthly*, "It being found by experience, that parishioners were not forward to complain of their ministers, though very scandalous; some being enemies to the intended reformation, and others sparing their ministers, because they favored them in their tithes, and were therefore esteemed *quiet men*; therefore they were required to call unto them some well-affected men within every hundred, who, having no private engagements, were to be encouraged by the committees to enquire after the doctrines, lives, and conversations of all ministers and schoolmasters, and to give information what could be deposed, and who could depose the same.

*Seventhly*, "Each commissioner shall have five shillings for every day he sits; and the clerk to receive some pay, that he might not have occasion to demand fees for every warrant or copy, unless the writings were very large.

*Eighthly*, "Upon the ejecting of any scandalous or malignant ministers, they were to require the parishioners to make choice of some fit and able person to succeed, who was to have a testimonial from the well-affected gentry and ministry; and to take particular care that no *anabaptist*, or *antinomian*, be recommended.

*Ninthly*, "They were to certify the true value of each living; as also the estate, livelihood, and charge of children, which the accused person had, for his lordship's direction in the assignment of the fifths. And,

*Lastly*, "They were to use all other proper ways and methods for speeding the service."

With these instructions the earl sent an exhortation by letter, in the following words :

\* Husband's Collections, p. 311.



“Gentlemen,

“I send you by this bearer a commission, with instructions for executing the ordinance, &c. within your county. I neither doubt of your abilities nor affections to further this service, yet according to the great trust reposed in me herein by the parliament, I must be earnest with you to be diligent therein. You know how much the people of this kingdom have formerly suffered in their persons, souls, and estates, under an idle, ill-affected, scandalous, and insolent clergy, upheld by the bishops; and you cannot but foresee, that their pressures and burdens will still continue, though the form of government be altered, unless great care be taken to displace such ministers, and to place orthodox and holy men in every parish; for let the government be what it will for the form thereof, yet it will never be good, unless the parties employed therein be good themselves. By the providence of God it now lies in your power to reform the former abuses, and to remove these offenders. Your power is great, and so is your trust. If a general reformation follows not within your county, assuredly the blame will be laid upon you, and you must expect to be called to an account for it both here and hereafter. For my part, I am resolved to employ the utmost of my power given to me by the ordinance, for procuring a general reformation in all the associated counties, expecting your forwardness, and heartily joining with me herein.\*

“I rest, &c.”

When a clergyman was convicted according to the instructions above mentioned, report was made to the earl, who directed a warrant to the church-wardens of the parish, to eject him out of his parsonage, and all the profits thereof; and another to receive the tithes, and all the benefits into their own hands, and to keep them in safe custody till they should receive further order from himself.† At the same time he directed the parishioners to choose a proper minister for the vacant place, and upon their presentation his lordship sent him to the *assembly of divines* at Westminster, with an account of his character, for their

\* *Sufferings of the Clergy*, p. 118.

† *Ibid.* p. 119.



trial and examination. And upon a certificate from the assembly, that they approved of him as an orthodox divine, and qualified to officiate in the pastoral function, his lordship issued out his last warrant, setting forth that “such an one having been approved by the assembly, &c. he did therefore authorize and appoint him the said ———, to officiate as minister, to preach, teach, and catechise in such a parish *during his* (the earl’s) *pleasure*, and then empower him to take possession of the church, parsonage-houses, glebe-lands, and to receive the tithes and profits, and enjoy the same, until his lordship should take further order concerning the same, requiring all officers to aid and assist him for that purpose.”

If the committees observed these articles there could be no reasonable ground of complaint, except of the *sixth*, which may be construed as giving too much encouragement to informers; but the methods of conviction were unexceptionable. The persons to be called before the commissioners were scandalous, or enemies to the parliament; the depositions were upon oath; a copy of them was allowed the defendant, with time to give in his answer in writing; then a day appointed to make his defence in presence of the witnesses, to whom he might take exceptions; and after all, the final judgment not left with the commissioners, but with the *earl*. The filling the vacant benefice was no less prudent; the parishioners were to choose their own minister, who was to produce testimonials of his sobriety and virtue; the assembly were then to examine into his learning and ministerial qualifications; and after all, the new incumbent to hold his living only *during pleasure*; the parliament being willing to leave open a door, at the conclusion of a peace, for restoring such royalists as were displaced merely for adhering to the king, without prejudice to the present possessor. One cannot answer for particulars under such uncommon distractions and violence of parties; but the orders were, in my opinion, not only reasonable but expedient, for the support of the cause in which the parliament was engaged.

The committees for the associated counties acted, I apprehend, no longer than the year 1644. The last warrant of ejectment mentioned by Dr. *Nalson*, bearing date March

17, 1644-5, in which time affairs were brought to such a settlement in those parts, that the royalists could give them no disturbance.† The associated counties, says Mr. *Fuller*, escaped the best of all parts in this civil war, the smoke thereof only offending them, while the fire was felt in other places. The chief ejectments by the commissioners in other parts of England, were in the years 1644, 1645, and till the change of government in the year 1649, when the *covenant* itself was set aside, and changed into an *engagement* to the new commonwealth.

It is hard to compute the number of clergymen that might lose their livings by the several committees during the war, nor is it of any great importance, for the *law* is the same whether more or fewer suffer by it; and the not putting it in execution might be owing to want of power or opportunity. Dr. *Nalson* says, that in five of the associated counties one hundred and fifty-six clergymen were ejected in little more than a year; namely, in Norfolk fifty-one, Suffolk thirty-seven, Cambridgeshire thirty-one, Essex twenty-one, Lincolnshire sixteen; and if we allow a proportionable number for the other two, the whole will amount to two hundred and eighteen; and if in seven counties there were two hundred and eighteen sufferers, the fifty-two counties of England, by a like proportion, will produce upwards of sixteen hundred. Dr. *Walker* has fallaciously increased the number of suffering clergymen to eight thousand, even though the list at the end of his book makes out little more than a fifth part. Among his cathedral clergy he reckons up several *prebends* and *canonries*, in which he supposes sufferers without any evidence. Of this sort Dr. *Calamy* has reckoned above two hundred.\* If one clergyman was possessed of three or four dignities, there appear to be as many sufferers. The like is observable in the case of pluralists; for example, *Richard Stuart*, L. L. D. is set down as a sufferer in the deanry of St. Paul's, as prebendary of St. Pancras, and residentiary; in the deanry and prebend of the third stall in Westminster; in the deanry of the royal chapel; in the provostship of Eaton-college, and prebend of Northalton in the

† Sufferings of the Clergy, p. 419.

\* Church and Dissenters compared, p. 52.



church of Salisbury ; all which preferments he enjoyed, (says Dr. *Walker*) or was entitled to, together, and his name is repeated in the several places. By such a calculation it is easy to deceive the reader, and swell the account beyond measure. The reverend Mr. *Withers*,\* a late non-conformist minister at Exeter, has taken care to make an exact computation in the associated counties of Suffolk, Norfolk, and Cambridgeshire, in which are one thousand three hundred and ninety-eight parishes, and two hundred and fifty-three sequestrations ; so that if these may be reckoned as a standard for the whole kingdom, the whole number will be reduced considerably under two thousand. He has also made another computation from the county of Devon, in which are three hundred ninety-four parishes, and one hundred and thirty-nine sequestrations, out of which thirty-nine are deducted for pluralities, &c. and then by comparing this county (in which both Dr. *Walker* and Mr. *Withers* lived) with the rest of the kingdom, the amount of sufferers according to him, is *one thousand seven hundred and twenty-six* ; but admitting they should arise to the number of the doctor's names in his index, which are about two thousand four hundred, yet when such were deducted as were fairly convicted upon oath, of immoralities of life, &c. (which were a fourth in the associated counties) and all such as took part with the king in the war, or disowned the authority of the parliament ; preaching up doctrines inconsistent with the cause for which they had taken arms, and exciting the people to an absolute submission to the authority of the crown, the remainder that were displaced *only for refusing the covenant*, must be very inconsiderable. Mr. *Baxter* says, they cast out the grosser sort of insufficient and scandalous clergy, and some few civil men that had acted in the wars for the king, and set up the late innovations, but left in near one half of those that were but barely tolerable. He adds further, " that in all the counties in which he was acquainted *six to one at least, if not more*, that were sequestered by the committees, were by the oaths of witnesses proved insufficient, or scandalous, or both."§

\* Appendix to his Reply to Mr. Agate, p. 27, 28.

§ History of Life and Times, p. 74.



But admitting their numbers to be equal to those puritan ministers ejected at the restoration, yet the cause of their ejection, and the circumstances of the times, being very different, the sufferings of the former ought not to be compared to the latter; though Dr. *Walker* is pleased to say in his preface, that *if the sufferings of the dissenters bear any tolerable proportion to those of the ejected loyalists, in number, degrees, or circumstances, he will be gladly deemed not only to have lost all his labor, but to have revived a great and unanswerable scandal on the cause he has undertaken to defend.* I shall leave the reader to pass his own judgment upon this declaration, after I have produced the testimony of one or two divines of the church of England. “Who can answer (says one) for the violence and injustice of actions in a civil war? Those sufferings were in a time of general calamity, but *these* [in 1662] were ejected not only in a time of peace, but a time of joy to all the land, and after an act of oblivion, to which common rejoicing these suffering ministers had contributed their earnest prayers, and great endeavors.\*—” “I must own (says another of the doctor’s correspondents) that though both sides have been excessively to blame, yet that the severities used by the church to the dissenters are less excusable than those used by the dissenters to the church; my reason is, that the former were used in times of peace, and a settled government, whereas the latter were inflicted in a time of tumult and confusion, so that the plundering and ravaging endured by the church ministers were owing (many of them at least) to the rudeness of the soldiers, and the chances of war; *they were plundered not because they were conformists, but cavaliers, and of the king’s party.*”§ The case of those who were sober and virtuous, seems to be much the same with the *nonjurors* at the late revolution of King *William III.* and I readily agree with Mr. *Fuller*, that “moderate men bemoaned these severities, for as much corruption was let out by these ejections (many scandalous ministers being deservedly punished) so at the same time the veins

\* Conform. first Plea, p. 12, 13.

§ Calamy’s Church and Dissenters compared, p. 23, 24.

‘of the English church were also emptied of much good blood.”§

We have already observed, that a *fifth* part of the revenues of these ejected clergymen was reserved for the maintenance of their poor families, “which was a christian act, and which I should have been glad (says the ‘divine abovementioned) to have seen imitated at the restoration.”\* Upon this the *cavaliers* sent their wives and children to be maintained by the parliament ministers, while themselves were fighting for the king. The houses therefore ordained, Sept. 8, 1645, that the *fifths* should not be paid to the wives and children of those who came into the parliament quarters without their husbands or fathers, or who were not bred in the protestant religion.† Yet when the war was over, all were allowed their *fifths*, though in some places they were ill paid, the incumbent being hardly able to allow them, by reason of the smallness of his living, and the devastation of the war. When some pretended to excuse themselves on the forementioned exceptions, the two houses published the following explanation, Nov. 11, 1647, viz. “That the wives and children of all such persons whose estates and livings are, ‘have been, or shall be sequestered by order of either house ‘of parliament, shall be comprehended within the ordinance which allows a fifth part for wives and children, and ‘shall have their fifth part allowed them; and the committee of lords and commons for sequestrations, and the committees for plundered ministers, and all other ministers, ‘are required to take notice hereof, and yield obedience ‘hereunto.”‡ Afterwards, when it was questioned whether the *fifths* should pay their proportion of the public taxes, it was ordained, that *the incumbent only* should pay them. Under the government of the protector *Cromwell* it was ordained, that if the ejected minister left the quiet possession of his house and glebe to his successor within a certain time, he should receive *his fifths, and all his arrears*, provided he had not a real estate of his own of thirty pounds *per annum*, or five hundred pounds in money.

§ Church History, p. 207. \* Calamy’s Ch. and Diss. comp. p. 24.

† Husband’s Collections, p. 726. ‡ Sufferings of the Clergy, p. 109.

After all, it was a hard case on both sides ; the *incumbents* thought it hard to be obliged to all the duties of their place, and another to go away with a *fifth* of the profit, at a time when the value of church lands was considerably lessened by the neglect of tillage, and exorbitant taxes laid upon all the necessities of life. To which may be added, an opinion that began to prevail among the farmers, of the unlawfulness of paying tithes : Mr. *Selden* had led the way to this in his book of tithes, whereupon the parliament, by an ordinance of Nov. 8. 1644, “ strictly enjoined all ‘ persons fully, truly, and effectually to set out, yield, and ‘ pay respectively, all and singular tithes, offerings, oblations, obventions, rates for tithes, and all other duties ‘ commonly known by the name of tithes.” Others who had no scruple about the payment of tithes, refused to pay them to the new incumbent, because the ejected minister had the legal right ; insomuch that the presbyterian ministers were obliged in many places to sue their parishioners, which created disturbances and divisions, and at length gave rise to several petitions from the counties of Buckingham, Oxford, Hertford, &c. praying, that their ministers might be provided for some other way. The parliament referred them to a committee, which produced no redress, because they could not fix upon another fund, nor provide for the lay-impropriations.



## CHAP. IV.

*Of the several Parties in the Assembly of Divines, PRESBYTERIANS, ERASTIANS, INDEPENDENTS. Their Proceedings about Ordination, and the Directory for Divine Worship. The Rise, Progress, and Sufferings of the English ANABAPTISTS.*

BEFORE we proceed to the debates of the assembly of divines, it will be proper to distinguish the several parties of which it was constituted. § The episcopal clergy had entirely deserted it before the bringing in of the *covenant*, so that the establishment was left without a single advocate. All who remained were for taking down the main pillars of the hierarchy, before they had agreed what sort of building to erect in its room.

The majority at first intended only the reducing episcopacy to the standard of the first or second age, but for the sake of the Scots alliance, they were prevailed with to lay aside the name and function of bishops, and attempt the establishing a presbyterial form, which at length they advanced into *jus divinum*, or a *divine institution*, derived expressly from Christ and his apostles. This engaged them in so many controversies, as prevented their laying the top stone of the building, so that it fell to pieces before it was perfected. The chief patrons of presbytery in the house of commons, were *Denzil Hollis* esq; sir *William Waller*, sir *Philip Stapleton*, sir *John Clotworthy*, sir *Benjamin Rudyard*, serjeant *Maynard*, colonel *Massey*, colonel *Harley*, *John Glynn*, esq; and a few others.

The *erastians* formed another branch of the assembly, so called from *Erastus*, a German divine of the sixteenth century. The *pastoral office* according to him was only persuasive, like a professor of the sciences over his stu-

§ The name of Puritans is from this time to be sunk; and they are for the future to be spoken of under the distinction of Presbyterians, Erastians, and Independents, who had all their different views. Dr. Warner's Ecclesiastical History, vol. ii. p. 564. Ed.

dents, without any power of the keys annexed.¶ The Lord's supper, and other ordinances of the gospel, were to be free and open to all. The minister might dissuade the vicious and unqualified from the communion, but might not refuse it, or inflict any kind of censure; the punishment of all offences, either of a civil or religious nature, being reserved to the magistrate. The pretended advantage of this scheme was, that it avoided the erecting *imperium in imperio*, or two different powers in the same civil government; it effectually destroyed all that spiritual jurisdiction and coercive power over the consciences of men, which had been challenged by popes, prelates, presbyteries, &c. and made the government of the church *a creature of the state*. Most of our first reformers were so far in these sentiments, as to maintain that no one form of church government is prescribed in scripture as an invariable rule for future ages; as *Cranmer*, *Redmayn*, *Cox*, &c. and archbishop *Whitgift*, in his controversy with *Cartwright*, delivers the same opinion; "I deny (says he) that the scripture has set down any one certain form of church-government to be perpetual."—Again, "It is well known, that the manner and form of government expressed in the scriptures neither is now, nor can, nor ought to be observed either touching persons or functions.—The charge of this is left to the magistrate, so that nothing be contrary to the word of God. The government of the church must be according to the form of government in the commonwealth." The chief patrons of this scheme in the assembly were Dr. *Lightfoot*, Mr. *Colman*, Mr. *Selden*, Mr. *Whitlock*, and in the house of commons, besides *Selden* and *Whitlock*, *Oliver St. John*, esq; sir *Thomas Widdrington*, *John Crew*, esq; sir *John Hipsley*, and others of the greatest names.

The *independents*, or *congregational brethren*, composed a third party, and made a bold stand against the proceedings of the high presbyterians; their numbers were small at first, though they increased prodigiously in a few years, and grew to a considerable figure under the protectorship of *Oliver Cromwell*.

We have already related their original, and carried on their history till they appeared in public about the latter end of the year 1640. The divines who passed under this denomination in the assembly, had fled their country in the late times, and formed societies according to their own model in Holland, upon the states allowing them the use of *their* churches, after their own service was ended, with liberty of ringing a bell to public worship. Here (as they declare) they set themselves to consult the holy scriptures as impartially as they could, in order to find out the discipline that the apostles themselves practised in the very first age of the church; the condition they were in, and the melancholy prospect of their affairs affording no temptation to any particular bias. The rest of their history, with their distinguishing opinions, I shall draw from their *Apologetical Narration*, published in 1643, and presented to the house of commons.

‘As to the church of England (say they) we profess before God and the world, that we do apprehend a great deal of defilement in their way of worship, and a great deal of unwarranted power exercised by their church governors, yet we allow multitudes of their parochial churches to be true churches, and their ministers true ministers. In the late times, when we had no hopes of returning to our own country, we held communion with them, and offered to receive to the Lord’s supper some that came to visit us in our exile, whom we knew to be godly, upon that relation and membership they held in their parish churches in England, they professing themselves to be members thereof, and belonging thereto. The same charitable disposition we maintained towards the Dutch churches among whom we lived. We mutually gave and received the right hand of fellowship, holding a brotherly correspondence with their divines, and admitting some of the members of their churches to communion in the sacrament, and other ordinances, by virtue of their relation to those churches.”\*

The scheme they embraced was a middle way between brownism and presbytery, viz. that “*every particular congregation of christians has an entire and complete power*

\* Apologet. Narr. of the Independents, p. 78.



*of jurisdiction over its members, to be exercised by the elders thereof within itself.* This they are sure must have been the form of government in the primitive church, before the numbers of christians in any city were multiplied so far as to divide into many congregations, which it is dubious, whether it was the fact in the apostles times.\*

“Not that they claim an entire independency with regard to other churches, for they agree that in all cases of offence, the offending church is to submit to an open examination, by other neighboring churches, and on their persisting in their error of miscarriage, they then are to renounce all christian communion with them, till they repent, which is all the authority or ecclesiastical power that one church may exercise over another, unless they call in the civil magistrate, for which they find no authority in scripture. ||

“Their method of public worship in Holland was the same with other protestants; they read the scriptures of the old and new testament in their assemblies, and expounded them on proper occasions; they offered up public and solemn prayers for kings, and all in authority; and though they did not approve of a prescribed form, they admitted that public prayer in their assemblies ought to be framed by the meditation and study of their ministers, as well as their sermons; the word of God was constantly preached; the two sacraments, of baptism to infants, and the Lord’s supper, were frequently administered; to which was added, singing of psalms, and a col-  
lection for the poor every Lord’s day.

“They profess their agreement in doctrine with the articles of the church of England, and other reformed churches.

“Their officers, and public rulers in the church, were pastors, teachers, ruling elders (not lay, but ecclesiastical persons, separated to that service) and deacons.

“They practised no church censures but admonition; and excommunication upon obstinate and impenitent offenders, which latter they apprehended should not be pronounced but for crimes of the last importance, and

\* Apologet. Narr. of the Independents, p. 12, 15.

|| Ibid. p. 12.

‘ which may be reasonably supposed to be committed contrary to the light and conviction of the person’s conscience.

“ In conclusion, they call God and man to witness, that out of a regard to the public peace they had forbore to publish their peculiar opinions, either from the pulpit or press, or to improve the present disposition of the people to the increase of their party ; nor should they have published that apology to the world, had not their silence been interpreted as an acknowledgment of those reproaches and calumnies that have been cast upon them by their adversaries ; but should have waited for a free and open debate of their sentiments in the present assembly of divines, though they are sensible they shall have the disadvantage with regard to numbers, learning, and the stream of public interest ; however, they are determined in all debates to yield to the utmost latitude of their consciences, professing it to be as high a point of religion to acknowledge their mistakes when they are convinced of them, as to hold fast the truth ; and when matters are brought to the nearest agreement, to promote such a temper as may tend to union, as well as truth.||

“ They therefore beseech the honorable houses of parliament, not to look upon them as disturbers of the public peace, but to consider them as persons that differ but little from their brethren ; yea, far less than they do from what themselves practised three years ago. They beseech them likewise to have some regard to their past exile and present sufferings, and upon these accounts to allow them to continue in their native country, with the enjoyment of the ordinances of Christ, and an indulgence in some lesser differences, as long as they continue peaceable subjects.

*Signed by*

Thomas Goodwin,  
Sydrach Simpson,  
Philip Nye,  
Jer. Burroughs,  
William Bridge.”\*

The reverend Mr. *Herle*, afterwards prolocutor of the assembly, in his *imprimatur* to this Apology, calls it a performance full of peaceableness, modesty, and candor; and though he wrote against it, yet in his preface to his book, entitled *The Independency upon Scripture of the Independency of Churches*, says, “the difference between ‘us and our brethren who are for independency, is nothing ‘so great as some may conceive; at most it does but ruffle ‘the fringe, not any way rend the garment of Christ; it is ‘so far from being a fundamental, that it is scarce a material difference.” The more rigid presbyterians attacked the *Apology* with greater severity; swarms of pamphlets were published against it in a few months, some reflecting on the persons of the *apologists*, and others on their principles, as tending to break the uniformity of the church, under the pretence of liberty of conscience. The most furious adversaries were Dr. *Bastwick*, old Mr. *Vicars*, and Mr. *Edwards* minister of Christ Church, London, who printed an *antapologia*, of three hundred pages in quarto, full of such bitter invectives, that the pacific Mr. *Burroughs* said, “he questioned whether any good man ever ‘vented so much malice against others, whom he acknowledged to be pious and religious persons.” But we shall have occasion to remember this gentleman hereafter.

Lord *Clarendon* and Mr. *Eachard* represent the *independents* as ignorant and illiterate enthusiasts; and though Mr. *Rapin* confesses,\* he knew nothing of their rise and progress, he has painted them out in the most disadvantageous colors, affirming “that their principles were exceeding proper to put the kingdom into a flame; that they abhorred monarchy, and approved of none but a republican government, and that as to religion, their principles were ‘contrary to all the rest of the world; that they would not ‘endure ordinary ministers in the church, but every one ‘among them prayed, preached, admonished, and interpreted scripture, without any other call, than what himself drew from his supposed gifts, and the approbation of ‘his hearers.”

It is surprising so accurate an historian should take such liberties with men whose principles he was so little ac-

\* Vol. ii. p. 514, folio.



quainted with, as to say, *the independents abhorred monarchy, and approved of none but a republican government*; whereas they assure the world in their Apology, that they prayed publicly for kings, and all in authority. This was no point of controversy between them and the presbyterians, for when they had the king in their custody they served him on the knee, and in all probability would have restored him to the honors of his crown, if he had complied with their proposals. When they were reproached with being *enemies to magistracy*, a declaration was published by the *congregational societies* in and about London, in the year 1647, wherein they declare, “that as magistracy and government in general is the ordinance of God, they do not disapprove of any form of civil government, but *do freely acknowledge, that a kingly government, bounded by just and wholesome laws, is both allowed by God, and a good accommodation unto men*”\*. And if we may believe Dr. Welwood,§ when the army resolved to set aside the present king, *the governing party* would have advanced the duke of Gloucester to the throne, if they could have done it with safety. With regard to religion Rapin adds, *their principles were contrary to all the rest of the world*; and yet they gave their consent to all the doctrinal articles of the Assembly’s confession of faith, and declared in their Apology, their agreement with the doctrinal articles of the church of England, and with all the protestant reformed churches in their *harmony of confessions*, differing only about the jurisdiction of classes, synods, and convocations, and the point of liberty of conscience.—Our historian adds, that “they were not only averse to episcopacy, but would not endure so much as ordinary ministers in the church. They maintained, that every man might pray in public, exhort his brethren and interpret scripture, without any other call than what himself drew from his zeal and supposed gifts, and without any other authority than the approbation of his hearers.” Here his annotator Mr. Tindal rightly observes, that he has mistaken the *independents* for the *brownists*; the independents had their stated officers in the church for public prayer, preaching, and ad-

\* Page 8.

§ Memoirs, p. 90, 1718.

ministring the sacraments, as *pastors, teachers, and elders*, (who were ecclesiastics) and *deacons* to take care of the poor; nor did they admit of persons unordained to any office, to exercise their gifts publicly, except as *probationers*, in order to their devoting themselves to the ministry. The words of their confession are; “the work of preaching is ‘not so peculiarly confined to pastors and teachers, but that ‘others also gifted, and fitted by the Holy Ghost for it, and ‘approved (*being by lawful ways and means, by the providence of God, called thereunto*) may publicly, ordinarily ‘and constantly perform it, so that they give themselves up ‘thereunto.”\* It is necessary the reader should make these remarks, to rectify a train of mistakes which run through this part of Mr. *Rapin’s* history, and to convince him, that the king’s death was not owing to the distinguishing tenets of any sect or party of christians. There were indeed some *republicans* and *levellers* in the army, whose numbers increased after they despaired of bringing the king into their measures, and it is well known that at their first appearance, *Cromwell* by his personal valor suppressed them with the hazard of his life. These were chiefly *anabaptists*, and proved as great enemies to the *protector* as they had been to the king. But there is nothing in the principles of the *presbyterians, independents, or anabaptists*, (as far as I can learn) inconsistent with monarchy, or that had a natural tendency to put the kingdom into a flame.

Mr. *Baxter*, who was no friend to the independents, and knew them much better than the above-mentioned writers, admits, “that most of them were zealous, and very many ‘learned, discreet and pious, capable of being very service- ‘able to the church, and searchers into scripture and anti- ‘quity;”|| though he blames them on other occasions, for making too light of ordination; for their too great strictness in the qualification of church-members; for their popular form of church-government; and their too much exploding of synods and councils; and then adds, “I saw ‘commendable care of serious holiness and discipline in ‘most of the independent churches; and I found that some ‘episcopal men, of whom archbishop *Usher* was one, agreed with them in this, that every bishop was independ-

\* Savoy Conference, 4to. p. 24, art. 14. || Baxter’s Life, p. 140, 143.



‘ent, and that synods and councils were not so much for ‘government as concord.” And I may venture to declare, that these are the sentiments of almost all the protestant non-conformists in England at this day.

There was not one professed *anabaptist* in the assembly, though their sentiments began to spread wonderfully without doors. Their teachers were for the most part illiterate, yet Mr. *Baxter* says,\* “he found many of them sober, godly, and zealous, not differing from their brethren ‘but as to infant baptism.” These joining with the *independents* in the point of discipline and toleration, made them the more considerable, and encouraged their opposition to the *presbyterians*, who were for establishing their own discipline, without regard to such as differed from them.

It is not to be wondered, that so many parties with different views should entangle the proceedings of this venerable body, and protract the intended union with the Scots; though as soon as the *covenant* was taken, they entered upon that affair, the parliament having sent them the following order, dated October 12, 1643.

“UPON serious consideration of the present state of ‘affairs, the lords and commons assembled in this present ‘parliament do order, that the assembly of divines and ‘others do forthwith confer, and treat among themselves, ‘of such a discipline and government as may be most agreeable to God’s holy word, and most apt to procure and ‘preserve the peace of the church at home, and a nearer ‘agreement with the church of Scotland, &c. to be settled ‘in this church instead of the present church government ‘by archbishops, bishops, &c. which it is resolved to take ‘away; and to deliver their advice touching the same to ‘both houses of parliament with all convenient speed.”

Hereupon the assembly set themselves to enquire into the constitution of the primitive church, in the days of the apostles, which being founded upon the model of the Jewish synagogues, gave the *Lightfoots*, the *Seldens*, the *Colemans*, and other masters of Jewish antiquities, an opportunity of displaying their superior learning, by new and unherd-of interpretations of scripture, whereby they fre-

\* Life, p. 40.



quently disconcerted the warmer presbyterians, whose plan of discipline they had no mind should receive the stamp of an *apostolic sanction*, in the church of England.†

It was undoubtedly a capital mistake in the proceedings of parliament, to destroy one building before they were agreed upon another. The ancient order of worship and discipline in the church of England was set aside above twelve months before any other form was appointed; during which time, no wonder *sects* and *divisions* arrived to such a pitch, that it was not in their power afterwards to destroy them. Committees indeed were appointed to prepare materials for the debate of the assembly, some for *discipline*, and others for *worship*, which were debated in order, and then laid aside without being perfected, or sent up to parliament to be framed into a law. Nothing can be alledged in excuse of this, but their backwardness to unite with the Scots, or the prospect the parliament might yet have of an agreement with the king.

The first point that came upon the carpet was the *ordination of ministers*; which was the more necessary, because the bishops refused to ordain any who were not in the interest of the crown:\* this gave occasion to enquire into the *antient right of presbyters to ordain without a bishop*, which meeting with some opposition, the committee proposed a temporary provision till the matter could be settled, and offered these two queries:

*First*, “Whether in extraordinary cases, something extraordinary may not be admitted, till a settled order can be fixed, yet keeping as near to the rule as possible?”

*Secondly*, “Whether certain ministers of this city may not be appointed to ordain ministers in the city and neighbourhood, for a certain time, *jure fraternitatis*?”

To the last of which, the *independents* entered their dissent, unless the ordination was attended with the previous election of some church. New difficulties being continually

† Lightfoot's Remains, in pref. p. 8.

\* Bishop Hall complained, that he was violently restrained in his power of ordination. On this *single* instance Dr. Grey grounds a general assertion, that the bishops were prevented from ordaining by the rabble. *Ed.*

started, upon this and some other heads, the Scots commissioners were out of all patience, and applied to the city ministers to petition the parliament to call for the *advice of the assembly*. The petition was presented Sept. 18, 1614, in which, having reminded the *commons* of their *remonstrance*, wherein they declare, it was not their intention to let loose the golden reins of discipline; and of their *national covenant*, wherein they had engaged to the most high God, to settle an uniformity in the church; they add, “give us leave, we beseech you, in pursuance of our national covenant, to sigh out our sorrows at the foot of this honorable senate. Through many erroneous opinions, ruining schisms, and damnable heresies, unhappily fomented in this city and country, the orthodox ministry is neglected, the people are seduced, congregations torn asunder, families distracted, rights and duties of relations, national, civil, and spiritual, scandalously violated, the power of godliness decayed, parliamentary authority undermined, fearful confusions introduced, imminent destruction threatened, and in part inflicted upon us lately in the west. May it therefore please your wisdoms, as a sovereign remedy for the removal of our present miseries, and preventing their further progress, to expedite a directory for public worship, to accelerate the establishment of a pure discipline and government, according to the word of God, and the example of the best reformed churches, and to take away all obstructions that may impede and retard our humble desires.”§ Upon this the assembly were ordered to send up the *humble advice* upon this head; which was to the following effect, [Sept. 22,] viz. That in this present exigency, while there were no presbyterians, yet it being necessary that ministers should be ordained for the army and navy, and for the service of many destitute congregations, by some who, having been ordained themselves, have power to join in the setting apart of others: they advise,

(1.) That an association of some godly ministers in and about the city of London be appointed by public authori-

ty, to ordain ministers for the city and the neighboring parts, keeping as near to the rule as may be.

(2.) That the like associations be made by the same authority in great towns and neighboring parishes in the several counties, which are at present quiet & undisturbed.

(3.) That such as are chosen, or appointed for the service of the army or navy, being well recommended, be ordained as aforesaid, by the associated ministers of London, or some others in the country; and the like for any other congregations that want a minister.†

According to this advice the two houses passed an ordinance, October 2, for the ordination of ministers *pro tempore*, which appoints the following ten persons, being presbyters, and members of the assembly, to examine and ordain, by imposition of hands, all those whom they shall judge qualified to be admitted into the sacred ministry, viz.

Dr. Corn. Burgess, <i>assessor</i> ,	Mr. Starkey Gower.
Dr. William Gouge,	Mr. John Conant,
Mr. John Ley,	Mr. Humphrey Chambers,
Mr. George Walker,	Mr. Henry Roborough,
Mr. Edmund Calamy,	Mr. Daniel Cawdry.

And the following thirteen being presbyters of the city of London, but not members of the assembly, viz.

<i>The Rev.</i> Mr. John Downham,	<i>The Rev.</i> Mr. Sam. Clarke,
Mr. Cha. Offspring,	Mr. Arthur Jackson,
Mr. Richard Lee,	Mr. Em. Bourne,
Mr. Tim. Dod,	Mr. Fulk Billers,
Mr. James Cranford,	Mr. Fr. Roberts,
Mr. Tho. Horton,	Mr. Leon. Cooke.
Mr. Tho. Clendon,	

Any seven, or more, to be a *quorum*, and all persons so ordained to be reputed ministers of the church of England, sufficiently authorized for any office or employment therein, and capable of all advantages appertaining to the same. Their rules for examination, and trial of candidates, will be seen the next year, when this affair was fully settled. In the mean time another ordinance passed the houses, for the



benefit of the county of Lancaster, whereby the reverend *M. Charles Herle*, *Mr. Richard Herrick*, *Mr. Hyet*, *Mr. Bradshaw*, *Mr. Isaac Ambrose*, and others, to the number of twenty-one, had full power given them to ordain *pro tempore* in the county of Lancaster. And to obviate the reproaches of the Oxford divines, the following clause was added, "that if any person do publicly preach, or otherwise exercise any ministerial office, who shall not be ordained, or thereunto allowed by seven of the said ministers, their names shall be returned to both houses of parliament, to be dealt with as they in their wisdom shall think fit." It was voted further, that "no minister be allowed to preach, unless he has a certificate of his ordination, or at least of his being examined and approved by the assembly."\* And Feb. 16, at a conference between the two houses it was agreed, that the assembly of divines be desired to admit none into their pulpits, except such whose doctrine they would be answerable for. Such was the concern of the parliament in these distracted times, to have a sober and well-regulated clergy.

Next to the providing for a succession of ministers by *ordination*, the assembly consulted about a form of public devotion. The old liturgy being laid aside, there were no public offices in the church: a committee was therefore appointed, October 17, 1643, to agree upon certain general heads, for the direction of the minister in the discharge of his office, which, having passed through the assembly, were sent into Scotland for the approbation of the general assembly, and then established by an ordinance of parliament bearing date Jan. 3, 1644-5, under the title of a *directory for public worship*.

The reasons which induced the parliament to discard the old liturgy, and form a new plan for the devotion of the church, I shall transcribe from their own preface. "It is evident, (say they) after long and sad experience, that the liturgy used in the church of England, notwithstanding all the pains and religious intentions of the compilers, has proved an offence to many of the godly at home, and to the reformed churches abroad. The enjoining the

\*Parliamentary Chronicle, p. 152.

‘reading all the prayers heightened the grievances ; and  
‘the many unprofitable and burdensome ceremonies have  
‘occasioned much mischief, by disquieting the consciences  
‘of many, who could not yield to them. Sundry good  
‘people have by this means been kept from the Lord’s ta-  
‘ble, and many faithful ministers debarred from the exer-  
‘cise of their ministry, to the ruin of them and their fami-  
‘lies. The prelates and their faction have raised their es-  
‘timation of it to such an height, as if God could be wor-  
‘shipped no other way but by the *service book* ; in conse-  
‘quence of which the preaching of the word has been de-  
‘preciated, and in some places entirely neglected.

“In the mean time the papists have made their advan-  
‘tage this way, boasting that the common prayer book came  
‘up to a compliance with a great part of their *service* ; by  
‘which means they were not a little confirmed in their ido-  
‘latry and superstition, especially of late, when new cer-  
‘emonies were daily obtruded on the church.

“Besides, the liturgy has given great encouragement to  
‘an idle and unedifying ministry, who chose rather to con-  
‘fine themselves to *forms* made to their hands, than to ex-  
‘ert themselves in the exercise of the gift of prayer, with  
‘which our Savior furnishes all those whom he calls to  
‘that office.

“For these and many other weighty considerations, re-  
‘lating to the book in general, besides divers particulars  
‘which are a just ground of offence, it is thought advisea-  
‘ble to set aside the former liturgy, with the many rites  
‘and ceremonies formerly used in the worship of God, not  
‘out of any affectation of novelty, nor with an intention  
‘to disparage our first reformers, but that we may answer  
‘in some measure the gracious providence of God, which  
‘now calls upon us for a further reformation ; that we  
‘may satisfy our own consciences ; answer the expecta-  
‘tions of other reformed churches ; ease the consciences  
‘of many godly persons among ourselves ; and give a pub-  
‘lic testimony of our endeavors after an uniformity in di-  
‘vine worship, pursuant to what we had promised in our  
‘*solemn league and covenant*.”

It has been observed, that the *directory* is not an abso-  
lute form of devotion, but, agreeably to its title, contains



only some general directions, taken partly from the word of God and partly from rules of christian prudence; it points out the heads of public prayer, of preaching, and other parts of the pastoral function, leaving the minister a discretionary latitude to fill up the vacancies according to his abilities. It is divided into several chapters, and being a book of a public nature, comprehending all the peculiarities of the presbyterian reformation, I have given it a place in the appendix.\* Mr. *Fuller* observes,§ that the *independents* in the assembly were hardly persuaded to consent to it, for fear of infringing the liberty of prayer, yet being admitted to qualify some things in the preface, they complied. The committee who composed the preface were Mr. *Nye*, Mr. *Bridges*, Mr. *Burges*, Mr. *Thos. Goodwin*, all independents, Mr. *Vines* Mr. *Reynolds*, Mr. *Marshall*, and Dr. *Temple*, with the Scots commissioners.

The *directory* passed the assembly with great unanimity; those who were for set forms of prayer resolving to confine themselves to the very words of the *directory*, while others made use of them only as heads for their enlargement.

It may not be improper in this place to advise the reader of the following variations introduced into the service of the church upon this occasion. Instead of one prescribed form of prayer, the *directory* only points out certain topics on which the minister might enlarge. The whole *Apocrypha* is ejected; *private and lay baptism*, with the use of god-fathers and god-mothers, and the sign of the cross, are discontinued.¶ In the sacrament of the Lord's supper

\* Appendix, No. VIII. § Church History, b. xi. p. 222.

¶ Another variation, not noticed by Mr. Neal, was the exclusion of dipping, and declaring sprinkling sufficient. This was owing to Dr. Lightfoot. When the assembly came to the vote, whether the *directory* should run thus: "The minister shall take water, and *sprinkle* 'or *pour* it with his hand upon the face or forehead of the child:" some were unwilling to have *dipping* excluded, so that the vote came to an equality within one; for the one side there being twenty-four, and for the other twenty-five. Next day the affair was resumed, when the doctor insisted on hearing the reasons of those who were for dipping. At length it was proposed, that it should be expressed thus: that 'pouring on of water, or sprinkling in the administration of baptism, 'is lawful and sufficient.'" Lightfoot excepted against the word *lawful*, it being the same as if it should be determined lawful to use bread



no mention is made of private communion, or administering it to the sick. The altar with rails is changed into a communion table, to be placed in the body of the church, about which the people might stand or sit, *kneeling* not being thought so proper a posture. The presbyterians were for giving the power of the keys into the hands of the *ministers and elders*, as the independents were to the whole brotherhood; but *Lightfoot, Selden, Coleman*, and others, were for an open communion, to whom the parliament were most inclinable, for all they would yield was, that the minister immediately before the communion should warn, in the name of Christ, all such as are ignorant, scandalous, prophane, or that live in any sin or offence against their knowledge or conscience, that they presume not to come to that holy table, shewing them, that he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh judgment to himself. The prohibition of marriage in *Lent*, and the use of the ring, is laid aside. In the visitation of the sick, no mention is made of private confession, or authoritative absolution. No service is appointed for the burial of the dead. All particular vestments for priests or ministers, and all *saints* days, are discarded. It has been reckoned a considerable omission, that the directory does not enjoin reading the *apostles creed* and the *ten commandments*; lord Clarendon reports,† that when this was observed in private conversation at the treaty of Uxbridge, the earl of *Pembroke* said, he was sorry for the omission, but that upon a debate in the house of commons, it was carried in the negative by eight or nine voices. Which made many smile (says his lordship;) but the *jest* will be lost, when the reader is informed, that the question in the house was not, whether the *creed* should be received or ejected, but whether it should be printed with the *directory for worship*; it being apprehended more proper for a *confession of faith*; and accordingly the creed and ten commandments were added to the *assembly's confession*, published a year or two forwards. The ordinance for estab-

and wine in the Lord's supper; and he moved, that it might be expressed thus: "it is not only lawful, but also sufficient;" and it was put down so accordingly. Robinson's History of Baptism, p. 450, 51. *Ed.*

† Clarendon, vol. ii. p. 588.

lishing the *directory* repeals and makes void the acts of *Edward VI.* and *Queen Elizabeth*, by which the old liturgy was established, and forbids the use of it within any church, chapel, or place of public worship in England or Wales, appointing the use of the *directory* in its room; and thus it continued till the restoration of *King Charles II.* when the constitution being restored, the old liturgy took place again, the ordinance for its repeal having never obtained the royal assent.

It was a considerable time before this great revolution in the form of public worship took place over the whole kingdom. In some parts of the country the churchwardens could not procure a *directory*, and in others they despised it, and continued the old *common-prayer book*; some would read no form, and others would use one of their own. In order therefore to give life to the *directory*, the parliament next summer called in all *common-prayer books*, and imposed a fine upon those ministers who should read any other form than that contained in the *directory*. The ordinance is dated Aug. 23, 1645, and enacts, that “the knights and ‘burgesses of the several counties of England and Wales, ‘shall send printed books of the *directory* fairly bound to ‘the committee of parliament in their several counties, who ‘shall deliver them to the officers of the several parishes, ‘in England and Wales, by whom they shall be delivered ‘to the several ministers of each parish. It ordains further, ‘that the several ministers next Lord’s day after their receiving the *book of directory*, shall read it openly in their ‘respective churches before morning sermon.—It then ‘forbids the use of the common-prayer-book in any church, ‘chapel, or place of public worship, or in any private place ‘or family, under penalty of five pounds for the first offence, ‘ten for the second, and for the third a year’s imprisonment. Such ministers as do not observe the *directory* ‘in all exercises of public worship shall forfeit forty shillings; and they who, with a design to bring the *directory* ‘into contempt, or to raise opposition to it, shall preach, ‘write, or print any thing in derogation of it, shall forfeit ‘a sum of money not under five pounds, nor more than fifty, to be given to the poor. All common-prayer-books ‘remaining in parish churches or chapels, are ordered with-

‘in a month, to be carried to the committee of the several counties, to be disposed of as the parliament shall direct.’\*

These were the first fruits of presbyterian uniformity, and are equally to be condemned with the severities and oppressions of the late times; for though it should be admitted, that the parliament or legislature had a right to abrogate the use of the *common-prayer-book* in churches, was it not highly unreasonable to forbid the reading it in private families or closets? Surely the devotion of a private family could be no disturbance to the public; nor is it any excuse to say, that very few suffered by it, because the law is still the same, and equally injurious to the natural rights of mankind.

Though his majesty’s affairs were very desperate after the battle of *Nuseby*, yet he had the courage to forbid the use of the new *directory* and enjoin the continuance of the *common-prayer*, by a proclamation from Oxford, dated Nov. 13, 1645, in which his majesty takes notice, that “the book of common-prayer, being a most excellent form of worship, grounded on the holy scriptures, is a great help to devotion, and tends to preserve an uniformity in the church of England; whereas the directory gives liberty to ignorant, factious, and evil men, to broach their own fancies and conceits, and utter those things in their long prayers which no conscientious man can assent to; and be the minister never so pious, it breaks in upon the uniformity of public service. And whereas this alteration is introduced by an ordinance of parliament, inflicting penalties on offenders, which was never pretended to be in their power without our consent: Now, lest our silence should be interpreted as a connivance in a matter so highly concerning the worship of God, and the established laws of the kingdom, we do therefore require and command all ministers in all cathedral and parish churches, and all other places of public worship, that the said book of common-prayer be kept and used in all churches, chapels, &c. according to the statute *primo Eliz.* and that the directory be in no sort admitted, received, or used; and whensoever it shall please God to restore us to peace, and the laws to their due course, we shall require a strict

\* Rushworth, part iv. vol. i. p. 205.



‘account, and prosecution against the breakers of the said law. And in the mean time, in such places where we shall come and find the book of common-prayer suppressed and laid aside, and the directory introduced, we shall account all those that are aiders, actors, or contrivers therein, to be persons disaffected to the religion and laws established.’||

His majesty likewise issued out warrants under his own hand, to the heads of the *university*, commanding them to read divine service as usual, morning and evening; and assured his peers at Oxford, that he was still determined to live and die for the privileges of his crown, his friends, and church government.

About this time the *anabaptists* began to make a considerable figure, and spread themselves into several separate congregations. We have already distinguished the German anabaptists from the English, who differed only from their protestant brethren about the subject and mode of *baptism*; these were divided into *general* and *particular*, from their different sentiments upon the *arminian* controversy; the former appeared in Holland, where Mr. *Smith* their leader published a confession of faith in the year 1611, which Mr. *Robinson*, the minister of the independent congregation at Leyden, answered in 1614; but the severity of those times would not admit them to venture into England. The *particular baptists* were strict *calvinists*, and were so called from their belief of the doctrines of *particular election, redemption, &c.* They separated from the independent congregation about the year 1638, and set up for themselves under the pastoral care of Mr. *Jesse*, (as has been related) and having renounced their former baptism, they sent over one of their number, [Mr. *Blunt*] to be immersed by one of the Dutch anabaptists of Amsterdam, that he might be qualified to baptize his friends in England after the same manner.‡ A strange and unaccountable conduct! for unless the Dutch anabaptists could derive their pedigree in an uninterrupted line from the apostles, the first reviver of this usage must have been unbaptized, and consequently, not capable of communicating the ordinance to others. Upon Mr. *Blunt*’s return he baptized Mr. *Blacklock* a teacher, and Mr. *Blacklock*

|| Rushworth, part iv. vol. i. p. 207.

‡ MS. penes me.

dipped the rest of the society, to the number of fifty-three, in this present year 1644. "Presuming upon the patience of the state (says Dr. *Featly*) they have rebaptized one hundred men and women together, in the twilight, in rivulets, and some arms of the Thames, and elsewhere, dipping them over head and ears. They have printed divers pamphlets in defence of their heresy (says the same author) and challenged some of our preachers to a disputation." Nay, so wonderfully did this opinion prevail, that there were no less than forty-seven congregations in the country, and seven in London at this time. who published a confession of their faith, signed in the name of their congregations, by *William Kiffin, Thomas Patience, George Tipping, John Spilsbury, Thomas Sheppard, Thomas Munden, Thomas Gun, John Mabbett, John Webb, Thomas Kilcop, Paul Hobson, Thomas Gore, John Philips, and Edward Heath*. In the year 1646. it was reprinted, with the additional names of *Dennis le Barbier* and *Christopher Durell*, ministers of the French congregation in London, of the same judgment.

Their confession consisted of fifty-two articles, and is strictly *calvinistical* in the doctrinal part, and according to the independent discipline; it confines the subject of baptism to grown christians, and the mode to immersion; it admits of gifted lay-preachers, and acknowledges a due subjection to the civil magistrate in all things lawful; and concludes thus, "We desire to live quietly and peaceably, as becomes saints, endeavoring in all things to keep a good conscience, and to do to every man (of what judgment soever) as we would they should do to us; that as our practice is, so it may prove us to be a conscionable, quiet, and harmless people, (no way dangerous or troublesome to human society) and to labor to work with our hands, that we may not be chargeable to any. but to give to him that needeth, both friend and enemy, accounting it more excellent to give than to receive. Also we confess, that we know but in part, to shew us from the word of God, that which we see not, we shall have cause to be thankful to God and them. But if any man shall impose upon us any thing that we see not to be commanded by our Lord Jesus Christ, we should, in his strength,



‘rather embrace all reproaches, and tortures of men; to  
 ‘be stripped of all our outward comforts, and if it were  
 ‘possible, to die a thousand deaths, rather than to do any  
 ‘thing against the truth of God, or against the light of our  
 ‘own consciences. And if any shall call what we have  
 ‘said heresy, then do we with the apostle acknowledge,  
 ‘that after the way they call heresy so worship we the God  
 ‘of our fathers; disclaiming all heresies (rightly so called)  
 ‘because they are against Christ; and desiring to be sted-  
 ‘fast and immoveable, always abounding in obedience to  
 ‘Christ, as knowing our labor shall not be in vain in the  
 ‘Lord.’”

When Dr. *Featly* had read this confession, he owned they were neither heretics nor schismatics, but tender-hearted christians, upon whom, through false suggestions, the hand of authority had fallen heavy whilst the hierarchy stood.

The advocates of this doctrine were, for the most part, of the meanest of the people; their preachers were generally illiterate, and went about the country making proselytes of all who would submit to *immersion*, without a due regard to their acquaintance with the principles of religion, or their moral characters. The writers of these times represent them as tinctured with a kind of enthusiastic fury against all that opposed them. Mr. *Baxter* says, †  
 “there were but few of them that had not been the opposers  
 ‘and troublers of faithful ministers——That in this they  
 ‘strengthened the hands of the profane, and that in gene-  
 ‘al, *reproach of ministers, faction, pride, and scandalous  
 ‘practices, were fomented in their way.*”\* But still there

† *Baxter's Life.* p. 102, 144.

\* We refer our reader, for a more full account of the baptists of this period, to the supplement to this volume. Suffice it to say here: that Mr. *Baxter*, great and excellent as he was, had his weaknesses and prejudices, for which much allowance must be made. Severe as is what he says above of the baptists, he speaks of them, at other times, with more candor and respect. As p 140 of his life: “For the an-  
 ‘abaptists themselves, (though I have written and said so much against  
 ‘them) as I found most of them were persons of zeal in religion, so  
 ‘many of them were sober, godly people: and differed from others but  
 ‘in the point of infant-baptism; or at most in the points of predesti-  
 ‘nation, and free-will and perseverance” It is to be regretted, on  
 the ground of the justice due to this people and even to Mr. *Baxter*,  
 that Mr. *Nal* should have overlooked, or omitted, this testimony, so  
 honorable to both. *Ed.*



were among them some learned, and a great many sober and devout christians, who disallowed of the imprudence of their country friends. The two most learned divines that espoused their cause were Mr. *Francis Cornwall*, M. A. of Emanuel college, and Mr. *John Tomes*, B. D. educated in the university of Oxford, a person of incomparable parts, well versed in the Greek and Hebrew languages, and a most excellent disputant. He wrote several letters to Mr. *Selden* against infant baptism, and published a Latin *exercitation* upon the same subject, containing several arguments, which he represented to the committee appointed by the assembly to put a stop to the progress of this opinion. The *exercitation* being translated into English, brought upon him a whole army of adversaries, among whom were the reverend Dr. *Hammond*, Dr. *Holmes*, Mr. *Marshal*, *Fuller*, *Geree*, *Baxter*, and others. The people of this persuasion were more exposed to the public resentments, because they would hold communion with none but such as had been *dipped*. All must pass under this cloud before they could be received into their churches ; and the same narrow spirit prevails too generally among them even at this day.

Besides the above-mentioned writers, the most eminent divines in the city of London, as Mr. *Vines*, *Calamy*, and others, preached vigorously against these doctrines, which they had a right to do ; though it was most unjustifiable to fight them at the same time with the sword of the civil magistrate,\* and shut them up in prison, as was the case of several in this and the following year, among whom are reckoned the reverend Mr. *Henry Denn*, formerly ordained by the bishop of St. David's, and possessed of the liv-

\* Nothing, it is justly observed by Mr. *Crosby*, is more evident, than that the most distinguished of the presbyterian divines preached and wrote against toleration ; and were strenuous advocates for the interference of the civil power to suppress what they deemed error. Mr. *Baxter* always freely avowed, that " he abhorred unlimited liberty, or 'toleration of all.'" Dr. *Lightfoot* informed the house of commons, in a sermon at St. Margaret's, Westminster, that though " he would not 'go about to determine whether conscience might be bound or not, yet 'certainly the devil in the conscience might be, yea, must be bound by 'the civil magistrate.'" Crosby's History of the English Baptists, vol. i. p. 176, 178. Robinson's History of Baptism, p. 151. Ed.

ing of Pyeton in Hertfordshire; Mr. *Coppe*, minister in Warwickshire, and sometime preacher to the garrison in Compton-House; Mr. *Hunsard Knollys*, who was several times before the committee for preaching *antinomianism* and *antipædobaptism*; and being forbid to preach in the public churches. he opened a separate meeting in Great St. Helen's, from whence he was quickly dislodged, and his followers dispersed. Mr. *Andrew Wyke*, in the county of Suffolk, was imprisoned on the same account; and Mr. *Oates*, in *Essex*, tried for his life at Chelmsford assizes for the murder of *Anne Martin*, because she died a few days after her immersion, of a cold that seized her at that time. *Lawrence Clarkson* was imprisoned by the committee of Suffolk, and having lain in gaol six months, signed a recantation and was released. The recantation,† as entered in the committee's books, was in these words:

“July 15, 1645.

“THIS day *Lawrence Clarkson*, formerly committed for an *anabaptist*, and for dipping, does now, before the committee, disclaim his errors. And whereas formerly he said he durst not leave his dipping, if he might gain all the committee's estates, now he says, that he by the holy scriptures is convinced, that his said opinions were erroneous, and that he will not, nor dares not practise it again, if he might gain all the committee's estates by doing it. And that he makes this recantation not for fear, or to gain his liberty, but merely out of a sense of his error, wherein he will endeavor to reform others.”

It must be granted, that the imprudent behavior of the *baptist lay* preachers, who declaimed against human literature, and hireling priests, crying down magistracy, and

† Every instance of a recantation, which ecclesiastical history furnishes, moves our pity, and excites our indignation; our pity of the weakness and timidity from which it flows; and our indignation at the spirit of intolerance, which can demand the sacrifice of principle and integrity. “Mr. Clarkson had not only been imprisoned six months, but all the intercession of his friends, though he had several, could not procure his release. The committee were unrelenting. Nay; though an order came down, either from a committee of parliament, or the chairman of it, to discharge him, yet they refused to obey it.” *Crosby's History of English Baptists*, vol. i. preface p. 16. *Ed.*

a regular ministry, and talking in the most exalted strains of a fifth monarchy, and king *Jesus*, prejudiced the minds of many sober people against them; but still the imprisoning men merely on account of religious principles, not inconsistent with the public peace, nor propagated in a riotous and tumultuous manner, is not to be justified on any pretence whatsoever; and it was the more inexcusable in this case, because Mr. *Baxter* admits,|| that the presbyterian zeal was in a great measure the occasion of it.

Before we leave the assembly for this year, it will be proper to take notice, that it was honored with the presence of *Charles Lewis*, elector *Palatine* of the Rhine, eldest son of *Frederick*, &c. king of Bohemia, who married king *James's* daughter, and lost his territories, by the fatal battle of Prague in 1619. The unhappy *Frederick* died in 1632. and left behind him six sons and five daughters, among whom were prince *Rupert*, prince *Maurice*, and the princess *Sophia*. The young elector and his mother often solicited the English court for assistance to recover their dominions, and were as often complimented with empty promises. All the parliaments of this reign mention with concern the calamitous condition of the queen of *Bohemia* and her children and offer to venture their lives and fortunes for the recovery of the *Palatinate*, but king *Charles I.* did not approve his sister's principles, who being a resolved protestant, had been heard to say (if we may believe *L'Estrange*) that rather than have her son bred up in idolatry at the *Emperor's* court, she had rather be his executioner. And Mr. *Eachard* adds,† that the birth of king *Charles II.* in the year 1630, gave no great joy to the puritans, because as one of them declared, *God had already provided for them in the family of the queen of Bohemia, who were bred up in the protestant religion, while it was uncertain what religion king Charles's children would follow, being to be brought up by a mother devoted to the church of Rome.* When the war broke out between the king and parliament, the elector's younger brothers, *Rupert* and *Maurice*, served the king in his army, but the elector himself being in Holland took the covenant, and by a letter to the parliament testified his approbation of the cause in which they

|| *Baxter's Life*, p. 103.

† *History*, p. 449.



were engaged. This summer he made a tour to England, and was welcomed by a committee of the two houses, who promised him their best advice and assistance; to whom the prince made the following reply:

“I Hold myself much obliged to the parliament for their favors, and my coming is to express in person what I have often done by letter, my sincere affections to them, and to take off such jealousies, as either the actions of some of my relations, or the ill effects of what my enemies might by my absence cast upon me. My wishes\* are constant for the good success of the great work you have undertaken, for a thorough reformation; and my desires are to be ruled and governed by your grave counsels.”||

The parliament ordered an apartment to be fitted up for the prince at Whitehall, and voted him eight thousand pounds† a year for his maintenance, and ten thousand for his royal mother, till he should be restored to his electorate.§ While he stayed here, he frequently attended the assembly in their debates, and after some time had a pass for himself and forty horse into the Low Countries. His sister princess *Sophia*, afterwards married the duke of *Brunswick and Hanover*, whose son, upon the decease of Queen *Anne*, succeeded to the crown of Great-Britain. by the name of *George I.*; the numerous posterity of King *Charles I.* being set aside as papists, and thus the descendants of the Queen of *Bohemia*, electress *Palatine*, and daughter of King *James I.* came to inherit the imperial crown of these kingdoms, as a reward for their firmness to the protestant religion:—and may the same illustrious family continue to be the *guardians* of our *liberties*, both sacred and civil, to the end of time!

Religion was the fashion of the age; the assembly was often turned into a house of prayer, and hardly a week

\* Bishop Warburton thinks it apparent, from many circumstances, that the elector had his eye on the crown: matters being gone too far for the king and parliament ever to agree. *Ed.*

|| Oldmixon's History of the Stuarts, p. 268.

† It was ordered October 1645, but Dr. Grey quotes an authority to prove that it was ill paid. Vol. ii. Appendix, No. 50. *Ed.*

§ Oldmixon's History of the Stuarts, p. 279.

passed without solemn fasting and humiliation, in several of the churches of London and Westminster; the laws against profaneness were carefully executed; and because the former ordinances for the observation of the Lord's day had proved ineffectual, it was ordained, April 6, that all persons should apply themselves to the exercise of piety and religion on the Lord's day, "that no wares, fruits, herbs, or goods of any sort, be exposed to sale, or cried about streets, upon penalty of forfeiting the goods. That no person without cause shall travel, or carry a burden, or do any worldly labor, upon penalty of ten shillings for the traveller, and five shillings for every burthen.† That no person shall, on the Lord's day, use, or be present at any wrestling, shooting, fowling, ringing of bells for pleasure, markets, wakes, church-ales, dancing, games or sports whatsoever, upon penalty of five shillings, to every one above fourteen years of age. And if children are found offending in the premises, their parents or guardians to forfeit twelve pence for every offence. That all May-poles be pulled down, and none others erected. That if the several fines above-mentioned cannot be levied, the offending party shall be set in the stocks for the space of three hours. That the king's declaration concerning lawful sports on the Lord's day be called in, suppressed, and burnt.

"This ordinance shall not extend to prohibit dressing meat in private families, or selling victuals in a moderate way in inns or victualling-houses, for the use of such who cannot otherwise be provided for; nor to the crying of milk before nine in the morning, or after four in the afternoon."\*

The *solemn league and covenant* was in such high repute at this time,|| that by an order of the house of commons, Jan. 29, 1644, it was appointed, "that on every fast-day, and day of public humiliation, the *covenant* should be publicly read in every church and congregation

† "And for every offence in doing any worldly labor or work." *Ed.*

\* Sobel's Collect. p. 68.

|| Dr. Grey gives various passages from the sermons of the day to prove in what extravagant estimation it was held, and to shew what high encomiums were passed on it. *Ed.*

‘ within the kingdom ; and that every congregation be enjoined to have one of the said *covenants* fairly printed, in ‘ a fair letter, in a table fitted to hang up in some public ‘ place of the church to be read.” Which was done accordingly, and they continued there till the restoration.\*

But that which occasioned the greatest disturbance over the whole nation, was an order of both houses relating to *Christmas-day*. Dr. *Lightfoot* says, the London ministers met together last year, to consult whether they should preach on that day ; and one of considerable name and authority opposed it, and was near prevailing with the rest, when the doctor convinced them so far of the lawfulness and expediency of it, that the question being put it was carried in the affirmative with only four or five dissenting voices. But this year it happening to fall on the *monthly fast*, so that either the *fast*, or the festival, must be omitted, the parliament, after some debate, thought it most agreeable to the present circumstances of the nation, to go on with fasting and prayer ; and therefore published the following order :

“ *Die Jovis 19 Dec. 1644.*

“ WHEREAS some doubts have been raised, whether the *next fast* shall be celebrated, because it falls on ‘ the day which heretofore was usually called the feast of ‘ the nativity of our Saviour ; the lords and commons in ‘ parliament assembled do order and ordain, that public ‘ notice be given, that the fast appointed to be kept the last ‘ *Wednesday* in every month ought to be observed, till it be ‘ otherwise ordered by both houses ; and that this day in ‘ particular is to be kept with the more solemn humiliation, ‘ because it may call to remembrance our sins, and the sins ‘ of our forefathers, who have turned this feast, pretending ‘ the memory of Christ, into an extreme forgetfulness of ‘ him, by giving liberty to carnal and sensual delights, being ‘ contrary to the life which Christ led here on earth, ‘ and to the spiritual life of Christ in our souls, for the ‘ sanctifying and saving whereof, Christ was pleased both ‘ to take a human life, and to lay it down again.”†

\* Lond. Min. Testimony to the Truth of Jesus Christ, p. 26.

† Rushworth, vol. v. p. 817.



The royalists raised loud clamors on account of the supposed impiety and profaneness of this transaction, as what had never before been heard of in the christian world, tho' they could not but know, that this, as well as other festivals, is of ecclesiastical appointment;† that there is no mention of the observation of *Christmas* in the first or second age of christianity; that the kirk of Scotland never observed it since the reformation, except during the short reign of the bishops, and do not regard it at this day. Some of the most learned divines among the presbyterians, as well as independents, were in this sentiment. Mr. *Edmund Calamy*, in his sermon before the house of lords on this day. has these expressions: "This day is commonly 'called *Christmas-day*, a day that has heretofore been much 'abused to superstition and profaneness. It is not easy 'to say, whether the superstition has been greater, or the 'profaneness. I have known some that have preferred ' *Christmas-day* before the Lord's-day. Some that would 'be sure to receive the sacrament on *Christmas-day*, though 'they did not receive all the year after. Some thought, 'though they did not play at cards all the year long, yet 'they must play at *Christmas*, thereby it seems, to keep 'in memory the birth of Christ! This, and much more, 'hath been the profanation of this feast; and truly, I think 'the superstition and profaneness of this day is so rooted 'into it, that there is no way to reform it, but by dealing 'with it as *H Ezekiah* did with the brazen serpent. This 'year God, by his providence, has buried this feast in a 'fast, and I hope it will never rise again. You have set 'out, right honorable, a strict order for keeping of it, and 'you are here this day to observe your own order, and I 'hope you will do it strictly. The necessities of the times 'are great, never more need of prayer and fasting. The 'Lord give us grace to be humbled in this day of humilia- 'tion, for all our own and England's sins, and especially 'for the old superstition and profaneness of this feast."

About Midsummer this year died doctor *Thomas Westfield* bishop of Bristol, born in the isle of Ely 1573, educat-

† Dr. Grey says, that the observation of Christmas was appointed by statute 5 & 6 Edward VI. c. 3. *Ed.*

ed in Jesus-College, Cambridge, and afterwards rector of Hornsey, and of St. Bartholomew the Great, London, and archdeacon of St. Alban's. In the year 1641, he was advanced to the see of Bristol, which he accepted, though he had refused it (as is said) twenty-five years before.\* He was a gentleman of great modesty, a good preacher, an excellent orator. The parliament had such an esteem for him, that they named him one of the assembly of divines, and he had the goodness to appear among them for some time. Upon the bishop's complaint, that the profits of his bishopric were detained, the committee ordered them to be restored, and gave him a pass to go to Bristol to receive them, wherein they stile him a person of great learning and merit. He died in possession of his bishopric, June 25. 1644, aged seventy-one, and composed his own epitaph, one line of which was,

*Senio & mœrore confectus.*

*Worn out with age and grief.*

And another;

*Episcoporum infimus, peccatorum primus.*

*The least of bishops, the greatest of sinners.*

Dr. Calibute Downing was born of an ancient family in Gloucestershire, about 1616; he was educated in Oriel-college, Oxford, and at length became vicar of Hackney near London, by the procurement of archbishop Laud; which is very strange, if (as Mr. Wood says) he always looked awry on the church. In his sermon before the Artillery company, Sept. 1, 1640, he maintained, that *for the defence of religion, and reformation of the church, it was lawful to take up arms against the king, if it could be obtained no other way.* For this he was forced to abscond till the beginning of the present parliament. He was afterwards chaplain in the earl of Essex's army, and a member of the assembly of divines; but died before he was forty years of age, having the character of a pious man, a warm preacher, and very zealous in the interest of his country.

\* Walker's Sufferings of the Clergy, p. 3.

## CHAP. V.

*Abstract of the Trial of Archbishop LAUD ; and, of the Treaty of Uxbridge.*

NEXT day after the establishment of the *directory*, Dr. *William Laud*, archbishop of Canterbury, received sentence of death. He had been a prisoner in the Tower almost three years, upon an impeachment of high treason by the house of commons, without once petitioning for a trial, or so much as putting in his answer to the articles ; however as soon as the parliament had united with the Scots, it was resolved to gratify that nation by bringing him to the bar ; accordingly serjeant *Wild* was sent up to the house of lords, October 23, with ten additional articles of high treason, and other crimes and misdemeanors ; and to pray, that his *grace* might be brought to a speedy trial. We have already recited the fourteen original articles under the year 1640. The additional ones were to the following purpose :

1. ‘ That the archbishop had endeavored to destroy the use of parliaments, and to introduce an arbitrary government.
2. ‘ That for ten years before the present parliament, he had endeavored to advance the council-table, the canons of the church, and the king’s prerogative above law.
3. ‘ That he had stopt writs of prohibition to stay proceedings in the ecclesiastical courts, when the same ought to have been granted.
4. ‘ That he had caused Sir *John Corbet* to be committed to the Fleet for six months, only for causing the *petition of right* to be read at the sessions.
5. ‘ That judgment having been given in the court of King’s-Bench against Mr. *Burley*, a clergyman of a bad character, for non-residence, he had caused the judgment



‘to be strayed, saying *he would never suffer judgment to pass upon any clergyman by nihil dicit.*

6. “That large sums of money having been contributed for buying in impropriations, the archbishop had caused the *feoffments* to be overthrown into his majesty’s Exchequer, and by that means suppressed the design.

7. “That he had harbored and relieved divers popish priests, contrary to law.

8. “That he had said at Westminster, there must be a blow given to the church, such as had not been given, before it could be brought to conformity, declaring thereby his intention to alter the true protestant religion established in it.

9. “That after the dissolution of the last parliament, he had caused a convocation to be held, in which sundry canons were made contrary to the rights and privileges of parliament, and an illegal oath imposed upon the clergy, with certain penalties, commonly known by the *et cætera* oath.

10. “That upon the abrupt dissolving of the short parliament 1640, he had told the king, *he was now absolved from all rules of government, and at liberty to make use of extraordinary methods for supply.*”§

I omit the charge of the Scots commissioners, because the archbishop pleaded the act of oblivion.

The lords ordered the archbishop to deliver in his answer in writing to the above-mentioned articles in three weeks, which he did, taking no notice of the original ones.\* The trial was put off from time to time, at the request of the prisoner, till Sept. 16, when the archbishop appearing at the bar, and having kneeled some time, was ordered to stand, and one of the managers for the commons moved the lords, that their articles of impeachment, with the archbishop’s answer, might be read; but when the clerk of the house had read the articles, there was no answer to the *original ones*. Upon which serjeant *Maynard* rose up and observed, “how unjust the archbishop’s complaints of

§ Prynne’s Complete History of the Trial of Archbishop Laud, p. 38.

\* Prynne, p. 45.

‘ his long imprisonment, and of the delay of his hearing, must be, when in all this time he had not put in his answer to their original articles, though he had long since *council* assigned him for that purpose. That it would be absurd in them to proceed on the additional articles, when there was no issue joined on the original ones ; he therefore prayed, that the archbishop might forthwith put in his answer to all their articles, and then they should be ready to confirm their charge whenever their lordships should appoint.”

The archbishop says, the *lords* looked hard one upon another, as if they would ask where the mistake was, he himself saying nothing, but that his answer had not been called for.\* His *grace* would have embarrassed them further, by desiring them to hear his council, whether the articles were certain and particular enough to receive an answer. He moved likewise, that if he must put in a *new* answer, his *former* might be taken off the file ; and that they would please to distinguish which articles were *treason*, and which *misdemeanor*. But the lords rejected all his motions, and ordered him to put in his peremptory answer to the original articles of the commons by the 22d instant, which he did accordingly, to this effect :

“ As to the 13th article, concerning the troubles in Scotland, and all actions, attempts, assistance, counsel, or device relating thereto, this defendant pleadeth the late act of oblivion, he being none of the persons excepted by the said act, nor are any of the offences charged upon this defendant excepted by the said act.

“ And as to all the other articles, both original and additional, this defendant saving to himself all advantages of exception to the said articles, humbly saith, that he is *not guilty* of all or any the matters, by the said articles charged in such manner and form as the same are by the said articles charged against him.”

The trial was deferred all the month of February, as the archbishop insinuates, because Mr. *Prynne* was not ready with his witnesses. When it came on, lord *Grey* of

\* Wharton's History of Archbishop Laud's Troubles, p. 214, 215.

Werk speaker of the house of lords, was appointed president; but the archbishop complains, that there were seldom more than sixteen or eighteen peers at a time. The managers for the commons were Mr. Serjeant *Wild*, and Mr. *Maynard*, Mr. *Brown*, Mr. *Nicolas*, and Mr. *Hill*, whom the archbishop calls *consul bibulus*, because he said nothing; their solicitor was Mr. *Prynne*, the archbishop's grand enemy. His grace's counsel were Mr. *Herne*, Mr. *Hales*, Mr. *Chute*, Mr. *Gerard*; and his solicitor was his own secretary, Mr. *Dell*. The trial was depending almost five months, in which time the archbishop was heard twenty days, with as much liberty and freedom of speech as could be reasonably desired. When he complained of the seizure of his papers, the lords ordered him a copy of all such as were necessary for his defence; and when he acquainted them, that by reason of the sequestration of his estate, he was incapable of seeing his counsel, they moved the committee of sequestrations in his favor, who ordered him two hundred pounds. His counsel had free access to him at all times, and stood by to advise him during the whole of his trial.

The method of proceeding was this; the archbishop had three or four days notice of the day of his appearance, and of the articles they designed to proceed on; he was brought to the bar about *ten* in the morning, and the managers were till *one* making good their charge; the house then adjourned till *four*, when the archbishop made his defence, after which one of the managers replied, and the archbishop returned to the Tower between *seven* and *eight* of the clock in the evening.

It is unhappy that this remarkable trial, which contains the chief heads of controversy between the puritans and the hierarchy, was not published by order of the house of peers, that the world might have seen the arguments on both sides in their full strength. Mr. *Prynne*, by order of the house of commons, has given us *their* evidence to that branch of the charge which relates to religion, and the archbishop has left behind him his own defence on every day's hearing, mixed with keen and satirical reflections on his adversaries; but these being detached performances, I have endeavored to reduce the most material pas-



sages into a proper method, without confining myself to the exact order of time in which the articles were debated.

All the articles may be reduced to these three general heads.

*First*, "That the archbishop had traiterously attempted, and endeavored to *subvert the rights of parliament, and to exalt the king's power above law.*

*Secondly*, "That he had traiterously endeavored to subvert the fundamental temporal laws and government of the realm of England, and to introduce an arbitrary government against law and the liberties of the subject.

*Thirdly*, "That he had traiterously endeavored, and practised, to alter and subvert God's true religion by law established in this realm, and instead thereof to set up popish superstition and idolatry, and to reconcile us to the church of Rome."

The trial began March 12, 1643-4 when Mr. Serjeant *Wild*, one of the managers of the house of commons, opened the impeachment with a smart speech, in which he stated and aggravated the several crimes charged upon the archbishop, and concluded with comparing him to *Naa-man* the Syrian, who was a great man, but a leper.

The archbishop, in his reply, endeavors to wipe off the aspersions that were cast upon him, in a labored speech which he held in his hand. He says, "It was no less than a torment to him to appear in that place, and plead for himself on that occasion, because he was not only a christian but a clergyman, and by God's grace advanced to the greatest place this church affords. He blessed God that he was neither ashamed to live, nor afraid to die; that he had been as strict an observer of the laws of his country, both in public and private, as any man whatsoever; and as for religion, that he had been a steady member of the church of England as established by law, which he had endeavored to reduce to decency, uniformity, and beauty, in the outward face of it; but he had been as far from attempting any alterations in favor of popery, as when his mother first bore him into the world; and let nothing be spoken but truth, (says he) and I do

‘here challenge whatsoever is between heaven and hell, that can be said against me in point of my religion, in which I have ever hated dissimulation.’\* He then concludes with a list of twenty-one persons whom he had converted from popery to the protestant religion.

It was observed by some, that if the passionate expressions in this speech had been a little qualified, that they would have obtained more credit with his *grace’s* judges;† but as they were pronounced, were thought hardly fit for the mouth of one who lay under the weight of so many accusations from the representative body of the nation.

The next day [March 13] the managers for the commons began to make good the first branch of their charge, to the following purpose, viz.

“That the archbishop had traiterously attempted to subvert the rights of parliament, and to exalt the king’s power above the laws.”

In support of which they produced, (1.) a passage out of his own Diary, Dec. 5, 1639. “*A resolution was voted at the board to assist the king in extraordinary ways, if (says he) the parliament should prove peevish and refuse.*”

The archbishop replied, that this was the vote of the whole *council-table*, of which he was only a single member, and therefore could not be called *his counsel*. Besides, the words had relation to the troubles of Scotland, and are therefore included in the act of oblivion.

2. “They produced another expression in one of the archbishop’s papers under his own hand, in the beginning of which he says, that *Magna Charta had an obscure birth, and was fostered by an ill nurse.*”||

The archbishop replied, that it was no disgrace to *Magna Charta* to say it had an *obscure birth*; our histories confirm the truth of it, and some of our law-books of good

\* Wharton’s History of Archbishop Laud’s Troubles, p. 223.

† Dr. Grey thinks that the severest expressions were justifiable in answer to so foul-mouthed an impeacher as serjeant Wild, and that there was nothing in the bishop’s speech unbecoming that great prelate to speak, or that assembly to hear. *Ed.*

|| Laud’s History, p. 229, 230, 231.

account use almost the same expressions; and shall the same words be history and law in them, and treason in me?§

3. They averred, “that he had said in council, that the *king’s proclamation was of as great force as an act of parliament*; and that he had compared the king to the stone spoken of in the gospel, *that whosoever falls upon it shall be broken, but upon whomsoever it falls it will grind him to powder.*”

The archbishop replied, that this was in the case of the *soap business*, twelve years ago; and thinks it impossible those words should be spoken by him; nor does he apprehend the gentlemen who press this evidence can believe it themselves, considering they are accusing him as a *cunning delinquent*. So God forgive these men the falsehood and malice of their oaths (says he!) but as to the allusion to the *stone* in the scripture, if I did apply it to the *king*, it was far enough from treason, and let them and their like take care, lest it prove true upon themselves, for *Solomon* says, *The anger of a king is death.*\*

4. In further maintenance of this part of their charge, the managers produced “two speeches which his *grace* framed for the king to be spoken to the parliament; and his majesty’s answer to the remonstrance of the house of commons in the year 1628, which was all written with the archbishop’s own hand, and these words endorsed by himself, *My answer to the parliament’s remonstrance*. In which papers were sundry passages tending to set up an absolute power in the king, and to make the calling of parliaments in a manner useless. The king is made to say, that *his power is only from God, and to him only he is accountable for his actions*; that never king was more jealous of his honor, or more sensible of the neglect and contempt of his royal rights. His majesty bids the commons remember, that parliaments are altogether in his power, for their calling, sitting, and dissolution; and that according as they behaved themselves they should continue, or not be. When some of the members of parliament had spoken freely against the duke of *Buckingham*, they were by the king’s command sent to the Tower; and

§ Laud’s History, p. 409.

\* Ibid. p. 234.



‘ his majesty coming to the house of peers. tells them, that  
 ‘ he had thought fit to punish some insolent speeches lately  
 ‘ spoken against the duke, for I am so sensible of all your  
 ‘ honors, (says he) that he that touches any of you, touch-  
 ‘ es me in a very great measure. Further, when the par-  
 ‘ liament was dissolved in the year 1628, a proclamation  
 ‘ was published, together with the above-mentioned remon-  
 ‘ strance, in which his majesty declares, that since his par-  
 ‘ liament was not so dutiful as they ought to be, he was  
 ‘ resolved to live without them, till those who had inter-  
 ‘ rupted his proceedings should receive condign punish-  
 ‘ ment, and his people come to a better temper ; and that  
 ‘ in the mean time, he would exact the duties that were  
 ‘ received by his father, which his now majesty neither  
 ‘ could nor would dispense with.”†

The archbishop replied, that he did indeed make the above-mentioned speeches, being commanded to the service, and followed his instructions as close as he could. As for the smart passages complained of, he hopes they will not be thought such, when it is considered whose mouth was to utter them, and upon what occasion. However, if they be, he is heartily sorry for them, and humbly desires they may be passed by. The answer to the remonstrance was drawn by his majesty’s command, as appears by the endorsement ; and the severe passages objected to, were in his instructions. When a parliament errs, may not their king tell them of it? Or must every passage in his answer be sour that pleases not?||

The managers proceeded to produce some other passages tending more immediately to subvert the rights of parliament, and among others, they insisted on these three :

1. “ That the archbishop had said at the *council-table*,  
 ‘ after the ending of the late parliament, that *now the king*  
 ‘ *might make use of his own power*. This was attested by  
 ‘ *sir Harry Vane* the elder, who was a privy-counsellor,  
 ‘ and then present.”

The archbishop replied, that he did not remember the words ; that if he did speak them they were not treasona-

† King’s Speeches, March 27, 29, May 11.

|| Laud’s Hist. p. 230, 403, 404, 406.

ble ; or if they were, he ought to have been tried within six months according to the statute 1 *Eliz. cap. 6.* That sir *Henry Vane* was only a single witness, whereas the law requires two witnesses for treason : besides, he conceived that this advice relating to the Scottish troubles was within the act of oblivion, which he had pleaded. But *last of all*, let it be remembered, says the archbishop, for sir *Harry's* honor, that he being a man in years, has so good a memory, that he alone can remember words spoken at a full council-table, which no person of honor remembers save himself ; but I would not have him brag of it, for I have read in *St. Austin*, that *some, even the worst of men, have great memories, and so much the worse for having them.* God bless sir *Henry* !\*

2. The archbishop had affirmed, “that the parliament ‘might not meddle with religion, without the assent of the ‘clergy in convocation. Now if this were so (say the managers) we should have had no reformation, for the bishops and clergy dissented.”

The archbishop in his reply cited the statute 1 *Eliz. cap. 1.* which says, that *what is heresy shall be determined by the parliament, with the assent of the clergy in convocation*, from whence he concluded, the parliament could not by law determine the truth of doctrine without the assent of the clergy ; and to this the managers agreed, as to the point of *heresy*, but no further. The archbishop added, that in his opinion, it was the prerogative of the church alone to determine *truth and falsehood*, though the power of making laws for the punishment of erroneous persons, was in the parliament with the assent of the clergy.¶ Indeed the king and parliament may, by their absolute power, change *christianity* into *turcism* if they please, and the subjects that cannot obey must fly, or endure the penalty of the law ; but of *right* they cannot do this without the church. Thus the parliament, in the beginning of Queen *Elizabeth's* reign, by absolute power abolished popish superstition ; but when the clergy were settled, and a form of doctrine was to be agreed on, a synod was called 1562, and the articles of religion were confirmed by parliament, with the assent of the clergy, which gave all parties their

\* Laud's History, p. 231.

¶ Ibid. p. 401.

just right, as is so evident, that the heathens could see the justice of it, for *Lucullus* says in *Tully*, that *the priests were judges of religion, and the senate of the law.*

3. "At a reference between *Dr. Gill*, school-master of 'St. Paul's, and the *Mercers'* company, the archbishop 'had said, that the company could not turn him out of the 'school, without consent of his ordinary; and that upon 'mention of an act of parliament, he replied, I see nothing 'will down with you but acts of parliament, no regard at 'all to the canons of the church; but I will rescind all 'acts that are against the canons, and I hope shortly to 'see the canons and the king's prerogative of equal force 'with an act of parliament."

The archbishop was so provoked with the oath of the witness who gave this in evidence, [*Mr. Samuel Blood*] that he was going to *bind his sin on his soul*, not to be forgiven him, *till he should ask him forgiveness*;† but he conquered his passion, and replied, that since by a canon\* no person is allowed to teach school without the bishop's licence, and that in case of offence he is liable to admonition and suspension, it stands good, that he may not be turned out without the said bishop's knowledge and approbation. As for the words, that *he saw nothing would down with them but an act of parliament, and that no regard was had to the canons*, he conceived them to be no offence; for though the superiority belongs to acts of parliament in this kingdom, yet certainly some regard is due to the canons; and therefore he says again, that *if nothing will down with men but acts of parliament, the government in many particulars cannot subsist.* As to the last words, of his rescinding those acts that were against the canons, he is morally certain he could not utter them; nor does he believe any man that knows him will believe him such a fool, as to say, he hoped to see the canons and the king's prerogative of equal force with an act of parliament, since he has lived to see sundry canons rejected, and the king's prerogative discussed by law, neither of which can be done by any judges to an act of parliament. However, if such words should have escaped him, he observes there is only one witness to the charge; and if they be within

† *Laud's History*, p. 236. 237.

\* *Can.* 77, 79.



the danger of the statute, then to that statute which requires his trial within six months, he refers himself.

The managers went on to the *second charge* against the archbishop, which was his design to *subvert the fundamental temporal laws of the kingdom, and to introduce an arbitrary government against law and the liberty of the subject*. In maintenance whereof they alledged “his illegal pressures of *tonnage and poundage* without act of parliament, *ship-money, coat and conduct money, soap-money, &c.* and his commitment of divers persons to prison for non-payment; for a proof of which there appeared, among others, three aldermen, viz. aldermen *Atkins, Chambers, and Adams.*”

The archbishop confessed, that as to the business of *ship-money*, he was zealous in that affair, yet not with an intent to violate the law, for though this was before judgment given for the king, it was after the judges had declared the legality of it under their hands, and he thought he might safely follow such guides. He was likewise of opinion, that *tonnage and poundage, coat and conduct-money* were lawful on the king’s part; that he was led into this opinion by the express judgment of some lords present, and by the silence of others; none of the great lawyers at the table contradicting it; however, that it was the common act of the *council-table*, and therefore all were as culpable as himself; and he was sure this could not amount to treason, except it were against the three aldermen, *Atkins, Chambers, and Adams.*†

They objected further, “sundry depopulations, and pulling down houses; that for the repair of St. Paul’s above sixty dwelling-houses had been pulled down, by order of council, without any satisfaction to the tenants, because they did not accept of the committee’s composition.—That he had obliged a brewer near the court not to burn sea-coal, under penalty of having his brewhouse pulled down; and that by a like order of council many shopkeepers were forcibly turned out of their houses in Cheapside, to make way for *goldsmiths*, who were forbid to open shop in any other places of the city. When a

† Laud’s History, p. 232, 233, 234.

‘commission was issued under the broad seal to himself, to compound with delinquents of this kind, Mr. *Talboys* was fined fifty pounds for non-compliance; and when he pleaded the statute of the 39th of *Elizabeth*, the archbishop replied, *Do you plead law here? either abide the order, or take your trial at the star-chamber.* When Mr. *Wakern* had one hundred pounds allowed him for the pulling down his house, he was soon after fined one hundred pounds in the *high commission court*, for *profanation*; of which he paid thirty.”

This the archbishop admitted, and replied to the rest, that he humbly and heartily thanked God, that he was counted worthy to suffer for the repair of St. Paul’s, which had cost him out of his own purse above twelve hundred pounds. As to the grievances complained of, there was a *composition* allotted for the *sufferers*, by a committee named by the lords, not by him, which amounted to eight or nine thousand pounds, before they could come at the church to repair it; so that if any thing was amiss, it must be imputed to the lords of the council, who are one body, and whatsoever is done by the major part is the act of the whole; that, however, here was some recompence made them, whereas in King *James’s* time, when a commission was issued for demolishing these very houses, no care was taken for satisfaction of any private man’s interest; and I cannot forbear to add (says the archbishop,) that the bishop, and dean and chapter, did ill in giving way to these build-ings, to increase their rents by a sacrilegious revenue; there being no law to build on consecrated ground. When it was replied to this, “that the king’s commission was no legal warrant for pulling down houses, without authority of parliament,” he answered, that houses more remote from the church of St. Paul’s had been pulled down by the king’s commission only in King *Edward* the third’s time. As to the *brew-house*, the archbishop owned that he had said to the proprietor, that he must seal a bond of two thousand pounds to brew no more with sea-coal; but it was at the council-table, when he was delivering the sense of the board, which office was usually put upon him if



present; so that this or any other hardship he might suffer ought not to be imputed to him, but to the whole council; and he was very sure it could not amount to treason, except it were treason against a *brew-house*. The like answer he made to the charge about the *goldsmiths shops*, namely, that it was the order of council, and was thought to be for the beauty and grandeur of the city, and he did apprehend the council had a right to command in things of *decency, and for the safety of the subject, and where there was no law to the contrary*. As to the words which he spoke to Mr. *Talboys*, they were not designed to derogate from the law, but to shew, that we sat not there as judges of the law, but to offer his majesty's *grace*, by way of composition to them who would accept it, and therefore he had his option, whether he would agree to the fine we imposed upon him, or take his trial elsewhere. The commons replied with great reason, that no commission from the king could justify the pulling down men's houses, or oblige them to part with their estates without act of parliament.

The managers objected further to the archbishop, "several illegal commitments, and exorbitant fines and censures in the star-chamber, and high commission court, as in the cases of *Prynne, Burton, Bastwick, Huntley*, and others; and that when the persons aggrieved brought *prohibitions*, he threatened to lay them by the heels, saying, *Does the king grant us power, and are we then prohibited? Let us go and complain, I will break the back of prohibitions, or they shall break mine*. Accordingly several persons were actually imprisoned for delivering *prohibitions*, as was testified by many witnesses; nay, Mr. *Wheeler* swore, he heard the archbishop in a sermon say, that *they which granted prohibitions to the disturbance of the church's right, God will prohibit their entrance into the kingdom of heaven*."

The archbishop replied, that the fines, imprisonments, and other censures complained of, were the acts of the several courts that directed them, and not his. That the reason why several persons were imprisoned for *prohibitions*, was because they delivered them in court in an unmannerly way, throwing them on the table, or handing



them over the heads of others on a stick, to the affront of the court; notwithstanding which, as many *prohibitions* had been admitted in his time as in his predecessors; and after all, he apprehended these *prohibitions* were a very great grievance to the church; nor was there the same reason for them now, as before the reformation, while the bishops' courts were kept under a foreign power, whereas now all power exercised in *spiritual courts*, as well as in *temporal*, is for the king. As to the words in his sermon, though he did not remember them, yet he saw no great harm in them. And here the archbishop put the lords in mind, that nothing had been done of late in the star-chamber, or council-table, more than had been done in king *James* and queen *Elizabeth's* times. Nor is there any one witness that says, what he did was with a design to overthrow the laws, or introduce arbitrary government; no, that is only the construction of the managers, *for which, and something else in their proceedings, I am confident, says he, they shall answer at another bar.*||

The managers objected further, "the archbishop's taking undue gifts, and among others, his receiving two *buts of sack*, in a cause of some Chester men, whom it was in his power to relieve, by mitigating the fine set on them in the high commission, and taking several large sums of money by way of composition for fines in the high-commission court, making use of the method of *commutation*, by virtue of a patent obtained from the king, which took away all opportunity from his majesty of doing justice, and shewing mercy to his poor subjects, and invested the archbishop with the final determination."

His grace heard this part of his charge with great resentment and impatience. If I would have had any thing to do in the base, dirty business of bribery, (says he) I needed not be in such want as I am now. As to the *sack*,\* he protested, as he should answer it to God, that he knew nothing of it, and offered to confirm it by his oath, if it

|| Laud's History, p. 270, 271, 273, 274.

\* Dr. Grey charges Mr. Neal with not giving the whole truth here, and with being cautious not to produce too many things in favor of the archbishop. The Editor, not having "Laud's History," cannot ascertain the truth or candor of this charge. Ed.

might be admitted. He declared, that when his steward told him of Mr. *Stone's* design, he absolutely forbade his receiving it, or any thing from any man who had business before him; but Mr. *Stone*, watching a time when his steward was out of town, and the archbishop at court, brought the *sack*, telling the yeoman of the wine-cellar that he had leave to lay it in. Afterwards, when his steward acquainted him that the *sack* was brought in he commanded it should be carried back; but Mr. *Stone* intreated that he might not be so disgraced, and protested he did not do it on the account of the *Chester business*, though after this he went home and put it on their account; for which they complained to the house of commons, and produced Mr. *Stone* for their witness. The archbishop observes, that Mr. *Browne*, in summing up his charge, did him justice in this particular, for neither to the lords nor commons did he so much as mention it.

As to the other sums of money which he received by was of *composition* or otherwise, for fines in the high commission, he said, that he had the *broad seal* from the king, for applying them to the repairing the west end of St. Paul's, for the space of ten years, which *broad seal* was then in the hands of Mr. *Holford*, and was on record to be seen. And all fines in the high commission belonging to the crown, his majesty had a right to give them to what use he pleased; that as for himself, he thought it his duty to get as much money for so good a work as he could, even by way of *commutation* for certain crimes; which method of pecuniary commutations was according to law, and the ancient custom and practice of this kingdom, especially where men of quality were offenders, and he had applied no part of them to his own benefit or advantage.

It was next objected, "that he had made divers alterations in the *king's* coronation oath, and introduced several unwarrantable innovations with relation to that august ceremony; as particularly, that he had inserted those words into the oath, *agreeable to the king's prerogative*, with about twenty other alterations of less moment, which they apprehended to be a matter of most dangerous consequence. That he had revived certain old popish ceremonies, disused since the reformation, as the placing a



‘crucifix on the altar, the consecrating the holy oil, the anointing the king in form of a cross, the offering up the regalia on the altar, without any rubric or direction for these things, and inserting the following charge taken verbatim out of the Roman pontifical: “Stand, and hold fast, from henceforth, the place to which you have been heir by the succession of your forefathers, being now delivered to you by the authority of Almighty God, and by the hands of us, and all the bishops and servants of God; and as you see the clergy come nearer the altar than others, so remember, that in place convenient you give them greater honor, that the mediator of God and man may establish you in the kingly throne, to be the mediator between the clergy and the laity, and that you may reign for ever with Jesus Christ, the King of kings, and Lord of lords, who with the Father, and the Holy Ghost, liveth and reigneth for ever. Amen.”

The archbishop replied, that he did not insert the words above-mentioned into the coronation oath, they being first added in King *Edward VI.* or Queen *Elizabeth’s* time, and had no relation to the laws of the kingdom, mentioned before in the beginning of the oath, but to the profession of the gospel, whereby the king swears to maintain his prerogative against all foreign jurisdictions: and if this be not the meaning, yet he avers, that the clause was in the coronation oath of King *James*. As to the other alterations they were admitted not to be material; but his grace confesses, that when they met in the committee, they were forced to mend many slips of the pen in some places, and to make sense and good English in others, and the book being intrusted with him he did it with his own hand, openly in the committee and with their approbation. As to the ceremonies of the coronation, they are nothing to him, since his predecessor crowned and anointed the king, indeed he supplied the place of the dean of *Westminster*, and was obliged to look after the regalia, and conceives the offering them at the altar could be no offence. He does not remember the crucifix was brought out, [though *Heylin* says it was] and as to the prayer, it was not taken from the pontifical by him, for it was used at King *James’* coronation, and being a good one it is no matter whence it was taken.



To all which the managers replied, that it appeared by his own Diary, that he had the chief direction of all these innovations.||

The managers went on, and charged the archbishop “with endeavoring to set up an independent power in the church, by attempting *to exempt the clergy from the jurisdiction of the civil magistrate*; of which they produced several examples; one was, the archbishop’s forbidding the lord-mayor of the city of London to carry the sword upright in the church, and then obtaining an order of council for submitting it in time and place of divine service. Another was taken out of the archbishop’s Diary; upon making the bishop of London, lord treasurer, he says, *No churchman had it since Henry VII. and now, if the church will not hold up themselves, under God, I can do no more.* A third was, his saying in the high commission, that *no constable should meddle with men in holy orders.* A fourth was, his calling some justices of peace into the high-commission, for holding the sessions at *Tewksbury* in the church yard, being *consecrated ground*, though they had licence from the bishop, and though the eighty-eighth canon of the church of England gives leave, that temporal courts or leets may be kept in the church or church-yard. And a fifth was, that he had caused certain churchwardens to be prosecuted, for executing the warrant of a justice of peace upon an ale-house-keeper.†

The archbishop replied in general, that he never attempted to bring the temporal power under the clergy, nor to free the clergy from being under it; but this he confessed, that he had labored to preserve the clergy from some laymen’s oppressions, for *vis laica* has been an old and a just complaint; and this I took to be my duty, (says he) assuring myself that God did not raise me to that place of eminence to sit still, and see his ministers discountenanced and trampled upon. To the first particular he replied, that it was an order of council, and therefore not his; but it was a reasonable one, for the sword was not submitted to any foreign or home power, but to God only, and that in the place and at the performance of his holy worship, at which time and place kings submit themselves, and there-

fore cannot insist upon the emblems of their power. To the second and third examples he replied, that he saw no treason or crime in them. To the fourth he replied, that no temporal courts ought to be kept upon *consecrated ground*; and that though some such might upon urgent occasions be kept in the church with leave, yet that is no warrant for a sessions, where there might be a trial for blood; and certainly it can be no crime to keep off profanation from churches; but be it never so criminal, it was the act of the high commission, and not his; nor is there any thing in it that looks towards *treason*. To the prosecuting the churchwardens he answered, that those statutes concerned *ale-house-keepers* only, and the reason why they were prosecuted was, because being church-officers they did not complain of it to the chancellor of the diocese; for certainly standing in such a relation to the church, they ought to have been as ready to inform the bishop as to obey the justice of the peace.\*

*Lastly*, The managers objected to the archbishop, "the 'convocation's sitting after the parliament was dissolved, 'contrary to law; their imposing an oath on the subject, 'and their making sundry canons, which had since been 'voted by both houses of parliament contrary to the king's 'prerogative, to the fundamental laws of the realm, to the 'rights of parliament, to the property and liberty of the 'subject, and containing matters tending to sedition, and 'of dangerous consequence."

The archbishop replied, that the sitting of the convocation after the dissolution of the parliament was, in the opinion both of judges and other lawyers, according to law; that as they were called to sit in convocation by a different writ from that which called them as bishops to sit in parliament, so they could not rise till they had a writ to discharge them. As for the *oath* so much complained of, it was according to law, or else they were misled by such precedents as were never excepted against; for in the canons made in king *James's* time, there was an oath against *simony*, and an oath for licences for marriages, and an oath for judges in ecclesiastical courts, and all these established by no other authority than the late one. As

\* Laud's History, p. 287, 292.

to the vote of both houses, which condemned the *canons*, since their lordships would not suffer him to debate the justice and equity of it, he could only reply, that all these canons were made in open and full convocations, and are acts of that body, and cannot be ascribed to him, though president of that synod, so by me (says the archbishop) they were not made.\*

These were the principal evidences produced by the commons, in maintenance of the first branch of their charge, viz. his *grace's* endeavors to subvert the rights of parliament, and the *fundamental temporal* laws of the kingdom. From whence it is easy to observe, that besides the sharpness of the archbishop's temper, there are three capital mistakes which run through this part of his defence.

1. A groundless supposition, that *where the law is silent the prerogative takes place*; and that in all such cases, a proclamation, or order of council, or a decree of the star-chamber, &c. is binding upon the subject; and that disobedience to such proclamations or orders might be punished at discretion. This gave rise to most of the unwarrantable *orders* by which the subject was insufferably oppressed in the former part of this reign, and to the exorbitant fines that were levied for disobedience, in which the archbishop himself was notoriously active.

2. *The false conclusions drawn from his being but a single member of the council or high commission*, viz. that therefore he was not answerable for their votes or orders, even though he had set his hand to them; because *what is carried by a majority is supposed to be the act of the whole body, and not of any particular member.*|| According to which way of reasoning, the constitution might be destroyed, without a possibility of punishing the authors.

3. *His wilful misconstruction of the manager's reasonings*; as when he replies with an air of satisfaction and triumph, he hopes this or the other particular will not be construed treason, unless it be against a *brew-house* or an *alderman*, or the like; though he was told over and over, by the managers for the commons, that they did not object these things to him as so many treasonable acts, but as

\* Laud's History, p. 282.

|| Ibid. p. 487.



proofs and evidences of one general charge, which was, a *traiterous attempt and endeavor to subvert the fundamental temporal laws, government, and liberties of the realm*; and how far they have made good this part of the charge must be left with the reader.

The commons proceeded next to the 3d general charge, relating to religion, in which our history requires us to be more particular; and here they aver, “That the archbishop had traiterously endeavored and practised *to alter and subvert God’s true religion by law established in this realm, and instead thereof to set up popish superstition and idolatry, and to reconcile us to the church of Rome.*”

This was divided into two branches :

1st. “His introducing and practising certain popish innovations, and superstitious ceremonies, not warranted by law, nor agreeable to the practice of the church of England since the reformation.

2dly. “His countenancing and encouraging sundry doctrinal errors in favor of *arminianism and popery.*”

The managers began with *popish innovations and ceremonies*, in maintenance of which they insisted on the following proofs :

(1.) “*His countenancing the setting up of images in churches, church-windows, and other places of religious worship.* That in his own chapel at Lambeth he had repaired the popish paintings on the windows, that had been destroyed at the reformation, and made up the history of Christ crucified between two thieves; of his rising out of the grave; of his ascension into heaven; of the Holy Ghost descending in form of a dove; of Christ raising *Lazarus* out of the grave; and of God himself raining down manna from heaven; of God’s giving the law of *Moses* on mount Sinai; of fire descending from heaven at the prayer of *Elisha*; of the Holy Ghost overshadowing the virgin, &c. all taken from the Roman missal, with several superstitious mottoes and inscriptions. That he had caused divers crucifixes to be set up in churches over the communion table, in his chapel at Lambeth, at Whitehall, and at the university at Oxford, of which he was chancellor. That in the parish of St. Mary’s there was since his time erected a statue of the *Virgin Mary* cut in

‘stone, with a child in her arms, to which divers people  
 ‘bowed and did reverence as they went along the streets ;  
 ‘which could not be done without his allowance ; nay, so  
 ‘zealous was this prelate (say the managers) in defence of  
 ‘images, that he procured Mr. *Sherfield* to be sentenced  
 ‘in the star-chamber, for defacing a church window in or  
 ‘near Salisbury, because there was an image in it of God  
 ‘the Father ; all which is contrary to the statute of the 3d  
 ‘and 4th of *Edward VI.* and the injunctions of Queen *E-*  
 ‘*lizabeth*, which enjoin all pictures, paintings, images,  
 ‘and other monuments of idolatry and superstition to be de-  
 ‘stroyed, so as that there remain no memory of them in  
 ‘walls, glass windows, or elsewhere, within any church  
 ‘or house.”\*

The archbishop answered in general, that crucifixes and images in churches were not simply unlawful ; that they were in use in *Constantine’s* time, and long before, and therefore there could be no popery in them. *Tertullian* says, they had the picture of Christ engraven on their chalice in form of a shepherd carrying home a lost sheep ; and even Mr. *Calvin* allows an historical use of images, *Instit.* l. 1, cap. 11, sect. 12. *Næque tamen ea superstitione ten-eor ut nullas prorsus imagines ferendas censeam, sed quia sculptura & pictura, Dei dona sunt, purum & legitimum utriusque usum requiro.* The archbishop appealed likewise to the homilies, p. 64, 65, for an historical use of images ; but if it should be granted (says he) that they are condemned by the homilies, yet certainly one may subscribe to the homilies as containing a godly and wholesome doctrine, necessary for those times, without approving every passage or sentence, or supposing it necessary for all times. I do not approve of images of God the father, though some will justify them from *Dan.* vii. 22, but as for the images of things visible, they are of use, not only for the beautifying and adorning the places of divine worship, but for admonition and instruction ; and can be an offence to none but such as would have God served slovenly and meanly under a pretence of avoiding superstition.†

As to the particulars, the archbishop allowed his repair-

\* *Prynne’s Cant. Doom*, p. 157, 462, &c.

† *Laud’s Hist.* p. 311. *Prynne*, p. 463, 463, 479.

ing the windows of his chapel at Lambeth, and making out the history as well as he could, but not from the Roman missal, since he did not know the particulars were in it, but from the fragments of what remained in the windows since the reformation; but if they had been originally painted by his order, as in the case of the new chapel at Westminster, he knows no crime in it.† The image of the virgin *Mary* in Oxford was set up by bishop *Owen*, and there is no evidence that I countenanced the setting it up, nor that any complaint was made to me of any abuse of it.\* As to Mr. *Sherfield's* case, one of the witnesses says, it was the picture of an old man with a budget by his side pulling out *Adam* and *Eve*, it is not therefore certain that it was the image of God the father; but if it was, yet Mr. *Sherfield* ought not to have defaced it but by command of authority, though it had been an idol of *Jupiter*; the orders of the vestry, which Mr. *Sherfield* pleads, being nothing at all without the bishop of the diocese.§ The statute of *Edward VI.* has nothing to do with images in glass-windows, the words of the statute are, *any images of stone, timber, alabaster, or earth, graven, carved, or painted, taken out of any church, &c. shall be destroyed.* So here is not a word of glass-windows, nor images in them.

The managers for the commons replied, that it was notoriously false, that the primitive christians approved of images, for *Justin Martyr*, *Clemens Alexandrinus*, *Irenæus*, and all the ancient fathers, agree that they had none in their churches.‡ *Lactantius* says, there can be no religion in a place where any image is. *Epiphanius* rent in pieces an image painted on cloth, which he found in a church, out of holy indignation. All the ancient councils are against images in churches; and many godly emperors cast them out, after they began to be in use in latter times, as our own homilies expressly declare, *Peril of idolatry*, part ii. p. 38. As for *Tertullian*, all that can be proved from him is, that those heretics against whom he wrote had such a *chalice*, not that the orthodox christians allowed of it. *Calvin* only says, that he is not so superstitious as to think it altogether unlawful to make ima-

† Prynne, p. 462.

\* Laud's History, p. 329.

§ Ibid. p. 434.

‡ Prynne, p. 463, 464, 465.



ges of men or beasts for civil use, because painting is the gift of God. But he affirms, in the very next section, that there were no images in *churches* for five hundred years after Christ; and says expressly, that they were not in use till the christian religion was corrupted and depraved. He then adds, that he accounts it unlawful and wicked to paint the image of God, because he has forbidden it. But the homilies are so express that they wonder the archbishop can mention them without blushing; as well as his not knowing that the paintings were according to the mass-book, when his own mass-book is marked in those places with his own hand. § The images in those windows were broken and demolished at the reformation, by virtue of our statutes, homilies, and injunctions, and remained as monuments of our indignation against Romish idolatry, till the archbishop repaired them. The managers observed further, that the archbishop had confessed the particulars of this part of their charge, and had only excused himself as to the university of Oxford though they conceive it impossible he could be ignorant of those innovations, being chancellor and visitor, and having entertained the king, queen, and elector *Palatine*, there, for several days. As for Mr. *Sherfield's* case, they apprehend the authority of the vestry was sufficient in a place exempt from the jurisdiction of the bishop, as St. Edmund's church was. And the managers are still of opinion, that the statute of *Edward VI.* extends to images in glass-windows; and that which confirms them in it is, that the injunctions of queen *Elizabeth*, made in pursuance of this law, extend in direct terms to images in glass-windows; and the practice of those times in defacing them, infallibly proves it.

(2.) Another popish innovation charged on the archbishop was, “*his superstitious manner of consecrating chapels, churches, and church-yards; they instanced in Creed-church, of which the reader has had an account before; and St. Giles's in the fields, which, being fallen to decay, was in part re-edified and finished in bishop Mountaine's time, divine service, and administration of sacraments having been performed in it three or four years before his death; but no sooner was the archbishop translated to the*

‘see of London, than he interdicted the church, and shut up the doors for several weeks, till he had re-consecrated it, after the manner of Creed-church, to the very great cost and charge of the parish, and contrary to the judgment of bishop *Parker*, and our first reformers.”§

“They objected further, his *consecrating of altars* with all their furniture, as *pattens, chalices, altar-cloths, &c.* even to the knife that was to cut the sacramental bread; and his *dedicating the churches* to certain saints, together with his promoting annual revels, or feasts of dedication, on the *Lord’s-day*, in several parts of the country, whereby that *holy-day* was profaned, and the people encouraged in superstition and ignorance.”

The archbishop answered to the *consecration of churches*, that the practice was as ancient as *Moses*, who consecrated the tabernacle, with all its vessels and ornaments; that the temple was afterwards consecrated by king *Solomon*; that as soon as christian churches began to be built, in the reign of *Constantine* the great, they were consecrated, as *Eusebins* testifies concerning the church of Tyre, in his *Ecclesiastical History*, l. 10, cap. 3, and so it has continued down to the present time. Besides, if churches were not consecrated, they would not be *holy*; nor does archbishop *Parker* speak against consecrations in general, but against popish consecrations, which mine were not (says the archbishop) for I had them from bishop *Andrews*.†

As to the manner of *consecrating* Creed-church, St. Giles’s, &c. his grace confessed, that when he came to the church door, that passage in the psalms was read, *Lift up your heads, O ye gates, even lift them up, ye everlasting doors, that the King of glory may come in*; ‡ that he knelt and bowed at his entrance into the church, as *Moses* and *Aaron* did at the door of the tabernacle; that he declared the place *holy*, and made use of a prayer like one in the Roman pontifical; that afterwards he pronounced divers curses on such as should profane it, but denied his

§ Prynne. p. 113, 114, 497.

† Land’s History. p. 339, 340. Prynne. p. 115.

‡ The archbishop alledged, that this place of scripture had been anciently used in consecrations; and that it referred not to the *bishop*, but to the true King of glory. Dr. Grey. *Ed.*

throwing dust into the air, in which he said, the witnesses had forsworn themselves, for the Roman pontifical does not prescribe throwing *dust* into the air, but *ashes*; and he conceives there is no harm, much less treason in it.† The practice of giving the names of *angels* and *saints* to churches at their dedication, for distinction sake, and for the honor of their memories, (says his *grace*) has been very ancient, as appears in St. *Austin*, and divers others of the fathers; but the *dedication*, strictly speaking, is only to God; nor is the observing the annual feasts of dedication less ancient; the feast of the dedication of the Temple was observed in our Savior's time, and though, no doubt, it was abused by some among the Jews, yet our Savior honored it with his presence. Judge *Richardson*, indeed, had made an order in his circuit, for putting down these *wakes*, but he was obliged to revoke it by authority, and under favor (says the archbishop) I am of opinion that the *feasts* ought not to be put down for some abuses, any more than all vines ought to be rooted up because some will be drunk with the juice of them.\* The *feasts* are convenient for keeping up hospitality and good neighborhood; nor can there be a more proper time for observing them than on *Sundays*, after divine service is ended.

And as the consecrating of churches, and dedicating them to God, has been of ancient usage, so has the consecration of altars and their furniture, and such consecrations are necessary, for else the Lord's table could not be called *holy*, nor the vessels belonging to it *holy*, as they usually are; yea, there is an holiness in the altar which sanctifies the gift, which it could not do, except itself were holy; if there be no dedication of these things to God, no separation of them from common use, then there can be no such thing as sacrilege, or difference between an *holy table* and a common one.† And as to the form of consecrating these things, I had them not from the Roman pontifical, but from bishop *Andrews*.

The managers for the commons replied, that if the temple was consecrated, it was by the *king himself*, and not by the *high-priest*; and if the *tabernacle* was consecrated, it was by *Moses* the civil magistrate, and not by *Aaron* the

† Prynne, p. 498.

\* Laud's Hist. p. 269.

† Ibid. p. 313.



*high-priest* ; but we read of no other consecrating the tabernacle and its utensils, but anointing them with oil, for which *Moses* had an express command ; nor of any other consecrating the temple, but of *Solomon's* making an excellent prayer in the *outward court*, not in the *temple itself*, and of his hallowing the middle court by offerings and peace-offerings ; and it is observable that the *cloud* and *glory* of the Lord filled the temple, so as the priests could not stand to minister before *Solomon* made his prayer, which some call his *consecration*. But if it should be allowed that the temple was consecrated in an extraordinary manner, we have no mention either in scripture or Jewish writers of the consecration of their *synagogues*, to which our churches properly succeed.\* And after all, it is no conclusive way of arguing, to derive a christian institution from the practice of the Jewish church, because many of their ordinances were temporary, ceremonial, and abolished by the coming of Christ.

From the beginning of christianity, we have no credible authority for consecrating churches for three hundred years.|| *Eusebius*, in his life of *Constantine the great*, indeed mentions his consecrating a temple that he built over our Savior's sepulchre at Jerusalem ; but how ? with prayers, disputations, preaching, and exposition of scripture, as he expressly defines it, *cap. 45*. Here were no processions, no knocking at the doors by the bishop, crying, *Open, ye everlasting doors* ; no casting dust or ashes into the air, and pronouncing the ground *holy* ; no reverencing towards the altar, nor a great many other inventions of latter ages ; no, these were not known in the christian church till the very darkest times of popery ; nay, in those very dark times, we are told by *Otho* the pope's legate, in his Ecclesiastical Constitutions, that in the reign of King *Henry III.* there were not only divers parish churches but some cathedrals in England, which had been used for many years, and yet never consecrated by a bishop. But it is plain to a demonstration, that the archbishop's method of consecrating churches is a modern popish invention ; for it is agreed by *Gratian*, *Platina*, the Centuriators, and others, that pope *Hyginus*, *Gelasius*, *Silvester*, *Felix*, and

\* Prynne, p. 415, 499, &c.    || Ibid. p. 501.

*Gregory*, were the first inventors and promoters of it; and it is no where to be found but in the Roman pontifical, published by command of pope *Element VIII. de Ecclesiæ Dedicatione*, p. 209, 280, for which reasons it was exploded and condemned by our first reformers, and particularly by bishop *Pilkington* in his comment upon *Haggai*, ch. i. ver. 7, 8, and archbishop *Parker*, who in his *Antiq. Britan.* expressly condemns the archbishop's method of consecration as popish and superstitious, p. 85, 86, 87.†

But the archbishop says, if churches are not consecrated they cannot be *holy*, whereas many places that were never consecrated are stiled *holy*, as the *most holy place*, and the *holy city Jerusalem*; and our homilies say, that the church is called *holy*, not of itself, but because God's people resorting thither are *holy*, and exercise themselves in holy things; and it is evident that *sanctification* when applied to places, is nothing else but a separating them from common use to a religious and sacred one, which may be done without the superstitious method above-mentioned; and though the archbishop avers he had not his form of consecration from the Roman pontifical, he acknowledges he had it from bishop *Andrews*, who could have it no where else.‡

As for consecrating *altars, pattens, chalices, altar-cloths*, and other altar-furniture; their original is no higher than the Romap missal and pontifical, in both which there are particular chapters and set forms of prayer for this purpose; but to imagine that these vessels may not be reputed *holy*, though separated to an *holy use*, unless thus consecrated, is without any foundation in reason or scripture, and contrary to the practice of the church of England, and the opinion of our first reformers.\*

To the archbishop's account of *feasts of dedication* we answer as before, that an example out of the Jewish law is no rule for the christian church. *Ezra* kept a feast at the dedication of the temple, when it was rebuilt, and offered a great many burnt-offerings, *Ezra* vi. 16, 17, but it was not made an annual solemnity; for the *feast of dedication* mentioned *John* x. 22, was not of the dedication of the temple, but of the *altars*, instituted by *Judas Maccabæus*, to be kept annually by the space of eight days, 1 *Mac.* iv.

† Prynne, p. 115—117. § Ibid. p. 502. \* Ibid. p. 65, &c. 467, 470.



56, 59, which being of no divine institution, but kept only by the superstitious Jews, not by Christ or his apostles, (who are only said to be at Jerusalem at that time) can be no precedent for our modern consecrations.||

Pope *Felix* and *Gregory* are the first that decreed the annual observation of the *dedication of churches* since our Savior's time, which were observed in England under the names of *wakes* or *revels*, but were the occasion of so much idleness and debauchery, that King *Henry VIII.* ann. 1536, restrained them all to the first *Sunday* in October, not to be kept on any other day; and afterwards, by the statute 5 and 6 *Edward VI. cap. 3.* of holy days, they were totally abolished. But these *feasts* being revived again by degrees, in sundry places of this realm, and particularly in Somersetshire, judge *Richardson*, when he was on the circuit, at the request of the justices of the peace for the county, published an order for suppressing them; but was obliged the next year as publicly to revoke it, and to declare such recreations to be lawful; and as a farther punishment on the judge, the archbishop obtained his removal from that circuit. It is very certain, that at these *revels* there were a great many disorders; as drunkenness, quarrelling, fornication, and murder, it is therefore very unlikely they should answer any good purpose, and how fit they were to succeed the public devotions of the Lord's day, we shall leave to your lordships' consideration.

(3.) The managers charged the archbishop further, “with giving orders to Sir *Nath. Brent*, his vicar-general, “to enjoin the churchwardens of all parish churches within “his diocese, that *they should remove the communion table “from the middle of the chapel to the upper end, and place “it in form of an altar, close to the wall, with the ends north “and south, and encompass it with rails, according to the “model of cathedrals.* They objected likewise to *his furnishing the altar in his own chapel, and the king's at “Whitehall, with basins, candlesticks, tapers, and other “silver vessels, not used in his predecessor's time; and to “the credentia or side-table, in conformity to the Roman*



‘*ceremonial*, on which the elements were to be placed on  
 ‘a clean linen cloth before they were brought to the altar  
 ‘to be consecrated; and to the hanging over the altar a piece  
 ‘of *arras* with a large crucifix.”§

The archbishop answered, that the placing the communion-table at the east end of the chancel, was commanded by Queen *Elizabeth’s* injunctions, which say, that the holy table shall be set in the place where the altar stood, which, all who are acquainted with antiquity know, was at the east end of the chancel, with the ends north and south, close to the wall, and thus they were usually placed both in this and other churches of Christendom; the innovation therefore was theirs who departed from the injunctions, and not mine who have kept to them. Besides, *altars*, both name and thing, were in use in the primitive churches long before popery began; yea, they are to be found both in the Old and New Testament; and that there can be no popery in railing them in, I have proved in my speech in the star-chamber. However, I aver, that I gave no orders nor directions to Sir *Nath. Brent*, my vicar-general, neither by letter nor otherwise, to remove or rail in communion tables in all parish churches; and I desire Sir *Nath.* may be called to testify the truth upon his oath. Sir *Nath.* being sworn, the archbishop asked him upon his oath, whether he had ever given him such orders? To which he replied, *My lords, upon the oath I have taken, I received an express direction and command from the archbishop himself to do what I did of this kind, otherwise I durst never have done it.\** The archbishop insisting that he never gave him such orders, and wondering he should be so unworthy as to affirm it upon oath, Sir *Nath.* produced the following letter under the archbishop’s own hand, directed to himself at Maidstone.

“Sir,

“I require you to command the communion-table at  
 ‘Maidstone to be placed at the east, or upper end of the  
 ‘chancel, and there railed in, and that the communicants  
 ‘there come up to the rail to receive the blessed sacrament;

§ Prynne, p. 62, 91, &c.

\* Laud’s Hist. p. 310.

‘and the like you are required to do in all churches, and  
‘in all other places where you visit metropolitically.

‘W. CANT.’

To which the archbishop, being out of countenance, made no other reply, but that he had forgot it.\*

As to the furniture upon the altar, he added, that it was no other than was used in the king’s chapel at Whitehall before his time, and was both necessary and decent; as is likewise the *credentia*, or side-table, the form of which he took from bishop *Andrews’s* model; and the piece of *arras* that was hung up over the altar in passion week, he apprehended was very proper for the place and occasion, such representations being approved by the Lutherans, and even by *Calvin* himself, as had been already shewn.

The managers replied to the antiquity of *altars*, that though the name is often mentioned in scripture, yet it is never applied to the *Lord’s table*; but *altars* and *priests* are put in opposition to the *Lord’s table* and ministers of the New Testament, 1 *Cor.* ix. 13, 14. Christ himself celebrated the sacrament at a table, not at an altar, and he calls it a supper, not a sacrifice; nor can it be pretended by any law or canon of the church of England, that it is called an altar more than once, stat. 1 *Edw.* VI. cap. 1, which statute was repealed within three years, and another made, in which the word *altar* is changed into *table*. It is evident from the unanimous suffrage of most of the fathers that lived within three hundred years after Christ, and by our most learned reformers, that for above two hundred and fifty years after Christ, there were no altars in churches, but only tables; pope *Sixtus II.* being the first that introduced them;|| and the canons of the popish council of Aix, 1583, being the only ones that can be produced for railing them in; one of which prescribes thus, *unumquodque altare sepiatur omnino septo ferreo, vel lapideo, vel ligneo.*† Let every altar be encompassed with a rail of iron, stone, or wood. The text, *Heb.* xiii. 10. *We have an altar, whereof they have no right to eat which serve the tabernacle*, is certainly meant of Christ himself, and not of the altar of wood or stone, as our protestant writers have

\* Prynne, p. 89.

|| Prynne, p. 480, 481.

† Prynne, p. 62.

proved at large; agreeably to which all altars in churches were commanded to be taken away and removed, as superstitious and popish, by public laws and injunctions at the reformation and *tables* were set up in their stead, which continued till the archbishop was pleased to turn them again into *altars*.

But the archbishop is pleased to maintain, *that the queen's injunctions prescribe the communion table to be set in the place where the altar stood, and that this was anciently at the east end of the choir*; whereas we affirm, that he is not able to produce one precedent or authority in all antiquity for this assertion; on the contrary, we are able to demonstrate to your lordships, that *altars* and *Lord's tables*, amongst Jews and *christians*, stood anciently in the midst of their churches or *choirs*;\* where the people might sit, stand, and go conveniently round them. So it was certainly in the Jewish church, as every one allows; and it was so in the christian church, till the very darkest times of popery, when private masses were introduced.† *Eusebius, Dionysius Areopagita, Chrysostom, Athanasius, Augustine, &c.* affirm, that the table of the Lord stood in the middle of the chancel, so that they might compass it about; nay, *Durandus*, a popish writer, informs us, that when a bishop consecrates a *new altar*, he must go round about it seven times; by which it is evident, it could not stand against a wall; but our most eminent writers against popery, as *Bucer*, bishop *Jewel*, bishop *Batington*, bishop *Morton*, and archbishop *Williams*, have proved this so evidently, that there is no room to call it in question; and we are able to produce several authorities from venerable *Bede*, *St. Austin* the first archbishop of *Canterbury*, and others, that they stood thus in *England* in their times.

Nor do Queen *Elizabeth's* injunctions in the least favor the archbishop's practice, of fixing the communion-table to the east wall with rails about it, for they order *the table*

\* *Choir* or *Chorus* has its denomination from the multitude standing round about the altar [*in modum coronæ*] in the form of a ring or circle. In the ancient liturgies they prayed for all those that stood round about the altar.—The priests and deacons stood round about the altar when they officiated, and so did the bishops when they consecrated it.

† *Prynne*, p. 482, 484. Vide Bishop *Williams's* Life, p. 109.



to be removed when the sacrament is to be distributed, and placed in such sort within the chancel, as whereby the minister may be more conveniently heard of the communicants, and the communicants may more conveniently, and in greater numbers, communicate with him. Now, if it be to be removed at the time of communion, it is absurd to suppose it to be fixed to the wall, and encompassed with rails. Besides, the rubric of the common-prayer-book, and the eighty-second canon of 1603, appoint the communion table to be placed in the body of the church, where the chancel is too small, or near the middle of the chancel, where it is large enough; and thus they generally stood in all churches, chapels, and in Lambeth chapel itself till the archbishop's time, which puts the matter out of question.\* And if it be remembered, that the saying of private masses brought in this situation of altars into the church of Rome, contrary to all antiquity, the archbishop's imitating them in this particular must certainly be a popish innovation.

The furniture upon the altar, which the archbishop pleads for, is exactly copied from the Roman pontifical and the popish council of Aix, and is condemned by our homilies and Queen *Elizabeth's* injunctions, which censure, condemn, and abolish as superstitious, ethnical, and popish, all candlesticks, trendals, rolls of wax, and setting up of tapers, as tending to idolatry and superstition, *injunct.* 2, 23. 25. Therefore, instead of conforming to the chapel at Whitehall, he ought, as dean of that chapel, to have reformed it to our laws, homilies, and injunctions.

The like may be said of the *credentia* [or side table] which is taken expressly out of the Roman *ceremonial* and *pontifical*, and is used amongst the papists only in their most solemn masses. It was never heard of in any protestant church, nor in the church of England, till the archbishop's time; and as for the stale pretext, of his having it from bishop *Andrews*; if it be true, we are certain *that bishop* could have it no where else but from the Roman *missal*.||

The *arras* hangings, with the picture of Christ at his last supper, with a crucifix, are no less popish than the former, being enjoined by the Roman *ceremoniale*, *Ed.*

\* *Prynne*. p. 467, 481.

|| *Ibid.* p. 63, 468.

*Par. 1633, lib. 1. c. 12, p. 69, 70, in these words, Quod si altare parieti adhæreat, applicari poterit ipsi parieti supra altare pannus aliquis cæteris nobilior & speciosior, ubi intextæ sint D. N. Jesu Christi aut gloriosæ virginis, vel sanctorum imagines.* “If the altar be fixed to the wall, ‘let there be some hangings more noble and beautiful than ‘the rest, fastened upon the wall over the altar, in which ‘are wrought the images of Christ, the blessed virgin, or ‘the saints.” Besides, these things being condemned by our statutes, homilies, and injunctions, as we have already proved, ought not certainly to have been introduced by a prelate, *who challenges all that is between heaven and hell, justly to tax him in any one particular savoring of popish superstition or idolatry.*

“Another innovation charged on the archbishop, was ‘his introducing divers superstitions into divine worship, ‘as bowing towards the altar, bowing at the name of JESUS, ‘enjoining people to do reverence at their entrance into ‘church, reading the second service at the communion table, standing up at the GLORIA PATRI,† and introducing the ‘use of copes and church music. They objected further, ‘his repairing old crucifixes, his new statutes of the university of Oxford, among which, some were arbitrary, and ‘others were superstitious; of the former sort, are the imposing new oaths; the statute of *bannition*; referring ‘some misdemeanors to arbitrary penalties, and obliging ‘students to go to prison on the vice-chancellor’s or proctor’s command. Of the latter sort, are *bowing to the altar, singing the litany, and reading Latin prayers in Lent*; ‘together with the abovementioned superstitions in the manner of divine worship.”\*

The archbishop answered, that bowing in divine worship was practised among the Jews, 2 Chron. xxix. 29, and the psalmist says, *O come, let us worship, and bow down,*

† “It is observable,” remarks Mrs. Macaulay, “that the most obnoxious of those ceremonies which Laud so childishly insisted on, were established at the Restoration, and have been ever since regularly practised in the church; and that many of his most offensive measures have been adopted by revolution ministers, such as the nominating clergymen to be justices of peace, with restraints laid on marriage.” *History of England, vol. iv. p. 135, the note. Ed.*

\* Prynne, p. 72, &c.

*let us kneel before the Lord our maker*, Psal. xciv. 6, that it was usual in queen *Elizabeth's* time; and that the *knights of the garter* were obliged to this practice by the orders of their chapter. Besides, the altar is the chief place of God's residence on earth, for there it is, *this is my body*; whereas in the pulpit it is only, *this is my word*. And shall I bow to men in each house of parliament, and not bow to God in his house whither I come to worship him? Surely I must worship God, and bow to him, though neither altar nor communion-table be in the church.||

Bowing at the name of *JESUS* is prescribed in direct terms by queen *Elizabeth's* injunctions, No. 12, and by the 18th canon of our church; and though standing up at the *Gloria Patri* is not prescribed by any canon of the church, it is nevertheless of great antiquity; nor is the reading the second service at the communion-table an innovation, it being the constant practice in cathedrals, and warranted by the rubric.

The use of copes is prescribed by the 24th canon of 1603, which says, *That in all cathedrals, and collegiate churches, the communion shall be administered on principal feast days, sometimes by the bishop if present, sometimes by the dean, and sometimes by the canon or prebendary, the principal minister using a decent cope*; so that here is no innovation, any more than in the use of *organs*, which our church has generally approved, and made use of.

As to the statutes of the university of Oxford, it is honor more than enough for me, that I have finished and settled them; nor did I any thing in them but by the consent of the convocation; and as to the particulars, there is nothing but what is agreeable to their charters, and the ancient custom and usage of the university. §

The managers replied, that *bowing to the altar* is popish, superstitious, and idolatrous, being prescribed only by popish canons, and introduced on purpose to support the doctrine of transubstantiation, which the archbishop's practice seems very much to countenance, when at his coming up to the altar to consecrate the bread, he makes three low bows, and at his going away three more, giving this reason for it, *quia hoc est corpus meum*, because, *this is my body*;

|| Laud's History, p. 313, 361.

§ Ibid. p. 304.



whereas he does not bow to the pulpit, because a greater reverence is due to the *body* than to the *word of the Lord*.† Besides, it has no foundation in antiquity, nor has it been approved by any protestant writers, except the archbishop's creatures, such as Dr *Heylin*, *Pocklington*, &c. and has been condemned by the best writers, as popish and superstitious. The black book of the knights of the garter at Windsor, is a sorry precedent for a protestant archbishop to follow, being made in the darkest times of popery, viz. in the reign of *Henry V.* and if they bow *Deo & altari*, to God and to his altar, as the archbishop in the star-chamber is of opinion christians ought to do, we cannot but think it both popish and idolatrous. His passages of scripture are nothing to the purpose, for *kneeling before the Lord our maker*, has no relation to bowing to the altar; nor is there any canon or injunction of the church to support the practice.

The archbishop confesses, that there is neither canon nor injunction for standing up at the *gloria patri*, which must therefore be an innovation, and is of no greater antiquity than the office of the mass, for it is derived from the *ordo Romanus*, as appears from the works of *Cassander*, p. 98.\* And though bowing at the name of *JESUS* be mentioned in the canons, yet these canons are not binding, not being confirmed by parliament,|| especially since the homilies, the common-prayer-book, the articles of religion and the book of ordination which are the only authentic rules of the church, make no mention of it; nor was it ever introduced before the time of pope *Gregory X.* who first prescribed it; and from the councils of *Basil*, *Sennes*, and *Augusta*, it was afterwards inserted in the *Roman ceremoniale*; besides, our best protestant writers have condemned the practice.

Reading the second service at the altar, when there is no communion, is contrary to the canons of 1571, and 1603, contrary to the queen's injunctions, the homilies, the

† Prynne, p. 63, 64, 474, 477, 487. \* Prynne, p. 64.

|| Dr. Grey contends here, that the canons of a convocation duly licensed by the king, when confirmed by royal authority, are properly the ecclesiastical laws of the church of England, and are as binding as the statutes of parliament. *Ed.*

rubric in the common-prayer-book, and was never practised in parish-churches till of late, though used in some cathedrals, where the rubric enjoins the communion to be administered every Sunday in the year, which being omitted, the *second service* at the table was left to supply it. The Lord's table was ordained only to administer the sacrament, but the epistle and gospel, which are the chief parts of the second service, are appointed to be read with the two lessons in the *reading pew*.§

As for *cofes*, neither the common-prayer-book, nor book of ordination, nor homilies confirmed by parliament, nor Queen *Elizabeth's* injunctions in her first year, make any mention of them, though they are evidently derived from the popish wardrobe, and the last common-prayer-book of King *Edward VI*, expressly prohibits them.\* The 24th canon of 1603, enjoins only the *chief minister* to wear a cope at the administration of the sacrament, whereas the archbishop prescribed them to be worn by others besides the chief minister, and as well when the sacrament was not administered as when it was. But, as we observed before, those canons not being confirmed by parliament, expired with King *James*, and therefore can be no warrant for their present use. Nor is the use of *music in churches*, or chaunting of prayers, of any great antiquity, being first introduced by pope *Vitalian*, *A. D.* 666, and encouraged only by popish prelates.||

And though the archbishop pleads, that the statutes of Oxford are agreeable to ancient custom and usage, we affirm they contain sundry innovations, not only with regard to the liberty of the subject, but with regard to religion, for Latin *prayers* were formerly said on *Ash-Wednesdays* before the *bachelors of arts*, whereas now none others are to be said throughout all Lent; the statute for singing in solemn processions was made in time of popery, and renewed in these statutes to keep up the practice of such superstitious perambulations; and though the archbishop with his wonted assurance wonders what these things have to do with treason, we apprehend, that if they appear so many proofs of a design to *subvert the established religion of the*

§ Pryune, p. 492.

\* Ibid. p. 64, 479, 480.

|| Ibid. p. 65.



church of England,\* they will be judged so in the highest degree.†

Further they charged the archbishop with advising the king “to publish his declaration for the use of sports on ‘the Lord’s day, in order to suppress afternoon sermons; ‘with obliging the clergy of his diocese to read it in their ‘pulpits, and punishing those that refused.”‡

The archbishop answered, that he had the king’s warrant for printing the *book of sports*; that there is no proof that it was by his procurement, nor that it was done on purpose to take away *afternoon sermons*, since these recreations are not allowed till they are over; besides, the declaration allows only *lawful* recreations, which is no more than is practised at Geneva, though for his own part he *always observed strictly the Lord’s day*. What he enjoined the reading the declaration was by his majesty’s command, and he did not punish above three or four for not reading it.§

The commons replied, that it was evident, by the archbishop’s letter to the bishop of *Bath and Wells*, that the declaration was printed by his procurement, the warrant for printing it being written all with his own hand, and without date, and therefore might probably be obtained afterwards; § moreover, some of the recreations mentioned in it are *unlawful* on the Lord’s day, according to the opin-

\* Mrs. Macaulay thinks, that to the charge of endeavoring to subvert the established religion, and to set up popish superstition and idolatry, the archbishop was particularly strong in his defence, and the allegations to support the charge were particularly vague and trifling.—“The truth is,” as that author observes, “those superstitious ceremonies which he with so much blind zeal had endeavored to revive, and ‘which were so justly ridiculed and abhorred by the more enlightened ‘protestants, were the discipline of the first reformers in this country, ‘and had the sanction both of the civil and ecclesiastical power: reformation had begun in England at the wrong end; it was first adopted ‘and modelled by government, instead of being forced upon government by the general sense of the people; and thus, to further the ambitious views of the monarch, and to gratify the pride of the prelacy, ‘a great part of the mystery of popery was retained in the doctrine, ‘and a great part of the puppet-shews of the papists in the discipline, ‘of the church of England.” History of England, vol. iv. p. 135. Ed.

† Prynne, p. 478.

‡ Ibid. p. 128, 154, 382.

§ Laud’s History, p. 343, 344.

§ Prynne, p. 505.



ion of *fathers, councils, and imperial laws*; and though Calvin differs from our protestant writers about the morality of the sabbath, yet he expressly condemns dancing and pastimes on that day. As for his *grace's* own strict observation of the Lord's day, it is an averment without truth, for he sat constantly at the council-table on that day; and it was his ordinary practice to go to bowls in the summer time, and use other recreations upon it; nor is it probable, that the archbishop would have punished conscientious ministers for not reading the book of sports, if the thing had been disagreeable to his practice, especially when there is no warrant at all in the declaration that ministers should publish it, or be punished for refusing it; and that he punished no more, was not owing to his clemency, who gave command to suspend all that refused, but to the clergy's compliance; for so zealous was this archbishop and some of his brethren in this affair, that it was inserted as an article of enquiry in their visitations, *whether the king's declaration for sports has been read and published by the minister?* And defaulters were to be presented upon oath. Now we appeal to the whole christian world, whether ever it has been known, that any who have been called *fathers of the church*, have taken so much pains to have the Lord's day prophaned, as first to advise the king to publish a declaration to warrant it, then to enjoin the clergy to read it in their pulpits, and to suspend, sequester, and deprive, all whose consciences would not allow them to comply, and this not only contrary to the laws of God, but to the laws of the land.

The reader will, no doubt, remark upon this part of the archbishop's trial, that those rites and ceremonies which have bred such ill blood, and been contended for with so much fierceness, as to disturb the peace of the church, and divide its communion, have no foundation in scripture, or primitive antiquity, taking their rise for the most part in the darkest and most corrupt times of the papacy. I speak not here of such rites as are established by law, as the *cross in baptism*, and *kneeling at the communion*, &c. because the commons could not charge these on the archbishop as criminal, And it will be observed further, that

when men claim a right to introduce ceremonies for decency of worship, and impose them upon the people, there can be no bounds to a fruitful invention. Archbishop *Laud* would, no doubt, by degrees, have introduced all the follies of the Roman church; and admitting his authority to impose rites and ceremonies not mentioned in scripture, it is not easy to give a reason why fifty should not be enjoined as well as five.

The managers went on next to the *second branch of their charge*, to prove the archbishop's design to subvert the protestant religion, *by countenancing and encouraging sundry doctrinal errors in favor of arminianism, and popery.*

And here they charged him, *first*, "with being the great patron of that part of the clergy who had declared themselves in favor of these errors, and with procuring their advancement to the highest stations in the church, even though they were under censure of parliament, as Dr. *Manwaring*, *Montague*, &c. They averred, that the best preferments in his majesty's gift, ever since the archbishop's administration in 1627, had by his advice been bestowed on persons of the same principles; and that he had advised the king to publish a declaration, prohibiting the clergy to preach on the *five controverted points*,

§ The reader has seen, in the preceeding part of this reign, and in that of James I. how arminianism became connected with the politics of the time. There is no natural, or necessary union between arminianism and despotism. And at the same time that the court in England protected and patronised the Arminians, and in return received from them a sanction to its arbitrary views; the reverse took place in Holland: where the Arminians, favored by the magistrates of the states, opposed the aspiring designs of the stadtholder Maurice; and the Calvinists, on the contrary, who were there called Gomorists, espoused his interest, and seconded his ambitious and arbitrary measures against the liberty of their country. These have continued the dominant party to this day: and the most violent of them have not only the sway in the church, but their favor is courted by the prince, who finds his interest advanced by a connexion with them. In this instance the Dutch calvinists, while they maintain all the rigor of his theological system, have greatly and ignominiously deviated from the political principles of their illustrious founder; whose character as a legislator, more than as a divine, displayed the strength of his genius; and whose wise edicts were dictated by genuine patriotism and the spirit of liberty. Appendix to the xliith vol. of the Monthly Review enlarged, p. 523, and Rousseau's Social Compact, p. 112; note. *Ed.*



‘by virtue of which the mouths of the orthodox preachers  
‘were stopped, and some that ventured to transgress the  
‘king’s declaration were punished in the high commission,  
‘when their adversaries were left at large to spread their  
‘opinions at their pleasure.”

The archbishop answered, that he had not defended any points of *arminianism*, though he heartily wished, for the peace of christendom, that these differences were not pursued with such heat and animosity.\* He confessed that he had been taxed in a declaration of the house of commons as a favorer of *arminians*, but without proof, and he took it as a very great slander. Nor had he, to the best of his remembrance, advanced any such to ecclesiastical livings; if they proved so afterwards it was more than he could foresee; but he had preferred divers orthodox ministers, against whom there was no exception. He denied that he had any hand in the preferment of Dr. *Manwaring* or *Montague*, who were under censure of parliament, nor is the *pocket book* a sufficient proof of it; he was of opinion, that *Neal*, *Lindsey*, *Wren*, *Bancroft*, *Curle*, and others mentioned in the charge, were worthy men, and every way qualified for their preferments, though it does not appear he had any hand in bestowing them. As for the king’s declaration prohibiting the clergy to preach the *five points*, it was his majesty’s own, and not his; and since the publishing of it he had endeavored to carry it with an equal hand, and to punish the transgressors of it on one side as well as the other.†

The commons replied that they wondered at the archbishop’s assurance in denying his endeavors to promote *arminianism* in the church; that the remonstrance of the commons was a sufficient evidence of his guilt, being confirmed by many proofs, though his answer to it proved so full of bitterness and sauciness, as throwing scandal on the whole representative body of the nation.‡

As to the particulars, they say, that his preferring Mr. *Downham* and *Taylor*, orthodox men, to some benefices, was only a blind to cover his advancing so many popishly affected clergymen. It is known to all the world that *Mon-*

\* Land’s Hist. p. 852. Prynne, p. 529. † Prynne, p. 598.

‡ Prynne, p. 529.



*tague* and *Manwaring* were his creatures ; the pocket-book says, that his majesty's royal assent to their preferment was signed by order of this prelate, (when only bishop of *London*,) and himself was the person that consecrated them. It would be too long to go into particulars, but every body knows, that the disposal of all, or most of the bishoprics, deanries, and considerable benefices since the year 1627, have been under the direction of this archbishop ; and what sort of persons have been preferred is apparent to all men, by the present distracted condition of the church and universities.

The king's declaration for prohibiting preaching on the five controverted points, was an artifice of the archbishop's to introduce the *arminian* errors, by preventing orthodox ministers from awakening the minds of people against them. And whereas he avers, that he has carried it with an even hand, and could bring witnesses from Oxford to prove it, we challenge him to name one scholar or minister that was ever imprisoned, deprived, silenced, prosecuted in the high commission, or cast out of favor on this account ; there was indeed one *Rainsford* an *arminian*, who, in the year 1632, was obliged publicly to confess his error in disobeying his majesty's declaration, and that was all his punishment ; whereas great numbers of the other side have been persecuted, so as to be forced to abandon their native country, at a time when the most notorious and declared *arminians* were advanced to the best preferments in the church, as *Montague* made a bishop, *Harsnet* an archbishop, *Lindsey* promoted to two bishoprics ; *Potter* to a deanry, and *Duppa* to a deanry and bishopric, and made tutor to the prince, &c.\*

The mangers objected further to the archbishop, " that having obtained the sole licensing of the press, by a declaration of the star-chamber in the year 1637, he had prohibited the reprinting sundry orthodox books formerly printed, and sold by authority, as the Geneva *Bible* with notes *Gellibrand's Protestant Almanack*, in which the popish saints were left out of the kalendar, and protestant martyrs put in their places ; that his chaplains had refused to license the *confession of faith* of the *Palatine church*—es, *Fox's* book of martyrs, bishop *Jewel's* works, some

\* Prynne, p. 172, 511.

part of Dr. *Willet's*, and the *History of the Gun-Powder-Treason*, as was attested by the clerks of Stationer's-Hall, and this reason given for the refusal, that we were not now so angry with the papists as formerly, and therefore it was not proper to exasperate them, there being a design on foot to win them by mildness. That the archbishop had suppressed sundry new books written against *arminianism* and *popery*, and had castrated others, expunging such passages as reflected upon the superstition and idolatry of that church ;"† a large catalogue of which the commons produced ; many authors appeared in maintenance of this part of the charge, and among others, Dr. *Featly*, Dr. *Clarke*, Dr. *Jones*, Mr. *Ward*, &c. || It was said in particular, "that he had expunged divers passages, which bore hard upon the papists, out of the collection of public prayers for a general fast against the plague ; and that in the prayer-book appointed by authority for the 5th of Nov. instead of *root out that babylonish and antichristian sect, whose religion is rebellion, whose faith is faction, and whose practice is murdering of soul and body* ; he had altered that passage, and artfully turned it against the puritans, thus, *Root out the antichristian sect of them, who turn religion into rebellion, and faith into faction.*"

"And as the archbishop had castrated some books, because they refuted the doctrines he would countenance ; so he gave full licence to others, wherein the grossest points of *arminianism* and *popery* were openly asserted ; as *Cosins's* hours of prayer, *Sales's* introduction to a devout life, *Christ's* epistle to a devout soul, and others, in which the following doctrines were maintained, (1.) The necessity of auricular confession, and the power of priests to forgive sins. (2.) The lawfulness and benefit of popish penance, as wearing hair-cloth, and other corporal punishments. (3.) Absolute submission to the commands of priests as directors of conscience. (4.) That in the sacrament, the body and blood of Christ is a true and proper sacrifice ; that the natural body and blood of Christ is really and substantially present in the eucharist ; and that there can be no true sacrament or consecration of it

† Pryune. p. 179, 180, 182, &c. || Ibid. p. 254, 255, 257, 258, &c.

‘where there is no altar. (5.) That crucifixes, images, and  
 ‘pictures, may be lawfully set up in churches, and ought  
 ‘not to be removed. (6.) That the pope is not antichrist.  
 ‘(7.) That there are venial sins. (8.) That there is a  
 ‘purgatory or limbus patrum. (9.) That the reliques of  
 ‘saints are to be preserved and revered. (10.) That  
 ‘the Virgin *Mary* and saints are to be invoked and prayed  
 ‘to. (11.) That the church of Rome is the mother  
 ‘church, and never erred in fundamentals. (12.) That  
 ‘there are written traditions of equal authority with the  
 ‘word of God.”|| To which were added, sundry articles  
 of *arminian* doctrine, as of free-will, total and final apos-  
 tasy from grace; examples of which the managers produc-  
 ed from the several authors.

And as a further encouragement to popery, they objected  
 his *grace's* “conniving at the importation of popish books,  
 ‘and restoring them to the owners when seized by the  
 ‘searchers, contrary to the statute of 3 *Jacob*. I. by which  
 ‘means many thousands of them were dispersed over the  
 ‘whole kingdom; whereas he gave the strictest commands  
 ‘to his officers to seize all imported Bibles with notes, and  
 ‘all books against *arminian* and popish innovations. All  
 ‘which put together amount to no less than a demonstra-  
 ‘tion of the archbishop’s design to subvert our established  
 ‘religion, by introducing doctrinal *arminianism* and po-  
 ‘pery.”†

The archbishop answered, that the decree of the star-  
 chamber for regulating the press was the act of the whole  
 court, and not his; that the *stationers* themselves gave him  
 thanks for it; and he is still of opinion, that it was both a  
 necessary and useful act, being designed to suppress sedi-  
 tious, schismatical, and mutinous books.‡ As to the par-  
 ticulars, he replied, that the *Geneva Bible* was only tole-  
 rated, not allowed by authority, and deserved to be sup-  
 pressed for the marginal note on *Exod.* i. 17, which allows  
 disobedience to the king’s command. *Gellibrand's* alma-  
 nack had left out all the saints and apostles, and put in  
 those named by Mr. *Fox*, and therefore deserved to be  
 censured. As to the book of martyrs, it was an abridg-  
 ment of that book I opposed (says his grace,) lest the book

|| Pryne, p. 188, 202. † Pryne, p. 249. ‡ Laud’s Hist. p. 250.



itself should be brought into disuse, and lest any thing material should be left out. But the licensing of books was left in general to my chaplains, for an archbishop had better grind, than take that work into his own hands; and whereas it has been inferred, that what is done by my chaplain must be taken as my act, I conceive no man can by law be punished criminally for his servant's fact, unless it be proved that he had a hand in it.

The like answer the archbishop gave to the castrating and licensing books,—his chaplains did it; and since it was not proved they did it by his express command, they must answer for it. He admits, that he altered the prayers for the 5th of Nov. and for the *general fast* by his majesty's command; and he is of opinion the expressions were too harsh, and therefore ought to be changed.

He denied that he ever connived at the importation of popish books; and if any such were restored to the owners, it was by order of the high commission, and therefore he is not answerable for it.

The commons replied, that the decree for regulating the press was procured by him with a design to enlarge his jurisdiction; and though some things in it might deserve the thanks of the *stationers*, they complained loudly that books formerly printed *by authority*, might not be reprinted without a new licence from himself. §—As to particulars, they affirm that the *Geneva Bible* was printed by authority of queen *Elizabeth* and king *James*, *cum privilegio*; and in the 15th *Jacob*, there was an impression by the king's own printer, notwithstanding the note upon *Exodus*, which is warranted both by fathers and canonists. *Gellibrand's* almanack was certainly no offence, and therefore did not deserve that the author should be tried before the high commission; and if the queen and the papists were offended at it, it was to be liked never the worse by all good protestants. The archbishop is pleased, indeed, to cast the whole blame of the press on his *chaplains*; but we are of opinion (say the managers) that the archbishop is answerable for what his chaplains do in this case; the trust of licensing books being originally invested in him, his chaplains being his deputies, he must answer for them

at his peril. When the archbishop of *York* in the reign of *Edward I.* was questioned in parliament, for excommunicating two servants of the bishop of *Durham*, employed in the king's service, the archbishop threw the blame on his commissary, who was the person that excommunicated them; but it was then resolved in parliament, that the commissary's act was his own, and he was fined four thousand marks to the king. Now the *commissary* was an officer established by law; but the archbishop's chaplains are not officers by law, and therefore dare not license any thing without his privity and command.

Besides, it is apparent these books were castrated by the archbishop's approbation, for otherwise he would have punished the licensers, printers, and publishers, as he always did when information was given of any new books published against the late innovations. His grace has forgot his refusing to license the *Palatine Confession of Faith*, which is his peculiar happiness when he can make no answer; and it looks a little undutiful in him to cast the alteration of the prayers for Nov. 5, on the king, when every body knows by whom the king's conscience was directed. ||

And whereas the archbishop denies his conniving at the importation of popish books, he does not so much as alledge that he ordered such books to be seized as he ought to have done; he confesses that such books as were seized, had been restored by order of the high commission, whereas it had been sworn to be done by his own order; but if it had not, yet he being president of that court ought to have crossed those orders, *that court* not daring to have made any such restitutions without his consent; so that we cannot but be of opinion that the whole of this charge, which shews a manifest partiality on the side of *arminianism* and *popery*, and the strongest and most artificial attempts to propagate these errors in the nation, still remains in its full strength.

The managers went on to charge the archbishop with his 'severe prosecution of those clergymen, who had dared to 'preach against the dangerous increase of *arminianism* 'and *popery*, or the late innovations; they instanced in 'Mr. Chauncy, Mr. Workman, Mr. Davenport, and others;

‘some of whom were punished in the high commission for  
 ‘not railing in the communion-table, and for preaching a-  
 ‘gainst images ; and when Mr. *Davenport* fled to New-  
 ‘England to avoid the storm, the archbishop said, *his arm*  
 ‘*should reach him there.* They objected further, *his sup-*  
 ‘*pressing afternoon sermons on the Lord’s-day,* and the  
 ‘laudable design of buying in impropriations, which was  
 ‘designed for the encouraging such lecturers.”\*

The archbishop answered, that the censures passed on the ministers abovementioned, was the act of the high-commission and not his ; and he confesses their sentences appeared just and reasonable, in as much as the passages that occasioned them, were against the laudable ceremonies of the church, against the king’s declaration, tending to infuse into the minds of people groundless fears and jealousies of popery, and to cast aspersions on the governors of the church ; that therefore, if he did say, *his arm should reach Mr. Davenport in New-England,* he sees no harm in it, for there in no reason that the plantations should secure offenders against the church of England, from the edge of the law ; and he meddled with none except such as were *puritanical, factious, schismatical,* and enemies to the good orders of the church.‡

As to the *suppressing afternoon sermons,* the instructions for turning them into catechizing was before his time, and he could not but approve of the design, as a proper expedient for preserving peace between ministers and people, the lecturers being for the most part factious, and the occasion of great contentions in the parishes where they preached.‡

He confessed, that he overthrew the design of buying up impropriations, and thanked God he had destroyed it, because he conceived it a plot against the church, for if it had succeeded, more clergymen would have depended on these *feoffees* than on the king, and on all the peers and bishops beside ; but he proceeded against them according to law, and if the sentence was not just, it must be the *judges’* fault and not his.

The commons replied, that it was notorious to all men

\* Prynne, p. 361, 362, &c.

§ Laud’s Hist. p. 332, 348.

‡ Prynne, p. 537.



how cruel he had been towards all those who had dared to make a stand against his proceedings. They put him in mind of *Prynne*, *Burton*, and *Bastwick*, and of great numbers whom he had forced into Holland, and into the plantations of America, to avoid the ruin of themselves and families; yea, so implacable was this prelate, that he would neither suffer them to live in the land nor out of it, an embargo being laid on all ministers going to New-England; and if any such got over clandestinely, he threatened *his arm should reach them there*. In vain does he shelter his severe proceedings under the authority of the court, for if this plea be admitted, no corrupt judges or counsellors can be brought to justice for the most arbitrary proceedings; but in reality, *the act of the court is the act of every particular person that gives his vote for it, and every individual member is accountable*. Many instances of this might be produced; but there has been one very lately, in the case of *ship-money*, which is fresh in the memory of all men; and we do aver, that the sermons or books, for which the above-mentioned persons suffered so severely, were neither factious nor seditious, but necessary for these times, wherein the protestant religion runs so very low, and superstition and popery are coming in like a flood.\*

As to the instructions for *suppressing afternoon sermons*, whensoever they were drawn up, it is evident he was the man that put them in execution, and levelled them against those conscientious persons who scrupled reading the prayers in their *surplice* and *hood*, or taking a living with cure of souls, all such persons, how orthodox soever in doctrine, or how diligent soever in their callings, and pious in their lives, being reputed factious, schismatical, and unworthy of the least employment in the church.†

As to the *impropriations*, there was no design in the *feoffees* to render the clergy independent on the bishops, for none were presented but conformable men, nor did any preach but such as were licenced by the bishop; indeed the design being to encourage the preaching of the word of God, the *feoffees* were careful to employ such persons as would not be idle; and when they perceived the archbish-

\* Prynne, p. 335, &c.

† Ibid. p. 270, 537, 538.

op was bent on their ruin, Mr. *White* went to his grace, and promised to rectify any thing that was amiss, if the thing itself might stand. But he was determined to destroy it, and by his mighty influence obtained a decree, that the money should be paid into the king's *exchequer*, by which an end was put to one of the most charitable designs for the good of the church, that has been formed these many years.\*

The last charge of the managers was "his grace's open attempts to reconcile the church of England with the church of Rome, as appears, *first*, by the papal titles he suffered the universities to give him in their letters, as *sanctitas vestra*, your holiness; *sanctissime pater*, most holy father; *spiritus sancti effusissime plenus*, full of the holy ghost; *summus pontifex*, *optimus maximusque in terris*, &c. agreeably to this he assumed to himself the title of *patriarch*, or pope of Great-Britain, *alterius orbis papa*; which gave the Romanists such an opinion of him, that they offered him twice a cardinal's hat; though, as things then stood, he did not think it prudent to receive it.|| But Sir *H. Mildmay*, and Sir *N. Brent* swore, that both at Rome and elsewhere, he was reputed a papist in his heart;† which opinion was not a little confirmed. (1.) By his forbidding the clergy to pray for the conversion of the queen to the protestant faith. (2.) By his owning the church of Rome to be a true church; by denying the pope to be antichrist, and wishing a reconciliation with her; and affirming that she never erred in fundamentals, no, not in the worst of times. (3.) By his sowing discord between the church of England and foreign protestants, not only by taking away the privileges and immunities of the French and Dutch churches in these kingdoms, but by denying their ministers to be true ministers, and their churches true churches. (4.) By maintaining an intimate correspondence with the pope's nuncio and with divers priests and jesuits, conniving at the liberties they took in the Clink, and elsewhere, and threatening those pursuivants who were diligent in apprehending them; to all

\* Pryne, p. 537.

|| Pryne, p. 441.

† Pryne, p. 409, &amp;c:

‘which they added, the influence the archbishop had in  
 ‘marrying the king to a papist, and his concealment of a  
 ‘late plot to reduce these kingdoms to popery and slave-  
 ‘ry.”†

To this long charge the archbishop gave some general answers, in satirical and provoking language: My lords, (says he) I am charged with an endeavor to reconcile the church of England to the church of Rome; I shall recite the sum of the evidence, and of the arguments to prove it. (1.) I have reduced several persons from popery, whom I have named in my speech; *ergo*, I have endeavored to bring in popery. (2.) I have made a canon against popery, and an oath to abjure it; *ergo*, I have endeavored to introduce it. (3.) I have been twice offered a cardinalship and refused it, because I would not be subject to the pope; *ergo*, I have endeavored to subject the church of England to him. (4.) I wrote a book against popery; *ergo*, I am inclinable to it. (5.) I have been in danger of my life from a popish plot; *ergo*, I cherished it, and endeavored to accomplish it. (6.) I endeavored to reconcile the *lutherans* and *calvinists*; *ergo*, I labored to bring in popery.\*

To the particulars he replied, that whatever papal power he had assumed, he assumed it not in his own right, as the popes did, but from the king. That the stile of *holiness* was given to St. *Augustine*, and others, and therefore not peculiar to the pope; why then should so grave a man as Mr. *Brown* (says he) disparage his own nation, as if it were impossible for an English bishop to deserve as good a title as another? As for the other titles, they must be taken as compliments for my having deserved well of the university; but after all, it is one thing to assume *papal titles*, and another to assume papal power. As to the title of *patriarch*, or *pope of the other world*; it is the title that *Anselm* says belongs to the archbishops of *Canterbury*, and not so great an one as St. *Jerom* gave to St. *Augustine*, when he wrote to him with this title, *Beatissimo papæ Augustino*. I confess I have been offered a cardinal’s hat, but refused it, saying, *I could not accept it till Rome was otherwise than*

† Pryne. p. 539.

\* Laud’s Hist. p. 285, 286, 325, &c. Pryne, p. 543. Laud’s Hist. p. 418, 419.



*it now is.* If, after this, others will repute me a papist, I can't help it, & I hope I shall not be answerable for their uncharitableness. Sir *Henry Mildmay* will witness how much I am hated and spoken against at Rome. It does not appear that I forbade ministers praying for the queen's conversion; but when I was told the queen was prayed for in a factious and seditious manner, I referred the matter to my visitors, and do acknowledge that Mr. *Jones* was punished in the high commission on this account.||

To the objection, of the church of Rome's being a *true church*, I confess myself of that opinion, and do still believe, that she never erred in fundamentals, for the foundations of the christian religion are in the articles of the creed, and she denies none of them; and it would be sad if she should, for *it is through her that the bishops of the church of England, who have the honor to be capable of deriving their calling from St. Peter, must deduce their succession.\** She is therefore a true church, though not an *orthodox one*; our religion and theirs is one in essentials, and people may be saved in either. It has not been proved, that I deny the pope to be antichrist, though many learned men have denied it; nor do I conceive that our homilies affirm it; and if they did, I don't conceive myself bound to believe every phrase that is in them. I confess, I have often wished a reconciliation between the churches of England and Rome in a just and christian way; and was in hopes in due time to effect it; but a reconciliation without truth and piety I never desired.†

To the objection of the foreign protestant churches, I deny that I have endeavored to sow discord between them, but I have endeavored to unite the *calvinists* and *lutherans*; nor have I absolutely unchurched them. I say in-

§ It may be pertinent to observe here, that, though Laud did not approve the doctrinal articles of the church of Rome, "it is possible that 'one who dislikes many points of the Romish faith, may yet be very fond of introducing her tyrannical government, and, in order to it, of amusing the poor laity with the long train of her gaudy and mysterious ceremonies: that while they stand fondly gazing at this lure, and are busied about impertinencies, they may the more easily be circumvented in irrecoverable bondage by men of deeper but more mischievous designs.'" *Memoirs of Hollis*, vol. ii. p. 578. *Ed.*

|| Laud's History, p. 383.

\* Ibid. p. 392.

† Prynne, p. 556.

deed, in my book against *Fisher*, according to *St. Jerom*, *No bishop, no church*; and that none but a bishop can ordain, except in cases of inevitable necessity; and whether that be the case with the foreign churches, the world must judge. || The judgment of the church of England is, that church government by bishops is unalterable, for the preface to the book of ordination says, that from the apostles' time there have been three orders of ministers in the church, bishops, priests, and deacons; now if bishops are the apostles' successors. and have continued in the church above sixteen hundred years, what authority have any christian states to deprive them of that right which Christ has given them? As to the French and Dutch churches in this kingdom, I did not question them for their ancient privileges, but for their new encroachments, for it was not the design of the Queen [*Elizabeth*] to harbor them, unless they conformed to the English liturgy; now I insisted on this only with respect to those who were of the second descent, and born in England; and if all such had been obliged to go to their parish churches as they ought, they would not have done the church of England so much harm as they have since done. §

To the fourth objection I answer, that I had no intimate correspondence with priests or jesuits, nor entertained them at my table, knowing them to be such. I never put my hand to the releasing any priest out of prison, nor have I connived at the liberties they assumed; the witnesses who pretended to prove this are either mean persons, or strongly prejudiced; and to most of the facts there is but one witness. As to the *nuncios* from Rome, it was not in my power to hinder their coming, the king having condescended to it, at the earnest request of the queen; nor had I any particular intimacy with them whilst they were here; nor do I remember my checking the *pursuivants* in doing their duty. But if it could be supposed that I said, *I will have nothing to do with any priest-catching knaves*, I hope the words are not treason; nor is it any offence not to be a persecutor, or not to give ill language to jesuits; and I do affirm, that I never *persecuted* any orthodox ministers or *puritans*, though I may have *persecuted* some for their schisms and misdemeanors.\*

|| Laud's Hist. p. 374. Pryne, p. 540.

§ Ibid. p. 378.

\* Laud's Hist. p. 894.

As to the king's marrying, it is not proved that I had any hand in it, though I acknowledge the duke of *Buckingham* did me the honor to make me his confessor. Nor did I conceal the late plot to bring in popery, but discovered it to the king as soon as I had intelligence of it; for the truth of which I appeal not only to my letters, but to the earl of *Norumberland* here present; who stood up, and said, he remembered no such thing.

The commons replied to the archbishop's general defence, that he had been fighting with his own shadow, for they never objected those things to him for the purposes which he mentions; they never objected his reducing any from popery, but that many were hardened in it by his means. Nor did they object the canons or oath to prove him guilty of introducing popery, but to quite different purposes. So that the archbishop in these, and the other particulars abovementioned, has given us a specimen of his sophistry and jesuitism, transforming his own defence into our charge and evidence, and making our objections stand as proofs of a fact, which they were not in the least intended to support.\*

To the particulars they replied, that the titles he had assumed were peculiar to the papacy; that they were never assumed by any protestant archbishop before himself; nay, that in the times of popery there are hardly any examples of their being given to English bishops, and that it is blasphemy to give the title of *holiness* in the abstract to any but God himself; the archbishop therefore ought, in his answers to the letters of the university, to have checked them, whereas he does not so much as mention these exorbitances, nor find the least fault with them. And though there be a difference between papal title and papal power, yet certainly his claiming the title of *alterius orbis papa*, pope of the other world, is a demonstration that he was grasping at the same power in Great-Britain, as the pope had in Italy; and though, for prudent reasons, he refused the cardinal's hat when it was offered, yet when he had made his terms, and accomplished that reconciliation between the two churches that he was contriving, no doubt he would have had his reward. Sir *Henry Mildmay* be-

\* *Prynne*, p. 543.



ing summoned, at the archbishop's request, to give in evidence, how much he was hated and spoke against at Rome, swore that when he was at Rome some of the jesuitical faction spoke against the archbishop, because they apprehended he aimed at too great an ecclesiastical jurisdiction for himself; but the seculars commended and applauded him, because of the near approaches he made to their church, and shewed himself favorable to their party. The like evidence was given by Mr. *Challoner*, and others.||

And whereas the archbishop had said, that it was not proved, that he forbid ministers to pray for the queen's conversion, the managers produced Mr. *Hugh Radcliffe*, of St. Martin's Ludgate, who swore that Sir *Nath. Brent*, his vicar-general, at a visitation at Bow church, gave in charge to the clergy in his hearing, these words, *Whereas divers of you, in your prayers before sermon, used to pray for the queen's conversion, you are to do so no more, for the queen does not doubt of her conversion.\** And both before and after, the archbishop himself caused Mr. *Bernard*, Mr. *Peters*, and Mr. *Jones*, to be prosecuted in the high commission on this account.† The archbishop having said, that he never put his hand to the releasing any priest out of prison, the managers produced a warrant under his own hand, dated Jan. 31, 1633, for the release of *William Walgrave*, deposed to be a dangerous seducing priest, in these words:

“THESE are to will and command you, to set at full liberty the person of *William Walgrave*, formerly committed to your custody, and for your so doing this shall be your sufficient warrant.

“*W. Cant.*

“*R. Ebor.*”

But the archbishop's memory frequently failed him on such occasions.

His grace confesses the church of Rome to be a *true church*, whereas we aver her to be a false and anti-christian one, for she has no sure foundation, no true head, no ordinances, sacraments, or worship, no true ministry, nor government of Christ's institution; she yields no true subjection to Christ's laws, word, or spirit, but is over-

|| *Prynne*, p. 413.

\* *Ibid.* p. 418.

† *Ibid.* p. 444.

spread with damnable errors in doctrine, and corruptions in manners and worship, and is therefore defined by our homilies to be a *false church*. Must she not err in fundamentals, when she affirms the church to be built on *Peter*, not upon Christ, and resolves our faith into the church, and not into the scriptures? when she deifies the *Virgin Mary*, and other saints, by giving them divine worship, and obliges us to adore the consecrated bread in the sacrament as the very body and blood of Christ; when she denies the cup to the laity, obliges people to pray in an unknown tongue, and sets up a new head of the church instead of Christ, with the keys of the kingdom of heaven at his girdle? What are these but fundamental errors, which nullify the church that maintains them? The religion of the church of Rome and ours is not one and the same, for theirs is no christian religion, but a heap of superstition and idolatry; and his affirming salvation may be had in that church, is contrary to the opinion of our best protestant writers, who make her damnable errors the foundation of our separation from her. And though the archbishop makes light of his not believing the pope to be *antichrist*, we do aver, that our statutes and homilies do either in direct or equivalent expressions define him to be *antichrist*, and particularly in the subsidy act, 3 *Jac.* penned by the convocation.

But can any thing more fully demonstrate the archbishop's design to reconcile the church of England with Rome, than his own confession? He says, he has labored this matter with a faithful and single heart, *Reply to Fisher*, p. 388, though not to the prejudice of truth and piety. But it must be observed, that the archbishop's design was not to bring over the church of Rome to us, but to carry us over to them; and what large advances he has made that way, appears by his setting up altars, crucifixes, images, and other innovations. What advance has the church of Rome made towards us? why, none at all; nor is it possible she should, till she lays aside her infallibility. The pretence, therefore, of the church of Rome's meeting us half way, was a mere *blind* to deceive the people of England, till he had carried them wholly over into her territories.

The archbishop has denied his endeavors to sow discord among foreign protestants, and asserted his endeavors to reconcile the *lutherans* and *calvinists*, though he has produced no evidence of it ; but his late behavior towards the Scots, on the account of their having no bishops, and to the foreign settlements among ourselves, is a sufficient proof of the contrary. The maxim that he cites from *St. Jerom*, *No bishops, no church*, is a plain perverting of his sense, for his words are, *Ubi non est sacerdos, non est ecclesia* ; but it is well known that, according to *St. Jerom*, bishops and presbyters are one and the same in jurisdiction and office, and presbyters have the power of ordination as well as bishops ; and therefore this is a conclusion of the archbishop's framing, which, if it be true, must necessarily unchurch all the foreign reformed churches, and render all the ordinations of their ministers invalid, which is a sufficient evidence of his enmity to them.\*

As to the French and Dutch churches, who were settled by charter in the reign of king *Edward VI*. *Mr. Bulteel's* book, of the manifold troubles of those churches by this archbishop's prosecutions, evidently proves, that he invaded and diminished their ancient immunities and privileges in all parts ; and that he was so far from being their friend, that they accounted him their greatest enemy.

To the fourth objection, relating to the archbishop's correspondence with popish priests, we reply, that the archbishop's intimacy with *Sir. Toby Mathew*, the most active jesuit in the kingdom, has been fully proved ; that he was sometimes with him in his barge, sometimes in his coach, sometimes in private with him in his garden, and frequently at his table.† The like has been proved of *Sancta Clara*, *St. Giles Leander*, *Smith*, and *Price*, and we cannot but wonder at his denying that he knew them to be priests, when the evidence of his knowledge of some of them has been produced under his own hand ; and the witnesses for the others were no meaner persons than the lords of the council, and the high commissioners, (among which was himself) employed to apprehend priests and delinquents ; from whence we conclude, that all the archbishop's prede-

\* Prynne, p. 541.

† Prynne, p. 448, 456, 559, 561.



cessors, since the reformation, had not half the intimacy with popish priests and jesuits as himself, and his harboring some of them that were native Englishmen, is within the statutes of 23 *Eliz.* cap. 1, and 27 *Eliz.* cap. 2. It is very certain, that the liberty the jesuits have enjoyed in prison, and elsewhere, was owing to his connivance; and though the archbishop is so happy as not to remember his checking the officers for their diligence in apprehending popish priests, yet his distinction between not *persecuting* papists, and *prosecuting* puritans, besides the quibble, is an unanswerable argument of his affection to the one beyond the other.||

The managers produced six or eight witnesses, to prove the archbishop's discountenancing and threatening such as were active in apprehending priests and jesuits. And tho' he would wash his hands of the affair of the pope's nuncio, residing here in character, and holding an intimate correspondence with the court, because himself did not appear in it, yet it is evident, that secretary *Windebank*, who was the archbishop's creature and confident, held an avowed correspondence with them. If he had no concern in this affair, should he not, out of regard to the protestant religion, and church of England, even to the hazard of his archbishopric, have made some open protestation, when *Gregorio Panzani* resided here in character two years; *Gregory Con*, a Scot, for three years and two months; and last of all, count *Rosetti*, till driven away by the present parliament.\*

It has been sufficiently proved, that the archbishop was concerned in the Spanish and French matches, and in the instructions given to the prince at his going to Spain, to satisfy the pope's nuncio about King *James's* having declared the pope to be *antichrist*; for the duke of *Buckingham* was the prince's director, and himself acknowledged that he was the duke's confessor.

And as to the late plots of *Habernfield*, we have owned, in our evidences, that at first he discovered it to the king, because he imagined it to be a plot of the *puritans*, but when he found the parties engaged in it to be papists, and among others, secretary *Windebank* and Sir *Toby Mathew* his own creatures, he then concealed his papers, called it a

sham plot, and brow-beat the informers, whereas he ought at least to have laid it before the parliament, that they might have sifted it to the bran. But that it was a real plot, his own Diary, together with our latter discoveries, fully prove; and his concealment of it, we conceive to be an high and treasonable offence, tending to subvert the protestant religion, and subject us to the church of Rome.||

Thus, we humbly conceive, we have made a satisfactory reply to all the archbishop's answers, and have fully made good the whole of our charge, namely, that *the archbishop has traiterously endeavored to destroy our civil liberties, and to introduce tyranny and arbitrary power; and, secondly, that he has endeavored to subvert the protestant religion established by law in these kingdoms, and to subject us to the church of Rome*; wherefore we do, in the name of all the commons of England, pray judgment against him as a traitor.

Before the archbishop withdrew from the bar, he moved the lords, that considering the length of his trial,\* and the distance of time between the several days of hearing, they would allow him a day that he might set before their lordships in one view, the whole of the commons' charge, and his defence; to which they condescended, and appointed Sept. 2, which was five weeks from the last day of his trial.|| When the archbishop appeared at the bar, he began with a moving address, beseeching their lordships to consider his calling, his age, his long imprisonment, his sufferings, his patience, and the sequestration of his estate. He then complained, (1.) Of the uncertainty and generality of the commons' charge. (2.) Of the short time that was allowed him for his answer. (3.) That he had been sift-

|| Prynne, p. 564, &c.

\* It had been drawn out through more than three months, and he had been often, when summoned before the lords, sent back unheard. This had, needlessly, exposed him to the scorns and revilings of the people, and to an expence which he could ill bear: for he never appeared but it cost him six or seven pounds per day. His estate and goods had been sequestered; and it was not till towards the end of his trial, and after repeated solicitations, that the commons allowed him two hundred pounds to support his necessary expences. Macaulay's History of England, vol. iv. p. 138, note. *Ed.*

|| Laud's History, p. 412, 419.

ed to the bran, and had his papers taken from him. (4.) That the things he had taken most pains in, were for the public good, and done at his own great expence, as the repair of St. Paul's, and the statutes of Oxford. (5.) That many of the witnesses were sectaries and schismatics, whereas, by the canon law, *no schismatic should be heard against his bishop*. He complained also of the number of witnesses produced against him, which were above one hundred and fifty; whereas the civil law says, that the judges should moderate things so as no man should be oppressed with the multitude of witnesses. (6.) That he had been charged with passionate and hasty words, which he hopes their lordships will pardon as human frailties. (7.) That other men's actions had been laid to his charge, as those of his chaplains, and the actions of the high commission and star chamber, which, he insists, cannot by any law be put upon him, it being a known rule, *Refertur ad universos quod publice fit per majorem partem*. He then went over the particular charges above-mentioned, and concluded with a request, that when the commons had replied to the facts, his council might be heard as to matters of law. The commons replied to the archbishop's speech, Sept. 11, and the same day his council delivered in these two queries, (1.) *Whether in all, or any of the articles charged against the archbishop, there be contained any treason by the established laws of the kingdom?* (2.) *Whether the impeachment and articles did contain such certainties and particularities as are required by law in cases of treason?*\* The lords sent down the queries to the commons; who, after they had referred them to a committee of lawyers, agreed that the archbishop's council might be heard to the first query, but not to the second. Accordingly, October 11, the archbishop being present at the bar, Mr. Herne proposed to argue these two general questions.†

(1.) "Whether there be at this day any other treason 'than what is enacted by the statute 25th Edward III: cap. 2, or enacted by some other subsequent statute?'"

(2.) "Whether any of the matters, in any of the articles charged against the archbishop, contain any of the

\* Laud's History, p. 422.

+ Ibid. p. 423.



‘treasons declared by that law, or enacted by any subsequent law?’”

And for the clearing of both these he humbly insisted, that an “*Endeavor to subvert the laws, the protestant religion, and the rights of parliament, which are the three general charges to which all the particulars alledged against the archbishop may be reduced, is not treason within the statute of 25 Edward III. nor any other particular statute.*”\*

In maintenance of this proposition, he contended, *first*, “that the particulars alledged against the archbishop were ‘not within the *letter* of the statute of the 25th *Edward III.* and then argued, that the statutes of this land ought ‘not to be construed by *equity* or *inference*, because they ‘are declarative laws, and were designed for the security ‘of the subject in his life, liberty, and estate; and because ‘since the time of *Henry IV.* no judgment has been given ‘in parliament for any treason not expressly contained, or ‘declared, in that or some other statute, but by *bill*; from ‘whence it will follow, that the particulars charged against ‘the archbishop, being only an *endeavor to subvert fundamental laws*, are of so great latitude and uncertainty, ‘that every action not warranted by law may be extended ‘to treason, though there is no particular statute to make ‘it so. If it be replied, that the statute of 25 *Edward III.* ‘takes notice of *compassing or imagining*, we answer, it ‘confines it to the death of the king; but an *endeavor to subvert the laws of the realm* is no determinate crime by ‘the laws of England, but has been esteemed an aggravation of a crime, and has been usually joined as the result ‘of some other offence below treason.”§

“The like may be observed to the second charge, of *endeavoring to subvert religion*; it is not treason by the ‘letter of any law established in this kingdom, for the statute of 1 *Edward VI. cap. 12.* makes it but felony to attempt an alteration of religion by force, which is the ‘worst kind of attempt.||

“As to the third charge, of *endeavoring to subvert the rights of parliament.* We insist on the same reply

\* Laud’s History, p. 424, 425. § Ibid. p. 427. || Ibid. p. 429.

‘that was made under the first head. We allow that by  
 ‘the statute of 5 *Jac. cap. 4*, it is provided that if any man  
 ‘shall put in practice to reconcile any of his majesty’s sub-  
 ‘jects to the pope or see of Rome, it shall be deemed *treason*;  
 ‘but we conceive this does not reach the archbishop,  
 ‘because (1.) He is charged only with an *endeavor* where-  
 ‘as in the statute it is *putting in practice*. (2.) Because  
 ‘the archbishop is charged with reconciling the church of  
 ‘England with the church of Rome, whereas in the statute  
 ‘it is reconciling any of his majesty’s subjects to the see  
 ‘of Rome; now reconciling *with*, may as well be constru-  
 ‘ed a reducing Rome to England, as England to Rome.

“Thus, says Mr. *Hearn*, we have endeavored to make  
 ‘it appear, that none of the matters in any of the articles  
 ‘charged, are treason within the letter of the law; indeed  
 ‘the crimes, as they are laid in the charge, are many and  
 ‘great, but their number cannot make them exceed their  
 ‘nature; and if they be but crimes and misdemeanors apart,  
 ‘below treason, they cannot be made treason by putting  
 ‘them together.”†

These arguments of the archbishop’s council staggered  
 the house of *lords*, nor could the managers for the commons  
 satisfy them in their reply; they had no doubts about the  
 truth of the facts, but *whether any of them were treason by  
 the laws of the land?*\*—this the judges very much ques-

† *Laud’s History*, p. 430.

\* We cannot allow ourselves to withhold here from our reader the  
 just and important remarks of a late biographer of the archbishop.  
 ‘It appears a great defect in the laws of a free and limited govern-  
 ‘ment, that an attempt to subvert the constitution and mode of govern-  
 ‘ment, should not be judicially deemed a capital offence, punishable as  
 ‘such. For, in a just and political sense, the man who endeavors to  
 ‘enslave his countrymen, to deprive them of their natural and legal  
 ‘rights and privileges, and instead of a free constitution of govern-  
 ‘ment, to introduce one that is arbitrary and despotic; such a man  
 ‘is undoubtedly guilty of as high a crime, and is as much a traitor to  
 ‘his country, as he who attempts to deprive the prince of the crown,  
 ‘and ought to be punished with equal severity.” *British Biography*,  
 vol. iv. p. 286. Nay, it may be added, that the severity of the pun-  
 ishment ought to be regulated by the more heinous guilt, which at-  
 taches itself to the former than to the latter conduct; by the latter  
 conduct the blow is aimed at the rights and prosperity of one person,  
 or at most of one family only; but the former conduct robs millions of

tioned, and therefore the lords deferred giving judgment, till the commons thought fit to take another method to obtain it.

Various are the accounts of the archbishop's behavior on his trial; his friends and admirers flatter him beyond measure, and said he perfectly triumphed over his accusers; and his *grace* seems to be of the same mind, when he tells us, that *all men magnified his answer to the house of commons, but he forbore to set down in what language, because it was high.*† Mr. *Prynne* allows, that “he made as full, as gallant, and pithy a defence, and spake as much for himself, as was possible for the wit of man to invent; and that with so much art, sophistry, vivacity, oratory, audacity, and confidence, without the least blush, or acknowledgment of guilt in any thing, as argued him rather obstinate than innocent, impudent than penitent, and a far better orator and sophister than protestant or christian.”|| But then he imputes his boldness to the king's pardon, which he had in his pocket.

Bishop *Burnet* is of opinion, that “in most of the particulars the archbishop made but frivolous excuses; as, that he was but *one of many*,\* who either in council, star-chamber, or high commission, voted illegal things. Now though this was true, yet a *chief minister*, and one in high favor, determines the rest so much, that they are little better than machines acted by him. On other occasions he says, the thing was proved but by one witness. Now

their rights, and involves, in its effects, generations to come. Nor does it lessen the guilt, if men, instead of being the agents of prerogative, are the tools of influence; if, instead of being awed into a subserviency to the views of despotism, they are bought over to measures inimical to the liberties of the people. *Ed.*

† *Laud's History*, p. 441.

|| *Prynne*, p. 462.

\* To what bishop *Burnet* observes on this plea, it is pertinent to add the remarks of a late writer: “that if it were admitted, it would always be impracticable to bring a wicked minister of state to justice, for any proceedings in the privy council, to which the rest concurred; and that it would not be thought a proper justification of criminals of an inferior order, in any court of justice, if they were to alledge, that there were other persons accomplices in the crimes with which they were accused.” *British Biography*, vol. iv. p. 285. *Ed.*



‘how strong soever this defence may be in law, it is of no force in an appeal to the world; for if a thing be true, it is no matter how full or defective the proof is.’†

The archbishop himself has informed us of his great patience under the hard usage he met with at his trial; but his Diary furnishes too many examples to the contrary, for it appears from thence, that he sometimes gave the witnesses very rude language at the bar, insinuating to the court, that many of them were perjured; that their evidence was the effect of malice, envy, and a thirst after his blood. Sometimes he threatened them with the judgments of God, and once he was going to bind his sin upon one of them, not to be forgiven till he asked pardon; but he recovered himself. He is pleased sometimes to observe, that his crimes were proved only by *one witness*;§ and yet at last he complains that he was oppressed with numbers, no less than one hundred and fifty,‡ and calls them “a pack of such witnesses, as were never produced against any man of his place and calling; *pursuivants, messengers, pillory-men, bawds*; and such as had shifted their religion to and again.”|| And yet there were among them, men of the best fashion and quality in the kingdom, as Sir *H. Vane*, sen. Sir *H. Mildmay*, Sir *Wm. Balfore*, Sir *Nath. Brent*, vicar-general; sundry aldermen of the city of London, and many excellent divines, as Dr. *Featly*, Dr. *Haywood* the archbishop’s chaplain, Mr. *Dell* his secretary, Mr. *Osbaldiston*, and others of an equal if not superior character. When his grace was checked at the bar for reflecting upon the witnesses, and put in mind by the managers that some of them were aldermen, some gentlemen, and some men of quality, he replied smartly, “*That is nothing, there is not an active separatist in England but his hand is against me; both gentlemen, aldermen, and men of all conditions, are separated from the church of England, and I would to God some of my judges were not.*”\*

† History of his Life, p. 50, or p. 68, edition in 12mo. at Edinburgh.

§ Laud’s History, p. 237.

‡ He also charged *Prynne* with keeping a school of instruction for the witnesses, and tampering with them in a most shameful manner. Macaulay’s History of England, vol. iv. p. 137, note. Ed.

|| Laud’s History, p. 417.

\* Ibid. p. 434.

After this it can hardly be expected, that the *managers for the commons* should escape his *grace's* censure; it must be admitted, that in the course of their arguments they made use of some harsh expressions, which nothing but the character they sustained could excuse;† but it was no argument of the archbishop's patience and discretion, to fight them at their own weapons. The managers were, serjeant *Maynard*, one of the ablest lawyers of his age; he lived to be the father of his profession; and when the prince of *Orange* [afterwards King *William III.*] complimented him upon his having outlived all his brethren of the law, he made this handsome reply, that if it had not been for the wonderful *revolution* that his highness had brought about, he should have outlived the law itself. He managed the first part of the evidence March 13th, 16th, 18th, and 28th. "This gentleman (says the archbishop) 'pleaded, though strongly, yet fairly, against me.'"\*

Serjeant *Wild* was the son of serjeant *George Wild*, of *Droitwich* in *Worcestershire*; he was afterwards reader of the *Inner-Temple*, a great lawyer and of unblemished morals. After the restoration of King *Charles II.* he was made lord chief baron, and esteemed a grave and venerable judge.§ He managed that part of the evidence which

† "Like true lawyers," says Mrs. Macaulay, "they played their parts in baiting the unhappy prisoner with the most acrimonious and insulting language; like true lawyers, they took all the unfair advantages which their offices and other opportunities procured them; and like true lawyers, they put a forced and unwarrantable construction on all the facts which they cited against him." *History of England*, vol. iv. p. 137, 8vo. *Ed.*

\* *Laud's History*, p. 330.

§ The character of serjeant *Wild* is impeached, and the above account of his preferment is shewn to be inaccurate, by Dr. *Grey*. He was made Lord Chief Baron of the Exchequer, (see *Whitlocke's Memorials*, p. 337,) 12th October, 1648. In the protectorate of *Cromwell* he retired, and did not act. During the Rump parliament he was restored to the Exchequer. After king *Charles II.* returned, he lived nine years in a retired condition. *Wood's Athenæ Oxon.* vol. i. p. 803 On the authority of *Wood*, Dr. *Grey* charges him with having received 1000*l.* out of the privy purse at Derbyhouse, for the condemnation of Captain *Burley*, at Winchester, for causing a drum to beat up for God and king *Charles*, in the isle of Wight, in order to rescue his captive king. The reader will judge what credit is due to this charge, when he is informed, that Capt. *Burley* was convicted, sen-



concerned religion, May 20, 27, June 6, 11, 17, 20, and 27, July 20, and 24, but "this gentleman, says the archbishop, though he had language good enough sometimes, he had little or no sense, I had a character given me before of him, which I forbear to express, but by his proceedings with me I found it exactly true."||

*Samuel Browne*, esq. was an able and grave lawyer. In the reign of king *Charles II.* he was knighted and made lord chief justice of the common pleas; he summed up the whole evidence at the lords' bar. "His behavior towards the archbishop was decent and civil, but his pleadings (according to his grace) very unfair."†

*Robert Nicolas*, esq. pressed the archbishop very hard, and therefore no wonder that he was displeased with him. The archbishop allows that he had some sense, but extreme

tenced and executed, according both to *Wood* and *Whitlocke*, [*Memoirs*, p. 290,] in 1647, some months before serjeant *Wild* was made a judge. Another charge brought against him, from lord *Clarendon* and *Wood*, is, that he received another 1000*l.* for the acquittance of major *Rolph*, who had a design to murder or poison the king. That the reader may form his judgment on this charge, we will state the proceedings on the affair of major *Rolph*, as they are chronologically given by *Whitlocke*.—1648. June 23. A charge by *Osborne* against Col. *Hammond* and Capt. *Rolfe*, was ordered to be printed. July 11, a letter was received from Col. *Hammond*, desiring that *Osborne's* charge against Mr. *Rolfe* may come to a speedy hearing, it reflecting so highly upon the army and upon him; and being an horrid scandal, whereof he clears his own innocency and the officers of the army and Mr. *Rolfe*. Accommodations were ordered for Mr. *Rolfe*. August 1, Major *Rolfe* was bailed. August 12, At a conference with the lords about Mr. *Rolfe*, the commons alledged, that Mr. *Rolfe* was committed by their lordships without any cause in the warrant. and they found reason to clear him. Aug. 31. The grand jury, at Southampton, found the bill against Major *Rolfe*, *ignoramus*. Sept. 9, There was an order for 150*l.* for Mr. *Rolfe* for his unjust imprisonment. *Memoirs*, p. 310. All these transactions appear to have taken place independently of serjeant *Wild*, and before he was preferred to be a judge. To these particulars it may be added, that the king himself acquitted Col. *Hammond*, involved in the same accusation with *Rolfe*, and professed a perfect confidence in him as a man of honor and trust. *Memoirs*, p. 315. The stress, which lord *Clarendon* and after him Mr. *Eachard* and Dr. *Grey*, have laid on this charge against serjeant *Wild*, will apologise for so minute an investigation of a matter, not essentially connected with the general truth of Mr. *Neal's* History. *Ed.*

|| *Laud's Hist.* p. 320, 320.

& *Ibid.* p. 390.



virulent and foul language. He managed the second and fourth branches of the evidence, April 16, May 14, July 29. This gentleman happening to call the archbishop *pander to the whore of Babylon*; the archbishop bids him remember, "that one of his zealous witnesses against the 'whore of Babylon got all his means by being a *pander* to 'other lewd women, and was not long since taken in bed 'with one of his wife's maids. Good Mr. *Nicolas* (says 'he) do not dispense with all whores but the whore of Bab-'ylon!"||

As for Mr. *Hill* the other manager, he is called *Consul Bibulus*, because he said nothing. Upon the whole the archbishop is of opinion, that the managers for the commons sought his blood, "and made false constructions, for 'which (says he) I am confident they shall answer at another bar, and for something else in these proceedings."§

Such was the unhappy spirit of this prelate, who, "though 'he had seen the violent effects of his ill counsels, and had 'been so long shut up, and so much at leisure to reflect 'upon what had passed in the hurry of passion, and in the 'exaltation of his prosperity, yet (as bishop *Burnet* observes) he does not in any one part of his *Diary* acknowledge his own errors, nor mix any wise or pious reflections upon the unhappy steps he had made." It was, no doubt, a great mortification to his spirit, to be exposed to the people, and to wait sometimes an hour or two before he was called to the bar; but as for his charity, and patience under his sufferings, I must leave it with the reader to form his own judgment.

While the proceedings against the archbishop were at a stand, by reason of the lords being dissatisfied, *whether the facts proved against him were treason by statute law*; the citizens of London assembled, and presented a petition to the house of commons, October 28th, signed with a great number of hands, praying for speedy justice a-

|| *Laud's History*, p. 390.

§ *Ibid.* p. 271.

§ It was greatly against the archbishop, that the management of the trial was assigned to *Prynne*, a man of sour and austere principles; whom *Laud* had made his enemy by the severe sentence of the star-chamber; and who, by his behavior on this occasion, shewed, that he remembered and resented the share *Laud* had in inflicting his past sufferings. *Ed.*

gainst delinquents, and particularly against the archbishop; which was no doubt an artful contrivance of his enemies. The commons, to prevent all further delays, determined not to press the lords for judgment upon the trial, but ordered a bill of attainder to be brought in; and when it had been twice read, the archbishop was brought to the bar of the house of commons, to hear the evidence on which it proceeded, and to make what further defence he thought proper. Mr. *Browne* summed up the charge Nov. 2, and the archbishop had nine days given him to prepare his defence. Nov. 11, he spoke for himself some hours at the bar of the house of commons, and Mr. *Browne* replied before the archbishop withdrew; after which the bill of attainder passed the house the very same day, with but one dissenting voice, and that not upon the substance of the charge, but upon the manner of proceeding. The bill being sent up to the lords, they made an order Dec. 4, *That all books, writings, &c. concerning the archbishop's trial, should be brought in to the clerk of the parliament*, which being done, they examined over again, all the heads and principal parts of the evidence, and voted each particular as they went forward; so tender were they of the life of this prelate, and so careful to maintain the honor and justice of their proceedings. When they had gone through the whole, they voted him guilty of all facts charged against him, in three branches, namely, *guilty of endeavoring to subvert the laws;—of endeavoring to overthrow the protestant religion,—and the rights of parliaments.* After this they sent a message to the commons, to desire them to answer the argument of the archbishop's council, as to the point of law, which they accordingly did at a conference Jan. 2, when serjeant *Wild*, Mr. *Browne*, and Mr. *Nicolas*, having given the reasons of the commons for their attainder, the lords were satisfied, and Jan. 4, passed the bill,\* whereby it was ordained, that he should suffer death as in cases of high treason. To stop the con-

\* Dr. *Grey* will not allow this decree of the commons to be called "a bill." It was, in his opinion, an ordinance only, and that an imperfect one; because it was not supported by the royal assent, and therefore, he says, had no legal force at all. *Ed.*

sequence of this attainder, the archbishop produced the king's pardon under the *great seal*, signed April 19, 13th *Car.* but it was over-ruled by both houses, 1. Because it was granted before conviction. And 2. If it had been subsequent, yet in the present case of treason they argued, that the king could not pardon a judgment, of parliament, especially as the nation was in a state of war; for if the king's pardon was a protection, not a deserter, nor a spy, nor an incendiary of any kind against the parliament, would have suffered in his life or liberty.\*

All the favor therefore the archbishop could obtain, was, upon his petition, to have his sentence altered from hanging to being beheaded on Tower-Hill, which was appointed to be on Friday, Jan. 10, when the archbishop being conducted to the scaffold, attended by his chaplain Dr. *Stern*, and Mr. *Marshal* and *Palmer*, sent by the parliament,† read his last speech to the people,‡ which was a sort of sermon from *Heb. xii. 2.* *Let us run with patience the race that is set before us, looking unto Jesus, the author and finisher of our faith, who, for the joy that was set before him, endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God.* In which he acknowledges himself to have been a great sinner; but having ransacked every corner of his heart, he thanks God, that he has not found any of his sins deserving death by any of the known laws of the kingdom, though he does not charge his judges, because they are to proceed according to evidence.—He thanks God that he

\* Whitlocke's Memoirs, p. 117.

† It marks a virulent and bitter spirit in the conduct of this execution, that of the three clergymen, whose consolatory attendance and service at his exit *Land* petitioned for, but one was allowed him; and this under the restraint of the inspection of two ministers appointed by parliament. *Macaulay's History*, vol. iv. p. 141. *Ed.*

‡ “In this very performance,” observes Mrs. *Macaulay*, “which was executed with great art of composition, and likewise in his remarks on the charge which the Scots brought against him, he plainly shews that his adversity had not altered his opinions, nor corrected any one of his most mischievous prejudices; and that, had accident re-established him in his former plenitude of power, he would have run to the end of his days, the same persecuting course for which he now suffered.” *History of England*, vol. iv. p. 140. *Ed.*



is as quiet within as ever he was in his life, and hopes that his cause in heaven will look of another color than it does here. It is clamored against me (says he) that I designed to bring in popery, but I pray God that the pope does not come in, by means of these sectaries which clamor so much against me. As for the *king*, he assured the world, that he was as sound a protestant as any man in the kingdom, and would venture as freely for it. He complains of the citizens for gathering hands to petitions, and particularly against himself, whereby they were bringing the guilt of innocent blood upon themselves and their city. He laments the ruins of the hierarchy, and concludes with declaring himself a true protestant, according to the church of England established by law, and takes it upon his death, that *he never endeavored the subversion of the laws of the realm, nor any change of the protestant religion into popish superstition; nor was he an enemy to parliaments.*

In his last prayer he desires that God would give him patience to die for his honor, for the king's happiness, and the church of England. He then prays for the preservation of the king in his just rights; for the parliament in their ancient and just power; for the church, that it may be settled in truth and peace, and in its patrimony; and for the people, that they may enjoy their ancient laws, and other liberties; and then, having forgiven his enemies, he concluded with the Lord's prayer. After which he gave his paper to Dr. *Stern*, saying, Doctor, I give you this, to shew your fellow chaplains, that they may see how I am gone out of the world, and God's blessing and his mercy be upon them. When the scaffold was cleared, he pulled off his doublet, and said, *God's will be done, I am willing to go out of the world; no man can be more willing to send me out.* Then turning to the executioner he gave him some money, and bid him do his office in mercy; he then kneeled down, and after a short prayer, laid his head on the block, and said, *Lord Jesus receive my spirit*; which being the sign, the executioner did his office at one blow. || The arch-

|| Mrs. *Macaulay's* reflections on this event appear to carry weight and pertinence with them. "As the justice of the country had been something satisfied by the death of the criminal *Strafford*, it would

bishop's corpse was put into a coffin, and by the permission of parliament buried in Barkin church, with the service of the church read over him. The inscription upon the coffin was this, *In hac cistula conduntur Exuvie Gulielmi Laud, archiepiscopi Cantuariensis, qui securi percussus immortalitatem adiit, die x<sup>o</sup> Januarii, ætatis suæ 72, archiepiscopatus xii.* But after the restoration, his body was removed to Oxford, and deposited with great solemnity in a brick vault, according to his last will and testament, near the altar of the chapel of St. John Baptist college, July 24, 1663.

Thus died Dr. *William Laud*, archbishop of Canterbury, primate of all England, and metropolitan; some time chancellor of the Universities of Oxford and Dublin, one of the commissioners of his majesty's exchequer, and privy counsellor to the king, in the seventy-second year of his age, and twelfth of his archiepiscopal translation. He was of low stature, and a ruddy countenance; his natural temper was severe and uncourtly, his spirit active and restless, which pushed him on to the most hazardous enterprises. His conduct was rash and precipitate, for, according to Dr. *Heylin*, he attempted more alterations in the church in one year, than a prudent man would have done in a great many. His counsels in *state affairs* were high and arbitrary, for he was at the head of all the illegal projects, of ship-money, loans, monopolies, star-chamber fines, &c. which were the ruin of the king and constitution.

‘have done honor to the parliament to have left this aged prelate the example of their mercy, rather than to have made him the monument of their justice. Perpetual imprisonment, with no more than a decent maintenance, and the deprivation of his archiepiscopal function, (which of course followed the abolishment of that kind of church government) would have taken away his abilities of doing farther mischief; and the present prosperous state of the parliament affairs rendered his death a circumstance of no importance to the public. It is plain that he fell a sacrifice to the intolerant principle of the presbyterians, a sect who breathed as fiery a spirit of persecution as himself. It is farther to be observed of this prelate, that he is the only individual of that high office in the church of England (*Cranmer*, the martyr, excepted) who ever suffered death, by the hands of the executioner; though the turbulent ambition of his order have disturbed the peace of society from the first period of the church power to the present day.” History of England, vol. iv. p. 113, 44. Ed.

His maxims in the church were no less severe, for he sharpened the spiritual sword, and drew it against all sorts of offenders, intending (as lord *Clarendon* expresses it) that the discipline of the church should be felt as well as spoken of. There had not been such a crowd of business in the *high commission court* since the reformation, nor so many large fines imposed, as under the prelate's administration, with little or no abatement, because they were assigned to the repair of St. Paul's which gave occasion to an unlucky proverb, that the *church was repaired with the sins of the people.*

As to the archbishop's religion, he declared himself, upon the scaffold, a protestant, according to the constitution of the church of England, but with more charity to the church of Rome than to the foreign protestants; and though he was an avowed enemy to sectaries and fanatics of all sorts, yet he had a great deal of superstition in his *make*, as appears from those passages in his diary, in which he takes notice of his dreams, of the falling down of pictures, of the bleeding of his nose, of auspicious and inauspicious days of the year, and of the position of the stars; a variety of which may be collected out of that performance.

His Grace must be allowed to have had a considerable share of knowledge, and to have been a learned man, though he was more a man of business than of letters.\* He was a great benefactor to the college in which he was educated, enriching it with a variety of valuable manu-

\* "Just the contrary:" says bishop *Warburton*. "He did not understand business at all, as fully appears from the historian's account of his civil administration, and was a great master of religious controversy." Mr. Hume, speaking of *Laud's* learning and morals, expresses himself in the following manner: "This man was virtuous, if severity of manners alone, and abstinence from pleasure, could deserve that name. He was learned, if polemical knowledge could entitle him to that praise."

History of Great-Britain, vol. v. p. 493. *Ed.*

† These manuscripts, which he had purchased at a prodigious expence, were in Hebrew, Syriac, Chaldee, Ægyptian, Æthiopian, Armenian, Arabic, Persian, Turkish, Russian, Chinese, Japanese, Greek, Latin, Italian, French, Saxon, English, and Irish. The archbishop also founded an Arabic lecture in the University of Oxford, which began to be read in 1686. He obtained the advowson of the



scripts, besides five hundred pounds in money. § He gave eight hundred pounds to the repair of the cathedral of St. Paul, and sundry other legacies of the like nature. But with all his accomplishments he was a cruel persecutor, as long as he was in power, and the chief incendiary in the war between the king and parliament, the calamities of which are in a great measure chargeable upon him. "That which gave me the strongest prejudices against him (says bishop *Burnet*) is, that, in his *Diary*, after he had seen the ill effects of his violent counsels, and had been so long shut up, and so long at leisure to reflect on what had passed in the hurry of passion, in the exaltation of his prosperity, he does not in any one part of that great work acknowledge his own errors, nor mix any wise or serious reflections on the ill usage he met with, or the unhappy steps he had made." The bishop adds withal, \* "that he was a learned, sincere, and zealous man, regular in his own life, and humble in his private deportment, but hot and indiscreet, eagerly pursuing such matters as were either very inconsiderable or mischievous; such as settling the communion table by the east wall of the church, bowing to it, and calling it an *altar*, suppressing the *walloon* privileges, breaking of lectures, and encouraging of sports on the Lord's-day, &c. His severity in the star chamber, and in the high commission court; but above all, his violent, and indeed inexcusable injustice, in the prosecution of bishop *Williams*, were such visible blemishes, that nothing but the putting him to death in so unjust a manner could have raised his character. His *Diary* represents him as an abject fawner upon the duke of *Buckingham*, and as a superstitious regarnder of dreams; †

living of St. Lawrence in Reading for St. John's college. He procured a charter for Reading, and founded, and endowed with 200l. per annum, an hospital in that town. Oxford owed also to his influence a large charter, confirming its ancient and investing it with new privileges. It is but justice due to his memory to record, to the honor of *Laud*, these acts of munificence and public utility.

Goadby's *British Biography*, vol. iv. p. 289, 90. *Ed.*

§ *Diary*, p. 56.

\* *History of his Life*, vol. i. p. 49, 50, or Scotch edit. p. 68.

† "His superstitions," says Mrs. *Macaulay*, "were as contemptible as those that belonged to the weakest of women." His *Diary* fell

‘his defence of himself, written with so much care when  
‘he was in the Tower, is a very mean performance; and  
‘his friends have really lessened him; *Heylin* by  
‘writing his life, and *Wharton* by publishing his vin-  
‘dication of himself.” Mr. *Rapin* adds, “Let the archbi-  
‘shop’s favorers say what they please, he was one of the  
‘chief authors of the troubles that afflicted England; 1st,  
‘by supporting with all his might the principles of that ar-  
‘bitrary power which the court strove for several years to  
‘establish. 2dly, By using too much strictness and rigid-  
‘ness in the observance of trifles in divine service, and  
‘in compelling every body to conform themselves thereto.”†  
To which I would beg leave to add, that since nothing re-  
lating to the doctrine or discipline of the church of Eng-  
land established by law was objected to him at his trial,  
but only certain innovations in the church, without or con-  
trary to law, I cannot conceive with what propriety of lan-  
guage his friends and admirers have canonized him as  
the *blessed martyr of the church of England*.†

into the hands of *Prynne*, in the search of the archbishop’s papers, and  
was published by him during his trial. This his *grace* complained of,  
as done to abash and disgrace him. The publication of it, certainly,  
did not tend to soften the prejudices against him, or to raise him in the  
opinion of the public. It was done by an order of a committee of the  
house of commons. *Ed.*

† *Rapin*. vol. i. p. 507, folio.

† Dr. *Grey* calls Mr. *Neal*’s delineation of archbishop *Laud*’s char-  
acter, “a long invective,” and opposes to it lord *Clarendon*’s charac-  
ter of this prelate. Facts will shew, who has drawn it with truth:  
and by facts we may decide concerning a more recent delineation of it  
by the pen of Mrs. *Macaulay*. “*Laud*, a superstitious churchman,  
‘who had studied little else than canon law and the doating opinions  
‘of the Fathers, was entirely ignorant of the utility, equity, and  
‘beauty of civil and religious liberty; was himself imposed on before  
‘he endeavored to impose on others; and became a zealous instru-  
‘ment of tyranny, even for conscience sake. The principles of reli-  
‘gion, on which he uniformly acted, were as noxious to the peace of  
‘society, as were the principles of the papists; the same want of char-  
‘ity, the same exercise of cruelty, the same arrogance of dominion,  
‘were common to both. Utterly unacquainted with the simplicity,  
‘charity, and meekness of the gospel, his character was void of hu-  
‘mility and forgiveness; nor had he other rules to judge of men’s de-  
‘servings, but as they were more or less attached to the power of the  
‘church. Upon the whole, his character serves as an eminent exam-  
‘ple, to shew that extensive learning and abilities are not incompati-  
‘ble with a narrow judgment; and that in all the catalogue of human



The last, and most memorable transaction of this year, was the treaty of Uxbridge. His majesty had sent the two houses sundry propositions for peace last summer, which took them up a great deal of time to form into propositions for his majesty's assent. The commissioners were two lords, four commoners, and those of the Scots commissioners; they arrived at Oxford Nov. 26, but though the king had given them a safe conduct, Mr. *Whitlocke* observes, they met with very rude treatment from the populace, who saluted them as they passed along the streets with the names of *traitors, rogues, and rebels*, throwing stones and dirt into their coaches; when they came to their inn, they were insulted by the soldiers, so that they were obliged to shut up the doors till the king ordered them a guard. When they delivered their propositions, his majesty received them coldly;\* and because they were only to receive his answer, told them, *a letter-carrier might have done as well.*† Next day his majesty gave them his answer in writing sealed up; and when they desired to see it, he replied with a frown, *what is it to you, who are but to carry what I send; if I will send the song of Robin Hood or Little John, you must carry it.* But at length they obtained a copy, which was

‘frailties, there are none which more corrupt the heart, or deprave the understanding, than the follies of religion.’ History of England, vol. iv. p. 134. 142-3. Were it necessary for the editor of Mr. *Neal* to subjoin his ideas of *Laud*’s character, he would be inclined to give it in three words; as formed of SUPERSTITION, TYRANNY, and INTOLERANCE. *Ed.*

\* This, as Dr. *Grey* observes, is not expressly said by *Whitlocke*; whose words are, “The next day they (*i. e.* the commissioners) had access to his majesty, who used them civilly, and gave to every one of them his hand to kiss; but he seemed to shew more disdain to the Scots commissioners than to any others of their company.” On the evening of the same day, as *Hollis* and *Whitlocke* were paying a visit to the earl of *Lindsey*, the king came into the chamber, and treated those gentlemen with extraordinary respect, entered into a free conversation with them, and asked their advice as friends. Memorials, p. 108. *Rushworth* says, that “the king received the commissioners very obligingly, but seemed more to slight the Scots commissioners than any of the rest.” vol. v. p. 841. Even here, though the language of *Rushworth* is more descriptive of a courteous and complaisant reception, than is that of *Whitlocke*, there is yet an intimation of something in the king’s manner to all the commissioners, that indicated coldness and indifference, and it justifies Mr. *Neal*’s representation of it. *Ed.* † *Whitlocke*, p. 106, 107, 109, 110.



only to desire a safe conduct for the duke of *Lenox* and earl of *Southampton* to come to London with his majesty's answer; but the letter not being directed to the parliament of England, the houses would not consent but upon that condition. The king's council advised him to yield, which did not prevail, till his majesty had found out an evasion, and entered it upon record in the council-books, as appears by his letter to the queen, dated Jan. 2, in which he says, "That his *calling* them a parliament did not imply his *acknowledging* them as such; upon which construction, and no other (says he)\* I called them, as it is registered in the council-books, and if there had been but two of my opinion (says the king) I would not have done it."|| In another intercepted letter to the queen, he tells her, "he could not prevail with his parliament at Oxford to vote those at Westminster no parliament, but assures her he would not make peace without *her approbation*, nor go one jot beyond the paper she sent him."§ In another the king informs the queen, "that the parliament were sending him propositions for peace, which, *if she likes*, he thinks may be the best way for settlement as things stand;" so that the fate of England was to be determin-

\* Whitlocke, p. 277.

|| Dr. Grey aims, here, to impeach not the accuracy only, but the veracity of Mr. Neal; whose account of the matter does, indeed, seem to imply, that the king was at length prevailed on to *direct* his answer to the parliament at Westminster: whereas Dr. Grey shews, from Rapin and Rushworth, that his majesty put no direction at all on it, and the commissioners accepted it without a direction; and that therefore the charge of evasion against the king was without ground. But Dr. Grey contents himself with a partial account and view of this matter, and does not apprise his reader, that Rapin also mentions the expedient by which the king reconciled to himself a compliance with the requisition of the parliament: the fact, in its full extent, was, that the commissioners, though they objected to the form and the want of direction to the king's message; yet did deliver it to the parliament at Westminster, and was thanked for their services. But then the like exceptions were made by both houses, and it was resolved not to grant the safe conduct it asked, nor to receive his majesty's answer, unless he should send to the parliament of England assembled at Westminster. The trumpeter went away with a letter to this effect, Dec. 3, and returned on the 7th with an answer from the king, *acknowledging* those at Westminster to be the parliament. Rushworth, vol. v. p. 843, 44.

§ Rushworth, vol. v. p. 943.

ed by the queen and her popish council. Besides, his majesty was unhappily elevated at this time by the divisions at Westminster, which produced the new modeling the army; and with a false and romantic account of the successes of the marquis of *Montross* in Scotland, which were so magnified, that it was expected the Scots must immediately march back into their own country; whereas, in reality, they were not so considerable as to oblige them to draw off a single regiment.

In this situation of affairs it was agreed, according to the proposals of the king's commissioners, that there should be a treaty of peace at Uxbridge, to commence Jan. 30, 1645, and to continue twenty days.

There were sixteen commissioners for the king, (*viz.*) nine lords, six commoners, and one divine; twelve for the parliament, and ten for the Scots, and one divine, (*viz.*) Mr. *Henderson*; the king's divine was Dr. *Steward*, who was assisted by Dr. *Sheldon*, *Laney*, *Fern*, *Potter*, and *Hammond*. Assistant divines for the parliament were Mr. *Vines*, *Marshal*, *Cheynel*, and *Chiesly*. These with their retinue, to the number of one hundred and eight persons, were included in the safe conduct.

The propositions to be treated of were *religion*, the *militia*, and *Ireland*; each of which were to be debated three days successively, till the twenty days were expired.

The treaty was preceded by a day of fasting and prayer on both sides for a blessing, but was interrupted the very first day, by a sermon preached occasionally in the church of Uxbridge by Mr. *Love*, then preacher to the garrison of Windsor, wherein he had said, that they [his majesty's commissioners] *came thither with hearts full of blood, and that there was as great a distance between this treaty and peace, as between heaven and hell*. The commissioners having complained of him next day, the parliament commissioners laid it before the two houses, who sent for him to London, where he gave this account of the affair; that the people being under a disappointment at their lecture, he was desired unexpectedly to give them a sermon; which was the same he had preached at Windsor the day before.\* He admits, that he cautioned the people not to have too great a dependance upon the treaty, be-

\* Dugdale's Treaty of Uxbridge, p. 764.

cause "whilst our enemies (says he) go on in their wicked practices, and we keep to our principles, we may as soon make fire and water to agree; and I had almost said, reconcile heaven and hell, as their spirits and ours. They must grow better, or we must grow worse, before it is possible for us to agree." He added further, "That there was a generation of men that carried blood and revenge in their hearts against the well-affected in the nation, who hated not only their bodies but their souls, and in their cups would drink an health to their damnation." Though there might be some truth in what the preacher said, yet these expressions were unbecoming any private man in so nice a conjuncture; he was therefore confined to his house during the treaty, and then discharged.\*

It was too evident, that neither party came to the treaty with a healing spirit. The king's commissioners were under such restraints, that little good was to be expected from them; and the parliament commissioners would place no manner of confidence in his majesty's promises, nor abate a tittle of the fullest security for themselves and the constitution.† The king therefore, in his letter to the queen of Jan 22, assures her of the utter improbability that this

\* Dr. Grey opposes to the account, which Mr. Neal gives of the proceedings against Mr. Love. lord Clarendon's representation, which states only; that the commissioners seemed troubled at the charge against him, promised to examine it, and engaged that he should be severely punished; but afterwards confessed that they had no authority to punish him, but that they had caused him to be sharply reprehended and sent out of town: "This," his lordship adds, "was all that could be obtained, so unwilling were they to discountenance any man who was willing to serve them." History of the Rebellion, vol. ii. p. 579. Dr. Grey remarks here, "This is lord Clarendon's account, who was himself a commissioner of that treaty." The remark is evidently made to intimate that Mr. Neal's account is not true. It is to be regretted, that he has not, in this instance, referred to his authority. But it is certain, that lord Clarendon does not relate the whole of the commissioners' answer or conduct. The former, according to Rushworth, vol. v. p. 865, and Dugdale, p. 765, was a promise "to represent the complaint against Mr. Love to the parliament, who would proceed therein according to justice;" and the latter, it appears by Whitlocke, was correspondent to this engagement: "for the parliament, having notice of Mr. Love's sermon from the commissioners, sent for him and referred the business to an examination." Memorials, p. 123. Ed.

† Rapin. vol. ii. p. 549. folio.



present treaty should produce a peace, “considering the ‘great and strange difference, if not contrariety of grounds, ‘that were between the rebels’ propositions and his; and ‘that I cannot alter mine, nor will they ever theirs, but by ‘force.’”§

We shall only just mention the propositions relating to the *militia* and *Ireland*, our principal view being to religion. The king’s commissioners proposed to put the militia *into the hands of trustees for three years, half to be named by the king, and half by the parliament, and then to revert absolutely to the crown, on pain of high treason.* But the parliament commissioners replied, that by the king’s naming half the commissioners, the militia would be rendered inactive, and that after three years they should be in a worse condition than before the war; they therefore proposed, that *the parliament should name the commissioners for seven years, and then to be settled as the king and parliament should agree, or else to limit their nomination to three years after the king and parliament should declare the kingdom to be in a settled peace.*|| It had been easy to form this proposition, so as both parties might have complied with honor and safety, if they had been in earnest for an accommodation; but his majesty’s commissioners could yield no further.

As to *Ireland*, the king’s commissioners justified his majesty’s proceedings in the cessation, and in sending for the rebels over to fill up his armies; and when the commissioners on the other side put them in mind of his majesty’s solemn promises to leave that affair to the parliament, and to have those rebels punished according to law; the others replied, “they wished it was in his majesty’s power to

§ The quotation from Rapon, as Dr. Grey intimates. is not exact, or full. The passage stands thus; “I cannot alter mine nor will they ‘ever theirs, till they be out of hope to prevail with force, which a little assistance, by thy means, will soon make them be; for I am confident, if ever I could put them to a defensive, (which a reasonable ‘sum of money would do) they would be easily brought to reason.”—Rushworth, vol vii. p. 944. As the passage now appears at its full length, though the reader should judge Mr. Neal’s manner of quoting it inaccurate, he will perceive that he has truly given the idea and meaning of the King: who thought of nothing but of putting the *parliament* out of hope of prevailing *by force*, by carrying against them a *superior force.* Ed.

¶ Rapon, p. 512.

‘punish all rebellion according as it deserved; but since ‘it was otherwise, he must condescend to treaties and to ‘all other expedients necessary to reduce his rebellious ‘subjects to their duty and obedience.’† Admirable arguments to heal divisions and induce the parliament to put the sword into the king’s hands!§

The article of *religion* was, in the opinion of lord *Clarendon*, of less consequence with many in the parliament house, for if they could have obtained a *security for their lives and fortunes*, he apprehends this might have been accommodated though, considering the influence of the Scots, and the growing strength of the presbyterian and independent parties, it is very much to be doubted. However, this being the first point debated in the treaty, and a church controversy, it will be proper to represent the instructions on both sides. While this was upon the carpet, Dr. *Steward*, clerk of the closet, and a commissioner for the king, sat covered without the bar, behind the commissioners; as did Mr. *Henderson* behind those of the parliament. The assistant divines were present in places appointed for them, opposite to each other.

His majesty’s instructions to his commissioners on the head of religion were these: “Here (says the king) the ‘government of the church will be the chief question, ‘wherein two things are to be considered, *conscience* and ‘*policy*; for the *first*, I must declare, that I cannot yield

† Clarendon, vol. ii. p. 592.

§ Bishop Warburton treats this with contempt, calling it “a foolish declamation. The subject here was Ireland, not the militia.” So Mr. Neal represents it; but the force of his remark turns on the propriety of *putting the sword into the king’s hands*; and whether the sword was worn by the English militia or the Irish rebels, in either case it was an object of fear and jealousy to the parliament. The reader will not be displeased to see how the bishop becomes advocate for the king on the charge here alledged of breaking his promise to leave the Irish war to the parliament. His answer, *i. e.* the king’s, says his grace, is to this effect, and I think it very pertinent. “It is ‘true, I made this promise. but it was when the parliament was my ‘friend, not my enemy. They might be then intrusted with my quar- ‘rel; but it would be madness to think they now can. To prevent, ‘therefore, their making a treaty with the Irish, and in their distresses ‘bringing over their troops against me, I have treated with them, and ‘have brought over the troops against *them*.” This was speaking like a wise and able prince. *Ed.*

‘to the change of the government by bishops, not only because I fully concur with the most general opinion of christians in all ages, in episcopacy’s being the best government, but likewise I hold myself particularly bound by the oath I took at my coronation, not to alter the government of this church from what I found it; and as for the church patrimony, I cannot suffer any diminution or alienation of it, it being, without peradventure, sacrilege, and likewise contrary to my coronation oath; but whatsoever shall be offered for rectifying abuses, if any have crept in, or for the ease of tender consciences, (provided the foundation be not damaged) I am content to hear, and willing to return a gracious answer. Touching the *second*, that is the point of *policy*, as it is the king’s duty to protect the church, so the church is reciprocally bound to assist the king in the maintenance of his just authority. Upon these views my predecessors have been always careful (especially since the reformation) to keep the dependence of the clergy entirely upon the crown, without which it will scarce set fast on the king’s head; therefore you must do nothing to change or lessen this natural dependence.”\*

The commissioners from the two houses of parliament at Westminster, instead of being instructed to treat about a reformation of the hierarchy, were ordered to demand the passing of a bill for abolishing and taking away episcopal government; for confirming the ordinance for the calling and sitting of the assembly of divines; that the directory for public worship, and the propositions concerning church government, hereunto annexed, be confirmed as a part of reformation of religion and uniformity; that his majesty take the *solemn league and covenant*, and that an act of parliament be passed, enjoining the taking it by all the subjects of the three kingdoms.†

The propositions annexed to these demands were these (viz.) “that the ordinary way of dividing christians into distinct congregations, as most expedient for edification, be by the respective bounds of their dwellings.

“That the ministers, and other church officers in each particular congregation, shall join in the government of

\* Rushworth, vol. v. p. 945.

† Dugdale, p. 766.



the church in such a manner as shall be established by parliament.

“That many congregations shall be under one presbyterial government.

“That the church be governed by congregational, classical and synodical assemblies in such manner as shall be established by parliament.

“That synodical assemblies shall consist both of provincial and national assemblies.”

One may easily observe the distance between the instructions of the two parties ; one being determined to maintain episcopacy, and the other no less resolute for establishing presbytery. After several papers had passed between the commissioners, about the bill for taking away episcopacy, it was debated by the divines for two days together.

Mr. *Henderson*, in a labored speech, endeavored to shew the necessity of changing the government of the church, for the preservation of the state.—“That now the question was not, whether the government of the church by bishops was lawful, but whether it was so necessary that christianity could not subsist without it;—That this latter position could not be maintained in the affirmative, without condemning all other reformed churches in Europe.—That the parliament of England had found episcopacy a very inconvenient and corrupt government—that the hierarchy had been a public grievance from the reformation downwards—that the bishops had always abetted popery, had retained many superstitious rites and customs in their worship and government; and over and above had lately brought in a great many novelties into the church, and made a nearer approach to the Roman communion, to the great scandal of the protestant churches of Germany, France, Scotland, and Holland. That the prelates had embroiled the British island, and made the two nations of England and Scotland fall foul upon each other.—That the rebellion in Ireland, and the civil war in England, may be charged upon them—that for these reasons the parliament had resolved to change this inconvenient, mischievous government, and set up another in the room of it, more naturally formed for the advancement of

‘piety—that this alteration was the best expedient to unite  
 ‘all protestant churches, and extinguish the remains of pop-  
 ‘ery—he hoped therefore the king would concur in so  
 ‘commendable and godly an undertaking; and conceived  
 ‘his majesty’s conscience could not be urged against such  
 ‘a compliance, because he had already done it in Scotland;  
 ‘nor could he believe that episcopacy was absolutely nec-  
 ‘essary to the support of the christian religion.”\*

Dr. *Steward*, clerk of the king’s closet, addressing him-  
 self to the commissioners, replied, “he knew their lord-  
 ‘ships were too well acquainted with the constitution of  
 ‘the church of England, and the basis upon which it stood,  
 ‘to imagine it could be shaken by the force of Mr. *Hender-  
 ‘son’s* rhetoric—that he was firmly of opinion, that a gov-  
 ‘ernment, which from the planting of christianity in Eng-  
 ‘land had continued without interruption; that a govern-  
 ‘ment under which christianity had spread and flourished  
 ‘to a remarkable degree, could have nothing vicious or an-  
 ‘ti-christian in its frame; that he expected that those who  
 ‘had sworn themselves to an abolition of this primitive  
 ‘constitution, and came hither to persuade their lordships  
 ‘and his majesty to a concurrence, would have endeavored  
 ‘to prove the unlawfulness of that government they press-  
 ‘ed so strongly to remove;—but though in their sermons  
 ‘and prints they gave episcopacy an anti-christian addition,  
 ‘Mr. *Henderson* had prudently declined charging so deep,  
 ‘and only argued from the inconveniences of that govern-  
 ‘ment, and the advantages which would be consequent on  
 ‘an alteration. Forasmuch as an union with the protes-  
 ‘tant churches abroad was the chief reason for this change,  
 ‘the doctor desired to know what foreign church they de-  
 ‘signed for a pattern—that he was sure the model in the  
 ‘*directory* had no great resemblance to any foreign re-  
 ‘formed church—and though he would not enter upon a  
 ‘censure of those communions, yet it was well known that  
 ‘the most learned men of those churches had lamented a  
 ‘defect in their reformation; and that the want of episco-  
 ‘pacy was an unhappy circumstance—that they had always  
 ‘paid a particular reverence to the church of England,  
 ‘and looked on it as the most perfect constitution, upon

\* Clarendon, vol. ii. p. 584.

‘the score of its having retained all that was venerable in antiquity—from hence he proceeded to enlarge upon the apostolical institution of episcopacy, and endeavored to prove, that without bishops the sacerdotal character could not be conveyed, nor the sacraments administered to any significancy.

“As to his majesty’s consenting to put down episcopacy in Scotland, he would say nothing, though he knew his majesty’s present thoughts upon that subject. But he observed that the king was further obliged in this kingdom than in the other; that in England he was tied by his coronation oath to maintain the rights of the church, and that this single engagement was a restraint upon his majesty’s conscience, not to consent to the abolition of episcopacy, or the alienation of church lands.”

Mr. Henderson and Mr. Marshal declared it to be false in fact, and a downright imposition upon the commissioners, that the foreign protestants lamented the want of episcopacy, and esteemed our constitution more perfect than their own.\* They then ran out into a high commendation of presbyterial government, as that which had the only claim to a divine right.† Upon which the marquis of Hertford§ spoke to this effect :

“My Lords,

“HERE is much said concerning church government in the general; the reverend doctors on the king’s part affirm, that episcopacy is *jure divino*; the reverend ministers on the other part affirm, that presbytery is *jure divi-*

\* These assertions of Mr. Henderson and Mr. Marshal, are not to be found, as Dr. Grey remarks, in the place to which Mr. Neal refers. Rushworth says there only in general, “that Mr Henderson and Mr. Marshal answered the doctor, commending the presbyterian way of government, and that episcopacy was not so suitable to the word of God as presbytery, which they argued to be *jure divino*.” See also Whitlocke’s Memorials, p. 123. Dr. Grey fills several pages with quotations from Calvin, Beza, and other foreign divines, in favor of episcopacy. Ed.

† Rushworth, p. 848.

§ Rushworth and Whitlocke add, that the earl of Pembroke and many of the commissioners, besides these two lords, were of the same judgment, and wished, passing over this point, to come to the particulars. Rushworth’s Coll. vol. v. p. 849. Whitlocke’s Mem. p. 123. Ed.



‘no; for my part, I think neither the one nor the other,||  
 ‘nor any government whatsoever to be *jure divino*; and I  
 ‘desire we may leave this argument, and proceed to debate  
 ‘on the particular proposals.”\*

Dr. *Steward* desired they might dispute *sylogistically*, as became scholars, to which Mr. *Henderson* readily agreed; in that way they proceeded about two days; the points urged by the king’s doctors were strongly opposed by Mr. *Henderson*, Mr. *Marshal* and Mr. *Vines*, and very learnedly replied to by his majesty’s divines, who severally declared their judgments upon the apostolical institution of episcopacy; but neither party were convinced or satisfied.

When the debate concerning religion came on a second time, his majesty’s commissioners delivered in their answer to the parliament’s demands in writing, with their reasons why they could not consent to the bill for abolishing episcopacy, and establishing the directory in the room of the common-prayer, nor advise his majesty to take the covenant: but for the uniting and reconciling all differences in matters of religion, and procuring a blessed peace, they were willing to consent,

(1.) “That freedom be left to all persons, of what opinion soever, in matters of ceremony, and that all the penalties of the laws and customs which enjoin those ceremonies be suspended.†

(2.) “That the bishop shall exercise no act of jurisdiction or ordination, without the consent of the presbyters, who shall be chosen by the clergy of each diocese, out of the most learned and grave ministers of the diocese.‡

(3.) “That the bishop keep his constant residence in his diocese, except when he shall be required by his majesty to attend him on any occasion, and that (if he be not hindered by the infirmities of old age, or sickness) he preach every Sunday in some church within his diocese.

|| “The marquis of Hertford.” says bishop Warburton, “seems to have read Hooker to more advantage than the king his master; who fancied that great men contended for the *jus divinum* of episcopacy in his E. P. in which he has been followed by many divines since.” *Ed.*

\* Whitlocke, p. 123.

† Rushworth, p. 872.

‡ Dugdale, p. 780.

(4.) "That the ordination of ministers shall be always  
' in a public and solemn manner, and very strict rules ob-  
' served concerning the sufficiency, and other qualifications  
' of those men who shall be received into holy orders, and  
' the bishops shall not receive any into holy orders without  
' the approbation and consent of the presbyters, or the  
' major part of them.

(5.) "That a competent maintenance and provision be  
' established by act of parliament, to such vicarages as be-  
' long to bishops, deans, and chapters, out of the impro-  
' priations, and according to the value of those impropria-  
' tions of the several parishes.

(6.) "That for time to come no man shall be capable of  
' two personages, or vicarages, with cure of souls.

(7.) "That towards settling the public peace, one hun-  
' dred thousand pounds shall be raised by act of parliament  
' out of the estates of bishops, deans, and chapters, in such  
' manner as shall be thought fit by the king and two houses  
' of parliament, without the alienation of any of the said  
' lands.

(8.) "That the jurisdiction in causes testamentary, deci-  
' mal, matrimonial, be settled in such manner as shall seem  
' most convenient by the king and two houses of parliament.

(9.) "That one or more act of parliament be passed for  
' regulating of visitations, and against immoderate fees in  
' ecclesiastical courts, and abuses by frivolous excommuni-  
' cation, and all other abuses in the exercise of ecclesiasti-  
' cal jurisdiction, in such manner as shall be agreed upon  
' by the king and both houses of parliament.

"And if your lordships shall insist upon any other thing,  
' which your lordships shall think necessary for reforma-  
' tion we shall very willingly apply ourselves to the consid-  
' eration thereof." But they absolutely refused their con-  
sent to the main points, (viz.) the abolishing episcopacy,  
establishing the directory, confirming the assembly of di-  
vines, and taking the covenant.

Mr. *Rapin* observes, upon the first of these concessions,  
that since the penal laws were not to be abolished, but on-  
ly suspended, it would be in the king's power to take off  
the suspension whensoever he pleased. Upon third, fourth,

and fifth, that they were so reasonable and necessary, that it was not for the king's honor to let them be considered as a condescension to promote the peace ; and the remainder, depending upon the joint consent of king and parliament, after a peace, it would always be in the king's breast to give or withhold his assent, as he thought fit.\*

The commissioners for the parliament replied to these concessions, that they were so many new propositions wholly different from what they had proposed, that they contained little or nothing but what they were already in possession of by the laws of the land ; that they were no way satisfactory to their desires, nor *consisting with that reformation to which both nations are obliged by the solemn league and covenant* ; therefore they can give no other answer to them, but insist to desire their lordships, that the bill may be passed, and their other demands concerning religion granted. § The parliament commissioners, in their last papers, say, that all objections in favor of the *present hierarchy*, arising from conscience, law, or reason, being fully answered, they must now press for a determinate answer to their proposition concerning religion.

The king's commissioners deny, that their objections against passing the bill for abolishing episcopacy have been answered, or that they had received any satisfaction in those particulars, and therefore cannot consent to it.

The parliament commissioners add, that after so many days debate, and their making it appear, how great an hindrance episcopal government is, and has been to a perfect reformation, and to the growth of religion ; and how prejudicial it has been to the *state*, they hoped their lordships would have been ready to answer their expectations. ||

The king's commissioners replied, “ It is evident, and ‘ we conceive consented to on all sides, that episcopacy has ‘ continued from the apostles’ time, by a continued succession, in the church of Christ, without intermission or interruption, and is therefore *jure divino*. ”

The parliament commissioners answer, “ So far were we ‘ from consenting that episcopacy has continued from the

\* History, vol. ii. p. 512, 13. § Dugdale, p. 783. || Ibid. p. 787.



‘apostles’ time, by a continued succession, that the contrary was made evident to your lordships, and the *unlawfulness* of it fully proved.”†

The king’s commissioners replied, that they conceived the succession of episcopacy from the apostles was consented to on all sides, and did not remember that the unlawfulness of it had been asserted and proved.§ However, they apprehend all the inconveniences of that government are remedied by the alterations which they had offered. Nor had the parliament commissioners given them a view in particular of the government they would substitute in place of the present; if therefore the alterations proposed do not satisfy, they desire the matter may be suspended till after the disbanding the armies, and both king and parliament can agree in calling a national synod.

The above mentioned concessions would surely have been a sufficient foundation for peace, if they had been made twelve months sooner, before the Scots had been called in with their *solemn league and covenant*, and sufficient security had been given for their performance; but the commissioners hands were now tied; the parliament apprehending themselves obliged by the *covenant* to abolish the hierarchy; and yet if the commissioners could have agreed about the *militia*, and the punishment of evil counsellors, the affair of religion would not, in the opinion of lord *Clarendon*, have hindered the success of the treaty; his words are these: “The parliament took none of the ‘points of controversy less to heart, or were less united in ‘any thing than in what concerned the church;|| the Scots ‘would have given up every thing into the hands of the ‘king for their beloved presbytery; but many of the parliament were for peace, provided *they might have indemnity for what was past, and security for time to come.*”‡ And were not these reasonable requests? Why then did not the commissioners prevail with the king to give them security, and divide the parliament, or put an end to the war.

The last day of the treaty the parliament continued sitting till nine of the clock at night, in hopes of hearing

† Dugdale, p. 788. § Ibid. p. 790, 878.

|| Clarendon, vol. ii. p. 581. ‡ Ibid. p. 594.

something from their commissioners, that might encourage them to prolong the treaty ; but when an express brought word, that the king's commissioners would not yield to one of their propositions, they broke up without doing any thing in the business. Each party laid the blame upon the other ; the king's commissioners complained, that the parliament would not consent to prolong the treaty ;§ and the others, that after twenty days conference not one proposition had been yielded. All sober men, and even some of the king's commissioners, were troubled at the event ; but considering the state of the king's affairs, and his servile attachment to the counsels of a *popish queen*, it was easy to foresee it could not be otherwise.

Bishop *Burnet*, in the History of his Life and Times,|| says, that lord *Hollis*, who was one of the commissioners, told him “ that the king's affairs were now at a crisis, ‘ for the treaty of Uxbridge gave him an opportunity of ‘ making peace with the parliament, but all was undone by ‘ the unhappy success of the marquis of *Montross* at this ‘ time in Scotland, which being magnified to the king far ‘ beyond what it really was, prevailed with his majesty to ‘ put such limitations on his commissioners, as made the ‘ whole design miscarry.”

Most of the king's commissioners, who were not excepted out of the article of indemnity, were for accommodating matters before they left Uxbridge. The earl of *Southampton* rode post from Uxbridge to Oxford, to intreat the king to yield something to the necessity of the times ; several of of his council pressed him to it on their knees ; and it is said his majesty was at length prevailed with, and appointed next morning to sign a warrant to that purpose, but that *Montross's* romantic letter, of his conquest in Scotland, coming in the mean time, made the unhappy king alter his resolution.‡

§ See a proof of this in Dr. Grey. *Ed.*

|| Vol. i. p. 51, Edinburgh edition.

‡ Dr. Grey attempts to convict Mr. Neal of falsehood in each part of this paragraph. For the first part, the doctor says, “ that, as far as he ‘ could learn, there was not so much as the shadow of an authority.”—In reply, it may be observed, that though Mr. Neal has not, as it is to

But there was something more in the affair than this ; lord *Clarendon*† is of opinion, that if the king had yielded some things to the demands of the parliament relating to *religion*, the *militia*, and *Ireland*, there were still other articles in reserve that would have broken off the treaty ; in which I cannot but agree with his lordship ; for not to mention *the giving up delinquents to the justice of parliament*, of which himself was one, there had been as yet no debate about the *Roman catholics*, whom the parliament would not tolerate, and the king was determined not to give up, as appears from the correspondence between himself and the queen at this time. In the queen's letter, Jan. 6, 1644-5, she desires his majesty "to have a care 'of his honor, and not to abandon those who had served 'him—for if you agree upon strictness against *Roman 'catholics*, it will discourage them from serving you ; nor 'can you expect relief from any *Roman catholic* prince—"‡ In her letter of Jan. 27, she adds, "above all have a care 'not to abandon those who have served you, as well the 'bishops as the *poor catholics*." In answer to which the

he wished he had, referred to his authority, yet the doctor's assertion is not well supported. For Whitlocke informs us, that "on the 19th of 'Feb. the earl of Southampton and others of the king's commissioners 'went from Uxbridge to Oxford, to the king, about the business of the 'treaty, to receive some further directions from his majesty therein." *Memorials*, p. 127. As the treaty closed on the 22d, the reader will judge, whether Mr. Neal, speaking of the object and expedition of this journey, had not so much as the shadow of an authority. With respect to the latter part of the paragraph concerning Montross, Dr. Grey will have it, that bishop Burnet's authority makes directly against Mr. Neal ; and then he quotes from him as follows : "*Montross* wrote to 'the king, that he had gone over the land from *Dan* to *Beersheba*, 'and that he prayed the king to come down in these words, *Come thou 'and take the city, lest I take it, and it be called by my name*." This letter was written, but never sent, for he was routed, and his papers taken before he had dispatched the courier. Of course the doctor means to conclude, that the king could not be influenced to obstruct the operation of the treaty, by a letter which was never received. But it escaped Dr. Grey's attention, that the letter which he quotes was written more than a year after the treaty was broken off : and Mr. Neal speaks, on the authority of bishop Burnet, of another letter, or expresses received, while the treaty was pending. So that there is no contradiction in the case. *Ed.*

† Vol. ii. p. 594.

‡ Rapin, vol. ii. p. 511, 512, folio edition.



king writes, Jan. 30, "I desire thee to be confident, that 'I shall never make peace by abandoning my friends.'" And, Feb. 15, "Be confident, that in making peace I shall 'ever shew my confidence in adhering to the bishops, and 'all our friends—'" March 5, "I give thee power in my 'name, to declare to whom thou thinkest fit, that I will 'take away all the penal laws against the *Roman catholics* 'in England, as soon as God shall make me able to do it, 'so as by their means I may have so powerful assistance 'as may deserve so great a favor, and enable me to do 'it—"† As for Ireland, his majesty had already commanded the Duke of *Ormond*, by his letter of Feb. 27, to make peace with the papists, cost what it would. "If the suspending *Poynings's* act will do it, (says he) and taking away the penal laws, I shall not think it a hard bargain —When the Irish give me that assistance they have 'promised, I will consent to the repeal by law."†

It appears from hence, that the peace which the king seemed so much to desire was an empty sound. The queen was afraid he might be prevailed with to yield too far; but his majesty bids her be confident of the contrary, for *his commissioners would not be disputed from their ground, which was according to the note she remembers, and which he would not alter.* When the treaty was ended, he writes thus to the queen, March 13, "Now is come 'to pass what I foresaw, the fruitless end of this treaty—'Now if I do any thing unhandsome to myself or my 'friends, it will be my own fault—I was afraid of being 'pressed to make some mean overtures to renew the treaty, but now if it be renewed it shall be to my honor and 'advantage."§ Such was the queen's ascendant over the king, and his majesty's servile submission to her imperious dictates;\* the fate of three kingdoms was at her dis-

† Rushworth, vol. v. p. 942, 944, 946, 947. † Ibid. p. 978, 979.

§ Rapiu. vol. ii. p. 512, folio edition.

\* We will leave with our readers bishop Warburton's remarks on this reflection of Mr. Neal. "Never was the observation, of the king's 'unhappy attachment made in a worse place. His *honor* required him 'not to give up his friends; and his *religion*, viz. the true principles 'of christianity, to take off the penal laws from peaceable papists; 'and common humanity called upon him to favor those who had served him at the hazard of their lives and fortunes."—It may be prop-

posal; no place at court or in the army must be disposed of without her approbation; no peace must be made but upon her terms; the Oxford *mungrel parliament* (as his majesty calls it) must be dismissed with disgrace, because they voted for peace; the Irish protestants must be abandoned to destruction; and a civil war permitted to continue its ravages throughout England and Scotland, that a popish religion and arbitrary government might be encouraged and upheld.||

As a farther demonstration of this melancholy remark, his majesty authorised the earl of *Glamorgan*, by a warrant under his royal signet, dated March 12, 1644, to conclude privately a peace with the Irish papists upon the best terms he could, though they were such as his lieutenant the duke of *Ormond* might not well be seen in, nor his majesty himself think fit to own publicly at present, engaging, upon the word of a king and a christian, to ratify and perform whatsoever he should grant under his hand and seal, on condition they would send over into England a body of ten thousand men, under the command of the said earl. § The date of this warrant is remarkable, as it

erly added, that religion, in the liberal sense in which his lordship explains the term, required the king to take off the penal laws from peaceable *puritans* as well as papists. But in his majesty's dictionary the word does not appear to have borne so generous and just a meaning. *Ed.*

|| Clarendon, vol. ii. p. 364.

§ Dr. Grey treats this account of the earl of Glamorgan's commission as a fine piece of slander, furnished by a tribe of republican writers; and to confute it he produces a letter from the king to the lord lieutenant and council of Ireland, one from Col. King in Ireland, and another from secretary Nicholas to the marquis of Ormond. There is no occasion here to enter into a discussion of the question concerning the authority under which the earl of Glamorgan acted. For since Mr. Neal and Dr. Grey wrote, the point has been most carefully and ably investigated by Dr. Birch, in "An Inquiry into the Share which King Charles I. had in the Transactions of the Earl of Glamorgan," published in 1747. And the fact has been put out of all doubt by a letter of that nobleman to the lord chancellor Hyde, written a few days after king Charles II's restoration, which has appeared in the Clarendon State Papers, vol. ii. p. 20—203, and has been republished in the second edition of the *Biographia Britannica*, vol. ii. p. 320, under the life of Dr. Birch. The general fact having been ascertained beyond all contradiction, the question which offers is, how far the king acted criminally in this transaction. Mrs. Macaulay represents him as vio-

was at a time when his majesty's affairs were far from being desperate ; when he thought the divisions in the parliament-house would quickly be their ruin, and that he had little more to do than to sit still and be restored upon his own terms, for which reason he was so unyielding at the treaty of Uxbridge ; and yet the earl, by his majesty's commission, granted every thing to the Irish, even to the establishing the *Roman catholic* religion, and putting it on a level with the protestant ; he gave them all the churches and revenues they were possessed of since the rebellion, and not only exempted them from the jurisdiction of the protestant clergy, but allowed them jurisdiction over their several flocks, so that the reformed religion in that kingdom was in a manner sold for ten thousand Irish papists to be transported into England, and maintained for three years. Let the reader now judge, what prospect there could be of a well-grounded peace by the treaty of Uxbridge ! What security there was for the protestant religion ! How little ground of reliance on the king's promises ! and consequently, to whose account the calamities of the war, and the misery and confusions which followed after this period, ought to be placed.

The day before the commencement of the treaty of Uxbridge, the members of the house of commons attended the funeral of Mr. *John White* chairman of the grand committee of religion, and publisher of the century of scandalous ministers ; he was a grave lawyer (says lord *Clarendon*) and made a considerable figure in his profession. He had

lating every principle of honor and conscience. Mr. Hume, on the contrary, speaks of it as a very innocent transaction, in which the king was engaged by the most violent necessity. Dr. Birch considers it with temper, though he appears to think it not easily reconceivable to the idea of a good man, a good prince, or a good protestant. Mr. Walpole has some candid and lively reflections on it. "It requires," he observes, "very primitive resignation in a monarch to sacrifice his crown and his life, when persecuted by subjects of his own sect, rather than preserve both by the assistance of others of his subjects who differed from him in ceremonials or articles of belief.—His fault was not in proposing to bring over the Irish, but in having made them necessary to his affairs. Every body knew, that he wanted to do without them, all that he could have done with them." *Biographia Britannica*, 2d edit. vol. ii. p. 321, note. *Ed.*

See Rushworth, vol. vi. p. 239, &c. Rapin, 330. Hist. Stuarts, 305.



been one of the *feoffees* for buying in impropriations, for which he was censured in the star-chamber. He was representative in parliament for the borough of Southwark; having been a puritan from his youth, and, in the opinion of Mr. *Whitlocke*,\* an honest, learned, and faithful servant of the public, though somewhat severe at the committee for plundered ministers. He died Jan. 29, and was buried in the Temple church with great funeral solemnity. §

\* Memorials, p. 122.

§ Dr. Grey on the authority of Walker, “charges Mr. White with corrupt practices by the way of *bribery*; says that Dr. Bruno Ryves called him a *fornicating Brownist*, and that the author of *Persecution Undec.* suggests much worse against him; and, on the testimony of an anonymous author, represents him as dying distracted crying out, *how many clergymen, their wives and children he had undone; raving and condemning himself at his dying hour, for his undoing so many guiltless ministers.*” Such representations carry little weight with them against the testimony of Clarendon and Whitlocke: especially, when it is considered that the obnoxious part, which Mr. White acted, would necessarily create many enemies; some of whom would invent and others eagerly credit, the most reproachful calumnies against him. Dr. Calamy and Mr. Withers, whom Dr. Grey never notices, have sufficiently exposed the partiality and credulity of Dr. Walker, to render his assertions suspicious. And it should not be overlooked, as a strong presumption at least of the purity of Mr. White’s character and the integrity of his proceedings, that he appealed to the public by his “*Centuries of Scandalous Ministers.*” *Ed.*

## CHAP. VI.

*The Progress of the War. Debates in the Assembly about Ordination. The Power of the Keys. The divine Right of Presbyterian Government. Committees for Comprehension and Toleration of the Independents.*

THE king's commissoners had been told at the treaty of Uxbridge, that the fate of the English monarchy depended upon its success ; that if the treaty was broken off abruptly, there were a set of men in the house, who would remove the earl of *Essex*, and constitute such an *army* as might force the parliament and king to consent to every thing they demanded, or change the government into a commonwealth ; whereas, if the king would yield to the necessity of the times, they might preserve the *general*, and not only disappoint the designs of the enemies to *monarchy*, but soon be in circumstances to enable his majesty to recover all he should resign. However, the commissioners looked upon this as the language of despair, and made his majesty believe the divisions at Westminster would soon replace the sceptre in his own hands.\*

The house of commons had been dissatisfied with the conduct of the earls of *Essex* and *Manchester* last summer, as tending to protract the war, lest one party should establish itself upon the ruins of the other ; but the warmer spirits in the house, seeing no period of their calamities this way, apprehended a decisive battle ought to be fought as soon as possible, for which purpose, after a solemn fast, it was moved that all the present officers should be discharged, and the army intrusted in such hands as they could confide in. Dec. 9, it was resolved, that no member of either house should execute any office civil or military, during the present war ; accordingly the ordinance, com-

\* Clarendon, vol. ii. p. 595.

monly called the *selfdenying ordinance*, was brought in, and passed the commons ten days after, but was laid aside by the lords till after the treaty of Uxbridge, when it was revived and carried with some little opposition. The earls of *Essex*, *Manchester*, *Warwick*, and *Denbigh*, the lord *Roberts*, *Willoughby*, and others, were dismissed by this ordinance,§ and all members of the house of commons, except lieutenant-general *Cromwell*, who after a few months was dispensed with, at the request of the new general. All the regiments were disbanded, and such only listed under the new commanders as were determined to conquer or die. Sir *Thomas Fairfax* was appointed general,† and *Oliver Cromwell*, after some time, lieutenant-general; the clause for preservation of the king's person was left out of sir *Thomas's* commission; nor did it run in the name of the king and parliament, but of the parliament only. The army consisted of twenty-one thousand resolute soldiers, and was called in contempt by the royalists the *new-modelled army*; but their courage quickly revenged the contempt.

Sir *Thomas Fairfax* was a gentleman of no quick parts or elocution; but religious, faithful, valiant, and of a grave, sober, resolved disposition; neither too great, nor too cunning to be directed by the parliament.\* *Oliver Cromwell* was more bold and aspiring; and being a soldier of undaunted courage and intrepidity, proved at length too powerful for his masters. The army was more at his disposal than at *Fairfax's*, and the wonders they wrought sprung chiefly from his counsels.

§ "Thus almost all those men, by whose interest, power, and authority, the war with the king had been undertaken, and without whom no opposition, of any weight, could possibly have been raised, were in a short time deprived of their power and influence over their own army, and obliged, as we shall soon see, to truckle before them. So little can men see into futurity! so different are the turns things take, from what men are apt to expect and depend on." Dr. Harris's *Life of Oliver Cromwell*, p. 118.

† Sir *Thomas Fairfax's* power extended to the execution of martial law, and the nomination of the officers under him. The army was put solely under the command of one man. "What was this," it has been properly asked, "but to put it into his power to give law to the parliament, whenever he thought fit." Dr. Harris, ut supra. *Ed.*

\* *Baxter's Life*, p. 48.



When the old regiments were broken, the chaplains, being discharged of course, returned to their cures; and as new ones were formed, the officers applied to the parliament and assembly for a fresh recruit; but the presbyterian ministers being possessed of warm benefices, were unwilling to undergo the fatigues of another campaign, or, it may be, to serve with men of such desperate measures.— This fatal accident proved the ruin of the cause in which the parliament were engaged; for the army being destitute of chaplains, who might have restrained the irregularities of their zeal, the officers set up for preachers in their several regiments, depending upon a kind of miraculous assistance of the divine spirit, without any study or preparation; and when their imaginations were heated, they gave vent to the most crude and undigested absurdities; nor did the evil rest there, for from preaching at the head of their regiments, they took possession of the country pulpits where they were quartered, till at length they spread the infection over the whole nation, and brought the regular ministry into contempt. Most of the common soldiers were religious and orderly, and when released from duty spent their time in prayer and religious conferences, like men who carried their lives in their hands; but for want of prudent and regular instruction, were swallowed up in the depths of enthusiasm. Mr. *Baxter* therefore observes very justly, “It was the *ministers* that lost all by forsaking the army, and betaking themselves to an easier and quieter way of life. When the earl of *Essex*’s army went out, each regiment had an able chaplain, but after Edge-Hill fight most of them went home, and left the army to their own conduct.” But, even after the decisive battle of Naseby, he admits, great numbers of the officers and soldiers were sober and orthodox; and from the little good which he did whilst among them, concludes, that if their *ministers* would have followed his measures, the king, the parliament, and religion, might have been saved. §

The new-modelled troops were kept under the severest discipline, commissioners being appointed to take care that the country was not oppressed; that no soldiers were quar-

tered in any place but by appointment of the quarter-master; that ready money be paid for all provisions and ammunition; every soldier had six-pence a day for his diet, and every trooper eight-pence. No inhabitants were compelled to furnish more provision than they were able and willing to spare, under the severest penalties; whereas the royal army, having no regular pay, lived upon the plunder of those places that had the misfortune to receive them.

May 30, the king took the town of Leicester by storm, with a very great treasure, which the country people had brought thither for security, his soldiers dividing the spoil, and treating the inhabitants in a most cruel and unmerciful manner; after *this* conquest, his majesty wrote to the queen, that his *affairs were never in so hopeful a posture since the rebellion.*|| The parliament army were preparing to lay siege to the city of Oxford, but upon news of this disaster, had orders to follow the king, and hazard a battle at all events; whereupon sir *Thomas Fairfax* petitioned the two houses, to dispense with their *self-denying ordinance* with respect to lieutenant-general *Cromwell*, whose courage and counsels would be of great service in the present crisis; *Cromwell* was accordingly dispensed with during pleasure, and having joined the army with six hundred horse and dragoons, they overtook the king, and gave him battle June 14, at Naseby, about three miles from Harborough in Leicestershire.

The action began about ten in the morning, and ended about three or four in the afternoon, in an absolute defeat of the king's forces, which was owing, in a great measure, to the wise conduct and resolution of lieutenant-general *Cromwell* on the one hand, and to the indiscreet fury and violence of prince *Rupert* on the other. The armies were pretty equal in number, about twelve or fourteen thousand on a side, but the parliament soldiers were better disciplined, and fought with all the bravery and magnanimity that an enthusiastic zeal could inspire. General *Fairfax*, having his helmet beat off, rode up and down the field bare-headed; major-general *Skippon* received a wound in the beginning of the engagement, upon which being desired to



go off, he answered *he would not stir as long as a man would stand.* Ireton was run through the thigh with a pike, had his horse killed under him, and was made a prisoner, but found means to escape upon the turn of the battle. The king shewed himself a courageous commander, but his soldiers were struck with such a panic, that when they were once disordered they would never rally, whereas if their enemies were beaten from their ground they presently returned, and kept their ranks till they received fresh instructions.\* When prince *Rupert* had routed *Ireton's* left wing, he lost his advantage, first, by following the chace almost three miles, and *then* by trying to become master of the train of artillery, before he knew the success of the main body; whereas, when *Cromwell* had broke the right wing of the enemy, he pursued them only a quarter of a mile, and leaving a small party of horse to prevent their rallying, returned immediately to the battle, and with his victorious troops charged the royal infantry in flank. The parliament army took above five thousand prisoners; all the king's train of artillery, bag and baggage, with his cabinet of letters, some of which were afterwards published to the world; not above six or seven hundred of his men being killed, with about one hundred and fifty officers. The king, with a party of horse, fled into Wales, and prince *Rupert* to Bristol; but the parliament forces pursued their victory with such eagerness, and marched with that rapidity over the whole west of England, to the very land's end, that in a few months all the royal forces were dispersed, and his majesty's garrisons surrendered almost before they were summoned.|| The city of Bristol, into which prince *Rupert* had thrown himself, capitulated before the besiegers approached the walls, which provoked the king to that degree, that he commanded him by letter to depart the land, as did also the prince of *Wales*, for the security of his person; so that by the end of this campaign, the unhappy king was exposed to the mercy of his enemies, and shut up all the winter little better than a prisoner in his garrison of Oxford.

\* Whitlocke, p. 145. Clarendon, vol. ii. p. 658.

|| Rapin, vol. ii. p. 517, 518, folio.



To return to the affairs of the church. When it is recollected what great number of clergymen had deserted to the king, or were otherwise dissatisfied with the new terms of conformity, we must conclude it very difficult to supply the vacant pulpits in the country with a learned and regular clergy; one of the universities was entirely useless, and the young students who adhered to the parliament could not obtain ordination in a legal way, because all the bishops were in the opposition, and would ordain none but those of their own principles, which was another cause of the increase of unqualified preachers. To put some stop to the clamors of the royalists, and to the mischiefs of lay-preaching, which began to appear in the army, the parliament ordained April 26, "That no person shall be permitted to preach who is not ordained a minister in this or some other reformed church, except such as intend the ministry, who shall be allowed for the trial of their gifts, by those that shall be appointed thereunto by both houses of parliament; and it is earnestly desired, that sir *Thomas Fairfax* take care, that this ordinance be put in execution in the army. It is further ordered to be sent to the lord-mayor, and committee of the militia in London; to the governors and commanders of all forts, garrisons, forces, cities and towns, with the like injunction; and the mayor, sheriffs, and justices of the peace, are to commit all offenders to safe custody, and give notice to the parliament, who will take a speedy course for their punishment.\*

At the same time the lords sent to the assembly, to prepare a new *directory* for the *ordination of ministers of the church in England*, without the presence of a diocesan bishop. This took them up a great deal of time, by reason of the opposition it met with from the *erasians* and *independants*, but was at last accomplished, and passed into an ordinance, bearing date Nov. 8, 1645, and was to continue in force by way of trial for twelve months; on the 28th of August following, it was prolonged for three years, at the expiration of which term it was made perpetual.

The ordinance sets forth, "That whereas the words *presbyter* and *bishop* do in scripture signify the same func-

\* Husband's Collections, p. 645.

tion, though the title of *bishop* has been, by corrupt custom, appropriated to one, who has assumed to himself, in the matter of ordination, that which was not meet; which ordination, notwithstanding being performed by him, we hold for substance to be valid, and not to be disclaimed by any that have received it; and whereas it is manifest, that ordination, that is, an outward solemn setting apart of persons for the office of the ministry in the church by preaching presbyters, is an institution of Christ, it is therefore ordained by the lords and commons, with the advice of the assembly of divines at Westminster, that the several and respective classical presbyters within their respective bounds may examine, approve, and ordain presbyters, according to the following directory,\* which I have placed in the Appendix,† and is in substance as follows:

*First*, “The person to be ordained must apply to the presbytery, with a testimonial of his taking the covenant, of his proficiency in his studies,” &c.

*Secondly*, “He is then to pass under an examination as to his religion and learning, and call to the ministry.”

Then follow rules for examination, as in the *appendix*.

“After examination he shall receive a public testimonial from his examiners, which shall be read publicly before the people, and then fixed to the door of the church where he preaches for approbation, with liberty to any person or persons to make exceptions.

“Upon the day of ordination a solemn fast shall be kept by the congregation, when, after a sermon, the person to be ordained shall make a public confession of his faith,‖ and declare his resolution to be diligent and constant in the discharge of his pastoral duty. Af-

\* Rushworth, part iv. vol. i. p. 212. † Appendix, No. ix.

‖ It deserves to be noticed here, that the advice and orders of the Westminster assembly are, on this point, very general; namely, “that the person to be ordained be asked of his faith in Jesus Christ, of his persuasion of the truth of the reformed religion according to the scriptures, and of his zeal for the truth of the gospel and unity of the church, against error and schism.” “This, I think, is an evident presumption.” observes a late writer, “that the majority of the assembly were against imposing human tests, and making subscription to their confession a necessary term of communion, either to ministers or other christians.”\*



‘ter which he shall be separated, or set apart to the pastoral office with a short prayer, and the laying on of the hands of the ministers present. After the ordination, there is to be an exhortation to minister and people, and the whole solemnity to conclude with a *psalm* and a *prayer*.

It is further declared, “That all ordinations, according to the former usage of the church of England, as well as those of Scotland, and other reformed churches, shall be esteemed valid.

“A register is to be kept by every presbytery of the names of the persons ordained by them, of the ministers concerned, and of the time and place where they were settled. No money or gift whatsoever shall be received from the person ordained, or from any on his behalf, for his ordination, or any thing relating to it, except for the instruments or testimonials, which shall not exceed ten shillings.

Lastly, It is resolved, “That all persons ordained according to this *directory*, shall be for ever reputed and taken to all intents and purposes, for lawfully, and sufficiently authorised ministers of the church of England, and as capable of any ministerial employment in the church, as any other presbyter already ordained, or hereafter to be ordained.”

To give a short specimen of the debates upon this ordinance; when the passage in *Timothy*, of *laying on of the hands of the presbytery* was voted a full warrant for presbyters ordaining without a bishop, Mr. *Selden*, *Lightfoot*, and some others, entered their dissent, declaring, that the imposition of hands there spoken of was only upon the ordination of an elder; and though elders might ordain elders, it did not necessarily follow they might ordain bishops.

The *independents* maintained the right of every particular congregation to ordain its own officers; this was debated ten days; and the arguments on both sides were afterwards published by consent of the several parties, in a

“The religious establishment of Scotland examined, &c.” printed for Cadell, 1771, p. 105. This is the more remarkable, as, in other instances, this synod shewed themselves dogmatikal and intolerant. *Ed.*



book, entitled, *The grand Debate between Presbytery and Independency*.\* At length the question being put, *that it is requisite no single congregation, that can conveniently associate with others, should assume to itself the sole right of ordination*, it was carried in the affirmative, the following independent ministers entering their dissent :

*Tho. Goodwin,*  
*Phil. Nye,*  
*Jer. Burroughs,*  
*Sidrach Simpson,*

*William Bridge,*  
*William Greenhill,*  
*William Carter.*

It was next debated, whether ordination might precede election to a particular cure or charge ; *Dr. Temple*, *Mr. Herle*, *Vines*, *Palmer*, *Whitaker*, and *Calamy*, argued for the affirmative. 1. From the ordination of *Timothy*, *Titus*, and *Apollos*, without any particular charge. 2. Because it is a different thing to ordain to an office, and to appropriate the exercise of that office to any particular place. 3. If election must precede ordination, then there must be a new ordination upon every new election. 4. It would then follow, that a minister was no minister out of his own church or congregation. And, 5. Then a minister could not gather or plant churches, or baptize new converts, because, according to the *independents*, there must first be a church before there can be a minister.†

*Mr. Goodwin*, *Nye*, *Bridge*, and the rest of the *independents*, replied to the foregoing reasons, that *Timothy* and *Titus* were extraordinary officers—that it appeared to them absurd, to ordain an officer without a province to exercise the office in—that they saw no great inconvenience in *re-ordinations*, though they did not admit the consequence, that a person regularly ordained to one church, must be re-ordained upon every removal ; but they asserted, that a pastor of one particular church might preserve his character in all places ; and if there was extraordinary service to be done in planting new churches, or baptizing converts, the churches might send out their officers, or create new ones for that purpose. The grand difficulty with the *independents* lay here, that ordination without election to a particular charge seemed to imply a conveyance of of-

\* Grand Debate, p. 185.

† MS. penes me.

*fice-power*, which, in their opinion, was attended with all the difficulties of a lineal succession. The debates upon this article continued several days, and issued at last in a compromise in these words ; *It is agreeable to the word of God, and very expedient, that those who are to be ordained ministers, be designed to some particular church, or other ministerial charge.* And with regard to the ceremony of *imposition of hands*, the *independents* acquiesced in the practice, provided it was attended with an open declaration, *that it was not intended as a conveyance of office-power.*

It may seem absurd to begin the reformation of the church, with an ordinance appointing *classical presbyters* to ordain ministers within their several *districts*, when there was not as yet one *classical presbytery* in all England ; but the urgency of affairs required it ; the scarcity of ministers would not suffer a delay till the whole fabric of *presbytery* was erected ;\* therefore, to supply this defect for the present, the whole business was entrusted with the *assembly*, who voted, Dec. 24, 1645, that a committee for examination of ministers should sit every Tuesday and Thursday in the afternoon at two o'clock, and the members of the assembly should attend in their turns, as they shall be nominated and appointed by the scribe, according to the order of their names in the register book, five at a time, and each to attend a week.

While the point of *ordination* was depending, committees were chosen to prepare materials for a new form of discipline and church government ; a measure of the greater consequence, because the old form was dissolved, and no other as yet established in its room.† Here the *independents* agreed with the *presbyterians*, that *there was a certain form of church government laid down in the New-Testament, which was of divine institution* ; but when they came to the question, *what that government was ?* and, *whether it was binding in all ages of the church ?* both the *erastians* and *independents* divided against them. The proposition was this, *that the scripture holds forth, that many particular congregations may, and by DIVINE INSTITUTION ought, to be under one presbyterial government.* The debate lasted thirty days ; the *erastians* did not ex-

\* Vide Appendix, No. ix.

† Ibid.

cept against the presbyterial government as a *political institution*, proper to be established by the civil magistrate, but they were against the claim of a *divine right*. Upon this occasion *Bulstrode Whitlocke*, Esq. one of the lay-commissioners, stood up, and made the following speech :\*

“ *Mr. Prolocutor*,

“ I MIGHT blush to speak in this reverend assembly, upon the question now in debate before you, had I not, by the honor of being one of your members, seen your candor to others, and observed you to be most capable to give satisfaction to any scruple here, and to enable such as I am to satisfy objections abroad, whereof I have met with some, your question not being under secrecy.

“ By *government* all men understand the prudent and well ordering of persons and affairs, that men may live well and happily ; and by the *government of the church*, the ordering and ruling of persons and matters having relation to the worship of God, in spiritual matters.

“ The word *presbyter* was in great honor among the *Jews*, being given to the members of their great sanhedrim, and therefore is not now so properly to be attributed to the rulers of every small congregation. I am none of those, *Mr. Prolocutor*, who except against the presbyterian government ; I think it has a good foundation, and has done much good in the church of Christ.

“ But, sir, whether this form of government be *jure divino* or not, may admit of some dispute ? and, whether it be now requisite for you to declare, that it is so ?

“ If the meaning be, that it is *jure divino ecclesiastico*, then the question will be raised, of the magistrates imposing forms upon men’s consciences, for then they will be only the magistrates’ imposition. But if the meaning be *jure divino absolute*, it must then be the precept of God, and they are in a sad condition who are not under this government.

“ But it is objected, that no form of government is *jure divino*, but that, in general, all things must be done decently, and in order. A *government* is certainly *jure*

\* *Whitlocke’s Memorials*, p. 95.



‘*divino*, but whether presbytery, episcopacy, independency, or any other form of government be *jure divino*, or not; that is, whether there be a præscript, rule or command of scripture, for any of those forms, will not be admitted by many as a clear thing.

“It may therefore not be unworthy your consideration, whether it be not more prudent at this time to forbear to declare your judgments in this point; the truth will nevertheless continue the same.

“If this government be not *jure divino*, no opinion of any council can make it so; and if it be *jure divino*, it continues so still, though you do not declare it to be so.

“I therefore humbly submit it to your judgments, whether it be not better at this time to avoid giving occasion to disputes of this nature, and only to present your judgment to the parliament, *that the government of the church by presbyteries is most agreeable to the word of God, and most fit to be settled in this kingdom*; or, in what other expressions you may think fit to clothe your question; and I hope you may soon have a desired issue.”

Mr. *Selden* and St. *John* were of this mind; and the Reverend Mr. *Colman* was so zealous on this side, that he declaimed against the *divine right*, not only in the assembly, but in the pulpit, apprehending presbytery would prove as arbitrary and tyrannical as prelacy, if it came in on the foot of a *divine claim*. He therefore proposed, that the civil magistrate should have the sole power of the keys by way of *interim*, till the nation was settled.

But the *independents* opposed the proposition of the *divine right of presbytery*, by advancing a counter *divine right* of their own scheme; fifteen days they took the part of opponents, and fifteen days they were upon the defensive. To give a short specimen of their debates.

The chief enquiries were concerning the constitution and form of the first church of Jerusalem; the *sub-ordination of synods*, and of *lay-elders*.\* Upon the first question the *independents* maintained, *that the first church at Jerusalem was not larger than could meet in one place*. In sup-

\* Grand Debate, p. 13, &c.

port of which allegation, they produced several passages from the New Testament ; as, *Acts* i. 15. The whole number of disciples being about one hundred and twenty met together with one accord. And *Acts* ii. 1. They were all with one accord in one place. When they were multiplied to three thousand, it is still said, they met together with one accord, and in one place : *Acts* ii. 46. When they were further increased, multitudes being added to them, both men and women, they still met together with one accord, and in one place : *Acts* v. 12, 14. When the number of disciples had received yet further additions, so that it became necessary to choose deacons to take care of the poor, the whole multitude were called together, and chose out seven men from among themselves, and set them before the apostles : *Acts* vi. 2, 5. And even after the general dispersion of the disciples, mentioned *Acts* viii, it is recorded, that those who remained met together in one place as a church. *Acts* xv. 4, 22. Then pleased it the apostles and elders, with the *whole church*, to send chosen men of their own company to Antioch. They allowed that there was mention of a presbytery in scripture, but that it was no other than the presbytery or elders of one particular church or congregation, it being no where expressed, that God has set in the church, distinct sorts of presbyteries, such as *consistories, classes, provincial, synods, and general assemblies*, one above another. They objected also to the high powers claimed by the presbyteries, as the right of admission and exclusion from the christian church with pains and penalties, which, as they had no foundation in scripture, were not very consistent with the powers of the civil magistrate.

By way of reply the presbyterians maintained, *that the church of Jerusalem was made up of more congregations than one*, as appeared from the multitude of disciples mentioned in divers places ;\*—from the many apostles and teachers in the church of Jerusalem, who could not exercise their gifts in one assembly ;—and from the diversity of languages mentioned *Acts* ii. and *Acts* vi. Now it being granted, that the disciples were too numerous to assemble in one place, it must follow, that they were under one presby-

\* Grand Debate, p. 41.

terial government, because they are still called one church, *Acts* viii. 1, the elders of which are often mentioned in the same history. The ablest critics in the assembly were divided upon this head, as Dr. *Temple*, *Lightfoot*, *Selden*, *Colman*, *Vines*, and others; but it was carried for the presbyterians.

It was alledged, in favor of the *subordination of synods*, that the scripture speaks of an appeal from one or two brethren to the whole church, *Matth.* xviii. 15; and of the appeal of the church at Antioch to the apostles and elders at Jerusalem, *Acts.* xv. 2.\* But the *independents* affirmed, that a synod of presbyters is no where called a church; and that the appeal of the church of Antioch was only for advice, not for a judicial determination: but that, supposing the assembly of the apostles at Jerusalem had been a synod, it could neither be provincial nor national in respect of the church at Antioch, and consequently no proof of a subordination. The masters of Jewish antiquities displayed all their learning upon this subject, for the Jewish sanhedrim being proposed as the model of their *christian presbytery*, it was necessary to enquire, what were the respective powers of the ecclesiastical and civil courts under the law.† Moses having appointed, that he that would not hearken to the *priest*, or the judge, should die, *Deut.* xvii. 12, it was inferred, in favor of church power, that the *priest* held one court, and the *civil magistrate* another; but Mr. *Selden* observed, that the vulgar *Latin* till within these forty years reads thus, *Qui non obediverit sacerdoti ex decreto judicis morietur*. He that will not obey the *priest* shall die by the sentence of the *judge*; and Mr. *Lightfoot* added, that when the judges of inferior courts went up to Jerusalem by way of appeal, it was only for advice and consultation; but when the question was put, *Dec.* 12, for a *sub-ordination of synods with LAY-ELDERS*, as so many courts of judicature, with power to dispense church censures, it was carried in the affirmative, and inserted in their *humble advice*, with this addition; “so ‘Christ has furnished some in his church (besides ministers of the word) with gifts for government, and with ‘commission to execute the same, when called thereunto,

\* Grand Debate, p. 115, 128, &c. † *Lightfoot's Remarks*, p. 47.



‘who are to join with the minister in the government of the church, which officers the reformed churches generally call ELDERS.’\*’

Thus the main foundations of the presbyterial government were voted of *divine appointment* by a very great majority; but the independents entered their dissent in writing, and complained to the world “of the unkind usage they met with in the assembly; that the papers they offered were not read; that they were not allowed to state their own questions, being told they set themselves industriously to puzzle the cause, and render the clearest propositions obscure, rather than argue the truth or falseness of them—that it was not worth the assembly’s while to spend so much time in debating with so inconsiderable a number of men;† they also declared, that the assembly refused to debate their main proposition, viz. *whether a divine right of church government did not remain with every particular congregation.*”—To all which it was replied, that the assembly were not conscious they had done them any injustice, and as for the rest, they were the proper judges of their own methods of proceeding.

The *erastians*, seeing how things were carried, reserved themselves for the house of commons, where they were sure to be joined by all the patrons of the independents. The English and Scots commissioners being no less solicitous about the event, gave their friends notice to be early in their places, hoping to carry the question before the house should be full; but Mr. *Glyn*, perceiving their intention, spoke an hour to the point of *Jus divinum*; and after him Mr. *Whitlocke* stood up and enlarged upon the same argument, till the house was full, when the question being put, it was carried in the negative; and that the proposition of the assembly should stand thus, *That it is LAWFUL AND AGREEABLE TO THE WORD OF GOD, that the*

\* Vide Appendix, No. ix.

† This is a specimen of that insolence of spirit, that pride and haughtiness in numbers which a conviction of acting with the majority begets. These men did not recollect, that the christians themselves at the beginning, were an inconsiderable number of men, and the disciples of the true and faithful witness a “little flock.” They had forgotten the gracious promise made to “two or three” only, gathered together in the name of Christ. *Ed.*

*church be governed by congregational, classical, and synodical assemblies.*||

The disappointment of the Scots commissioners and their friends at the loss of this question in the house, is not to be expressed; they alarmed the citizens with the danger of the church, and prevailed with the *common-council* to petition the parliament [Nov. 15] that *the presbyterian discipline might be established* as the discipline of Jesus Christ; but the commons answered with a frown, *that the citizens must have been misinformed of the proceedings of the house, or else they would not have precipitated the judgment of parliament.* Not discouraged at this rebuke, they prevailed with the *city ministers* to petition, who, when they came to the house, where told by the speaker, *they need not wait for an answer, but go home and look to the charges of their several congregations;* and immediately appointed a committee to enquire into the rise of these petitions.

The presbyterian ministers, despairing of success with the commons, instead of yielding to the times, resolved to apply to the house of lords, who received them civilly, and promised to take their request into consideration; but no advances being made in two months, they were out of all patience, and determined to renew their application; and to give it the greater weight, prevailed with the *lord-mayor and court of aldermen* to join with them in presenting an address which they did, Jan. 16, “For a speedy settlement of church-government, according to the covenant, and that no toleration might be given to popery, prelacy, superstition, heresy, profaneness, or any thing contrary to sound doctrine, and that all private assemblies might be restrained.”† The lords thanked them for their zeal, and recommended it to the city magistrates to suppress all such unlawful assemblies; but the houses were not to be moved as yet by such disagreeable importunity; however, this laid the foundation of those jealousies and misunderstandings between the city and parliament, which in the end proved the ruin of the presbyterian cause.

But the fiercest contention between the assembly and parliament arose upon the *power of the keys*, which the

|| Whitlocke's Memoirs, p. 106.

† Vol. Pamp. No. 31, p. 3.

former had voted to be in the eldership or presbytery, in these words : “ The keys of the kingdom of heaven were ‘ committed to the officers of the church, by virtue whereof ‘ they have power respectively to retain and remit sins, to ‘ shut the kingdom of heaven against the impenitent both ‘ by the word and censures, and to open it to the penitent ‘ by absolution ; and to prevent the profanation of the holy ‘ sacrament by notorious and obstinate offenders, the said ‘ officers are to proceed by admonition, suspension from the ‘ sacrament of the lord’s-supper for a season, and by ex- ‘ communication from the church, according to the nature ‘ of the crime and demerit of the person ;\*” all which power they claimed, not by the laws of the land, but *jure divino*, or by divine appointment.

The *independents* claimed a like power for the brotherhood of every particular congregation, but without any civil sanctions or penalties annexed ; the *erastians* were for laying the communion open, and referring all crimes to the civil magistrate. When the question therefore came under consideration in the house of commons, the learned Mr. *Selden* delivered his opinion against all suspensions and excommunications, to this effect, “ that for four thousand years there was no law to suspend persons from religious exercises. Strangers, indeed, were kept from the passover, but they were pagans, and not of the Jewish religion. The question is not now for keeping away pagans in times of christianity, but protestants from protestant worship. No divine can shew, that there is any such command as this to suspend from the sacrament. No man is kept from the sacrament, *eo nomine*, because he is guilty of any sin, by the constitution of the reformed churches, or because he has not made satisfaction. Every man is a sinner ; the difference is only, that one is in private, and the other in public. *Dic ecclesiae* in St. *Matthew* were the courts of law which then sat at Jerusalem. No man can shew any excommunication till the popes *Victor* and *Zephorinus* (two hundred years after Christ) first began to use them upon private quarrels, whereby it appears, that excommunication is an human invention, taken from the heathens.”†

\* Vide Appendix, No. ix.

† Rushworth, p. 203.



Mr. *Whitlocke* spake on the same side of the question and said, “The assembly of divines have petitioned and advised this house, that in every *presbytery*, or *presbyterian congregation*, the pastors and ruling elders may have the power of excommunication, and of suspending such as they shall judge ignorant or scandalous.\* By pastors, I suppose, they mean themselves, and others who are or may be preachers, and would be bishops or overseers of their congregations. By ruling elders they mean a select number of such in every congregation as shall be chosen for the execution of government and discipline therein. A pastor is one who is to feed his sheep; and if so, how improper must it be for such to desire to excommunicate any, or keep them from food; to forbid any to eat, or whomsoever they shall judge unworthy, when Christ has said, *Take, eat, and drink, ye all of it, though Judas was one of them*. But some have said, it is the duty of a shepherd, when he sees a sheep feeding upon that which will do him hurt, to chase him away from that pasture; and they apply this to suspending those from the sacrament whom they fear, by eating and drinking unworthily, may eat and drink their own damnation. But it ought to be observed, that it is not receiving the sacrament, but the unworthiness of the receiver, that brings destruction; and this cannot be within the judgment of any but the person himself, who alone can examine his own heart; nor can any one produce a commission for another to be judge thereof. But it is said, that ruling elders are to be joined with the pastors; now, in some country villages and congregations, perhaps, they may not be very learned, and yet the authority given them is very great: the word *elders*, amongst the Hebrews, signified men of the greatest power and dignity; so it was among the Romans, whose senate was so called, from *senes*, elders. The highest title among the French, Spaniards, and Italians, *seigneur*, and *seigniori*, is but a corruption of the Latin word *senior*, elder. The same may be observed in our English corporations, where the best and most substantial persons are called aldermen or eldermen. Thus the title of elders may be given to the chief men of every

\* *Whitlocke*, p. 163, 164.

‘presbytery ; but if the power of excommunication be given them, they may challenge the title of elders in the highest signification.

“ Power is desired to be given to suspend from the sacrament two sorts of persons, the ignorant and scandalous ; now it is possible, that they who are judged to be competent in one place may be deemed ignorant in another ; however, to keep them from the ordinances is no way to improve their knowledge. Scandalous persons are likewise to be suspended, and this is to be left to the discretion of the pastors and ruling elders ; but where have they such a commission ? Scandalous sinners should be admonished to forsake their evil ways, and amend their lives ; and how can this be done better, than by allowing them to hear good sermons, and partake of the holy ordinances ? A man may be a good physician, though he never cuts off a member from his patient ; and a church may be a good church, though no member of it has ever been cut off. I have heard many complaints of the jurisdiction of the prelates, who were but few ; now in this ordinance there will be a great multiplication of spiritual men in government, but I am of opinion, that where the temporal sword is sufficient for punishment of offences, there will be no need of this new discipline.”

Though the parliament did not deem it prudent wholly to reject the ordinance for excommunication, because it had been the popular complaint in the late times, *that pastors of churches had not power to keep unworthy communicants from the Lord's table* ; yet the speeches of these learned gentlemen made such an impression, that they resolved to render it ineffectual to all the purposes of church tyranny ; accordingly, they sent to the assembly, to specify, in writing, *what degrees of knowledge in the christian religion were necessary to qualify persons for the communion ? and, what sorts of scandal deserved suspension or excommunication ?* Which, after much controversy, they presented to the houses, who inserted them in the body of their ordinance for suspension from the Lord's-supper, dated October 20, 1645, together with certain provisoes of their own.

The ordinance sets forth, that the several elderships within their respective limits, shall have power to suspend, from the sacrament of the Lord's-supper, all ignorant and scandalous persons, within the rules and directions hereafter mentioned, and no others.\*

*RULES for suspending from the sacrament in case of*  
IGNORANCE.

“All that do not know and believe the being of a God, and the Holy Trinity:—They that are not acquainted with original sin, and the fall of man:—They that do not believe Christ to be God and man, and our only mediator and redeemer;—that Christ and his benefits are applied only by faith; which faith is the gift of God, and implies a trusting in him, for the remission of sins, and life everlasting;—the necessity of sincere repentance, and a holy life, in order to salvation;—the nature and importance of the two sacraments, especially of the Lord's supper;—that the souls of the faithful do immediately live with Christ after death; and the souls of the wicked immediately go to hell;—the resurrection of the body, and a final judgment.

*RULES for suspension in case of* SCANDAL.

“The elderships shall have power to suspend from, the sacrament all *scandalous persons* hereafter mentioned, and no others, being duly convicted by the oaths of two witnesses, or their own confession; that is to say,

“All blasphemers against God, his holy word or sacraments.

“Incestuous persons; adulterers; fornicators; drunkards; profane swearers and cursers; murderers.

“Worshippers of images, crosses, crucifixes, or relics.

“All that make images of the Trinity, or of any person thereof.

“All religious worshippers of saints, angels, or any mere creature.

“Such as declare themselves not to be in charity with their neighbors.

\* Rushworth, part iv. vol. i. p. 211.



“Such as shall challenge others to a duel, or that shall accept such challenge.

“Such as knowingly shall carry a challenge either by word, message, or writing.

“Such as profane the Lord’s day by dancing, playing at cards or dice, or any other game; or that shall on the Lord’s day use masking, wakes, shooting, bowling, playing at foot-ball, or stool-ball, wrestling; or that shall resort to plays, interludes, fencing, bull-baiting, or bear-baiting; or, that shall use hawking, hunting, coursing, fishing, or fowling; or, that shall publicly expose any wares to sale, otherwise than is provided by the ordinance of April 6, 1644; or, that shall travel on the Lord’s day without reasonable cause.

“Such as keep known stews, or brothel-houses; or, that shall solicit the chastity of any person for himself, or another.

“Such parents as give their consent to marry their children to papists; and such as do themselves marry a papist.

“Such as consult for advice, witches, wizards, or fortune-tellers.

“Such as assault their parents, or any magistrate, minister, or elder, in the execution of his office.

“Such as shall be legally attainted of barrety, forgery, extortion, or bribery.”

“And the several elderships shall have power to suspend all *ministers* who shall be duly convicted of any of the crimes above-mentioned, from giving or receiving the Lord’s supper.

“Persons suspended by one congregation shall not be admitted to the sacrament by another, without certificate from that congregation of which he was a member. But in all cases of suspension, if the party suspended shall manifest his repentance before the eldership by whom he was suspended, he shall be re-admitted to the Lord’s supper, and the suspension taken off.”

But then follow the provisoes, which stripped the presbyteries of that *power of the keys* which they were reaching at.

“ Provided always, That if any person find himself aggrieved with the proceedings of the presbytery to which he belongs, he may appeal to the classical eldership ; from them to the provincial assembly ; from them to the national ; and from them to the *parliament*.

It is further provided, “ That the cognizance and examination of all capital offences shall be reserved entire to the magistrate appointed by the laws of the kingdom, who, upon his committing the party to prison, shall make a certificate to the eldership of the congregation to which they belonged, who may thereupon suspend them from the sacrament.

“ The presbytery or eldership shall not have cognizance of any thing relating to contracts, payments, or demands ; or of any matter of conveyance, title, interest, or property, in lands or goods.

“ No use shall be made of any confession, or proof made before an eldership, at any trial at law of any person for any offence.

“ And it is further ordained, that those members of parliament who are members of the assembly of divines, or any seven of them, shall be a standing committee, to consider of such other offences or scandals, not mentioned in this ordinance, which may be conceived to be a sufficient cause of suspension from the sacrament, and shall lay them before the parliament.”

By an ordinance of June 5, 1646, a discretionary power was lodged in a committee of lords and commons, not less than nine, to adjudge and determine scandalous offences, not formerly enumerated, and report them to the two houses, that if they concurred with the committee they might be added to the catalogue.

By these provisos it is evident the parliament were determined not to part with the *spiritual sword*, or subject their civil properties to the power of the church, which gave great offence to the Scots commissioners, and to most of the English presbyterians, who declaimed against the ordinance, as built upon *erastian* principles, and depriving the church of that which it claimed by a *divine institution*. They allowed of appeals from one spiritual court to another.

er, but declared openly for the pulpit and press, that appeals to the parliament or civil magistrate, as the *denier resort*, were insufferable. The parliament, observing their ambition of making the church independent of the state, girt the laws closer about them, and subjected their determinations more immediately to the civil magistrate, by an ordinance dated March 14th, 1645-6, which enacts, 'that an appeal shall lie from the decisions of every classis, to the commissioners chosen by parliament out of every province, and from them to the parliament itself. 'That if any person commit any scandalous offences not mentioned in the ordinance, the minister may forbear to administer the sacrament to him for that time; but then he shall, within eight days, certify the same to the commissioners, who shall send up the case, with their opinions, to the parliament, by whose determination the eldership shall abide."

This ordinance of suspension from the sacrament was extorted from the two houses before the time, by the importunate solicitations of the city clergy; for as yet there were no classes or presbyteries in any part of England, which ought to have been erected before they had determined their powers. The houses had voted, that there should be a choice of *lay-elders* throughout England and Wales, and had laid down some rules for this purpose Aug. 19, 1645; but it was the 14th of March following, before it passed into a law.

It was then ordained, 1. "That there be forthwith a choice of [ruling] elders throughout the kingdom of England and dominion of Wales.

2. "That public notice be given of such election in every parish, by the minister of the church, a fortnight before; and that on the Lord's day on which the choice is to be made, a sermon be preached suitable to the occasion.

3. "Elections shall be made by the congregation, or the major part of them then assembled, being heads of families, and such as have taken the covenant.

4. "That certain persons be appointed *triers* in every classis, viz. six ministers and three lay-men, whereof seven to be a quorum, to determine the validity of elections.



‘ All members of parliament, and peers of the realm, to be  
‘ triers in the parishes wherein they live.

5. “ No man to be a ruling *elder* but for one congrega-  
‘ tion, and that in the parish where he lives.

6. “ The qualifications of a *ruling elder* are, that he be  
‘ of good understanding in religion, sound in the faith, pru-  
‘ dent, discreet, grave, of unblameable conversasion, wil-  
‘ ling to undergo the office, and in communion with the  
‘ church.

7. “ All parishes, privilege places, exempt jurisdictions,  
‘ and all other places whatsoever, shall be brought under  
‘ the exercise of congregational, classical, provincial, and  
‘ national assemblies, except chapels within any of the  
‘ king’s houses, or the house of peers, which shall continue  
‘ free for the exercise of religion, according to the  *Direc-*  
‘ *tory*, but not otherwise.

8. “ The province of London shall be divided into twelve  
‘ classical elderships, each to contain about twelve parish-  
‘ es of the city, and parts adjacent, and these to be the  
‘ boundaries of the province of London.

9. “ The several counties of England and Wales shall  
‘ be divided into classical presbyteries, by persons to be  
‘ appointed by parliament for this purpose, who shall set-  
‘ tle the boundaries of each classis, and certify the same to  
‘ the parliament for their approbation.

10. “ The *presbytery* or *eldership* of every parish shall  
‘ meet once a week; the *classical assemblies* of each prov-  
‘ ince once a month, by adjournment, in such places as  
‘ may be most convenient; *provincial assemblies* shall  
‘ meet twice a year; *national assemblies* as often as they  
‘ shall be summoned by parliament, and shall continue sit-  
‘ ting as long as the parliament shall direct and appoint,  
‘ and not otherwise.

11. “ Every congregational or parochial eldership shall  
‘ send *two elders*, or more, not exceeding *four*, and one  
‘ minister, to the classical assembly; every classical as-  
‘ sembly within the province shall send two ministers, and  
‘ four ruling elders at least, but not to exceed nine, to the  
‘ provincial assembly. Every provincial assembly shall  
‘ appoint two ministers, and four ruling elders, which shall

‘constitute a national assembly, when such an one shall be ‘summoned by parliament.”†

When this ordinance had passed the *commons*, it stuck a considerable time with the lords, insomuch that the presbyterian clergy thought it necessary to quicken them by a petition, May 29, under the hands of three hundred ministers of Suffolk and Essex, lamenting the decay of religion, and the want of church-discipline, and beseeching their lordships to put the finishing hand to the bill so long depending; which they did accordingly, June 6, 1646.

Thus the presbyterian form of church-government became the national establishment, by way of *probation*, as far as an ordinance of parliament could make it; for the preamble sets forth, “that if upon trial it was not found ‘acceptable, it should be reversed or amended. It declares ‘further, that the two houses found it very difficult to make ‘their new settlement agree with the laws and government ‘of the kingdom; that therefore it could not be expected, ‘that a present rule in every particular should be settled ‘at once, but that there will be need of supplements and ‘additions, and perhaps alterations, as experience shall ‘bring to light the necessity thereof.”

The parliament apprehended they had now established the plan of the presbyterian discipline, though it proved not to the satisfaction of any one party of christians; so hard is it to make a good settlement when men dig up all at once old foundations. The *presbyterian hierarchy* was as narrow as the *prelatical*; and as it did not allow a liberty of conscience, claiming a civil as well as ecclesiastical authority over men’s persons and properties, it was equally, if not more insufferable. Bishop *Kennet* observes, that the settling presbytery was supported by the fear and love of the Scots army, and that when *they* were gone home it was better managed by the English army, who were for independency and a principle of toleration; but as things stood nobody was pleased; the episcopalians and independents were excluded; and because the parliament would not give the several presbyteries an absolute power over their communicants, but reserved the last appeal to

† Rushworth, p. 226.

themselves, neither the Scots nor English presbyterians would accept it.

When the scheme was laid before the Scots parliament and general assembly, as a plan for uniformity between the two nations, they insisted upon the following amendments :

(1.) "That no godly minister may be excluded from being a member of classical, provincial, or national assemblies.

(2.) "That the ordinary time for the meeting of the national assembly may be fixed ; with a reserve of power to the parliament to convene them when they please, and a liberty to the church to meet oftener on necessary occasions.

(3.) "That *the congregational eldership may have power to judge in cases of scandal not expressed*. This they conceive cannot be construed lodging an arbitrary power in the church ; whereas on the other hand, the appointing such *provincial commissioners* as are settled in the ordinance, will occasion disputes, create a disconformity between this and other churches, and is a mixture in church-government altogether without precedent. This business therefore they conceive may be better managed by *assemblies of ministers and ruling elders*.

(4.) "That the ordinance for *ordination of ministers* may be perpetual.

(5.) "The manner of subjecting church-assemblies to the control and decision of parliament, being very liable to mistakes ; the exemption likewise of persons of distinction from ecclesiastical censures ; and the administering the sacrament to some persons, against the conscience of the ministry and elderships ; these and some other particulars, being more than they can admit, they desire may be altered to general satisfaction.

(6.) "As to the articles relating to the perpetual officers of the church, with their respective functions ; the order and power of church-assemblies ; the directions for public repentance or penance ; the rules for excommunication and absolution ;"\* all these they desire may be fix-

\* Rushworth, p, 253.



ed, and settled pursuant to the *covenant*, and with the joint advice of the divines of both kingdoms [*i. e.* the assembly at Westminster] long since offered to both houses.

After the delivery of these papers by the Scots commissioners, and before the houses had returned an answer, they were published with a preface by a private hand, which provoked the houses to such a degree, that April 14, they voted it to be burnt by the hands of the common hangman, which was done accordingly. April 17, the commons published their answer to the commissioners papers, in which they declare to the world, “that their real intentions are to settle religion according to the covenant and to maintain the ancient and fundamental government of this kingdom. They think it strange that any sober and modest men should imagine, they are unwilling to settle any government in the church, after they have declared so fully for the presbyterian; have taken so much pains for the settling it; have passed most of the particulars brought to them by the assembly of divines, without any material alteration, save in the point of commissioners; and have published so many ordinances for putting the same in execution; *only because they cannot consent to the granting an arbitrary and unlimited power and jurisdiction to near ten thousand judicatories to be erected within this kingdom, and this demanded in such a way as is not consistent with the fundamental laws and government of the same, and by necessary consequence excluding the parliament of England from the exercise of all ecclesiastical jurisdiction.* This, say they, has been the great cause that church-government has not been long since settled; and we have the more reason not to part with this power out of the hands of the civil magistrate, since the experience of all ages will manifest, that the reformation and purity of religion, and the preservation and protection of the people of God in this kingdom, has, under God, been owing to the parliament’s exercise of this power. If then the minds of any are disturbed for want of the present settling of church-government, let them apply to those [ministers] who, having sufficient power and direction from the houses on that behalf, have not as yet put the same in execution.”

The English presbyterians, having resolved to stand and fall with the Scots, refused peremptorily to comply with the ordinance, relying upon the assistance and support of that nation. Mr. *Marshal* stood up in the assembly, March 20, and said, that since an ordinance of parliament for church government was now published, and speedily to be put in execution; and since there was some things in that ordinance which lay very hard upon his conscience, and upon the consciences of many of his brethren (though he blessed God for the zeal of the two houses in setting the government of the church thus far) yet being much pressed in spirit with some things contained therein, he moved, that a committee might be appointed to examine what things in the ordinance were contrary to their consciences, and to prepare a petition to present them to the two houses.\*

A petition was accordingly drawn up, and presented March 23, by the whole assembly, with Mr. *Marshal* at their head. In this petition they assert the *divine right* of the presbyterian government, and complain of a clause in the late ordinance, which establishes *an appeal from the censures of the church to a committee of parliament*. It was a sanguine and daring attempt of these divines, who were called together only for their advice, to examine and censure the ordinances of parliament, and dispute in this manner with their superiors; the commons, alarmed at this petition, appointed a committee to take into consideration the matter and manner of it, who, after some time, reported it as their opinion, that the assembly of divines in their late petition had broken the privileges of parliament, and were guilty of a *præmunire*; and whereas they insisted so peremptorily on the *jus divinum* of the presbyterian government, the committee had drawn up certain queries, which they desired the assembly might resolve for their satisfaction; the house agreed to the report of the committee, and on the 30th of April sent sir *John Evelin*, Mr. *Nathaniel Fiennes* and Mr. *Browne*, to the assembly, to acquaint them with their resolutions. These gentlemen set before them their rash and imprudent conduct, and in several speeches shewed wherein they had exceeded their

\* MS. penes me, Sess. 603.

province, which was, *to advise the houses in such points as they should lay before them, but not to dictate to those to whom they owed their being an assembly.* Then they read the votes above mentioned, and delivered in the following questions, with the orders of the house thereupon :

*Questions propounded to the Assembly of Divines by the House of Commons, touching the point of jus divinum in the matters of church government.*

1. “ Whether the congregational and presbyterial elderships appointed by ordinance of parliament, or any other congregational or presbyterial elderships are *jure divino*, and by the will and appointment of Jesus Christ? and, whether any particular church government be *jure divino*? and, what that government is?\*

2. “ Whether all the members of the said elderships, as members thereof, or which of them, are *jure divino*, and by the will and appointment of Jesus Christ?

3. “ Whether the classical, provincial, and national assemblies, all, or any of them, and which of them, are *jure divino*, and by the will and appointment of Jesus Christ?

4. “ Whether appeals from congregational elderships to classical, provincial, and national assemblies, or any of them, and to which of them, are *jure divino*, and by the will and appointment of Jesus Christ? and whether their POWERS upon such appeals are *jure divino*, and by the will and appointment of Jesus Christ?

5. “ Whether œcumenical assemblies are *jure divino*? and whether there be appeals from any of the former assemblies to the said œcumenical *jure divino*, and by the will and appointment of Jesus Christ?

6. “ Whether by the word of God, the power of judging and declaring what are such notorious and scandalous offences, for which persons guilty thereof are to be kept from the sacrament of the Lord’s-supper, and of convening before them, trying, and actually suspending from the sacrament of the Lord’s-supper such offenders, is either in the congregational eldership, presbytery, or in any other

\* Rushworth, p. 260.



‘eldership, congregation, or persons? and, whether such powers are in them only, or any of them, and in which of them *jure divino*, and by the will and appointment of Jesus Christ?

7. “Whether there be any certain and particular rules expressed in the word of God to direct the elderships, or presbyteries, congregations, or persons, or any of them, in the exercise and execution of the powers aforesaid, and what are those rules?

8. “Is there any thing contained in the word of God, that the supreme magistracy in a christian state may not judge and determine what are the aforesaid notorious and scandalous offences, and the manner of suspension for the same; and in what particulars concerning the premises is the said supreme magistracy by the word of God exeluded?

9. “Whether the provision of commissioners to judge of scandals not enumerated (as they are authorized by the ordinance of parliament) be contrary to that way of government which Christ has appointed in his church? and, wherein are they so contrary?”

In the assembly’s answer to these propositions the house of commons ordered, the proofs from scripture to be set down, with the several texts at large, in the express words of the same; and that every minister of the assembly, who should be present at the debate of any of these questions, should subscribe his respective name in the affirmative or negative, according as he gave his vote: and that those who dissented from the major part should set down their positive opinions, with the express texts of scripture upon which their opinions are grounded.

It is easy to discover the masterly hands of Mr. *Selden* and *Whitlocke* in these questions; which were sent to the assembly not with any prospect of a satisfactory answer, but to employ, and, it may be, to divide them, till they saw how they were like to settle with the king. The houses were afraid of being fettered with the Scots discipline, and yet the Scots were not to be disgusted, because they had an army in the north, to whom the king had committed the custody of his person.

As soon as the assembly had heard the resolutions of the house of commons above-mentioned, and the questions read, first by sir *J. Evelin*, and then by their scribe, they adjourned in a very great fright till next morning, in order to consult their brethren in the city ; and then appointed a day of fasting and humiliation for themselves, in reference to their present circumstances, and sent letters to all the members to give their attendance. The fast was observed within their own walls on Wednesday May 6, from nine in the morning till four in the afternoon ; and committees were appointed to consider of an answer to the questions, whose report we shall consider under the next year.

In the mean time, we must go back a little, to take a view of the attempts which were making to comprehend the *independents*, or dissenting brethren in the assembly within the new establishment, or at least to obtain a toleration for them ; † the parliament had ordered, September 13, 1644, that the “ committee of lords and commons appointed to ‘ treat with the Scots commissioners, and the committee of ‘ divines, do take into consideration the differences of the ‘ opinions of the members of the assembly in point of church ‘ government, and endeavor *an union if possible* ; and if ‘ that cannot be accomplished, endeavor to find out some ‘ way how far tender consciences, who cannot in all things ‘ submit to the same rule, may be borne with, according to ‘ the word of God, and consistent with the public peace.” This was called the *grand committee of accommodation*, which met the first time, Sept. 20, and chose a sub-committee of six divines of the assembly, to consider the points of difference, and to prepare materials for the consideration of the *grand committee* ; the names of these divines were the reverend Mr. *Marshall*, Mr. *Herle*, Mr. *Vines*, Dr. *Temple*, Mr. *Goodwin*, and Mr. *Nye*, who, after several consultations among themselves, delivered to the committee certain propositions, [Oct. 15, 1644] which were read by Mr. *Vines*, their chairman : the independents would have stated the *points in variance* between the two parties, and endeavored a compromise while the discipline of the church was depending ; but the presbyterians insisted, that the

† Papers for Accommodation, p. 1.

new form of government should first pass into a law as a *standard*, before the exceptions of the independents be considered; upon which they were adjourned by order of the house of commons, till the affair should be determined in the assembly, who agreed, April 4, 1645, that *the brethren who had entered their dissent against the presbyterian government should be a committee to bring in the whole frame of their government in a body, with their grounds and reasons.\** The independents desired liberty to bring in their *objections* by parts, as the *presbyterians* had done their *advices*; but this not being admitted, they desired time to perfect their plan before any other scheme passed into a law; but the presbyterians, without any regard to the compromise, by the assistance of their Scots friends, pushed the affair to a conclusion in parliament; upon which the independents laid aside their own *model*, and published a remonstrance, complaining of the artful conduct of the assembly, and that the discipline of the church being fixed, it was too late to think any more of a comprehension. The house of commons having seen their mistake resumed this affair with their own hands, and by an order dated Nov. 6, 1645, revived the *committee of accommodation*, which, besides the Scots commissioners, consisted of the following peers, viz.

Earl of *Northumberland*, Lord *Wharton*, and  
 Earl of *Manchester*, Lord *Howard*.  
 Lord Visc. *Say and Seale*,

These were to be met by the following members of the assembly, viz.

Dr. <i>Burges</i> ,	Mr. <i>Vines</i> ,	Mr. <i>Arrowsmith</i> ,
Mr. <i>Marshall</i> ,	Mr. <i>Hill</i> ,	Dr. <i>Smith</i> ,
Mr. <i>Herle</i> ,	Dr. <i>Temple</i> ,	Mr. <i>Seaman</i> ,
Mr. <i>Reynolds</i> ,	Mr. <i>Palmer</i> ,	Mr. <i>Newcomen</i> ,
Dr. <i>Hoyle</i> ,	Mr. <i>Tuckney</i> ,	Mr. <i>Young</i> ,
Mr. <i>White</i> ,		

with the different brethren of the assembly,

Mr. <i>T. Goodwin</i> ,	Mr. <i>Nye</i> ,	Mr. <i>Bridge</i> ,
Mr. <i>Simpson</i> ,	Mr. <i>Burroughs</i> ,	Mr. <i>Drury</i> .

\* Remonstrance, p. 3.



The committee met in the *Jerusalem chamber* Nov. 17, and would have entered upon a scheme for comprehension, but the *independents* moved only for an *indulgence* or *toleration*, observing, that as they had already moved in the assembly and elsewhere, that their scheme of government might be debated before the *presbyterian* had passed into a law, and for this purpose had offered to prepare a complete model, if they might have been indulged a few days,\* and that having been over-ruled. and another form of government settled; they apprehended themselves shut out from the establishment, and precluded from any further attempts towards an union or comprehension; but still they were willing to enter upon the second part of the parliament's order, which was to consider, *how far tender consciences, who cannot in all things submit to the established rule, may be indulged, consistent with the word of God and the public peace.* Accordingly in their next meeting, December 4, they offered the following proposals:

Taking for granted that both sides shall agree in one confession of faith, they humbly crave,

1. That their congregations may have the power of ordination within themselves.

2. That they may not be brought under the power of classes, nor forced to communicate in those parish churches where they dwell, but that they may have liberty to join with such congregations as they prefer, and that such congregations may have power of all church censures within themselves, subject only to parliament; and be as so many *exempt, or privileged places.*

To the preamble the *presbyterians* replied, that only such as agreed to their confession of faith and directory should have the benefit of the forbearance to be agreed on, with which the committee concurred; but the *independents* would admit only of the affirmative, *that such as agreed with them should be tolerated*; and would not consent to the negative, so as to set bounds or limits of forbearance to tender consciences, nor make such an agreement a necessary qualification for receiving the sacrament.†

To the request of the *independents*, of being exempted

\* Papers for Accommodation, p. 14, 24. † Ibid. p. 18, 19, 26, 27.

from the jurisdiction of their classes, and having a liberty of erecting separate congregations, the presbyterians replied,

1. That this implied a total separation from the established rule.

2. The lawfulness of gathering churches out of other true churches.

3. That the parliament would then destroy what they had set up.

4. That the members of independent churches would then have greater privilege than those of the establishment.

5. That this would countenance a perpetual schism. And,

6. Introduce all manner of confusion in families.\*

They therefore proposed, that such as, after conference with their parish minister, were not satisfied with the establishment, should not be compelled to communicate in the Lord's-supper, nor be liable to censures from classes or synods, provided they joined with the parish congregation where they lived, and were under the government of it in other respects.

The *independents* replied, that they did not intend a total separation, but should agree with their brethren in the most essential points; as in worshipping according to the directory, in choosing the same officers, pastors, teachers, ruling elders, with the same qualifications as in the rule. That they should require the same qualifications in their members as the assembly had advised, that is, *visible saints, professing faith in Christ, and obedience to him, according to the rules of faith and life taught by Christ and his apostles*;† that they should practise the same church censures, being accountable for their conduct to their civil superiors. They would also hold occasional communion with the presbyterian churches, in baptism and the Lord's-supper, communicating occasionally with them, and receiving their members to communion as occasion required. Their ministers should preach for each other, and in cases of difficulty they would call in their assistance and advice; and when an *ordination* falls out, they would desire the presence and approbation of their ministers with their own. Now surely, say they, this

\* Papers of Accommodation, p. 20, 21.

† Ibid. p. 29, 30.

does not imply a total separation ; but if in some things men cannot comply with the *established rule* without sin, we think such persons ought not to live without communicating in the Lord's-supper all their days, rather than gather into churches where they may enjoy all ordinances without offence to their consciences—nor ought such separation to be accounted *schism*, which is a name of reproach we desire not to be branded with, when we are willing to maintain christian love and communion with our neighbors, as far as our consciences will permit.\*—They add further, that if the *state* is pleased to grant them this liberty, they will refer themselves to the wisdom of the legislature to consider of limiting their congregations to a certain number, to be as so many receptacles for pious persons of tender consciences.†

The *presbyterians* in their next *reply*, Dec. 23, after having blamed the *independents* for not going upon a comprehension, argue against the lawfulness of a *separation* after this manner : “ That if a pretence of conscience be a ‘ sufficient ground of separation, men may gather impure ‘ and corrupt churches out of purer, because, upon the dictate of an erring conscience they may disallow that ‘ which is pure, and set up that which is agreeable to their ‘ erring consciences ; and we very much doubt (say they) ‘ whether tenderness of conscience in doubtful points will ‘ justify a separation ; it may oblige men to forbear communion, but not to set up a contrary practice. If a ‘ church impose any thing that is sinful, we must forbear ‘ to comply, yet without separation, as was the practice of ‘ the puritans in the late time.”‡—They then argue, from the concessions of the *independents*, that because they agree with them in so many material points, therefore they should not separate. “ If, say they, you can communicate ‘ with our church *occasionally*, once, or a second and third ‘ time without sin, we know no reason why you may not ‘ do it constantly, and then separation will be needless— ‘ as for such a toleration as our brethren desire, we apprehend it will open a door to all sects ; and though the *independents* now plead for it, their brethren in New-England do not allow it.”||

\* Papers for Accommodation, p. 35, 36.

† Ibid. p. 40.

‡ Ibid. p. 51.

|| Ibid. p. 56.



As to the charge of *schism*, they admit, that difference in judgment in some particular points is not schism; nor does an inconformity to some things enjoined deserve that name; but our brethren desire further to set up *separate communions*, which is a manifest rupture of our societies into others, and is therefore a schism in the body.\* This is setting up altar against altar, allowing our churches (as the independents do) to be true churches; for St. *Austin* says, *schismaticos facit non diversa fides, sed communio-nis disrupta societas*. And we conceive, it is the cause of the separation that makes schism, and not the separation itself; if then the cause of our brethren's separation be not sufficient, by what other name can it be called? To all which they add, that this indulgence, if granted, will be the mother of all contentions, strifes, heresies, and confusions in the church; and contrary to their covenant, which obliges them to endeavor to their utmost an *uniformity*.

When the committee met the next time, Feb. 2, 1645-6, the *independents* replied chiefly to the point of *uniformity*, and argued, that it was not necessary to the peace of the churches; and ought not to extend beyond peoples light and measure of understanding, according to the apostolical canon, *as far as we have attained let us walk by the same rule*. Phil. iii. 15.† As for a mere exemption from the censures of the classes, they declared frankly they could not acquiesce in it, because it would deprive them of the enjoyment of the Lord's-supper; and that it was very hard to urge, that because they came so near the brethren, therefore they should be obliged to a total and constant conformity.

The *committee* met the last time, March 9, when the sub-committee of presbyterian divines answered the last paper of the *independents*, maintaining all their former positions, and concluding in this strange and wonderful manner: "That whereas their brethren say, that uniformity 'ought to be urged no further than is agreeable to all men's 'consciences, and to their edification; it seems to them, as 'if their brethren not only desired liberty of conscience for 'themselves, but for all men, and would have us think,

\* Papers for Accommodation, p. 65, 73, 74.

† Ibid. p. 86.

‘ that we are bound by our covenant to bring the churches  
 ‘ in the three kingdoms no nearer a conjunction and unifor-  
 ‘ mity than is consistent with the liberty of all men’s con-  
 ‘ sciences ; which, whether it be the sense of the covenant,  
 ‘ we leave with the honorable committee.”\*

Hereupon the reverend Mr. *Jer. Burroughs*, a divine of great candor and moderation, declared in the name of the *independents*, “ that if their congregations might not be  
 ‘ exempted from that coercive power of the classes ; if they  
 ‘ might not have liberty to govern themselves in their own  
 ‘ way, as long as they behaved peaceably towards the civil  
 ‘ magistrate ; they were resolved to suffer, or go to some  
 ‘ other place of the world, where they might enjoy their  
 ‘ liberty. But while men think there is no way of peace  
 ‘ but by forcing all to be of the same mind, (says he) while  
 ‘ they think the civil sword is an ordinance of God to de-  
 ‘ termine all controversies of divinity, and that it must needs  
 ‘ be attended with fines and imprisonment to the disobedi-  
 ‘ ent ; while they apprehend there is no medium between a  
 ‘ strict uniformity, and a general confusion of all things ;  
 ‘ while these sentiments prevail, there must be a base sub-  
 ‘ jection of men’s consciences to slavery, a suppression of  
 ‘ much truth, and great disturbances in the christian world.”

Thus ended the last committee of lords and commons, and assembly of divines, for *accommodation*, which adjourned to a certain day, but being then diverted by other affairs never met again. Little did the presbyterian divines imagine, that in less than twenty years all their artillery would be turned against themselves ; that they should be excluded the establishment by an act of prelati- cal uniformity, that they should be reduced to the necessity of pleading for that indulgence which they now denied their brethren ; and esteem it their duty to gather churches for separate worship out of others, which they allowed to be true ones. If the leading presbyterians in the assembly and city had carried it with temper towards the *independents*, on the foot of a limited toleration, they had, in all likelihood, prevented the disputes between the army and parliament, which were the

\* Papers for Accommodation, p. 123.

ruin of both ; they might then have saved the constitution, and made their own terms with the king, who was now their prisoner ; but they were enamored with the charms of *covenant uniformity*, and the *divine right* of their presbytery, which after all, the parliament would not admit in its full extent. Mr. *Baxter*, who was no friend of the independents, says, “ That the presbyterian ministers were ‘ so little sensible of their own infirmities, that they would ‘ not agree to tolerate those who were not only tolerable, ‘ but worthy instruments and members in the churches, prudent men, who were for *union in things necessary, for ‘ liberty in things unnecessary, and for charity in all ; but ‘ they could not be heard.*”\*

Great was the resort of the city divines to Sion college at this time, where there was a kind of synod every Monday, to consult proper methods to propagate religion, and support the assembly at Westminster in their opposition to the toleration of sectaries ; for this purpose they wrote them a letter, dated Jan. 15, 1645-6, in which they recite the arguments of the committee, and beseech them to oppose with all their might the great *Diana* of the independents,†

\* *Baxter's Life*, p. 103.

† Their *Diana* was *toleration*, of which the ministers at Sion college expressed their detestation and abhorrence ; and the design of their letter was to shew the unreasonableness, the sin, and the mischievous consequences of it. “ Not,” said they, “ that we can harbor the least jealousy of your zeal, fidelity, or industry, in the opposing and extirpating ‘ of such a root of gall and bitterness as *toleration* is, and will be both ‘ in present and future ages.” Another instance of the same bitter spirit appeared in a piece published by the ministers and elders of London, met together in a provincial assembly November 2, 1749, entitled “ A ‘ vindication of the presbyterial government and ministry :” in which they represent the doctrine of *universal toleration*, as contrary to godliness, opening a door to libertinism and profaneness, and a tenet to be rejected as *soul poison*. The ministers of Lancashire published a paper in 1648, expressing their harmonious consent with their brethren in London ; and remonstrate against toleration, as putting a *cup of poison* into the hand of a child, and a *sword* into that of a madman ; as letting loose madmen with *fire-brands* in their hands, and appointing a city of refuge in *men's consciences*, for the *devil* to fly to ; and instead of providing for tender consciences, taking away all conscience. In the same year, another paper was published in Warwickshire by 43 ministers, breathing the same spirit, and expressing the like sentiments. Crosby's history of the English Baptists, vol. i. p. 188, 192. Ed.



and not suffer their new establishment to be strangled in the birth by a lawless toleration.

The whole Scots nation was also commanded into the service ; the parliament of that kingdom wrote to the two houses at Westminster, Feb. 3, telling them that “ *it was expected the honorable houses would add the civil sanction to what the pious and learned assembly have advised ; and I am commanded by the parliament of this kingdom, (says the president) to demand it, and I do in their names demand it.* And the parliament of this kingdom is persuaded, that the piety and wisdom of the honorable houses will never admit toleration of any sects or schisms contrary to our solemn league and covenant.”\* At the same time they appealed to the people, and published a declaration against toleration of sectaries and liberty of conscience ; in which, after having taken notice of their great services, they observe, that there is a party in England who are endeavoring to supplant the true religion by pleading for *liberty of conscience*, which (say they) is the nourisher of all heresies and schisms. They then declare against all such notions as are inconsistent with the truth of religion, and against opening a door to licentiousness, which to the utmost of their power, they will endeavor to oppose ; and as they have all entered into one covenant, so to the last man in the kingdom they will go on in the preservation of it. And however the parliament of England may determine in point of *toleration and liberty of conscience*, they are resolved not to make the least start, but to live and die, for the glory of God, in the entire preservation of the truth.

Most of the sermons before the house of commons, at their monthly fasts, spoke the language of *severity*, and called upon the magistrate to draw his sword against the *sectaries*. The press teemed with pamphlets of the same nature ; Mr. *Prynne* against *J. Goodwin* says, that if the parliament and synod establish presbytery, the *independents* and all others, are bound to submit, under pain of obstinacy. Another writes, that to let men serve God according to the persuasion of their own conscience, is to cast out one devil that seven worse may enter.

\* Rushwotth, p. 234.

But the cause of liberty was not destitute of advocates at this time ; the *independents* pleaded for a toleration so far as to include themselves and the sober anabaptists, but did not put the controversy on the most generous foundation ; they were for tolerating all who agreed in the fundamentals of christianity, but when they came to enumerate fundamentals they were sadly embarrassed, as all must be who plead the cause of liberty, and yet do not place the religious and civil rights of mankind on a separate basis : a man may be an orthodox believer, and yet deserve death as a traitor to his king and country ; and on the other hand, a heretic or errant non-conformist to the established religion may be a loyal and dutiful subject, and deserve the highest preferment his prince can bestow.

The letter of the city divines to the assembly received a quick reply from a writer of more generous principles, who complains, “ that the presbyterians, not content with their own freedom and liberty, nor with having their form of government made the national establishment, were grasping at as much power as the *prelates* before them had usurped ; for this purpose they had obtained the privilege of licensing the press, that nothing might be written against them but what they should please to approve ; † they were continually soliciting the parliament to establish their church government, which they called the government of Christ, with a *coercive power* ; they were always busy in framing petitions, and engaging the magistrates of the city to present them to the houses ; and not content with this, they were now moving the assembly of divines, of whom themselves are a considerable part, to become the patrons of oppression.” Our author maintains, that “ *liberty of conscience is the natural right of every man*, though of all parties of men those deserve least the countenance of the state, who would persecute others if it were in their power, because they are enemies of the society in which they live. He that will look back on past times, and examine into the true causes of the subversion and devastation of states and countries, will find it owing to the tyranny of princes, and the persecution of priests. All governments therefore which un-

† Vol. Pamphlets, No. 52.

‘derstand their true interests, will endeavor to suppress in  
 ‘every sect, or division of men, whether papist, episcopal,  
 ‘presbyterian, independent, or anabaptist, the spirit of do-  
 ‘minion and persecution, which is the disturber of man-  
 ‘kind, and the offspring of the devil. But the ministers  
 ‘say, if we tolerate one sect we must tolerate all; which  
 ‘our author admits, and adds, that they have as good a  
 ‘right to the liberty of their consciences as to their clothes  
 ‘or estates; *no opinions or sentiments of religion being*  
 ‘*cognizable by the magistrate, any further than they are*  
 ‘*inconsistent with the peace of the civil government.* The  
 ‘way to put an end to diversity of opinions is not by fines  
 ‘and imprisonments; can Bedlam, or the Fleet, open men’s  
 ‘understandings, and reduce them from error? No cer-  
 ‘tainly, nothing but sound reason and argument can do it,  
 ‘which, it is to be feared, they are not furnished with, who  
 ‘have recourse to any other weapons. *Schism and heresy*  
 ‘are to be rooted out, not by oppression, but by reason and  
 ‘debate; by the sword of the *spirit*, not of the *flesh*; by  
 ‘argument, not by blows, to which men have recourse  
 ‘when they are beat out of the other. *Schism and heresy*  
 ‘are words of terror thrown upon the adversary by all  
 ‘parties of men; and perhaps, there may need an infalli-  
 ‘ble judge to determine where the *schism* lies, before we  
 ‘venture upon the extraordinary methods to extirpate it.”  
 He adds, “that *persecution* will breed more confusion and  
 ‘disturbance than *toleration*; and that their solemn league  
 ‘and covenant ought to bind them no farther than it is con-  
 ‘sistent with the word of God. Now, that toleration, or  
 ‘liberty of conscience, is the doctrine of *scripture*, is evi-  
 ‘dent, 1. From the parable of the tares and wheat grow-  
 ‘ing together till the harvest. 2. From the apostle’s di-  
 ‘rection, *Let every man be persuaded in his own mind.* 3.  
 ‘That *whatsoever is not of faith is sin.* 4. From our Sa-  
 ‘viour’s golden rule, *whatsoever ye would that men should*  
 ‘*do to you, that do ye to them.*”—

This pamphlet was answered by another, entitled *Anti-*  
*Toleration*, in which the author endeavors to vindicate the  
 most unbounded licence of persecution; but neither the  
 assembly nor the city divines, nor the whole Scots nation,  
 could prevail with the parliament to deliver the sword in-



to their hands. The high behavior of the presbyterians lost them the affections of great numbers of people, who began to discover that the contention between them and the *prelates* was not for liberty but power, and that all the spiritual advantage they were like to reap from the war was to shift hands, and instead of episcopal government to submit to the yoke of presbyterial uniformity.

Lord *Clarendon* admits,\* that the king endeavored to make his advantage of these divisions, by courting the *independents*, and promising some of them very valuable compensations for any services they should do him; intimating, that it was impossible for them to expect relief in their scruples from persons who pretended they were erecting the *kingdom of Christ*; but though the independents were enemies to the presbyterian discipline, they had no confidence in the king's promises. Mr. *Whitlocke*|| agrees with the noble historian, that the king was watchful to take advantage of these divisions, and commanded one *Ogle* to write to Mr. *Tho. Goodwin*, and *Phil. Nye*, two of the independent ministers, and make them large overtures, if they would oppose the presbyterian government intended to be imposed upon England by the Scots; but these two gentleman very honestly acquainted their friends with the proposal, which put an end to the correspondence; all which might have convinced the presbyterians of the necessity of coming to some terms with the dissenters; but the king's affairs were so low, that they were under no apprehensions of disturbance from that quarter at present.

The assembly perfected nothing further this year; however, complaint being made of the obsolete version of the psalms by *Sternhold* and *Hopkins*, the parliament desired them to recommend some other to be used in churches; accordingly they read over Mr. *Rouse's* version, and after several amendments, sent it up to the house Nov. 14, 1645, with the following recommendation: "Whereas the honorable house of commons, by an order bearing date Nov. 20, 1643, have recommended the psalms published by Mr. *Rouse* to the consideration of the assembly of divines, the assembly has caused them to be carefully perused, and as they are now altered and amended do approve them,

‘and humbly conceive they may be useful and profitable to the church, if they be permitted to be publicly sung;’\* accordingly they were authorised by the two houses. Care was also taken to prevent the importation of incorrect bibles printed in Holland.†

To return to the proceedings of parliament. The committee for plundered ministers having reported to the house of commons, Jan. 28, 1645, certain blasphemies of *Paul Best*, who denied the Holy Trinity; the house ordered an ordinance to be brought in [March 28,] to punish him with death;‡ but several divines being appointed to confer with him, in order to convince him of his error, he confessed his belief of that doctrine in general terms before he was brought to his trial, and that he hoped to be saved thereby, but persisted in denying the personality, as a jesuitical tenet; upon this confession his trial was put off, and he was at length discharged.

The government of the church being now changed into a presbyterian form, and the war almost at end, the parliament resolved to apply the revenues of the cathedrals to other public uses, and accordingly, Nov. 18, it was ordained, “That whereas the present dean and prebendaries of Westminster had deserted their charge, and were become delinquents to the parliament, they did therefore ordain, that the earl of *Northumberland*, with about ten other lords, and twenty-two commoners, should be a committee; and that any person, or more of them, should have authority to order, direct, and dispose of the rents, issues, and profits, belonging to the college, or collegiate church, and to do and execute all other acts that did any way concern either of them.”|| They ordained further, “that the dean, prebendaries, and all other officers belonging either to the college or church, who had absented themselves, and were become delinquents, or had not taken the covenant, should be suspended from their several offices and places, and from all manner of benefit and profit arising from them, or from the arrears of them, Mr. *Osbaldeston* only excepted.

When the cathedral of Hereford fell into the parliament’s

\* MS. Sess. 535.

† Parl. Chr. p. 319.

‡ Whitloek, p. 196.

§ Husband’s Collections. p. 758.

hands, the dignitaries of that church were dispossessed, and their lands and revenues seized into the hands of the committee of that county. The dignitaries of the cathedral churches of Winchester and Carlisle were served in the same manner the latter end of this year, when the whole frame of the hierarchy was dissolved.

The parliament, at the request of the *assembly of divines*, gave some marks of their favor to the university of Cambridge, which was reduced to such necessitous circumstances, by reason of the failure of their college rents, that they could not support their students; it was therefore ordained, April 11, 1645, "That nothing contained in any ordinance of parliament concerning levying or paying of taxes should extend to the university of Cambridge, or any of the colleges or halls within the said university, nor to any of the rents or revenues belonging to the said university or colleges, or any of them, nor to charge any master, fellow, or scholar of any of the said colleges, nor any reader, officer, or minister of the said university or colleges, for any stipend, wages, or profit arising, or growing due to them, in respect of their places and employments in the said university."§ They likewise confirmed all their ancient rights and privileges, and ordered the differences between the *university* and *town* to be determined according to law. On the same day the ordinance for regulating the university, and removing scandalous ministers in the associated counties by the earl of *Manchester*, mentioned in the beginning of the last year, was revived and continued.

On the 17th of April this year died Dr. *Dan. Featly*; he was born at Charlton in Oxfordshire, 1581, and educated at Corpus Christi college, of which he was fellow; upon his leaving the university he went chaplain to sir *Thomas Symmonds*, the king's ambassador to the French court, where he gained reputation by his sermons and disputations with the papists.¶ When he returned home he became

§ Husband's Collections, p. 636, 637.

¶ There was also a celebrated piece from his pen, levelled against the baptists. It originated from a disputation which he held with four of that persuasion in Southwark, in the month of October 1641. About two years afterwards he published an account of this debate in a book,



domestic chaplain to archbishop *Abbot*, and was presented by him to the rectory of Lambeth, and in the year 1627, to that of Acton. In 1643, he was nominated of the assembly of divines, and sat among them till his correspondence with the court was discovered, by an intercepted letter to archbishop *Usher* relating to their proceedings; upon which he was committed to lord *Peter's* house for a spy, both his livings were sequestered, and himself expelled the assembly.\* The doctor was a thorough *calvinist*, but very zealous for the hierarchy of the church; so that when in prison he published the following challenge;

“WHEREAS I am certainly informed, that divers  
 ‘lecturers and preachers in London do in their pulpits, in  
 ‘a most insolent manner, demand where they are now, that  
 ‘dare stand up in defence of the church hierarchy, or book  
 ‘of common prayer, or any ways oppose or impugn the  
 ‘new-intended reformation both in doctrine and discipline  
 ‘of the church of England; I do, and will maintain, by

entitled, “The Dippers Dipt; or, the Anabaptists duckt, and plunged  
 ‘over head and ears, at a disputation in Southwark.” This title savored of the taste and spirit of the times, and is no favorable omen of the strain of the work. In his dedication, he tells the reader, “that  
 ‘he could hardly dip his pen in any thing but gall.” The doctor wrote indeed under an irritation of spirits from being deprived of two livings, which he enjoyed before the unhappy differences between the king and parliament. He had the character, however, of an acute as well as vehement disputant. He had for his fellow prisoner Mr. Henry Denne, educated at the university of Cambridge, and ordained in 1630, by the bishop of St. David, who signalized himself by his preaching, writing, disputing, and suffering for the baptistical opinion. As soon as he came into prison, Dr. Featly’s book was laid before him in his apartment; when he had read it, he offered to dispute with the author on the arguments of it. The challenge was accepted, and they debated on the first ten arguments, when the doctor declined proceeding, urging that it was not safe for them to dispute on the subject without licence from government; but he bid Mr. Denne write, and said he would defend his own arguments. Mr. Denne, on this, drew up a learned and ingenious answer; but it does not appear that the doctor ever replied. He was esteemed one of the greatest ornaments of the Corpus Christi College: and acquitted himself with great applause in a funeral oration on the death of its celebrated master Dr. Rainolds; and in a public exercise with which he entertained the archbishop of Spalato. Unwholesome air, bad diet, and worse treatment, hastened his death. Crosby’s history of the English Baptists, vol. i. p. 152, and 303, and Granger’s History of England, vol. ii. p. 176, 7. 8vo. *Ed.*

\* See before Chap. II.

‘disputation or writing, against any of them, these three conclusions :

1. “That the articles of religion agreed upon in the year 1562, by both houses of convocation, and ratified by Queen *Elizabeth*, need no alteration at all, but only an orthodox explication of some ambiguous phrases, and a vindication against false aspersions.

2. “That the discipline of the church of England, established by many laws, and acts of parliament, that is, the government by bishops (removing all innovations and abuses in the execution thereof) is agreeable to God’s word, and a truly ancient and apostolical institution.

3. “That there ought to be a set form of public prayer ; and that the book of common prayer (the kalendar being reformed in point of apocryphal saints and chapters, some rubrics explained, and some expressions revised, and the whole correctly printed with the psalms, chapters, and allegations, out of the Old and New Testament, according to the last translation) is the most complete, perfect, and exact liturgy now extant in the christian world.”

The doctor was a little man, of warm passions, and exceedingly inflamed against the parliament for his imprisonment, as appears by his last prayer a few hours before his death, which happened at Chelsea, whither he had been removed for the benefit of the air, in the sixty-fifth year of his age. His prayer had these words in it,—“Lord, strike through the reins of them that rise against the church and king, and let them be as chaff before the wind, and as stubble before the fire ; let them be scattered as partridges on the mountains, and let the breath of the Lord consume them ; but upon our gracious sovereign and his posterity let the crown flourish.”—A prayer not formed after the model of St. *Stephen’s*, or that of our blessed Saviour upon the cross.

The writer of the life of archbishop *Usher* says, the doctor was both orthodox and loyal ; but lord *Clarendon* and Dr. *Heylin* cannot forgive his sitting in the assembly, and being a witness against archbishop *Laud* at his trial. Whether he sat in the assembly (says *Heylin*) to shew his parts, or to head a party, or out of his old love to *calvinism*, may best be gathered from some speeches which



‘he made and printed; but he was there in heart before, and therefore might afford them his body now, though possibly he might be excused from taking the covenant as others did.’\*

Soon after died famous old Mr. *John Dod*, whose pious and remarkable sayings are remembered to this day; he was born at Shotlidge in Cheshire in the year 1550, and educated in Jesus college, Cambridge, of which he was fellow.† At thirty years of age he removed to Hanwell in Oxfordshire, where he continued preaching twice on the Lord’s-day, and once on the week days for above twenty years; at the end of which he was suspended for non-conformity by Dr. *Bridges*, bishop of the diocese. Being driven from Hanwell he removed to Canons-Ashby in Northamptonshire, and lived quietly several years, till upon complaint made by bishop *Neal* to King *James*, he commanded archbishop *Abbot* to silence him. After the death of King *James*, Mr. *Dod* was allowed to preach publicly again, and settled at Faustly in the same county, where he remained till his death. He was a most humble, pious, and devout man and universally beloved; an excellent *Hebrician*, a plain, practical, fervent preacher, a noted casuist, and charitable almost to a fault; his conversation was heavenly; but being a noted puritan, though he never meddled with state affairs, he was severely used by the king’s cavaliers, who plundered his house, and would have taken away his very sheets, if the good old man, hardly able to rise out of his chair, had not put them under him for a cushion; all which he endured patiently, calling to mind one of his own maxims,‡ *sanctified afflictions are spiritual promotions.*|| He died of the strangury in the 96th year of his age, and lies buried in his parish church at Faustly.

\* Hist. Presb. p. 464.

† Clark’s Martyrol, p. 168, of the annexed lives.

‡ His name has derived celebrity from his maxims, usually called *Dodd’s Sayings*: they having been printed in various forms; many of them, on two sheets of paper, are still to be seen pasted on the walls of cottages. An old woman in my neighborhood told me, says Mr. Granger, “that she should have gone distracted for the loss of her husband, if she had been without Mr. *Dodd’s Sayings* in the house.” History of England, vol. i. p. 370, 8vo. Ed.

|| Fuller’s Ch. Hist. p. 220.



## CHAP. VII.

*The Conclusion of the First Civil War, by the King's surrendering his Royal Person to the Scots. Petitions of the Assembly and City Divines against toleration, and for the divine right of the Presbyterian Government, which is erected in London. Debates between the King, Mr. Henderson, and the Scots Commissioners. His Majesty is removed from Newcastle to Holmby-House. Farther account of the Sectaries.*

THE king being returned to Oxford, Nov. 6, 1646, after an unfortunate campaign, in which all his armies were beaten out of the field, and dispersed, had no other remedy left but to make peace with his subjects, which his friends in London encouraged him to expect he might be able to accomplish, by the help of some advantage from the growing divisions among the members, the majority of whom were inclined to an accommodation, provided the king would consent to abolish episcopacy, and offer sufficient assurances to govern for the future according to law.† But though his majesty was willing to yield a little to the times, with regard to the security of the *civil* government, nothing could prevail with him to give up the *church*. Besides, as the king's circumstances obliged him to recede, the parliament as conquerors advanced in their demands. In the month of December, his majesty sent several messages to the parliament, to obtain a personal treaty at London, upon the public faith for himself and a certain number of his friends, residing there with safety and honor forty days; but the parliament would by no means trust their enemies within their own bowels, and therefore insisted preremptorily upon his signing the bills they were preparing to send him, as a preliminary to a well-grounded settlement.

The king made some concessions on his part, relating to the *militia* and *liberty of conscience*, but very far short of

† Rapin, p. 320.

the demand of the two houses, who were so persuaded of his art and ability in the choice of ambiguous expressions, capable of a different sense from what appeared at first sight, that they durst not venture to make use of them as the basis of a treaty. § Thus the winter was wasted in fruitless messages between London and Oxford, while the unfortunate king spent his time musing over his papers in a most disconsolate manner, forsaken by some of his best friends, and rudely treated by others. Mr. *Locke* says, the usage the king met with from his followers at Oxford made it an hard, but almost an even choice, to be the *parliament's* prisoner, or *their* slave. In his majesty's letter to the queen he writes, "If thou knew what a life I lead in point of conversation, I dare say thou wouldst pity me." The chief officers quarrelled, and became insupportably insolent in the royal presence; nor was the king himself without blame; for being deprived of his oracle the *queen*, he was like a ship in a storm without sails or rudder. Lord *Clarendon*† therefore draws a veil over his majesty's conduct in these words: "It is not possible to discourse of particulars with the clearness that is necessary to subject them to common understandings, without opening a door for such reflections upon the king himself, as seem to call both his wisdom and steadiness in question; as if he wanted the *one* to apprehend and discover, and the *other* to prevent the mischiefs that were evident and impending." And yet nothing could prevail with him to submit to the times, or deal frankly with those who alone were capable of retrieving his affairs.

The king having neither money nor forces, and the queen's resources from abroad failing, his majesty could not take the field in the spring, which gave the parliament army an easy conquest over his remaining forts and garrisons. All the *West* was reduced before *Midsummer*, by the victorious army of sir *Tho. Fairfax*; the city of *Exeter* surrendered April 9, in which one of the king's daughters, princess *Henrietta*, was made prisoner, but her governess the countess of *Dalkeith* found means afterwards to

|| Rushworth, vol. vi. p. 245, 246.

† Vol. iv. p. 626.

convey her privately into France. Dennington-Castle surrendered April 1, Barnstaple the 12th, and Woodstock the 26th; upon which it was resolved to strike the finishing blow, by besieging the king in his head-quarters at Oxford; upon the news of which, like a man in a fright, he left the city by night April 27, and travelled as a servant to Dr. *Hudson* and Mr. *Ashburham*, with his hair cut round to his ears, and a cloke-bag behind him to the Scots army before Newark: ‡ His majesty surrendered himself to general *Levan*, May 5, who received him with respect, but sent *an express* immediately to the two houses, who were displeased at his majesty's conduct, apprehending it calculated to prolong the war, and occasion a difference between the two nations; which was certainly intended, as appears by the king's letter from Oxford to the duke of *Ormond*, in which he says, he had good security, that he and all his adherents should be safe in their persons, honors, and consciences in the Scots army, *and that they would join with him, and employ their forces to obtain a happy and well-grounded peace*; whereas the Scots commissioners, in their letter to the house of peers, aver, "They had given no assurance, nor made any capitulation for joining forces with the king, or combining against the two houses, or any other private or public agreement whatsoever, between the king on one part, and the kingdom of Scotland, their army, or any in their names, and having power from them, on the other part;" and they called the contrary assertion a *damnable untruth*; and add, "that they never expect a blessing from God any longer than they continue faithful to their covenant."§ So that this must be the ar-

‡ *Rapin*, vol. ii. p. 523. *Rushworth*, vol. vi. p. 268, 273, 274, 303, 304.

§ Dr. Grey, to confute these declarations, which Mr. Neal has brought forward, quotes several affidavits and assertions of Dr. Hudson; the substance of which is, that the Scots agreed to secure the person and honor of the king; to press him to nothing contrary to his conscience: to protect Mr. *Ashburnham* and himself; and, if the parliament refused to restore the king, upon a message from him, to his rights and prerogatives, to declare for him, and take all his friends into their protection. But the doctor omits to observe, that Hudson spoke on the authority of the French agent, one *Montroville*, who negotiated the business between the king and the Scots: and who, it appears, promised to the king more than he was empowered; and was recalled and dis-



tifice of *Montreville*, the French ambassador, who undertook to negotiate between the two parties, and drew the credulous and distressed king into that snare, out of which he could never escape.

His majesty surrendering his person to the Scots, and sending orders to the governors of Newark, Oxford, and all his other garrisons and forces to surrender and disband, concluded the first civil war; upon which most of the officers, with prince *Rupert* and *Maurice*, retired beyond sea; so that by the middle of August all the king's forces and castles were in the parliament's hands; Ragland-castle being the last; which was four years wanting three days, from the setting up the royal standard at Nottingham.

Some time before the king left Oxford he had commissioned the marquis of *Ormond* to conclude a peace with the Irish papists, in hopes of receiving succours from thence, which gave great offence to the parliament; but though his majesty upon surrendering himself to the Scots wrote to the marquis June 11,\* not to proceed; he ventured to put the finishing hand to the treaty, July 28, 1646, upon the following scandalous articles,† among others which surely the marquis durst not have consented to, without some private instructions from the king and queen.

1. "That the Roman catholics of that kingdom shall be discharged from taking the oath of supremacy.

2. "That all acts of parliament made against them shall be repealed; that they be allowed the freedom of their religion, and not be debarred from any of his majesty's graces or favors.

graced. Rapin, vol. ii. p. 523-4. It is more easy to conceive, that Montreville exceeded his commission, as according to Hudson's confession, quoted by Dr. Grey, the Scots would not give any thing under their hands. *Ed.*

\* Lord Digby wished to have it understood, that this letter was surreptitious, or a forged one from his majesty, and most contrary to what he knew to be his free resolution and unconstrained will and pleasure. Dr. Grey. *Ed.*

† Mr. Neal, as Dr. Grey observes, gives only a very concise abridgment of these articles; which were thirty in number, and, as they stand in Rushworth, take up almost twelve pages in folio. But Mr. Neal's view of some of them, though the doctor calls it *curtailing* them, is sufficient to shew the tenor and spirit of the whole. *Ed.*

3. "That all acts reflecting on the honor of the Roman catholic religion since Aug. 7, 1641, be repealed.

4. "That all indictments, attainders, outlawries, &c. against them, or any of them, be vacated and made void.

5. "That all impediments that may hinder their sitting in parliament, or being chosen burgesses, or knights of the shire, be removed.

6. "That all incapacities imposed upon the nation be taken away, and that they have power to erect one or more inns of court in or near the city of Dublin; and that all catholics educated there be capable of taking their degrees without the oath of supremacy.

7. "That the Roman catholics shall be empowered to erect one or more universities, and keep free-schools for the education of their youth, any law or statute to the contrary notwithstanding.

8. "That places of command, honor, profit, and trust, shall be conferred on the Roman catholics, without making any difference between them and protestants, both in the army and in the civil government.

9. "That an act of oblivion shall be passed in the next parliament, to extend to all the *Roman catholics*, and their heirs, absolving them of all treasons and offences whatsoever, and particularly of the massacre of 1641,† so that no persons shall be impeached, troubled, or molested, for any thing done on one side or the other.

10. "That the Roman catholics shall continue in possession of all those cities, forts, garrisons, and towns that they are possessed of, till things are come to a full settlement."\*

|| Rushworth, part iv. vol. i. p. 402.

† But it was provided, that such barbarities, as should be agreed on by the lord lieutenant, and the lord viscount Mountgarret, or any five or more of them, should be tried by such indifferent commissioners as they should appoint. Dr. Grey. *Ed.*

\* Our author having called the preceeding propositions "scandalous articles," Dr. Grey appeals from his sentence to the remonstrance of the protestant archbishops, bishops, and inferior clergy of the kingdom of Ireland to the lord lieutenant, on the 11th and 13th of August, 1646, in which they express a strong and grateful sense of obligation for the peace established among them. But it will still remain a question, whether the sentiments of these prelates and clergy were disinterested and judicious. *Ed.*

Was this the way to establish a good understanding between the king and his two houses? or could they believe, that his majesty meant the security of the protestant religion, and the extirpation of popery in England, when his general consented to such a peace in Ireland, without any marks of his sovereign's displeasure? nay, when, after a long treaty with the parliament commissioners, he refused to deliver up the forts and garrisons into their hands, inso-much that after six weeks attendance, they were obliged to return to their ships, and carry back the supplies they had brought for the garrisons,\* having only published a declaration, that the parliament of England would take all the protestants of Ireland into their protection, and send over an army to carry on the war against the papists with vigor.

The king being now in the hands of the Scots, the English presbyterians at London resumed their courage, concluding they could not fail of a full establishment of their discipline, and of bringing the parliament at Westminster to their terms of uniformity; for this purpose they framed a bold remonstrance in the name of the lord-mayor, aldermen, and common-council, and presented it to the house May 26, complaining,† “that the reins of discipline were ‘let loose; that particular congregations were allowed to

\* Our author incurs here the censure of Dr. Grey for not “affording us any authority in proof of this assertion.” The editor confesses, that he cannot supply the omission. Dr. Grey confronts Mr. Neal with large quotations from Lord Clarendon’s *History of the Rebellion in Ireland*, p. 53, 54, 65, 66, 73, 74, 75. But they appear not to the point for which they are produced. The purport of them is: “That ‘the marquis of Ormond resolved not to proceed to any conjunction ‘with the commissioners without his majesty’s express directions, for ‘which he privately dispatched several expresses: that, in consequence of this, the commissioners, not obtaining possession of the garrisons, returned with all their supplies to their ships: that the marquis received his majesty’s order *not to deliver up the garrisons, if it ‘were possible to keep them under the same entire obedience to his majesty: but should there be a necessity, to put them into the hands of ‘the English, rather than of the Irish.*” The rest of the quotation describes the difficulties and distresses under which the marquis labored, which drove him at last to make a disadvantageous agreement with the commissioners. The reader will judge, whether by these references Mr. Neal’s assertions are not, instead of being confuted, established. See also Mrs. Macaulay, vol. iv. p. 250. Note (†). *Ed.*

† Vol. Pamp. No. 34.



‘take up what form of divine service they pleased, and that  
 ‘sectaries began to swarm by virtue of a *toleration* granted  
 ‘to tender consciences. They put the parliament in mind  
 ‘of their *covenant*, which obliged them to endeavor the ex-  
 ‘tirpation of popery, prelacy, superstition, heresy, schism,  
 ‘profaneness, and whatsoever else was found contrary to  
 ‘sound doctrine; and at the same time to preserve and de-  
 ‘fend the person and authority of the king; they there-  
 ‘fore desired, since the whole kingdom was now in a man-  
 ‘ner reduced to the obedience of the parliament, *that all*  
 ‘*separate congregations may be suppressed; that all such*  
 ‘*separatists who conform not to the public discipline may*  
 ‘*be declared against, that no person disaffected to the pres-*  
 ‘*byterial government set forth by parliament, may be em-*  
 ‘*ployed in any place of public trust;* § that the house will  
 ‘endeavor to remove all jealousies between them and the  
 ‘Scots, and hasten their propositions to the king, for a  
 ‘safe and well grounded peace.”\*

This remonstrance was supported by the whole Scots nation, who acted in concert with their English brethren, as appears by a letter of thanks to the lord-mayor, aldermen, and common-council, from the general assembly, dated June 10, 1646, within a month after the delivery of the remonstrance: ‡ the letter commends their courageous appearance against sects and sectaries; their firm adherence to the covenant, and their maintaining the presbyterial government to be the *government of Jesus Christ*. It beseeches them to go on boldly in the work they had begun, till the three kingdoms were united in one faith and worship. At the same time they directed letters to the parliament, beseeching them also, in the bowels of Jesus Christ, to give to him the glory that is due to his name, by an immediate establishing of all his ordinances in their full integrity and

§ Presbyterianism thus displayed the same intolerance as episcopacy had done. “Religious tyranny,” observes Mr. Robinson, “subsists in various degrees, as all civil tyrannies do. **POPERY** is the consummation of it, and presbyterianism a weak degree of it. But the latter has in it the essence of the former: and differs from it only as a kept mistress differs from a street-walker; or, as a musket differs from a canon.” Plan of Lectures, 5th edition, p. 38. *Ed.*

\* Whitlocke’s Memorials, p. 212.

‡ Rushworth, p. 306.

power, according to the covenant. Nor did they forget to encourage the *assembly* at Westminster to proceed in their zeal against sectaries, and to stand boldly for the sceptre of Jesus Christ against the encroachments of earthly powers. These letters were printed and dispersed over the whole kingdom.

The wise parliament received the lord-mayor and his brethren, with marks of great respect and civility; for neither the Scots nor English presbyterians were to be disgusted, while the *prize* was in their hands, for which both had been contending; but the majority of the commons were displeased with the remonstrance and the high manner of enforcing it, as aiming, by an united force, to establish a sovereign despotic power in the church, with an uniformity, to which themselves, and many of their friends, were unwilling to submit; however, they dismissed the petitioners with a promise to take the particulars into consideration.

But the *independents* and sectarians in the army, being alarmed at the impending storm, procured a counter petition from the city with great numbers of hands, “applauding the labors and successes of the parliament in the cause of *liberty*, and praying them to go on with managing the affairs of the kingdom according to their wisdoms, and not suffer the free-born people of England to be enslaved upon any pretence whatsoever; nor to *suffer any set of people to prescribe to them in matters of government or conscience*, and the petitioners will stand by them with their lives and fortunes.” Mr. *Whitlocke* says, the hands of the royalists were in this affair, who, being beaten out of the field, resolved now to attempt the ruin of the parliament, by sowing discord among their friends.\*

The houses were embarrassed between the contenders for *liberty* and *uniformity*, and endeavored to avoid a decision, till they saw the effect of their treaty with the king. They kept the presbyterians in suspense, by pressing the assembly for their answer to the questions relating to the *jus divinum* of presbytery already mentioned, insinuating that they themselves were the obstacles to a full settlement, and assuring them, when this point was agreed, they would

\* Oldmixon's History of the Stuarts, p. 308. Memorials, p. 213.

concur in such an ordinance as they desired. Upon this the assembly appointed three committees to take the *questions* into consideration; but the *independents* took this opportunity to withdraw, refusing absolutely to be concerned in the affair.

The first committee was appointed to determine, *whether any particular church government was jure divino*, and to bring their proofs from scripture. But here they stumbled at the very threshold, for the *erastians* divided them, and entered their dissent, so that when the answer was laid before the assembly, it was not called the answer of the committee, but of some brethren of the committee; and when the question was put, they withdrew from the assembly, and left the *high presbyterians* to themselves, who agreed, with only one dissenting voice, that *Jesus Christ, as king of the church, hath himself appointed a church government distinct from the civil magistrate*. The names of those who subscribed this proposition were,

*The Rev. Mr. White*

Mr. Palmer  
Dr. Wincop  
Mr. Ley  
Dr. Gouge  
Mr. Walker  
Mr. Sedgwick  
Mr. Marshall  
Mr. Whitaker  
Mr. Newcomen  
Mr. Spurstow  
Mr. Delmy  
Mr. Calamy  
Mr. Proffet  
Mr. Perne  
Mr. Seuddir  
Mr. Carter, sen.  
Mr. Caryl  
Mr. Woodeocke  
Mr. Carter, jun.  
Mr. Goodwin  
Mr. Nye  
Mr. Greenhill  
Mr. Valentine  
Mr. Price  
Dr. Smith

*The Rev. Dr. Staunton*

Dr. Hoyle  
Mr. Bayly  
Mr. Taylor  
Mr. Young  
Mr. Cawdrey  
Mr. Ash  
Mr. Gibson  
Mr. Good  
Mr. Vines  
Mr. Seaman  
Mr. Chambers  
Mr. Corbet  
Mr. Dury  
Mr. Salway  
Mr. Hardwicke  
Mr. Langley  
Mr. Simson  
Mr. Conant  
Mr. De La March  
Mr. Byfield  
Mr. Herle  
Mr. De La Place  
Mr. Wilson  
Mr. Reyner  
Mr. Gower



The divine who entered his dissent was Mr. *Lightfoot*, with whom Mr. *Colman* would have joined, if he had not fallen sick at this juncture, and died.

The discussing the remaining questions engaged the assembly from May till the latter end of July, and even then they thought it not safe to present their determinations to parliament for fear of a *præmunire*; upon which the city divines at Sion college took up the controversy, in a treatise entitled, *The divine right of Church Government, by the LONDON MINISTERS*. Wherein they give a distinct answer to the several queries of the house of commons, and undertake to prove every branch of the presbyterial discipline to be *jure divino*, and that the civil magistrate had no right to intermeddle with the censures of the church.

And to shew the parliament they were in earnest, they resolved to stand by each other, and not comply with the present establishment, till it was delivered from the yoke of the civil magistrate; for which purpose they drew up a *paper of reasons*, and presented it to the lord-mayor, who, having advised with the common-council, sent a deputation to Sion college, offering to concur in a petition for redress; which they did accordingly, though without effect; for the parliament, taking notice of the combination of the *city ministers*, published an order June 9, requiring those of the province of London to observe the ordinance relating to church government, enjoining the members for the city to send copies thereof to their several parishes, and to take effectual care that they were immediately put in execution. Upon this the ministers of London and Westminster met again at Sion college June 19, and being a little more submissive, published *certain considerations and cautions, according to which they agree to put the presbyterial government in practice according to the present establishment*. Here they declare, “that the power of church censures ‘ought to be in church officers, *by the will and appointment of Jesus Christ*, but then they are pleased to admit, ‘that the *magistracy* ought to be satisfied in the truth of ‘the government they authorize; and though it be not right ‘in every *particular*, yet church officers may act under that ‘rule, provided they do not acknowledge the rule to be

‘right in all points. Therefore though they conceive the  
 ‘ordinances of parliament already published, are not a  
 ‘complete rule, nor in all points satisfactory to their con-  
 ‘sciences, yet because in many things they are so, and  
 ‘provision being made to enable the elderships, by their  
 ‘authority, to keep away from the Lord’s-supper all ig-  
 ‘norant and scandalous persons; and a further declara-  
 ‘tion being made, that there shall be an addition to the  
 ‘scandalous offences formerly enumerated, therefore they  
 ‘conceive it their duty to put in practice the present settle-  
 ‘ment, as far as they conceive it correspondent with the  
 ‘word of God; hoping that the parliament will in due  
 ‘time supply what is lacking, to make the government en-  
 ‘tire, and rectify what shall appear to be amiss.” Thus  
 reluctantly did these gentlemen bend to the authority of  
 the parliament!

The kingdom of England, instead of so many dioceses,  
 was now divided into a certain number of *provinces*, made  
 up of representatives from the several *classes* within their  
 respective boundaries; every parish had a congregational,  
 or parochial presbytery for the affairs of the parish; the  
 parochial presbyteries were combined into *classes*; these  
 returned representatives to the *provincial assembly*, as the  
*provincial* did to the *national*; for example, the province  
 of London being composed of twelve classes, according to  
 the following division, each classis chose two ministers,  
 and four lay-elders, to represent them in a *provincial as-  
 sembly*, which received general appeals from the parochial  
 and classical presbyteries, as the *national assembly* did  
 from the *provincial*.

#### THE DIVISION OF THE PROVINCE OF LONDON.

*The first Classis to contain the following parishes.*

- |                           |                               |
|---------------------------|-------------------------------|
| 1 Allhallows, Breadstreet | 9 St. Anne, Black-Friars      |
| 2 Andrew’s, Wardrobe      | 10 St. Austin’s Parish        |
| 3 Bennet, Paul’s Wharf    | 11 St. Mary, Aldermay         |
| 4 Faith’s                 | 12 St. Mary le Bow            |
| 5 St. Gregory             | 13 St. Matthew, Friday-street |
| 6 St. John Evangelist     | 14 Milbred, Bread-street, St. |
| 7 Margaret Moses          | Paul’s                        |
| 8 St. Martin, Ludgate     | 15 St. Peter’s, Paul’s Wharf. |

*The second Classis.*

- |  |                           |
|--|---------------------------|
| 1 St. Antholine                          | 8 St. Mary Mounthaw       |
| 2 Bennet Sheerhog                        | 9 St. Michael, Queenhithe |
| 3 St. James, Garlickhithe                | 10 St. Michael Royal      |
| 4 St. John Baptist                       | 11 St. Nicholas, Old Abby |
| 5 Martin the Vintry                      | 12 St. Nicholas Olives    |
| 6 St. Mary Magdalene, Old<br>Fish-street | 13 Pancras, Sopers Lane   |
| 7 St. Mary Somerset                      | 14 St. Thomas Apostle     |
|  | 15 Trinity Parish.        |

*The third Classis.*

- |                              |                            |
|------------------------------|----------------------------|
| 1 Allhallows the greater     | 7 St. Mary, Bothaw         |
| 2 Allhallows the less        | 8 St. Mary, Woolchurch     |
| 3 Allhallows, Lombard-street | 9 St. Mary, Woolnoth       |
| 4 St. Edmund, Lombard-street | 10 St. Nicholas Aaron      |
| 5 Lawrence Pountney          | 11 St. Stephen's Wallbrook |
| 6 St. Mary, Abchurch         | 12 St. Swithin's.          |

*The fourth Classis.*

- |                              |                                |
|------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| 1 St. Andrews, Hubbert       | 8 St. Magnus                   |
| 2 St. Bennet, Gracechurch    | 9 St. Margaret, New Fishstreet |
| 3 St. Buttolph, Billingsgate | 10 St. Martin Orgars           |
| 4 St. Clement, East-cheap    | 11 St. Mary Hill               |
| 5 St. Dionis, Back-church    | 12 St. Michael, Crooked-lane   |
| 6 St. George, Buttolph-lane  | 13 St. Michael, Cornhill       |
| 7 St. Leonard, East-cheap    | 14 St. Peter, Cornhill.        |

*The fifth Classis.*

- |                            |   |
|----------------------------|---|
| 1 St. Anne, Aldersgate     | 8 St. Mary Staynings  |
| 2 St. Buttolph, Aldersgate | 9 St. Michael <i>in the Corn, vulgo</i><br><i>in the Querne</i> |
| 3 St. Brides               | 10 St. Olave, Silver-street                                     |
| 4 Bridewell                | 11 St. Peter, Cheap   |
| 5 Christ Church            | 12 St. Foster, <i>alias</i> Vedast.                             |
| 6 St. John Zachary         |   |
| 7 St. Leonard, Foster-lane |   |

*The sixth Classis.*

- |                               |                                      |
|-------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| 1 St. Alban, Wood-street      | 8 St. Mary, Aldermanbury             |
| 2 Allhallows, Honey-lane      | 9 St. Mary Magdalen, Milk-<br>street |
| 3 St. Alphage                 | 10 St. Mary, Colechurch              |
| 4 St. Giles's, Cripplegate    | 11 St. Michael, Wood-street          |
| 5 St. James's Chapel          | 12 St. Mildred, Poultry              |
| 6 St. Lawrence, Jewry         | 13 St. Olave, Jewry.                 |
| 7 St. Martin, Ironmonger-lane |                                      |



*The seventh Classis.*

- |                             |                                |
|-----------------------------|--------------------------------|
| 1 Allhallows in the Wall    | 6 St. Margaret, Lothbury       |
| 2 St. Bartholomew, Exchange | 7 St. Michael, Bassishaw       |
| 3 St. Bennet Finek          | 8 St. Peter Poor               |
| 4 St. Buttolph, Bishopsgate | 9 St. Stephen, Coleman-street. |
| 5 St. Christopher's         |                                |

*The eighth Classis.*

- |                         |                               |
|-------------------------|-------------------------------|
| 1 St. Andrew Undershaft | 6 St. James, Duke-Place       |
| 2 St. Buttolph, Aldgate | 7 St. Katherine, Creechurch   |
| 3 St. Ethelburga        | 8 St. Leonard, Shoreditch     |
| 4 St. John, Hackney     | 9 St. Martin, Outwich         |
| 5 St. Hellens           | 10 St. Mary, Stoke-Newington. |

*The ninth Classis.*

- |                           |                          |
|---------------------------|--------------------------|
| 1 Allhallows Barkin       | 8 St. Olive, Hartstreet  |
| 2 Allhallows Steying      | 9 St. Peter in the Tower |
| 3 St. Dunstan in the East | 10 Stepney               |
| 4 St. Gabriel, Fenchurch  | 11 Trinity, Minories     |
| 5 St. Katherine, Coleman  | 12 Wapping               |
| 6 St. Katherine, Tower    | 13 Whitechapel.          |
| 7 St. Margaret, Pattoons  |                          |

*The tenth Classis.*

- |                                 |                            |
|---------------------------------|----------------------------|
| 1 St. George, Southwark         | 5 Newington Butts          |
| 2 Lambeth                       | 6 St. Olave, Southwark     |
| 3 St. Mary Magdalen, Bermondsey | 7 Rotherhithe              |
| 4 St. Mary Overies              | 8 St. Thomas's Hospital    |
|                                 | 9 St. Thomas's, Southwark. |

*The eleventh Classis.*

- |                             |                            |
|-----------------------------|----------------------------|
| 1 St. Clement Danes         | 5 St. Martin in the Fields |
| 2 St. Giles's in the Fields | 6 New Church               |
| 3 Knightbridge              | 7 St. Peter, Westminster   |
| 4 St. Margaret, Westminster | 8 St. Paul, Covent-Garden  |

*The twelfth Classis.*

- |                               |                            |
|-------------------------------|----------------------------|
| 1 St. Andrew, Holborn         | 5 St. Dunstan in the West  |
| 2 St. Bartholomew the greater | 6 St. James's, Clerkenwell |
| 3 St. Bartholomew the less    | 7 St. Mary, Islington      |
| 4 Charter-house               | 8 St. Sepulchres.          |

Thus the presbyterian ecclesiastical government began to appear in its proper form ; but new obstructions being raised by the ministers to the choice of representatives, the provincial assembly did not meet till next year, nor did it ever obtain except in London and Lancashire. The parliament never heartily approved it, and the interest that supported it being quickly disabled, Mr. *Eachard* says, the presbyterians never saw their dear presbytery settled in any one part of England. § But Mr. *Baxter* who is a much better authority says, the ordinance was executed in London and Lancashire, though it remained unexecuted in almost all other parts. However, the presbyterian ministers had their voluntary associations for church affairs in most counties, though without any authoritative jurisdiction.

To return to the king, who marched with the Scots army from Newark to Newcastle, where he continued about eight months, being treated with some respect, but not with all the duty of subjects to a sovereign. The first sermon that was preached before him gave hopes,\* that they would be mediators between him and the parliament ; it was from 2 Sam. xix. 41, 42, 43. *And behold, all the men of Israel came to the king, and said to the king, Why have the men of Judah stolen thee away ?—And all the men of Judah answered the men of Israel, Because the king is near of kin to us ; wherefore then be ye angry for this matter, have we eaten at all of the king's cost ? or hath he given us any gift ?—And the men of Israel answered the men of Judah, and said, We have ten parts in the king ; and we have also more right in David than ye ; why then did ye despise us, that our advice should not be first had, in bringing*

§ *Eachard*, p. 634.

\* Mr. Whitlocke informs us, *Memorials*, p. 234, “ that a Scotch minister preached boldly before the king, December 16, 1646, at Newcastle,” and after his sermon called for the 52d psalm, which begins,

“ Why dost thou, tyrant, boast thyself,

“ Thy wicked works to praise ?”

His majesty thereupon stood up, and called for the 56th psalm, which begins,

“ Have mercy, Lord, on me, I pray,

“ For men would me devour.”

The people waved the minister's psalm, and sung that which the king called for. *Ed.*

back our king? And the words of the men of Judah were fiercer than the words of the men of Israel. But it quickly appeared, that nothing would be done except upon condition of the king's taking the covenant, and establishing the presbyterial government in both kingdoms. When the king was pressed upon these heads, he pleaded *his conscience*, and declared that though he was content the Scots should enjoy their own discipline, he apprehended his honor and conscience were concerned to support *episcopacy in England*, because it had been established from the reformation, and that he was bound to uphold it by his coronation oath; however, he was willing to enter into a conference with any person whom they should appoint, protesting he was not ashamed to change his judgment, or alter his resolution, provided they could satisfy him in two points.

1st. That the episcopacy he contended for was not of *divine institution*.—2dly. That his coronation oath did not bind him to support and defend the church of England as it was then established.

To satisfy the king in these points the Scots sent for Mr. *Alexander Henderson* from Edinburgh, pastor of a church in that city, rector of the University, and one of the king's chaplains, a divine of great learning and abilities, as well as discretion and prudence. Mr. *Rushworth* says, that he had more moderation than most of his way. And *Collier* adds, that he was a person of learning, elocution, and judgment, and seems to have been the top of his party.¶ The debate was managed in writing: the king drew up his own papers, and gave them sir *Robert Murray* to transcribe, and deliver to Mr. *Henderson* ;\* and Mr. *Henderson's* hand not being so legible as his, sir *Robert*, by the king's appointment, transcribed Mr. *Henderson's* papers for his majesty's use.†

¶ Collier, p. 848.

\* Duke of Hamilton's M. p. 277.

† Dr. Grey blames Mr. Neal here for omitting bishop Burnet's account of the king's superiority in this controversy. "Had his majesty's arms," says the bishop, "been as strong as his reason was, he had been every way unconquerable, since none have the *disingenuity* to deny the great advantage his majesty had in all these writings: and this was when the help of his chaplains could not be suspected, they being so far from him; and that the king drew with his own hand all his papers without the help of any, is averred by the person who alone was privy to the interchanging of them, that worthy and accom-



The *King*, in his first paper of May 29, declares his esteem for the English reformation, because it was effected without tumult; and was directed by those who ought to have the conduct of such an affair.\* He apprehends they kept close to apostolical appointment, and the universal custom of the primitive church; that therefore the adhering to episcopacy must be of the last importance, as without it the priesthood must sink, and the sacraments be administered without effect; for these reasons he conceives episcopacy necessary to the being of a church, and also, that he is bound to support it by his coronation oath. *Lastly*, His Majesty desires to know of Mr. *Henderson*, what warrant there is in the word of God for subjects to endeavour to force their king's conscience, or to make him alter laws against his will?

Mr. *Henderson*, in his first paper of June 3, after an introduction of modesty and respect, wishes, when occasion requires, that religion might always be reformed by the civil magistrate, and not left either to the prelates or the people; but when princes or magistrates are negligent of their duty, God may stir up the subject to perform this work.|| He observes, that the reformation of King Henry VIII. was very defective in the essentials of doctrine, worship, and government; that it proceeded with a *Laudicean* lukewarmness; that the supremacy was transferred from one wrong head to another, and the limbs of the anti-christian hierarchy were visible in the body. He adds, that the imperfection of the English reformation had been the complaint of many religious and godly persons; that it had occasioned more schism and separation than had been heard of elsewhere, and had been matter of unspeakable grief to other churches. As to the king's argument, that the validity of the priesthood, and the efficacy of the sacraments, depended upon episcopacy, he replies, that episcopacy cannot make out its claim to *apostolical ap-*

‘plished gentleman Robert Murray.’ The bishop's opinion may be justly admitted, as a testimony to the ability with which the king handled the question: and yet some allowance should be made for the bias with which this prelate would naturally review arguments in favour of his own sentiments and rank. *Ed.*

\* Bibl. Reg. p. 296.

|| Ibid. p. 312, &c.

*pointment*; that when the apostles were living, there was no difference between a bishop and a presbyter; no inequality in power or degree, but an exact parity in every branch of their character: That there is no mention in scripture of a pastor or bishop superior to other pastors. There is a beautiful subordination in the ministry of the New Testament; one kind of ministers being placed in degree and dignity above another, as first apostles, then evangelists, then pastors and teachers, but in offices of the same rank and kind we do not find any preference; no apostle is constituted superior to other apostles; no evangelist is raised above other evangelists; nor has any pastor or deacon a superiority above others of their order.

Farther, Mr. *Henderson* humbly desires his majesty to take notice, that arguing from the practice of the primitive church, and the consent of the fathers, is fallacious and uncertain, and that *the law and testimony of the word of God* is the only rule. The practice of the primitive church, in many things, cannot certainly be known, as *Eusebius* confesses, that even in the apostles' time *Diotrephes* moved for the pre-eminence, and the *mystery of iniquity began to work*; and that afterwards ambition and weakness quickly made way for a change in church government.

Mr. *Henderson* hopes his majesty will not deny the lawfulness of the ministry, and due administration of the sacraments, in those reformed churches where there are no diocesan bishops; that it is evident from scripture, and confessed by many champions for episcopacy, that *presbyters* may ordain *presbyters*; and to disengage his majesty from his coronation oath, as far as relates to the church, he conceives, when the formal reason of an oath ceases, the obligation is discharged; when an oath has a special regard to the benefit of those to whom the engagement is made, if the parties interested relax upon the point, dispense with the promise, and give up their advantage, the obligation is at an end. Thus when the parliaments of both kingdoms have agreed to the repealing of a law, the king's conscience is not tied against signing the bill, for then the altering any law would be impracticable.—He concludes with observing, that King *James* never admitted episcopacy upon divine right; and that could his *ghost* now

speak, he would not advise your majesty to run such hazards, for men [prelates] who would pull down your throne with their own, rather than that they perish alone.

The KING, in his second paper\* of June 6, avers, no reformation is lawful, unless under the conduct of the royal authority; that King *Henry* the eighth's reformation being imperfect, is no proof of defects in that of King *Edward VI.* and Queen *Elizabeth*; that Mr. *Henderson* can never prove, *God has given the multitude leave to reform the negligence of princes*; that his comparing our reformation to the *Laodicean* lukewarmness, was an unhandsome way of begging the question, for he should have first made out, that those men [the puritans] had reason to complain, and that the schism was chargeable upon the conformists. His majesty is so far from allowing the presbyterian government to be practised in the primitive times, that he affirms, it was never set up before *Calvin*; and admits, that it was his province to shew the lawfulness, and uninterrupted succession, and by consequence the necessity of *episcopacy*, but that he had not then the convenience of books, nor the assistance of such learned men as he could trust, and therefore proposes a conference with his divines. And whereas Mr. *Henderson* excepts to his reasoning from the primitive church, and consent of the fathers; his majesty conceives his exception indefensible, for if the sense of a doubtful place of scripture is not to be governed by such an authority, the interpretation of the inspired writings must be left to the direction of every private spirit, which is contrary to St. *Peter's* doctrine, 2 *Pet.* i. 20. *No prophecy of scripture is of private interpretation*; it is likewise the source of all sects, and without prevention will bring these kingdoms into confusion. His majesty adds, that it is Mr. *Henderson's* part to prove, that presbyters without a bishop may ordain other presbyters. As to the administration of the sacraments, Mr. *Henderson* himself will not deny, a *lawfully ordained presbyter's* being necessary to that office; so that the determination of this latter question will depend in some measure on the former. With regard to oaths, his majesty allows Mr. *Henderson's* general rule,

\* Bib. Reg. p. 320, 322, &c.



but thinks he is mistaken in the application ; for the clause touching religion in the *coronation oath* was made only for the benefit of the church of England ; that therefore it is not in the power of the two houses of parliament to discharge the obligation of this oath, without their consent.— That *this church never made any submission to the two houses, nor owned herself subordinate to them ;* that the reformation was managed by the king and clergy, and the parliament assisted only in giving a civil sanction to the ecclesiastical establishment. These points being clear to his majesty, it follows by necessary consequence, that it is only the church of England, in whose favor he took this oath, that can release him from it, and that therefore, when the church of England, lawfully assembled, shall declare his majesty discharged, he shall then, and not till then, reckon himself at liberty.

Mr. *Henderson*, in his reply to this second paper of June 17, agrees with the king, that the prime reforming power is in kings and princes, but adds, that in case they fail of their duty, this authority devolves upon the inferior magistrate, and upon their failure, to the body of the people, upon supposition that a reformation is necessary, and that people's superiors will by no means give way to it ; he allows that such a reformation is more imperfect with respect to the manner, but commonly more perfect and refined in the product and issue. He adds, that the government of the church of England is not supposed to be built on the foundation of Christ and his apostles, by those who confess that church government is mutable and ambulatory, as was formerly the opinion of most of the English bishops ; that the *divine right* was not pleaded till of late by some few ; that the English reformation has not perfectly purged out the Roman leaven, but rather depraved the discipline of the church by conforming to the civil polity, and adding many supplemental officers to those instituted by the Son of God. To his majesty's objection, that the presbyterian government was never practised before *Calvin's* time, he answers, that it is to be found in scripture ; and the assembly of divines at Westminster had made it evident, that the

primitive church at Jerusalem was governed by a presbytery; that the church at Jerusalem consisted of more congregations than one; that all these congregations were combined under one presbyterial government, and made but one church; that this church was governed by elders of the same body, and met together for functions of authority, and that the apostles acted not in quality of apostles, but only as elders, *Acts* xv.; that the same government was settled in the churches of Ephesus, Corinth, Thessalonica, and continued many years after; and at last, when one of the presbytery presided over the rest with the stile of bishop, even then, as *St. Jerom* says, churches were governed with the joint consent of the presbytery, and it was *custom*, rather than divine appointment, which raised a bishop above a presbyter. To his majesty's argument, that where the meaning of scripture is doubtful, we must have recourse to the fathers, *Mr. Henderson* replies, that notwithstanding the decrees of councils, and the resolutions of the fathers, a liberty must be left for a judgment of discretion, as had been sufficiently shewn by bishop *Davenant* and others. To prove presbyters may ordain other presbyters without a bishop, he cites *St. Paul's* advice to *Timothy*, *1 Tim.* iv. 14, not to neglect the gift that was given him by the *laying on of the hands of the presbytery*; but granting bishops and presbyters to be distinct functions, it will not follow, that the authority and force of the presbyter's character was derived from the bishop; for though the evangelists and seventy disciples were inferior to the apostles, they received not their commission from the apostles, but from Christ himself.

Concerning the king's coronation oath, *Mr. Henderson* apprehends nothing need be added. As to the supremacy, he thinks such an headship as the kings of England claim, or such an one as the two houses of parliament now insist on, that is, an authority to receive appeals from the supreme ecclesiastical judicatures, in things purely spiritual, is not to be justified; nor does he apprehend the consent of the clergy to be absolutely necessary to church reformation, for if so, what reformation can be expected in France, in Spain, or in Rome itself; it is not to be imagined, that the pope or prelates will consent to their own ruin. His

majesty had said, that if his father King *James* had been consulted upon the question of *resistance*, he would have answered, that prayers and tears are the church's weapons. To which Mr. *Henderson* replies, *that he could never hear a good reason to prove a necessary defensive war, a war against unjust violence, unlawful*; and that bishop *Jewel* and *Bilson* were of this mind. To the question, what warrant there was in scripture for subjects to endeavor to force their king's conscience? he replies, that when a man's conscience is mistaken, it lies under a necessity of doing amiss; the way therefore to disentangle himself is to get his conscience better informed, and not to move till he has struck a light and made further discoveries.

The KING, in his answer of June 22 to Mr. *Henderson's* second paper, still insists, that *inferior magistrates and people have no authority to reform religion*. If this point can be proved by scripture, his majesty is ready to submit; but the sacred history in the book of *Numbers*, chap. xvi. is an evidence of God's disapproving such methods. Private men's opinions disjoined from the general consent of the church signify little, *for rebels*, says his majesty, *never want writers to maintain their revolt*. Though his majesty has a regard for bishop *Jewel's* and *Bilson's* memories, he never thought them infallible; as for episcopal government, he is ready to prove it an APOSTOLICAL INSTITUTION, *and that it has been handed down through all ages and countries till Calvin's time*, as soon as he is furnished with books, or such divines as he shall make choice of; he does not think that Mr. *Henderson's* arguments to prove the church of England not built on the foundation of Christ and his apostles are valid, nor will he admit that most of the prelates, about the time of the reformation, did not insist upon the *divine right*. The king adds, Mr. *Henderson* would do well to shew where our Savior has prohibited the addition of more church officers than those named by him; and yet the church of England has not so much as offered at this, for an archbishop is not a new officer, but only a distinction in the order of government, like the moderator of assemblies in Scotland. His majesty denies that bishops and presby-



ters always import the same thing in scripture, and when they do, it only respects the apostles' times, for it may be proved, that the order of bishops succeeded that of the apostles, and that the title was altered in regard to those who were immediately chosen by our Savior. As for the several congregations in Jerusalem, united in one church, his majesty replies, Are there not many parishes in one diocese? And do not the deans and chapters, and sometimes the inferior clergy, assist the bishop? So that unless some positive and direct proof can be brought of an equality between the apostles and other presbyters, all arguments are with him inconclusive. The king confesses, that in case he cannot prove from antiquity that *ordination and jurisdiction are peculiar branches of authority belonging to bishops*, he shall begin to suspect the truth of his principles. As for bishop *Davenant's* testimony, he refuses to be governed by that; nor will he admit of Mr. *Henderson's* exception against the *fathers*, till he can find out a better rule of interpreting scripture. And whereas Mr. *Henderson* urged the precedent of foreign reformed churches in favor of presbytery, his majesty does not undertake to censure them, but supposes *necessity* may excuse many things which would otherwise be unlawful; the church of England, in his majesty's judgment, has this advantage, that it comes nearest the primitive doctrine and discipline; and that Mr. *Henderson* has failed in proving presbyters may ordain without a bishop, for it is evident St. *Paul* had a share in *Timothy's* ordination, 2 *Tim.* i. 6. As to the obligation of the *coronation oath*, the king is still of opinion, none but the representative body of the clergy can absolve him; and as for the impracticableness of reformation upon the king's principles, he cannot answer for that, but thinks it sufficient to let him know, that *incommodum non solvit argumentum*. His majesty then declares, that as it is a great sin for a prince to oppress the church; so on the other hand, *he holds it absolutely unlawful for subjects to make war (though defensively) against their lawful sovereign, upon any pretence whatsoever.*

Mr. *HENDERSON*, in his third paper of July 2, considers chiefly the rules his majesty had laid down for determining

the controversy of church government, which are the practice of the primitive church, and the universal consent of the fathers ; and affirms, there is no such primitive testimony, no such universal consent in favor of *modern episcopacy* ; the fathers very often contradicting one another, or at least not concurring in their testimony. But to shew the uncertainty of his majesty's rule for determining controversies of faith, Mr. *Henderson* observes,

1. That some critics join *the word of God and antiquity together* ; others make *scripture the only rule, and antiquity the authentic interpreter*. Now he thinks the latter a greater mistake than the former, for the papists bring tradition no farther than to an equality of regard with the inspired writings, but the others make antiquity the very ground of their belief of the sense of scripture, and by that means exalt it above the scripture ; for the interpretation of the fathers is made the very formal reason why I believe the scripture interpretable in such a sense ; and thus, contrary to the apostle's doctrine, *Our faith must stand in the wisdom of man, and not in the power of God*.

2. He observes, that scripture can only be authentically interpreted by scripture itself. Thus the Levites had recourse only to one part of scripture for the interpreting another, *Neh. viii. 8*. So likewise our Savior interprets the Old Testament, by comparing scripture with scripture, and not having recourse to the *rabbies*. This was likewise the apostles' method. Besides, when persons insist so much upon the necessity of the fathers, they are in danger of charging the scriptures with obscurity or imperfection.

3. The fathers themselves say, that scripture is not to be interpreted but by scripture.

4. Many errors have passed under the shelter of antiquity and tradition ; Mr. *Henderson* cites a great many examples under this head.

And *lastly*, He insists, that the universal consent and practice of the primitive church is impossible to be known ; that many of the fathers were no authors ; that many of their tracts are lost ; that many performances which go under their names are spurious, especially upon the subject of episcopacy, and that therefore they are an uncertain rule.



The *king*, in his papers\* of July 3d and 16th, says, no man can reverence scripture more than himself; but when Mr. *Henderson* and he differ about the interpretation of a text, there must be some judge or umpire, otherwise the dispute can never be ended; and when there are no parallel texts, the surest guide must be the *fathers*. In answer to Mr. *Henderson's* particulars, his majesty answers, that if some people over-rule tradition, that can be no argument against the serviceableness of it; but to charge the primitive church with error, and to call the customs and practices of it unlawful, unless the charge can be supported from scripture, is an unpardonable presumption. Those who object to the ancient rites and usages of the church must prove them *unlawful*, otherwise the practise of the church is sufficient to warrant them. His majesty denies it is impossible to discover the universal consent, and understand the practice of the primitive church; and concludes with this maxim, that though he never esteemed any authority equal to the scriptures, yet he believes the unanimous consent of the fathers, and the universal practice of the primitive church, the best and most authentic interpreters, and by consequence the best qualified judges between himself and Mr. *Henderson*.

One may learn, from this controversy, some of the principles in which King *Charles I.* was instructed; as,

- (1.) The divine right of diocesan episcopacy.
- (2.) The uninterrupted succession of bishops, rightly ordained, from the time of the apostles; upon which the whole validity of the administration of the christian sacraments depends.

\* Bibl. Reg. p. 351, 353.

\* In addition to the encomium bestowed by bishop Burnet on the king's papers, which we have already quoted, it may be subjoined: that Sir Philip Warwick also extolled them, as shewing his majesty's 'great ability and knowledge, when he was destitute of all aids.' Yet it is remarkable, as observes Dr. Harris, who had turned over *Stillingfleet's Irenicum*, and *Unreasonableness of Separation*, *Hoadley's Defence of Episcopal Ordination*, and many other volumes, these royal "papers 'have been little read, and are seldom or never quoted on the subject 'of episcopacy." So that it is possible, these learned churchmen had 'not so great an opinion of the arguments made use of by Charles in 'these papers, as the historians, (viz. Burnet and Sir P. Warwick) I 'have quoted." Life of Charles I. p. 101. Ed.



(3.) The necessity of a judge of controversies, which his majesty lodges with the fathers of the christian church, and by that means leaves little or no room for private judgment.

(4.) The independency of the church upon the state.

(5.) That no reformation of religion is lawful but what arises from the prince or legislature ; and this only in cases of necessity, when a general council cannot be obtained.

(6.) That the multitude or common people may not in any case take upon them to reform the negligence of princes. Neither,

(7.) May they take up arms against their prince, even for self-defence, in cases of extreme necessity.

How far these principles are defensible in themselves, or consistent with the English constitution, I leave with the reader ; but it is very surprising that his majesty should be so much entangled with that part of his *coronation oath* which relates to the *church*, when for fifteen years together he broke through all the bounds of it with relation to the *civil liberties of his subjects*, without the least remorse.

Upon the close of this debate, and the death of Mr. *Henderson*, which followed within six weeks ; the king's friends gave out, that his majesty had broke his adversary's heart.\* Bishop *Kennet* and Mr. *Eachard* have published the following recantation, which they would have the world believe *this divine* dictated, or signed upon his death-bed :

“ I DO declare before God and the world, that since  
 ‘ I had the honor and happiness to converse and confer  
 ‘ with his majesty with all sorts of freedom, especially in  
 ‘ matters of religion, whether in relation to the kirk or  
 ‘ state, that I found him the most intelligent man that I ever  
 ‘ spoke with, as far beyond my expression as expectation.  
 ‘ I profess, that I was oftentimes astonished with the solidity

\* This effect was ascribed to his majesty's arguments by bishop *Kennet* and lord *Clarendon* ; who certainly were a little too hasty in this judgment. For as it is well observed by Dr. *Harris*, “ Disputants, veteran ones, as *Henderson* was, have generally too good a conceit of their own abilities, to think themselves overcome ; and though the awe of majesty may silence, it seldom persuades them.”

The Life of Charles I. p. 99, 400.

Some said Mr. *Henderson* died of grief, because he could not persuade the king to sign the propositions. *Whitlocke's Memorials*, p. 225. *Ed.*

‘and quickness of his reasons and replies; and wondered  
 ‘how he, spending his time so much in sports and recrea-  
 ‘tions, could have attained to so great knowledge; and  
 ‘must confess ingenuously, that I was convinced in con-  
 ‘science, and knew not how to give him any reasonable  
 ‘satisfaction; yet the sweetness of his disposition is such,  
 ‘that whatsoever I said was well taken. I must say, I nev-  
 ‘er met with any disputant of that mild and calm temper,  
 ‘which convinced me the more, and made me think, that  
 ‘such wisdom and moderation could not be, without an ex-  
 ‘traordinary measure of divine grace. I had heard much  
 ‘of his carriage towards the priests in Spain, and that  
 ‘King *James* told the duke of *Buckingham*, upon his going  
 ‘thither, that he durst venture his son *Charles* with all the  
 ‘jesuits in the world, he knew him to be so well grounded  
 ‘in the protestant religion, but could never believe it be-  
 ‘fore. I observed all his actions, more particularly those  
 ‘of devotion, which I must truly say are more than ordi-  
 ‘nary.—If I should speak of his justice, magnanimity,  
 ‘charity, sobriety, chastity, patience, humility, and of all  
 ‘his other christian and moral virtues, I should run myself  
 ‘into a panegyric: no man can say there is conspicuously  
 ‘any predominant vice in him; never man saw him pas-  
 ‘sionately angry; never man heard him curse, or given to  
 ‘swearing; or heard him complain in the greatest durance  
 ‘of war, or confinement.—But I should seem to flatter  
 ‘him, to such as do not know him, if the present condition  
 ‘that I lie in, did not exempt me from any suspicion of  
 ‘worldly ends, when I expect every hour to be called from  
 ‘all transitory vanities to eternal felicity, and the discharg-  
 ‘ing of my conscience before God and man, did not oblige  
 ‘me to declare the truth simply and nakedly, in satisfac-  
 ‘tion of that which I have ~~done~~ ignorantly, though not al-  
 ‘together innocently.”† The declaration adds, that he  
 was heartily sorry for the share he had had in the war;  
 that the parliament and synod of England had been abused  
 with false aspersions of his majesty; and that they ought  
 to restore him to his just rights, and his crown and digni-  
 ty, lest an indelible character of ingratitude lie upon him.

† Compl. Hist. p. 190. Bennet’s Def. of his Mem. p. 130.



Mr. *Eachard* confesses† he had been informed, that this declaration was spurious,\* but could find no authority sufficient to support such an assertion. It will be proper therefore to trace the history of this imposture, and set it in a clear and convincing light, from a memorial sent me from one of the principal Scots divines, professor *Hamilton* of Edinburgh. The story was invented by one of the Scots episcopal writers, who had fled to London, and was first published in the beginning of the year 1648, in a small pamphlet in quarto, about two years after Mr. *Henderson's* death. From this pamphlet Dr. *Heylin* published it as a *credible report*. Between 30 and 40 years after *Heylin* had published it, viz. 1693, Dr. *Hollingworth* in his character of king *Charles I.* republished the paper above-mentioned, entitled the *Declaration of Mr. Alexander Henderson, principal minister of the word of God at Edinburgh, and chief commissioner of the kirk of Scotland to the parliament and synod of England*; which paper the doctor says he had from Mr. *Lamplugh*, son to the late archbishop of *York* of that name, from whom the historians above mentioned, and some others, have copied it; but (says my memorial) upon publishing the aforesaid story to the world, the assembly of the kirk of Scotland appointed a committee to

† *Eachard*, p. 626, ed. 3d.

\* Dr. Grey succeeds here at Mr. Neal, for not referring to the place, where Mr. *Eachard* makes this confession; and for keeping out of view the name of the Memorialist on whose authority he speaks. He then spends nearly five pages in cavilling at this authority, and in strictures on that of Mr. *Burnet*; through these I am not properly qualified to follow the doctor, as I have not Mr. *Bennet's* Defence of his Memorial: And it is unnecessary, for the question concerning the spuriousness of this piece had been discussed, in 1693, ere Neal or Burnet had written, by Lieut. General *Ludlow*, in a tract against Dr. *Hollingworth*, entitled, "Truth brought to Light." *LUDLOW* argues against its authenticity on these grounds: that archbishop *Lamplugh*, the great advocate for the king, had it not been a forgery, would not have failed to publish it: that it is not found in "*King Charles's Works*," though all that passed between the king and Mr. *Henderson* is there recited: that Mr. *Henderson* was a Scotchman, whereas the words *stile*, and *matter*, are *plainly and elegantly English, and not Scottish*: but the great stress is laid on the inscription on his monument, and on the Assembly's declaration, to which Mr. Neal refers, and which Dr. Grey treats as spurious. These papers, as *Ludlow's* Tract is scarce, shall be given in the Appendix, No. x. *Ed.*



examine into the affair, who, after a full enquiry, by their act of August 7, 1648, declared the whole to be a forgery, as may be seen in the printed acts of the general assembly for that year, quarto page 420, &c. in which they signify their satisfaction and assurance, that Mr. *Henderson* persisted in his former sentiments to his death;\* that when he left the king at Newcastle he was greatly decayed in his natural strength; that he came from thence by sea in a languishing condition, and died within eight days after his arrival at Edinburgh;† that he was not able to frame such a declaration as is palmed upon him; and that all he spoke upon his death-bed shewed his judgment was the same as it ever had been about church reformation. This was attested before the assembly by several ministers who visited him upon his death-bed, and particularly by two who constantly attended him from the time he came home till the time he expired. After this and a great deal more to the same purpose, “they declare the above-mentioned paper, entitled, *A Declaration of Mr. Alexander Henderson’s &c. to be forged, scandalous, and false,*§ and ‘the author and contriver of the same to be void of charity and a good conscience; a gross lyar and a calumniator, and led by the spirit of the accuser of the brethren.”||

While the king was debating the cause of episcopacy, the parliament were preparing their propositions for a peace, which were ready for the royal assent by the 11th of July. The Scots commissioners demurred to them for some time, as not coming up fully to their standard, but at length acquiescing, they were engrossed, and carried to the king by the earl of *Pembroke* and *Montgomery* and the earl of *Suffolk*, of the house of peers; and by Sir *Walter Erle*, Sir *John Hippisly*, *Robert Goodwin*, and *Luke Robertson*, esq; of the house of commons; earls of *Argyle* and *Loudon* were commissioners for Scotland, and the reverend Mr. *Marshall*, was ordered to attend as their chaplain.‡

\* Appendix, No. X.

† Hist. of Stuarts, p. 310.

§ If this character of Charles, ascribed to Mr. Henderson, were genuine, “it would,” as Ludlow observes, “avail very little; being the single sentiment of a stranger, that could not have had much experience of him.” Truth brought to Light, p. 6. Ed.

|| Vide Bennet, s Def. of his Mem. p. 134.

‡ Rushworth, vol. vi. p. 309, 311. Rapin, vol. ii. p. 524, fol. edit.

The commissioners arrived at Newcastle July 23, next day they waited upon his majesty, and having kissed his hand, Mr. *Goodwin* delivered the following propositions.

Those relating to the civil government were,

(1.) That the king should call in all his declarations against the parliament.

(2.) That he should put the militia into their hands for twenty years, with a power to raise money for their maintenance.

(3.) That all peerages since May 21, 1642, should be made void.

(4.) That the delinquents therein mentioned should undergo the penalties assigned in the bill. And,

(5.) That the cessation with the Irish be disannulled, and the management of the war left to the parliament.

The propositions relating to religion were,

1. "That his majesty, according to the laudable example of his father, would be pleased to swear and sign the late *solemn league and covenant*, and give his consent to an act of parliament, enjoining the taking it throughout the three kingdoms, under certain penalties, to be agreed upon in parliament.

2. "That a bill be passed for the utter abolishing, and taking away all archbishops, bishops, their chancellors, commissaries, deans, sub-deans, deans and chapters, arch-deacons, canons and prebendaries, and all chaunters, chancellors, treasurers, sub-treasurers, succentors, sacristis; and all vicars and choristers, old vicars and new vicars of any cathedral or collegiate church, and all other under officers, out of the church of England, and out of the church of Ireland, with such alterations as shall agree with the articles of the late treaty of Edinburgh, Nov. 29, 1643, and the joint declaration of both kingdoms.

3. "That the ordinance for the calling and sitting of the assembly of divines be confirmed.

4. "That reformation of religion, according to the *covenant*, be settled by act of parliament in such manner as both houses have agreed, or shall agree, after consultation with the assembly of divines.

5. "For as much as both kingdoms are obliged by covenant to endeavor such an uniformity of religion as shall be agreed upon by both houses of parliament in England, and by the church and kingdom of Scotland, after consultation had with the divines of both kingdoms assembled, that this be confirmed by acts of parliament of both kingdoms respectively.

6. "That for the more effectual disabling jesuits, priests, papists, and popish rescusants, from disturbing the state, and eluding the laws, an oath be established by act of parliament, wherein they shall abjure and renounce the pope's supremacy, the doctrine of transubstantiation, purgatory, worshipping of the consecrated host, crucifixes and images, and all other popish superstitions and errors; and the refusal of the said oath, legally tendered, shall be a sufficient conviction of recusancy.

7. "That an act of parliament be passed, for educating of the children of papists by protestants, in the protestant religion.

8. "That an act be passed for the better levying the penalties against papists; and another for the better preventing their plotting against the state; and that a stricter course may be taken to prevent saying, or hearing of mass in the court, or any other part of the kingdom: the like for Scotland, if the parliament of that kingdom shall think fit.

9. "That his majesty give his royal assent to an act for the due observation of the Lord's day; to the bill for the suppression of innovations in churches and chapels in and about the worship of God; to an act for the better advancement of the preaching of God's holy word in all parts of the kingdom; to the bill against pluralities of benefices and non-residency; and, to an act to be framed for the reforming and regulating both universities, and the colleges of Westminster, Winchester, and Eaton."

About sixty persons were by name excepted out of the general pardon;† besides

(1.) All papists that had been in the army.

† Remonstrance, vol. vi. p. 315.



(2.) All persons that had been concerned in the Irish rebellion.

(3.) Such as had deserted the two houses at Westminster and went to Oxford.

(4.) Such members of parliament as had deserted their places, and bore arms against the two houses. And,

(5.) Such bishops or clergymen, masters, or fellows of colleges, or masters of schools or hospitals, or any ecclesiastical living, who had deserted the parliament, and adhered to the enemies thereof, were declared incapable of any preferment or employment in church or commonwealth, all their places, preferments and promotions, were to be utterly void, as if they were naturally dead; nor might they be permitted to use their function of the ministry, without advice and consent of both houses of parliament; provided that no lapse shall incur by this vacancy till six months after notice thereof.

When Mr. *Goodwin* had done, the king asked the commissioners if they had power to treat, to which they replied, that they were only to receive his majesty's answer; then said the king, *saving the honor of the business, a trumpeter might have done as well*;\* the very same language as at the treaty of Oxford; but the earl of *Pembroke* told his majesty, they must receive his peremptory answer in ten days, or return without it.

Great intercessions were made with the king to comply with these proposals, § particularly in the point of religion, for without full satisfaction in that, nothing would please the Scots nation, nor the city of London, by whom alone his majesty could hope to be preserved; but if this was yielded they would interpose for the moderating other demands; the Scots *general*, at the head of one hundred officers, presented a petition upon their knees, beseeching his majesty to give them satisfaction in the point of religion, and to take the covenant. Duke *Hamilton*, and the rest of the Scots commissioners, pressed his majesty in the most earnest manner, to make use of the present opportunity for

\* Whitlocke's Memorials, p. 223.

§ The commissioners of both kingdoms on their knees begged of him to do it. Whitlocke's Memoirs, p. 223. *Ed.*

peace.|| The lord chancellor for that kingdom spoke to this effect: "The differences between your majesty and your parliament are grown to such an height, that after many bloody battles they have your majesty, with all your garrisons and strong holds in their hands, and the whole kingdom at their disposal; they are now in a capacity to do what they will in church and state; and some are so afraid, and others so unwilling, to submit to your majesty's government, that they desire not you, nor any of your race, longer to reign over them; but they are unwilling to proceed to extremities, till they know your majesty's last resolutions.—Now, Sir, if your majesty shall refuse to assent to the propositions, you will lose all your friends in the houses, and in the city, and all England will join against you as one man; they will depose you, and set up another government; they will charge us to deliver your majesty to them, and remove our armies out of England; and upon your refusal, we shall be constrained to settle religion and peace without you, which will ruin your majesty and your posterity. We own the propositions are higher in some things than we approve of, but the only way to establish your majesty's throne is to consent to them at present, and your majesty may recover, in a time of peace, all that you have lost in this time of tempest and trouble."\*

This was plain-dealing: the king's best friends prayed his majesty to consider his present circumstances, and not hazard his crown for a form of church government; or if he had no regard to himself, to consider his royal posterity; but the king replied, *his conscience was dearer to him than his crown*; that till he had received better satisfaction about the *divine right of episcopacy*, and the *obligation of his coronation oath*, no considerations should prevail with him;† he told the officers of the army, he neither could nor would take the covenant, *till he had heard from the queen*.† Which was only an excuse to gain time to divide

|| Hamilton's Memoirs, p. 281-5.

\* Rapin, vol. ii. p. 524, and Rushworth, vol. vi. p. 319.

† Duke of Hamilton's Memoirs, p. 281.

† This clause is not in the Memoirs of the Duke; and as Mr. Neal has not particularly referred to his authority for it, Dr. Grey expresses his fears, that it is an *interpolation*. Ed.

his enemies, for the king had then actually heard from his queen by Monsieur *Bellievre*, the French ambassador, who pressed his majesty, pursuant to positive instructions given him for that purpose, as the advice of the king of France, of the queen, and of his own party, to give the presbyterians satisfaction about the church.\* *Bellievre*, not being able to prevail, despatched an express to France, with a desire, that some person of more weight with the king might be sent. Upon which Sir *William Davenant* came over, with a letter of credit from the queen, beseeching him to part with the church for his peace and security. When Sir *William* had delivered the letter, he ventured to support it with some arguments of his own, and told his majesty, in a most humble manner, that it was the advice of lord *Culpepper*, *Jermyn*, and of all his friends; upon which the king was so transported with indignation, that he forbid him his presence. When therefore the ten days for considering the propositions were expired, instead of consenting, his majesty gave the commissioners his answer, in a paper, directed to the speaker of the house of peers, to this effect, “that the propositions contained so great alterations both in church and state, that his majesty could not give a particular and positive answer to them;” but after some few concessions hereafter to be mentioned, “he proposes to come to London, or any of his houses thereabouts, and enter upon a personal treaty with both houses; and he conjures them, as christians and subjects, and as men that desire to leave a good name behind them, to accept of this proposal, that the unhappy distractions of the nation may be peaceably settled.”†

When this answer was reported to the house, August 12, it was resolved, to settle accounts with the Scots, and to receive the king into their own custody; but in the meantime his majesty attempted to bring that nation over to his interest, by playing the *independents* against them, and telling them, the only way to destroy the sectarians was to join with the episcopalians, and admit of the establishment

\* Clarendon, vol. iii. p. 29, 31, 32.

† Dr. Grey gives the king's answer at length from MS. collections of Dr. Phillip Williams, president of St. John's college, Cambridge. *Ed.*



of both religions.† “I do by no means persuade you (says the king) to do any thing contrary to your covenant, but I desire you to consider whether it be not a great step towards your reformation, (which I take to be the chief end of your covenant) that the presbyterial government be legally settled. It is true I desire that the liberty of my own conscience, and those who are of the same opinion with myself, may be preserved, which I confess, does not as yet totally take away episcopal government. But then consider withal, *that this will take away all the superstitious sects and heresies of the papists and independents, to which you are no less obliged by your covenant, than to the taking away of episcopacy.* And this that I demand is likely to be but temporary; for if it be so clear as you believe, that episcopacy is unlawful, I doubt not but God will so enlighten my eyes that I shall soon perceive it, and then I promise to concur with you fully in matters of religion; but I am sure you cannot imagine, that *there is any hopes of converting or silencing the independent party, which undoubtedly will get a toleration in religion from the parliament of England, unless you join with me in that way that I have proposed for the establishing of my crown;* or at least, that you do not press me to do this (which is yet against my conscience) till I may do it without sinning, which, as I am confident none of you will persuade me to do, so I hope you have so much charity as not to put things to such a desperate issue as to hazard the loss of all, because for the present you cannot have full satisfaction from me in point of religion, not considering, that besides the other mischiefs that may happen, *it will infallibly set up the innumerable sects of the independents, nothing being more against your covenant than the suffering those schisms to increase.*”\* His majesty then added, “that he should be content to restrain episcopal government to the dioceses of Oxford, Winchester, Bath and Wells, and Exeter, leaving all the rest of England fully to the presbyterial discipline, *with the strictest clauses that could be thought of in an act of parliament against the papists and independents.*” But the

† Duke of Hamilton's Memoirs, p. 286, 7.

\* Rushworth, p. 328.

Scots would abate nothing in the articles of religion; even for the overthrow of the sectaries. Duke *Hamilton* left no methods unattempted to persuade his majesty to comply, but without effect.†

When the king could not gain the commissioners, he applied by his friends to the kirk, who laid his proposals before the general assembly, with his offer to make any declaration they should desire against the *independents*, and that really, without any reserve or equivocation; but the kirk were as peremptory as the commissioners; they said the king's heart was not with them, nor could they depend upon his promises, any longer than it was not in his power to set them aside.\*

In the mean time the English parliament were debating with the Scots commissioners at London, the right of disposing of the king's person, the latter claiming an equal right to him with the former; and the parliament voted that *the kingdom of Scotland had no joint right to dispose of the person of the king, in the kingdom of England*. To which the Scots would hardly have submitted, had it not been for fear of engaging in a new war, and losing all their arrears. His majesty would willingly have retired into Scotland, but the clergy of that nation would not receive him, as appears by their *solemn warning to all estates and degrees of persons throughout the land*, dated Dec. 17, 1646, in which they say, "so long as his majesty does not approve in his heart, and seal with his hand, the *league and covenant*, we cannot but apprehend, that according to his former principles he will walk contrary to it, and study to draw us into the violation of it. Besides, our receiving his majesty into Scotland at this time, will confirm the suspicion of the English nation, of our underhand dealing with him before he came into our army. Nor do we see how it is consistent with our covenant and treaties, but on the contrary, it would involve us in the guilt of perjury, and expose us to the hazard of a bloody war. We are bound by our *covenant* to defend the king's person and authority, in the defence and preservation of the true religion, and the liberties of the kingdom, and so far

† Duke of Hamilton's Memoirs, p. 288.

\* Hamilton's Memoirs, p. 298. Rushworth, p. 380.



‘as his majesty is *for these* we will be for him ; but if his  
‘majesty will not satisfy the just desires of his people,  
‘both nations are engaged to pursue the ends thereof,  
‘against all lets and impediments ; we therefore desire  
‘that those who are intrusted with the public affairs of this  
‘kingdom, would still insist upon his majesty’s settling  
‘religion according to the covenant, as the only means of  
‘preserving himself, his crown, and posterity.” Upon  
reading this admonition of the *kirk*, the Scots parliament  
resolved, that his majesty be desired to grant the whole  
propositions ; that in case of refusal, the kingdom should  
be secured without him. They declared further, that the  
kingdom of Scotland could not lawfully engage for the  
king, as long as he refused to take the covenant, and give  
them satisfaction in point of religion.\* Nor would they  
admit him to come into Scotland, unless he gave a satis-  
factory answer to the propositions lately presented to him  
in the name of both kingdoms.

The resolutions above-mentioned were not communica-  
ted in form to the king, till the beginning of January,  
when the Scots commissioners pressing him again in the  
most humble and importunate manner to give them satis-  
faction, at least, in the point of religion, his majesty re-  
mained immoveable ; which being reported back to Edin-  
burgh, the question was put in that parliament, *whether*  
*they should leave the king in England, to his two houses of*  
*parliament ?* and it was carried in the affirmative. Jan.  
16, a declaration was published in the name of the whole  
kingdom of Scotland, wherein they say, “ that when his  
‘majesty came to their army before Newark, he professed  
‘that he absolutely resolved to comply with his parlia-  
‘ments in every thing, for settling of truth and peace ; in  
‘confidence whereof the committees of the kingdom of  
‘Scotland declared to himself, and to the kingdom of En-  
‘gland, that they received him into their protection only  
‘upon these terms, since which time propositions of peace  
‘have been presented to his majesty for the royal assent,  
‘with earnest supplications to the same purpose, but with-  
‘out effect. The parliament of Scotland therefore being  
‘now to recal their army out of England, *considering that*

\* Rushworth, p. 392.



‘his majesty in several messages has desired to be near his two houses of parliament, and that the parliament has appointed his majesty to reside at Holmby-House with safety to his royal person; and in regard of his majesty’s not giving a satisfactory answer to the propositions for peace and from a desire to preserve a right understanding between the two kingdoms, and for preventing new troubles, the states of parliament of the kingdom of Scotland do declare their concurrence for the king’s majesty’s going to Holmby-House, to remain there till he give satisfaction about the propositions for peace; and that, in the mean time, there be no harm, prejudice, injury or violence done to his royal person; that there be no change of government; and, that his posterity be no way prejudiced in their lawful succession to the crown and government of these kingdoms.’\*

While the parliament and kirk of Scotland were debating the king’s proposals, his majesty wrote to the parliament of England in the most pressing terms, for a personal treaty at London: “It is your king (says he in his letter of Dec. 10) that desires to be heard, the which, if refused to a subject by a king, he would be thought a tyrant, wherefore I conjure you, as you would shew yourselves really what you profess, good christians and good subjects, that you accept this offer.” But the houses were afraid to trust his majesty in London, and therefore appointed commissioners to receive him from the Scots,† and convoy him to Holmby-house in Northamptonshire, where he arrived Feb. 6, 1646-7. The sum of two hundred thousand pound, being half the arrears due to the Scots army, having been paid them by agreement before they

\* Rushworth, p. 396.

† The king happened to be playing at chess, when he was informed of the resolution of the Scots nation to deliver him up: but, such command of temper did he enjoy, he continued his game without interruption, and none of the bye-standers could perceive that the letter, which he perused, had brought him news of any consequence. He admitted the English commissioners, who, some days after, came to take him into custody, to kiss his hands: and received them with the same grace and cheerfulness, as if they had travelled on no other errand but to pay court to him. Hume’s History of England, vol. vii. 8vo. 1763. p. 81, 82. Ed.

marched out of Newcastle, it has been commonly said, *They sold their king*. An unjust and malicious aspersion! It ought to be considered, that the money was their due before the king delivered himself into their hands; for that in settling the accounts between the two nations his majesty's name was not mentioned;† that it was impossible to detain him without a war with England and that the officers of the army durst not carry the king to Edinburgh, because both parliament and kirk had declared against receiving him.\*

But how amazing was his majesty's conduct! What cross

† Vide Rapin, vol. ii. p. 325, folio edit.

\* Mr. Neal is supported in his account of this transaction by General Ludlow, who, further says, that the condition on which the money was paid, was to deliver up (not the king, but) Berwick, Newcastle, and Carlisle, to the parliament: that it was far from truth, that this was the price of the king, for the parliament freely granted to the Scots that they might carry him (if they pleased) to Edinburgh, but they refused it: and that it was the king's desire to be removed into the southern parts of England. The Scots nation, however, underwent, and still undergo the reproach of selling their king, and bargaining their prince for money. It has been argued, that the parliament would never have parted with so considerable a sum, had they not been previously assured of receiving the king. It is a very evident fact, that while the Scots were demanding the arrears due to them, another point of treaty between them and the parliament, if it were not the explicit and avowed condition of complying with that requisition, was the delivering up the king. The unhappy monarch was considered and treated as the *prisoner* of those to whom he fled for protection. Instead of declining to receive him, or afterwards permitting him to take his own steps, they retained him, and disposed of him as a *captive*, as their interest or policy dictated. Were honor or justice, in this case, consulted? Alas! They are seldom consulted by political parties. A letter from general Ludlow to Dr. Hollingworth, 4to. 1662, p. 67. Mrs. Macaulay's History, vol. iv. p. 271. 8vo. Hume's History of England, vol. vii. 8vo. 1763, p. 79-81, and Whitlocke's Memorials, p. 240.—Dr. Grey has bestowed thirteen pages on this point, chiefly to shew, that 400,000l. could not be due as arrears to the Scots, and to advance against them the charge of selling the king. He informs us that the 200,000l. immediately paid to them was borrowed of the Goldsmiths' Company. To Mr Neal's reflection on the imputation cast on the Scots of selling their king, that it is an *unjust and malicious aspersion*; Bishop Warburton retorts, "The historian, before he said this, should have seen whether he could answer these two questions in the affirmative:— 'Would the English have paid the arrears without the person of the king?—Would the Scots have given up the king if they could have had the arrears without?' *Ed.*



and inconsistent proposals did he make at this time! While he was treating with the Scots, and offering to concur in the severest measures against the *independents*, he was listening to the offers of those very *independents* to set him upon the throne, without taking the covenant, or renouncing the liturgy of the church, provided they might secure a toleration for themselves. This agreeing with the king's inclinations, had too great a hearing from him, (says bishop *Burnet*) till *Lauderdale* wrote from London, "that he was 'infallibly sure, they designed the destruction of monarchy, 'and the ruin of the king and his posterity; but that if he 'would consent to the propositions, all would be well, in 'spight of the devil and the independents too.'"\* If his majesty had in good earnest fallen in with the overtures of the army at this time, I am of opinion they would have set him upon the throne, without the shackles of the Scots *covenant*.

While the king was at Holmby-house, he was attended with great respect,† and suffered to divert himself at bowls with gentlemen in the neighboring villages, under a proper guard. The parliament appointed two of their clergy, viz. Mr. *Caryl* and Mr. *Marshall*, to preach in the chapel, morning and afternoon on the Lord's-day, and perform the devotions of the chapel on week days, but his majesty never gave his attendance.‡ He spent his Sundays in private; and though they waited at table, he would not so much as admit them to ask a blessing.

Before the king removed from Newcastle, the parliament put the finishing hand to the destruction of the hierarchy, by abolishing the very names and titles of archbishops, bishops, &c. and alienating their revenues for payment of the public debts. This was done by two ordinances, bearing date Oct. 9, and Nov. 16, 1646, entitled, *Ordinances for abolishing archbishops and bishops, and providing for the payment of the just and necessary debts of the kingdom*,

\* *Hamilton's Memoirs*, p. 288.

† But his situation here, independently of confinement, was made unpleasant to him, as his old servants were dismissed, and he was not allowed the attendance of his own chaplains. His majesty remonstrated on this last circumstance in a letter to the house of peers, but without effect. *Clarendon*, vol. iii. p. 39. *Ed.*

‡ *Clarendon*, vol. iii. p. 38.



*into which the same has been drawn by a war, mainly promoted by, and in favor of the said archbishops, bishops, and other their adherents and dependents.* The ordinance appoints, “that the name, title, stile, and dignity of archbishop of Canterbury, archbishop of York, bishop of Winchester, bishop of Durham, and all other bishops of any bishoprics within the kingdom of England, and dominion of Wales, be, from and after Sept. 5, 1646, wholly abolished and taken away; and all and every person and persons are to be thenceforth disabled to hold the place, function, stile of archbishop, or bishop of any church, see, or diocese, now established or erected, or hereafter to be established or erected within the kingdom of England, dominion of Wales, or town of Berwick on Tweed; or to use, or put in use any archiepiscopal, or episcopal jurisdiction or authority, by force of any letters patent from the crown, made, or to be made, or by any other authority whatsoever, any law, statute, usage or custom to the contrary notwithstanding.”

By the ordinance of Nov. 16, it is further ordained, “that all counties palatine, honors, manors, lordships, stiles, circuits, precincts, castles, granges, messuages, mills, lands, tenements, meadows, pastures, parsonages, appropriate tithes, oblations, obventions, pensions, portions of tithes, vicarages, churches, chapels, advowsons, donations, nominations, rights of patronage and presentations, parks, woods, rents, reversions, services, annuities, franchises, liberties, privileges, immunities, rights of action, and of entry, interests, titles of entry, conditions, commons, court-leets, and court-barons, and all other possessions and hereditaments whatsoever, which now are, or within ten years before the beginning of the present parliament, were belonging to the said archbishops and bishops, archbishoprics or bishoprics, or any of them, together with all chattles, deeds, books, accompts, rolls, and other writings and evidences whatsoever, concerning the premises, which did belong to any of the said archbishops, bishops, &c. are vested and settled, adjudged and deemed to be in the real and actual possession and seizin of the twenty-

\* Husband's Collections, p. 922.

† Rushworth, p. 377.

‘four trustees mentioned in the ordinance, their heirs and assigns, upon trust that they shall dispose of the same, and the rents and profits thereof, as both houses of parliament shall order and appoint, *i. e.* for payment of the public debts, and other necessary charges occasioned by the war, promoted chiefly by, and in favor of the said hierarchy, saving and excepting all tithes appropriate, oblations, obventions, and portions of tithes, &c. belonging to the said archbishops, bishops, and others of the said hierarchy; all which, together with thirty thousand pounds yearly rent belonging to the crown, they reserve for the maintenance of preaching ministers. The trustees are not to avoid any lease made for three lives, or twenty-one years, provided the said lease or leases were not obtained since the month of December 1644. They are empowered to appoint proper officers to survey, and take a particular estimate of all the bishops lands, to receive the rents and profits of them, and to make a sufficient title to such as shall purchase them, by order of parliament.” By virtue of this ordinance the trustees were empowered to pay, or cause to be paid to *the assembly of divines*, their constant salary allowed them by a former order of parliament, with all their arrears, out of the rents, revenues, and profits belonging to the late archbishop of Canterbury, till such time as the said lands and revenues shall happen to be sold. These church lands were at first mortgaged as a security for several large sums of money, which the parliament borrowed at eight *per cent.* interest. Several members of parliament, and officers of the army, afterwards purchased them at low rates, but the bargain proved dear enough in the end. And surely it was wrong to set them to sale; the lands having been originally given for the service of religion, ought to have been continued for such uses, and the *substance* of the *donors’* intentions pursued; unless it appeared that too great a proportion of the national property had been settled in *mortmain*. But herein they followed the ill examples of the kings and queens of England at the reformation.

The *presbyterians* were now in the height of their pow-



er, the hierarchy being destroyed, the king their prisoner, and the best, if not all the livings in the kingdom distributed among them ; yet still they were dissatisfied for want of the *top-stone* to their new building, which was *church power* ; the pulpits, and conversation of the city, were filled with invectives against the *men in power*, because they would not leave the church independent on the state ; the presbyterian ministers were very troublesome, the parliament being teased every week with church grievances of one kind or another ; Dec. 19, the lord-mayor and his brethren went up to Westminster with a representation of some of them, and a petition for redress. The grievances were,

1. “The *contempt that began to be put upon the covenant*, some refusing to take it, and others declaiming loudly against it ; they therefore pray, that it may be imposed upon the whole nation, under such penalties as the houses shall think fit ; and that such as refuse it be disqualified from all places of profit and trust.

2. “The *growth of heresy and schism* ; the pulpits having been often usurped by preaching soldiers, who infected all places where they came with dangerous errors ; they therefore pray, that all such persons may be forbidden to preach as have not taken the covenant, and been regularly ordained, and that all separate congregations, the very nurseries of damnable heretics, may be suppressed ; that an ordinance be made for the exemplary punishment of heretics and schismatics, and that all godly and orthodox ministers may have a competent maintenance, many pulpits being vacant of a settled minister for want of it ; and here (say they) we would lay the stress of our desires, and the urgency of our affections.” They complain further, of the “*undue practices of country committees, of the threatening power of the army, and of some breaches in the constitution* ; all which they desire may be redressed, and that his majesty’s royal person and authority may be preserved and defended, together with the liberties of the kingdom, according to the *covenant*.”

To satisfy the petitioners, the house of commons published a declaration Dec. 31, “wherein they express their



‘dislike of *lay-preachers*, and their resolutions to proceed against all such as shall take upon them to preach, or expound the scriptures in any church or chapel, or any other public place, except they be ordained either here, or in some other reformed churches; likewise against all such ministers, and others, as shall publish, or maintain by preaching, writing, printing, or any other way, any thing against, or in derogation of the church government which is now established by authority of parliament; and also against all and every person or persons who shall willingly or purposely interrupt or disturb a preacher in the public exercise of his function; and they command all officers of the peace, and officers of the army, to take notice of this declaration, and by all lawful means to prevent offences of this kind, to apprehend offenders, that a course may be speedily taken for a due punishment to be inflicted upon them.” The house of lords published an order, bearing date Dec. 22, requiring the headboroughs and constables, in the several parishes of England and Wales, to arrest the bodies of such persons as shall disturb any minister in holy orders, in the exercise of his public calling, by speech or action, and carry them before some justice of peace, who is required to put the laws in execution against them. Feb. 4, they published an ordinance to prevent the growth and spreading of errors, heresies, and blasphemies; but these orders not coming up to their *covenant uniformity*, the *lord-mayor* and *common-council* presented another petition to the two houses March 17, and appointed a committee to attend the parliament from day to day, till their grievances were redressed, of which we shall hear more under the next year.

We have already accounted for the unhappy rise of the *sectarians* in the army when it was new modelled, who were now grown so extravagant as to call for some proper restraint, the mischief being spread not only over the whole country, but into the city of London itself; it was first pleaded in excuse for this practice, that a *gifted brother* had better preach and pray to the people than nobody; but now learning, good sense, and the rational interpretation of scripture, began to be cried down, and every bold pretender to inspiration was preferred to the most grave and sober

divines of the age; some advanced themselves into the rank of prophets, and others uttered all such crude and undigested absurdities as came first into their minds, calling them the dictates of the *spirit* within them; by which the public peace was frequently disturbed, and great numbers of ignorant people led into the belief of the most dangerous errors. The assembly of divines did what they could to stand in the gap, by writing against them, and publishing a *Detestation of the Errors of the Times*. The parliament also appointed a fast on that account, Feb. 4, 1645-6, and many books were published against the *antinomians*, *anabaptists*, *seekers*, &c. not forgetting the *independents*, whose insisting upon a *toleration* was reckoned the inlet to all the rest.

The most furious writer against the sectaries was Mr. *Thomas Edwards*,\* minister of Christ-Church, London, a zealous presbyterian, who became remarkable by a book entitled *Gangræna*, or a catalogue of many of the errors, heresies, blasphemies, and pernicious practices of this time; in the epistle dedicatory he calls upon the *higher powers* to rain down all their vengeance upon these deluded people, in the following language: “You have done worthily ‘against papists, prelates, and scandalous ministers, in ‘casting down images, altars, crucifixes, throwing out ceremonies, &c. but what have you done (says he) against ‘heresy, schism, disorder, against *seekers*, *anabaptists*, *antinomians*, *brownists*, *libertines*, and other sects; you ‘have made a reformation, but with the reformation have ‘we not worse things come upon us than we had before, ‘as denying the scriptures, pleading for toleration of all religions and worships; yea, for blasphemy, and denying ‘there is a God. You have put down the *common-prayer*, ‘and there are many among us that are for putting down ‘the *scriptures*. You have broken down the images of the ‘Trinity, and we have those who oppose the *Trinity*. You

\* He was originally of the university of Cambridge, but in 1623 was incorporated at Oxford. At the beginning of the civil wars he joined the parliament, embarked all that was dear to him in the cause of the people, whom he excited to prosecute the war by the strain of his prayers and sermons, and advanced money to carry it on. Wood’s *Athenæ Oxonienses*, vol. i. p. 846. *Ed.*



‘have cast out bishops and their officers, and we have  
‘many that cast down to the ground all ministers. You  
‘have cast out ceremonies in the sacraments, as the *cross*,  
‘*kneeling* at the Lord’s supper, and many cast out the sa-  
‘craments themselves. You have put down *saints days*,  
‘and many make nothing of the *Lord’s day*. You have  
‘taken away the superfluous maintenance of bishops and  
‘deans, and we have many that cry down the necessary  
‘maintenance of ministers. In the bishops’ days we had  
‘singing of psalms taken away in some places, conceived  
‘prayer, preaching, and in their room anthems, stunted  
‘forms and reading brought in, and now *singing of psalms*  
‘*is spoken against, public prayer questioned, and all min-*  
‘*isterial preaching denied*. In the bishops’ time popish  
‘innovations were introduced, as bowing at altars, &c. and  
‘now we have anointing the sick with oil; then we had  
‘bishoping of children, now we have bishoping of men and  
‘women, by laying on of hands. In the bishops’ days we  
‘had the fourth commandment taken away, and now *all*  
‘*ten* are taken away by the *antinomians*. The worst of  
‘the prelates held many sound doctrines, and had many  
‘commendable practices, but many of our sectaries deny  
‘all principles of religion, are enemies to all holy duties,  
‘order, learning, overthrowing all, being whirligig spirits,  
‘and the *great opinion of an universal toleration tends to*  
‘*the laying all waste, and dissolution of all religion and*  
‘*good manners*. Now (says our author) a connivance at,  
‘and suffering without punishment, such false doctrines  
‘and disorders, provokes God to send judgments. *A tol-*  
‘*eration* doth eclipse the glory of the most excellent refor-  
‘mation, and makes these sins to be the sins of the legis-  
‘lature that countenances them. *A magistrate should use*  
‘*coercive power to punish and suppress evils*, as appears  
‘from the example of *Eli*. Now, right honorable, though  
‘you do not own these heresies, but have put out several  
‘orders against them, yet there is a strange unheard-of  
‘suffering of them, such an one as there hardly ever was  
‘the like, under any orthodox christian magistrate and  
‘state. Many sectaries are countenanced, and employed  
‘in places of trust; there has not been any exemplary re-  
‘straint of the sectaries, by virtue of any of your ordinan-



‘ces, but they are slighted and scorned ; preaching of lay-  
 ‘men was never more in request than since your ordinance  
 ‘against it ; presbyterial government never more preach-  
 ‘ed and printed against, than since it was established.  
 ‘Our dear brethren of Scotland stand amazed, and are as-  
 ‘tonished at these things ; the orthodox ministers and peo-  
 ‘ple both in city and country are grieved and discourag-  
 ‘ed, and the common enemy scorns and blasphemes ; it is  
 ‘high time therefore for your honors to suffer no longer  
 ‘these sects and schisms, but to do something worthy of a  
 ‘parliament against them, and God will be with you.”

After this dedication there are 176 erroneous passages collected from sundry pamphlets printed about this time, and from the reports of friends in all parts of the kingdom, to whom he sent for materials to fill up his book ; however the heretics are at length reduced under sixteen general heads.

1. *Independents*
2. *Brownists*
3. *Millenaries*
4. *Antinomians*
5. *Anabaptists*
6. *Arminians*

7. *Libertines*
8. *Familists*
9. *Enthusiasts*
10. *Seekers*
11. *Perfectists*

12. *Socinians*
13. *Arians*
14. *Antitrinitarians*
15. *Antiscripturists*
16. *Sceptics.*

The industrious writer might have enlarged his catalogue with *papists* and *prelates*, *deists*, *beheminists*, &c. &c. or if he had pleased, a less number might have served his turn, for very few of these sectaries were collected into societies ; but his business was to blacken the adversaries of presbyterian uniformity, that the parliament might crush them by sanguinary methods. Among his heresies there are some which do not deserve that name ; and among his errors, some that never grew into a sect, but fell occasionally from the pen or lips of some wild enthusiast, and died with the author. The *independents* are put at the head of the sectaries, because they were for *toleration of all christians who agreed in the fundamentals of religion* ; to prove this, which they never denied, he has collected several passages out of their public prayers ; one *independent* minister (says he) prayed that presbytery

might be removed, and the kingdom of Christ set up; another prayed two or three times, *that the parliament might give liberty to tender consciences*; another thanked God *for the liberty of conscience granted in America*; and said, *why, Lord, not in England?* Another prayed, *since God had delivered both presbyterians and independants from prelatical bondage, that the former might not be guilty of bringing their brethren into bondage.* The reader will judge of the spirit of this writer, by the foregoing specimen of his performance, which I should not have thought worth remembering, if our church-writers had not reported the state of religion from his writings. “I knew Mr. *Edwards* very well, (says *Fuller*\*) my contemporary in *Queen’s college*, who often was transported beyond due bounds with the keenness and eagerness of his spirit, and *therefore I have just cause in some things to suspect him.*” He adds farther, “I am most credibly informed, by such who I am confident will not abuse me and posterity therein, that Mr. *Herbert Palmer* (an *anti-independent* to the height) being convinced that Mr. *Edwards* had printed some falsehoods in one sheet of his *Gangræna*, proffered to have a sheet reprinted at his own charge, but some accident obstructed it.” However, our author went on publishing a second and third *Gangræna*, full of most bitter invectives and reproaches, till his own friends were nauseated with his performances.

The reverend Mr. *Baxter*, who attended the victorious army, mentions the *independents*, *anabaptist*, and *antino-mians*, as the chief separatists, to whom he adds some other names, as *seekers*, *ranters*, *beheménists*, *vanists*, all which died in their infancy, or united in the people afterwards known by the name of *QUAKERS*; but when he went into the army he found “almost one half of the religious party among them orthodox, or but very lightly touched with the above-mentioned mistakes, and almost another half honest men, that had stepped further into the contending way than they ought. but with a little help might be recovered; a few fiery, self-conceited men among them, kindled the rest, and made all the noise and bustle; for the greatest part of the common soldiers were ignorant

\* Appeal, p. 58.



‘men, and of little religion; these would do any thing to please their officers, and were instruments for the *seducers* in their great work, which was to cry down the *covenant*, to vilify parish ministers, and especially the Scots and the *presbyterians*.” Mr. *Baxter* observes,\* that these fiery hot men were hatched among the *old separatists*; that they were fierce with pride, and conceit, and uncharitableness, but many of the honest soldiers, who were only tainted with some doubts about *liberty of conscience*, and *independency*, would discourse of the points of sanctification and christian experience very savourily; the *seducers* above-mentioned were great preachers, and fierce disputants, but of no settled principles of religion; some were of levelling principles as to the state, but all were agreed, that the *civil magistrate had nothing to do in matters of religion, any further than to keep the peace, and protect the church liberties*.” The same writer adds, ‘To speak impartially, some of the presbyterian ministers frightened the sectaries into this fury, by the unpeaceableness and impatience of their minds; they ran from libertinism into the other extreme, and were so little sensible of their own infirmity, that they would not have them tolerated, who were not only tolerable, but worthy instruments and members in the churches.” Lord *Clarendon* says, that *Cromwell* and his officers preached and prayed publicly with their troops, and admitted few or no chaplains in the army, except such as bitterly inveighed against the presbyterian government, as more tyrannical than episcopacy; and that the common soldiers, as well as the officers, did not only pray and preach themselves, but went up into the pulpits in all churches, and preached to the people, who quickly became inspired with the same spirit; women as well as men taking upon them to pray and preach; which made as great a noise and confusion in all opinions concerning religion, as there was in the civil government of the state.

Bishop *Bramhall*, in one of his letters to archbishop *Usher*, writes, that “the papists took advantage of these confusions, and sent over above one hundred of their clergy, that had been educated in France, Italy, and Spain,

\* *Baxter's Life*, p. 53.



‘by order from Rome. In these nurseries the scholars were taught several handicraft trades and callings, according to their ingenuities, besides their functions in the church; they have many yet at Paris (says the bishop) fitting up to be sent over, who twice in the week oppose one the other; one pretending presbytery, the other independency, some anabaptism, and others contrary tenets. The hundred that went over this year (according to the bishop) were most of them soldiers in the parliament army.”† But Mr. *Baxter*,§ after a most diligent enquiry, declares, “that he could not find them out;” which renders the bishop’s account suspected. “The most that I could suspect for papists among *Cromwell’s* soldiers (says he) were but a few that began as strangers among the common soldiers, and by degrees rose up to some inferior officers, but none of the superior officers seemed such.” The body of the army had a vast aversion to the papists, and the parliament took all occasions of treating them with rigor; for June 30, *Morgan*, a priest, was drawn, hanged, and quartered, for going out of the kingdom to receive orders from Rome, and then returning again. However, without all question, both church and state were in the utmost disorder and confusion at the close of this year, [1646.]

Among the illustrious men of the parliament’s side who died about this time, was *Robert D’Evereux* earl of *Essex*, son of the famous favorite of queen *Elizabeth*; he was educated to arms in the Netherlands, and afterwards served the king and queen of Bohemia for the recovery of the Palatinate. King *Charles I.* made him lieutenant of his army in his expedition against the Scots, and lord chamberlain of the household; but the earl, being unwilling to go into the arbitrary measures of the court in favor of popery and slavery, engaged on the side of the parliament, and accepted of the commission of captain-general of their forces, for which the king proclaimed him a traitor. He was a person of great honor, and served the parliament with fidelity; but being of opinion, that the war should be ended rather by treaty than conquest, did not always push his success-

† Parr’s Life of Usher, p. 611.

§ Life, p. 78.

es as far as he might. Upon the new modelling of the army, the cautious general was dismissed with an honorable pension for his past services; after which he retired to his house at Eltham in Kent, where he died of a lethargy, occasioned by over-heating himself in the chace of a stag in Windsor-Forest, Sept. 14, 1646, in the fifty-fifth year of his age.|| He was buried with great funeral solemnity in Westminster-Abby, October 22, at the public expence, both houses of parliament attending the procession. His effigies was afterwards erected in Westminster-hall, but some of the king's party found means in the night to cut off the head, and break the sword, arms and escutcheons. Mr. *Vines* preached his funeral sermon, and gave him a very high encomium, though lord *Clarendon* has stained his character for taking part with the parliament, which he says was owing to his pride and vanity. The earl's countenance appeared stern and solemn, but to his familiar acquaintance his behavior was mild and affable. Upon the whole, he was a truly great and excellent person; his death was an unspeakable loss to the king, for he was the only nobleman, perhaps, in the kingdom, who had interest enough with both parties, to have put an end to the civil war, at the very time when Providence called him out of the world.

Among the remarkable divines may be reckoned the reverend and learned Mr. *Thomas Colman*, rector of St. Peter's church in Cornhill; he was born at Oxford, and entered in Magdalen-college in the seventeenth year of his age; he afterwards became so perfect a master of the Hebrew language, that he was commonly called Rabbi *Colman*. In the beginning of the civil war he left his rectory of Blyton in Lincolnshire, being persecuted from thence by the cavaliers. Upon his coming to London, he was preferred to the rectory of St. Peter's Cornhill, and made one of the assembly of divines. Mr. *Wood* says, he behaved modestly and learnedly in the assembly; and Mr. *Fuller* gives him the character of a modest and learned divine; he was equally an enemy to presbytery and prelacy, being of eras-



tian principles ; he fell sick while the assembly was debating the *jus divinum* of presbytery ; and when they sent some of their members to visit him, he desired they would not come to an absolute determination till they heard what he had to offer upon the question ; but his distemper increasing, he died in a few days, and the whole assembly did him the honor to attend his funeral in a body, March 30, 1646.\*

About the middle of July died the learned doctor *William Twisse*, vicar of Newbury, and prolocutor of the assembly of divines ; he was born at Speenham-Land, near Newbury in Berkshire ; his father was a substantial clothier in that town, and educated his son at Winchester school, from whence he was translated to New-college in Oxford, of which he was *fellow* ; here he employed himself in the study of divinity with the closest application, for sixteen years together. In the year 1604, he proceeded *master of arts* ; about the same time he entered into holy orders, and became a diligent and frequent preacher ; he was admired by the university for his subtle wit, exact judgment, exemplary life and conversation, and many other valuable qualities which became a man of his function. In the year 1614, he proceeded doctor of divinity, after which he travelled into Germany, and became chaplain to the princess *Palatine*, daughter of King *James I.* After his return to England, he was made vicar of Newbury, where he gained a vast reputation by his useful preaching and exemplary living. His most able adversaries have confessed, that there was nothing then extant more accurate and full, touching the *arminian* controversy, than what he published : and hardly any who have written upon this argument since the publishing Dr. *Twisse's* works, but have made an honorable mention of him. The doctor was offered the prebend of Winchester, and several preferments in the church of England ; the states of Friesland invited him to the professorship of divinity in their university of *Franecker*, but he refused all. In the beginning of the civil war, he was forced from his living at Newbury by the cavaliers,

\* Church History, b. ix. p. 213, Wood's Athen. Oxon. vol. ii. p. 62.

|| Athenæ. Oxon. vol. ii. p. 40, 41.



and upon convening the assembly of divines, was appointed by parliament their *prolocutor*, in which station he continued to his death, which happened after a lingering indisposition, about the 20th of July, 1646, in the seventy-first year of his age. He died in very necessitous circumstances, having lost all his substance by the king's soldiers, in so much that when some of the assembly were deputed to visit him in his sickness, they reported, that *he was very sick, and in great straits*. He was allowed to be a person of extensive knowledge in school divinity; a subtle disputant,† and withal, a modest, humble, and religious person. He was buried, at the request of the assembly, in the collegiate church of *St. Peter's Westminster*, near the upper end of the poor folks table, next the vestry, July 24, and was attended by the whole assembly of divines: There his body rested till the restoration of King *Charles II.* when his bones were dug up by order of council, Sept. 14, 1661, and thrown with several others, into a hole in the church-yard of *St. Margaret's*, before the back-door of the lodgings of one of the prebendaries.

Towards the end of the year died the reverend and pious Mr. *Jeremiah Burroughs*; he was educated in Cambridge, but obliged to quit the university and kingdom for non-conformity in the late times.§ Upon his leaving England, he was chosen minister of an English congregation at Rotterdam, with which he continued till the year 1642, when he returned to England, and became preacher to two of the largest and most numerous congregations about Lon-

† He distinguished himself by his writings against arminianism. The most learned of that party confessed that there was nothing more accurate, exact, and full, on that controversy, than his works. His plain preaching was esteemed good: his solid disputations were accounted, by some, better: and his pious way of living was reckoned, by others, especially the puritans, best of all. Wood's *Athenæ Oxon.* vol. ii. p. 40. *Ed.*

§ He for some time sheltered himself under the hospitable roof of the earl of Warwick. Granger's *History of England*, vol. ii. p. 193, 8vo. This nobleman was a great patron of the puritan divines: and not contented with hearing long sermons in their congregation only, would have them repeated at his own house. *Ibid.* p. 116. *Ed.*

don, viz. Stepney and Cripplegate. He was one of the dissenting brethren in the assembly, but was a divine of great candor, modesty, and charity. He never gathered a separate congregation, nor accepted of a parochial living, exhausting his strength in continual preaching, and other services of the church. He was an excellent scholar, a good expositor, a popular preacher; he published several treatises while he lived, and his friends have published many others since his death, which have met with a general acceptance. It was said, the divisions of the times broke his heart, because one of the last subjects he preached upon, and printed, was his *Irenicum*, or an attempt to heal divisions among christians. Mr. *Baxter* used to say, if all the presbyterians had been like Mr. *Marshall*, and the independents like Mr. *Burroughs*, their differences might easily have been compromised. He died of a consumptive illness Nov. 14, 1646, about the forty-seventh year of his age.

## CHAP. VIII.

*Proceedings of the Assembly upon their Confession of Faith and Catechisms. Provincial Assemblies of London. The King taken out of the Parliament's Custody, and conveyed to the Army. Controversy between the Parliament and Army. His Majesty's Conduct. He escapes from Hampton-Court, and is confined in the Isle of Wight.*

THE reverend Mr. Charles Herle succeeded to the prolocutor's chair by order of parliament July 22, 1646, in the room of the late Dr. Twisse, when the discipline of the church being pretty well settled, it was moved to finish their *confession of faith*. The English divines would have been content with revising and explaining the thirty-nine articles of the church of England, but the Scots insisting on a system of their own, a committee was appointed to prepare materials for this purpose May 9, 1645; their names were Dr. Gouge, Dr. Hoyle, Mr. Herle, Gataker, Tuckney, Reynolds, and Vines, with the Scots divines, who having first settled the *titles* of the several chapters, as they now stand in their confession of faith, in number thirty-two, distributed them for greater expedition, among several *sub-committees*, which sat two days every week, and then reported what they had finished to the *committee*, and so to the assembly, where it was debated paragraph by paragraph. The disputes about *discipline* had occasioned so many interruptions that it was a year and half before this work was finished, but on Nov. 26, 1646, the *prolocutor* returned thanks to the several committees, in the name of the assembly, for their great pains in perfecting the work committed to them. At the same time Dr. Burges was appointed to get it transcribed, in order to its being presented to parliament, which was done Dec. 11, by the whole assembly in a body, under the title of, *The*



*humble advice of the assembly of divines and others, now, by the authority of parliament, sitting at Westminster, concerning a confession of faith.* The house of commons having voted the assembly thanks, desired them to insert the *proofs* of the several articles in their proper places, and then to print six hundred copies,† and no more, for the perusal of the houses. The reverend Mr. *Wilson*, Mr. *Byfield*, and Mr. *Gower*, were appointed, Jan. 6, to be a committee to collect the scriptures for confirmation of the several articles; all which, after examination by the assembly, were inserted in the margin. And then the whole *confession* was committed once more to a review of the three committees, who made report to the assembly of such further amendments as they thought necessary; which being agreed to by the house, it was sent to the press, May 11, 1647. Mr. *Byfield*, by order of the house of commons, delivered to the members the printed copies of their *confession of faith*, with *scripture notes*, signed

CHARLES HERLE,	<i>Prolocutor,</i>
CORN. BURGESS,	} <i>Assessors,</i>
HERBERT PALMER,	
HENRY ROBOROUGH,	} <i>Scribes.</i>
ADONIRAM BYFIELD,	

And because no more were to be given out at present, every member subscribed his name to the receipt thereof.

The house of commons began their examination of this confession May 19, when they considered the whole first chapter article by article; but the disturbances which arose between the parliament and army interrupted their proceeding the whole summer; but when these were quieted they resumed their work, and October 2, ordered a chapter of the confession of faith at least to be debated every Wednesday, by which means they got through the whole before the end of March following; for at a conference with the

† The MSS. to which Mr. Neal refers, though supported by the authority of Rushworth, made a mistake here: for by a copy of the original order, given by Dr. Grey, in his Appendix, No. 71, it appears, that the order of the house was for printing 500 copies and *no more* of "The humble advice," &c. See also Whitlocke's Memorials, p. 233. *Ed.*

\* Rushworth, part iv. vol. i. p. 482.

house of lords March 22, 1647-8, the commons presented them with the *confession of faith* as passed by their house, with some alterations: they agreed with the assembly in the doctrinal part of the confession, and ordered it to be published, June 20, 1648, for the satisfaction of the foreign churches, under the title of *Articles of religion approved and passed by both houses of parliament, after advice had with an assembly of divines called together by them for that purpose*.† The parliament not thinking it proper to call it a *confession of faith*, because the sections did not begin with the words *I confess* ;\* nor to annex matters of church government, about which they were not agreed, to *doctrinal articles* ; those chapters therefore, which relate to discipline, as they now stand in the assembly's confession, were not printed by order of the house, but re-committed, and at last laid aside ; as the whole thirtieth chapter, of *church censures, and of the power of the keys* ; the thirty-first chapter, of *synods and councils, by whom to be called, and of what force in their decrees and determinations* ; a great part of the twenty-fourth chapter, of *marriage and divorce*, which they referred to the laws of the land ; and the fourth paragraph of the twentieth chapter, which determines *what opinions, and parties disturb the peace of the church, and how such disturbers ought to be proceeded against by the censures of the church, and punished by the civil magistrate*. These propositions, in which the very life and soul of presbytery consists, never were approved by the English parliament, nor had the force of a law in this country: But the whole confession, as it came from the assembly, being sent into Scotland, was immediately approved by the general assembly and parliament of that kingdom, as the established doctrine and discipline of their kirk ;|| and thus it has been published to the world ever since, though the chapter above-mentioned, relating to *discipline*, received no parliamentary sanction in England ; nevertheless, as the *entire confession* was agreed to by an assembly of English divines, I have given it a place in the *Appendix*.§

Nor is it to be supposed, that the *confession of faith* it-

† Rushworth, p. 1035.

\* Savoy Conf. Pref. p. 18, 19.

|| Savoy Conf. Pref. p. 20.

§ Appendix, No. VIII.

*self*, which determines, so many abstruse points of divinity, should have the unanimous and hearty assent of the whole assembly or parliament: for though all the divines were in the antiarminian scheme, yet some had a greater latitude than others. I find in my *MS.* the dissent of several members against some expressions relating to *reprobation*, to the *imputation of the active as well as passive obedience of Christ*, and to several passages in the chapters of *liberty of conscience and church discipline*; but the *confession*, as far as related to *articles of faith*, passed the assembly and parliament by a very great majority.

Various censures have been passed by learned men upon this labored performance: some have loaded it with undeserved reproaches; and others, perhaps, have advanced its reputation too high. Mr. *Collier* condemns it, for determining in favor of the morality of the sabbath; for pronouncing the pope to be anti-christ; and for maintaining the calvinian rigors of *absolute predestination, irresistible grace*, and the *impotency of man's will*; doctrines, in his opinion, inconsistent with christianity. § But then, he observes, very justly, that it falls very short of the Scots claim in points of discipline; it yields the magistrate a power of convening church assemblies, and of superintending their proceedings; it is silent as to the independency of the church, and the *divine right* of presbytery, &c. Upon the whole, the Assembly's Confession, with all its faults, has been ranked by very good judges among the most perfect systems of divinity,|| that have been published upon the *calvinistic* or *antiarminian* principles in the last age.

While the *confession* was carrying through the assembly, committees were appointed to reduce it into the form of catechisms; *one larger*, for the service of a public exposition in the pulpit, according to the custom of foreign churches; the *other smaller*, for the instruction of chil-

§ Eccl. Hist. vol. ii. p. 842.

|| Here may be introduced, as it escaped our recollection in the more proper place, the remark made by Mr. Robinson on the DIRECTORY. "The best state instructions to preachers were given in the DIRECTORY by the assembly of divines: but even these (he properly adds) include the great, the fatal error, the subjection of God's word to human laws." Translation of Claude on the Composition of a Sermon, vol. ii. Prefatory Dissertation, p. 63. *Ed.*



dren ; in both which the *articles relating to church discipline* are entirely omitted.\* The larger catechism is a comprehensive system of divinity, and the smaller, a very accurate summary, though it has by some been thought a little too long, and in some particulars too abstruse for the capacities of children. The *shorter catechism* was presented to the house of commons, Nov. 5, but the *larger*, by reason of the marginal references to scripture, which the houses desired might be inserted, was not ready till the 14th of April, 1648, when the house ordered six hundred copies to be printed for the service of the members ; and having examined and approved it, they allowed it to be printed *by authority*, for public use, September 15, 1648. The king, after many solicitations, at the treaty of the *isle of Wight*, offered to license the shorter catechism, with a suitable preface ; but that treaty proving unsuccessful, it was not accomplished.†

The chief affairs committed to the assembly being thus finished, Mr. *Rutherford*, one of the Scots divines, moved, October 24, 1647, that it might be recorded in the *scribes books*, that the assembly had enjoyed the assistance of the honorable, reverend and learned commissioners of the church of Scotland, during all the time they had been debating and perfecting these four things mentioned in the covenant, viz. *their composing a directory for public worship ; an uniform confession of faith ; a form of church government and discipline ; and a public catechism ;* some of their number having been present during the whole of these transactions ; which being done about a week after, he and the rest of the commissioners took their leave, and returned home ; upon which occasion Mr. *Herle*, the prolocutor rose up, and, in the name of the assembly, “*thanked the honorable and reverend commissioners, for their assistance ; he excused in the best manner he could, the directory’s not being so well observed as it ought ; and lamented that the assembly had not power to call offenders to an account : he confesses, that their affairs were very much embarrassed, and that they were still in a chaos of confusion ; [the king being now taken out of the hands of the parliament, and in custody of the army] he takes*

\* Rushworth, p. 888, 1060.

† Rushworth, p. 1326.

‘notice what distresses the parliament were in, while the  
 ‘common enemy was high and strong; and adds, that their  
 ‘extraordinary successes hitherto, were owing to the pray-  
 ‘ers of their brethren of Scotland, and other protestants  
 ‘abroad, as well as to their own. He then mentions with  
 ‘concern some other restraints the assembly lay under,  
 ‘but that this was not a proper season for redress.”

The commissioners went home under a very heavy concern for the storm that was gathering over England, and for the hardships the *presbyterians* lay under with respect to their discipline; and having obtained the establishment of the *directory, the confession of faith and catechisms, the presbyterian discipline, and Rouse’s psalms in metre*, for the service of their kirk, they appointed a general fast, to lament their own defection from the *solemn league and covenant*, and the distressed condition of their brethren in England, who were zealous for carrying on the work of God, but were now oppressed, under pretence of *liberty*, when no less was aimed at than tyranny and arbitrary power.

If the parliament had dissolved the assembly at this time, as they ought to have done, they had broke up with honor and reputation, for after this they did little more than examine candidates for the ministry, and squabble about the *jus divinum* of presbytery; the grand consultations concerning public affairs, and practising upon the new establishment, being translated to the provincial assemblies, and weekly meetings of the London clergy at Sion-college.\*

\* Rapin, vol. ii. p. 297, note.

\* That the reader may form a judgment of what was intended to be established in England, it may not be improper, to set before him, in one view, the discipline that was then settled in the kirk of Scotland, and subsists at this time. “In Scotland there are eight hundred and ninety parishes, each of which is divided, in proportion to its extent, into particular districts, and every district has its own ruling elders and deacons; the ruling elders are men of the principal quality and interest in the parish, and the deacons are persons of a good character for manners and understanding. A consistory of ministers, elders, and deacons, is called a kirk session, the lowest ecclesiastical judicatory, which meets once a week, to consider the affairs of the parish. The minister is always moderator, but without a negative; appeals lie from hence to their own presbyteries, which are the next higher judicatories. Scotland is divided into sixty-nine presbyteries, each consisting of from twelve to twenty-four contiguous parishes. The



Though the city and suburbs of London had been formed into a *province*, and divided into twelve classical presbyteries (as has been remembered) under the last year, new complaints were still made to the parliament of certain obstructions to their proceedings ; upon which the houses published their resolutions of April 22, 1647, entitled *Remedies for removing some obstructions in church government* ;\* in which they ordered letters to be sent from the speakers of both houses to the several counties of England immediately to divide themselves into distinct presbyteries and classes ; “ They then appoint the elders and ministers ‘ of the several classes of the *province* of London, to hold ‘ their provincial assembly in the convocation house of St. ‘ Paul’s in London, upon the first Monday in May next ensuing, and to adjourn their meetings *de die in diem*, and ‘ conclude them with adjournment to the next opportunity, ‘ according to the ordinance of parliament ; but that no act ‘ shall pass or be valid in the said province of London, except it be done by the number of thirty-six present, or the ‘ major part of them, whereof twelve to be ministers, and ‘ twenty-four ruling elders. That in the classical meetings, ‘ that which shall be done by the major part present, shall ‘ be esteemed the act of the whole ; but no act done by any ‘ classes shall be valid, unless it be done by the number of

‘ ministers of these parishes, with one ruling elder, chosen half yearly ‘ out of every kirk session, compose a presbytery. They meet in the ‘ *head town* and choose their moderator, who must be a minister, half ‘ yearly : from hence appeals lie to provincial synods, which are composed of several adjacent presbyteries. Two, three, four to eight ; ‘ there are fifteen in all. The members are a minister and a ruling elder out of every parish. These synods meet twice a year, at the principal town of its bounds. They choose a moderator, who is their prolocutor. The acts of the synods are subject to the review of the general assembly, the dernier resort of the kirk of Scotland. It consists ‘ of commissioners from presbyteries, royal burghs, and universities. ‘ A presbytery of twelve ministers sends two ministers and one ruling elder ; a presbytery of between twelve and eighteen sends three, ‘ and one ruling elder ; of between eighteen and twenty-four sends four, ‘ and two ruling elders ; of twenty-four sends five, and two elders ; every royal burgh sends one elder, and Edinburgh two ; every university ‘ sends one commissioner, usually a minister. The general assembly ‘ meets once a year, in the month of May, and is opened and adjourned, ‘ by the king’s royal commissioner appointed for that purpose.”



‘fifteen present, or the major part of them, whereof five be ‘ministers and ten ruling elders.’ So that the number of *lay-elders* in these assemblies was double to the number of *ministers*.

According to this appointment the first provincial assembly met at the convocation-house of St. Paul’s, May 3, consisting of three ministers and six ruling elders from the several classes, in all about one hundred and eight persons; at their first session they chose the reverend Dr. *Gouge* prolocutor, who opened the assembly with a sermon at his own church in Black-friars, the reverend Mr. *Thomas Manton*, Mr. *Ralph Robinson* and Mr. *Cardel*, being appointed scribes. After their return to the *convocation-house*, a committee of seven ministers and fourteen ruling elders, were chosen to consider of the business of the province.

*The MINISTERS were*

*The Rev.* Mr. Whitaker  
Dr. Seaman  
Mr. Ed. Calamy  
Mr. Spurstow

*The Rev.* Mr. Tuckney  
Mr. Proffett  
Mr. Jackson.

*The RULING ELDERS were,*

Sir Edw. Popham  
Dr. Clarke  
Dr. Bastwicke  
Dr. Brinley  
Mr. Bence

Mr. Russel  
Mr. Bains  
Mr. Houghton  
Mr. Eyres  
Mr. Vaughan

Mr. Webbe  
Mr. English  
Col. Sowtonstall  
Mr. ———,

Any six to be a quorum, provided there be two ministers, and four ruling elders. Their next meeting to be at Sion-college, May 6, at two in the afternoon.

At the second sessions it was moved, that application be made to parliament, for liberty to remove the assembly from the *convocation-house* to some other place; and accordingly they were allowed to adjourn to any place within the city or liberties of London, upon which they agreed upon Sion-college, where they continued to meet twice a week to the end of the year 1659, as appears by a manuscript of the late Mr. *Grange*, now in Sion-college library.

Before their adjournment from the *convocation-house* at St. Paul’s, they came to the following resolutions; *resolved*,

1. That the *Provincial Assembly* shall meet twice every week, Mondays and Thursdays.

2. That the moderator for the time being shall begin and end every session with prayer.

3. When a new moderator is to be chosen the senior minister shall preside.

4. The moderator shall be subject to the censure of the majority of the assembly, in case of complaint, and shall leave the chair while the complaint is debating, and the senior minister shall preside.

5. Every one that speaks shall direct his speech to the moderator, and be uncovered.

6. No man shall speak above three times to the same question at one sessions.

7. When any business is before the assembly relating to any particular member, he shall withdraw, if desired by the majority.

8. After the assembly is set, no member shall withdraw without leave.

9. The names of the members present shall be recorded by the scribes.

Every *Provincial Assembly* was dissolved in course at the end of six months, when notice was given to the several classes to return new representatives; but it was an ill omen upon them, that their meetings were interrupted almost the whole summer, by reason of the distraction of the times.

The second *Provincial Assembly* met Nov. 8, Dr. *Seaman* moderator, and presented a petition to the parliament in a body, Jan. 11, in which they humbly pray,

1. "That the number of delegates to the *Provincial Assembly* may be enlarged, because they found it difficult sometimes to make up the number of thirty-six.

2. "That the houses would quicken the settlement of those classes [in London] that were not yet formed, which they say were four.

3. "That some more effectual encouragement may be provided for a learned ministry.

4. "That effectual provision may be made against clandestine marriages, for the punishment of fornication, adultery, and such uncleanness as is not fit to be named.

5. "That church censures may be so established, that 'scandalous persons may be effectually excluded from 'church communion."

The parliament received them with respect, and promised to take the matter of the petition into consideration, which was all that was done in the affair.

But besides the *Provincial Assembly*. it has been remembered, that the London clergy had their weekly meetings at Sion College, to consult about church affairs, in one of which they agreed, *since they could do no more*, to bear their public testimony against the errors of the times; and accordingly they published a treatise, entitled, *A testimony to the truth of Jesus Christ, and to our solemn league and covenant; as also against the errors, heresies, and blasphemies of these times, and the toleration of them; to which is added a catalogue of the said errors, &c.* dated from Sion-College, Dec. 14, 1647, and subscribed by fifty-eight of the most eminent pastors in London, of whom seventeen were of the assembly of divines. Some time after the ministers of Gloucestershire published their concurrence with the London ministers, subscribed by sixty-four names. The ministers of the province of Lancashire by eighty-four. The Devonshire ministers by eighty-three; and the Somerset ministers by seventy-one.

The London ministers, in their first article, "touching 'matters of doctrine, declare their assent to the Westminster 'assembly's confession of faith, and heartily desire it may receive the sanction of authority, as the joint confession of faith 'of the three kingdoms, in pursuance of the covenant."

Touching heresies and errors, they declare their detestation and abhorrence of these following, among others,

1. "That the holy scriptures are not of divine authority, and the only rule of faith.\*

2. "That God hath a bodily shape; that God is the 'name of a person; and, that God is the author of sin, 'having a greater hand in it than men themselves.†

3. "That there is not a trinity of persons in the God-head; that the Son is not co-equal with the Father; and 'that the Holy Ghost is only a ministering spirit.†

\* L. Clarkson. Biddle, p. 6. † Crisp, Eaton, Saltmarsh.

† Paul Best. Biddle, p. 8.



4. "That God has not elected some to salvation from eternity, and rejected or reprobated others; and, that no man shall perish in hell for *Adam's* sin.<sup>a</sup>

5. "That Christ died for the sins of all mankind; that the benefits of his death were intended for all; and, that natural men may do such things as whereunto God has by way of promise annexed grace and acceptance.<sup>b</sup>

6. "That man hath a free will and power in himself to repent, to believe, to obey the gospel, and do every thing that God requires to salvation.<sup>c</sup>

7. "That faith is not a supernatural grace, and that faithful actions are the only things by which a man is justified.<sup>d</sup>

8. "That the moral law is not the rule of life; that believers are as clean from sin as Christ himself; that such have no occasion to pray for pardon of sin; that God sees no sin in his people, nor does he ever chastise them for it.<sup>e</sup>

9. "That there is no church, nor sacraments, nor sabbath; the opinions of the *Seekers*, now called *Quakers*.<sup>f</sup>

10. "That the children of believers ought not to be baptized, nor baptism continued among christians; that the meaning of the third commandment is, *Thou shalt not forswear thyself*.<sup>g</sup>

11. "That persons of the next kindred may marry; and that indisposition, unfitness, or contrariety of mind, arising from natural causes, are a just reason of divorce.<sup>h</sup>

12. "That the soul of man is mortal; that it sleeps with the body; and, that there is neither heaven nor hell till the day of judgment.<sup>i</sup>

The last error they witness against, and in which all agree, is called the "*error of toleration*,"<sup>k</sup> patronizing and promoting all other errors, heresies and blasphemies whatsoever, under the grossly abused notion of LIBERTY OF CONSCIENCE;<sup>l</sup> and here they complain as a very great

<sup>a</sup> Fulness of God's Love to Mankind, by L. S. <sup>b</sup> Hammond's Pract. Cat. J. Goodwin, p. 149. <sup>c</sup> J. Goodwin. <sup>d</sup> Ham. <sup>e</sup> Randal, John Simpson. <sup>f</sup> Saltmarsh, Smoak in the Temple. p. 17. <sup>g</sup> Tombes. <sup>h</sup> Saltmarsh, Ham. Milton, p. 49. <sup>i</sup> P. 20. Man's Mortality, by R. O.

<sup>k</sup> Mr. Emlyn justly observes, "That the principle of the admired Assembly's larger catechism, under the second commandment, is, that it forbids *toleration of all false religion*." Emlyn's Works, vol. i. p. 60 of the narrative edition of 1746. Ed.

grievance, "That men should have liberty to worship God  
'in that way and manner as shall appear to them most  
'agreeable to the word of God ; and no man be punished  
'or discountenanced by autherity for the same ; and, that  
'an enforced uniformity of religion throughout a nation or  
'state confounds the civil and religious, and denies the  
'very principles of christianity and civility."\*

They then bear their testimony to the *covenant*, and to the *divine right of presbytery*. They lament the imperfect settlement of their discipline by the parliament, and lay the foundation of all their calamities in the countenancing of a public and general toleration, and conclude thus ;  
'Upon all these considerations, we the ministers of Jesus  
'Christ do hereby testify to our flocks, to all the kingdom,  
'and to the reformed world, our great dislike of *prelacy*,  
'*erastianism*, *brownism*, and *independency* ; and our utter  
'abhorrency of *anti-scripturism*, *popery*, *arianism*, *soci-*  
'*nianism*, *armixianism*, *antinomianism*, *anabaptism*, *liber-*  
'*tinism*, and *familism* ; and that we detest the fore-men-  
'tioned *toleration*, so much pursued and endeavored in this  
'kingdom, accounting it unlawful and pernicious." What  
sad work would these divines have made, had the *sword*  
of the magistrate been at their disposal !||

The principal authors from whom these errors were collected, are mentioned in the margin ; two of whom determined to vindicate the citations out of their books : Dr. *Hammond* published a vindication of three passages in his practical catechism, from the censures of the London min-

\* Bloody Tenet. Five Holland Ministers, p. 22.

|| It deserves to be mentioned here, as a fact remarkable in itself, and honorable to the assembly at Westminster, that, notwithstanding the zeal expressed against toleration, the confession of faith it drew up was not made the legal standard of orthodoxy. It was not subscribed by any member of that assembly, except by the prolocutor, assessors, and clerks. Nor till *forty years* after was a subscription or assent to it required of any layman or minister, as a term of christian communion. And Mr. Nye, a member of the assembly, informs us, when the Scots commissioners proposed, that the answers in the shorter catechism should be subscribed by all the members, the motion was rejected ; after a considerable number in the assembly had shewn it was an unwarrantable imposition. "Conscientious Nonconformity," printed for Noon, 1737, p. 77. "The religious Establishment in Scotland examined." 1774, p. 104. *Ed.*



isters ; in which he very justly complains of the hard names with which the ministers load the opinions they reject, as *abominable errors, damnable heresies, horrid blasphemies, many of which are destructive of the fundamentals of christianity, and all of them repugnant to the holy scriptures, the scandal and offence of the reformed churches abroad, and the unparaelled reproach of this church and nation ; and, in a word, the dregs and spawn of those old cursed heresies which have been already condemned.* The doctor then recites his three passages ; the first concerning *universal redemption* ; the second concerning *faith's being the condition of our justification* ; and the third concerning the *interpretation of the third commandment* ; and avers them all to be true, and agreeable to the doctrine of the church of England. In conclusion the doctor desires this favor, that either the first subscriber *Mr. J. Downham*, who licensed his *catechism* for the press, or else *Dr. Gouge* or *Mr. Gataker*, who are foremost in the second rank, or some other persons of learning, christianity, and candor, would afford him their patience, personally and by fair discourse, or any other christian way, to debate the truth of these assertions, for which he will wait their leisure. Dated from Oxford, Jan. 24, 1647-8, but no-body thought fit to accept the challenge.

*Mr. John Goodwin* was a learned divine, and a smart disputant, but of a peculiar mould, being a republican, an independent, and a thorough *arminian* ; he had been vicar of Coleman-street, whence he was ejected in the year 1645, by the committee for plundered ministers, because he refused to baptize the children of his parishioners promiscuously, and to administer the sacrament to his whole parish. He had published several large and learned books ; as, *The divine authority of the scriptures. Redemption redeemed. A treatise of justification.* And, an *exposition on the ninth chapter to the Romans* ; out of which the above-mentioned exceptions were taken. This divine, taking it amiss to be marked for a heretic, challenged any of the London clergy to a disputation, as thinking it a very unrighteous method to condemn opinions before they had been confuted. *Mr. William Jenkins*, at that time a warm and zealous presbyterian, though after-



wards softened into more catholic principles, entered the list with our author, in a pamphlet entitled, *The Busy Bishop*. To which the other replied, in a book entitled, *The Novice Presbyterian instructed*. By some passages in which, one may discover the angry spirit of the times.

Mr. *Jenkins* had complained that the orthodox clergy had short commons, and were under the cross, whereas the sectaries met with the greatest encouragement. To which Mr. *Goodwin* replies, "If by *orthodox ministers*, he means those of the adored order of presbytery, with what face can he say that they are under the cross? Is not the whole English element of church-livings offered up by the state to their service? Are not all the benefices of the kingdom appropriated to their order? And all others thrust out of doors to make room for them? Must they feed with *hec-atombs* every day, or else complain of short commons? Or is Mr. *Jenkins* of *Mur. Crassus's* mind, who would have no one accounted rich, unless he could maintain an army with his revenue? In what sense can he affirm the *presbyterian elergy* to be under the cross? Are *they* under the cross who are scarce under the crown? who are carried by authority upon eagles wings: over whom the parliament itself rejoices to do good; heaping ordinance upon ordinance to advance both them and their livings together. But certainly there is something that Mr. *Jenkins* calls a *cross* which few men know by that name, but those who are baptized into the spirit of high presbytery; for the *cross* he speaks of is no other than this, that *his orthodox brethren have not the power to do all the evil that is in their hearts against a quiet, peaceable, harmless generation of men*, of whom they are jealous, lest they should take their kingdom from them. How can this writer say, that the independent preachers meet with encouragement, and are under worldly glory? Does he account it matter of worldly glory, to be discountenanced by the state, to be declared incapable of those favors and privileges which other ministers in the land enjoy; to be sequestered from their livings, and to be thrust into holes and corners; to be represented both to the magistrate and people, as sectaries, schismatics, erroneous, heretical, factious, troublesome, dangerous to the state, and what not?

‘If this be worldly glory, then may the preachers, against whom Mr. *Jenkins* writes, be truly said to be under ‘worldly glory.’ Old Mr. *Vicars* and some others, carried on the controversy, but their writings are not worth remembering; especially since the English presbyterians of the present age have openly renounced and disavowed their principles.

To return to more public affairs. Hitherto the army had acted in perfect subordination to the parliament; but the war being over, and the king a prisoner, the great difficulty was to settle the nation upon such a foot as might content “the several parties, or bring them at least to acquiesce; this was the rock upon which they split, and which in the end proved the ruin of their cause. To give light to this affair it will be proper to consider the separate views of the king, the parliament, and the army.

The royal party being broken, and the king a prisoner, his majesty had no prospect of recovering his throne but by dividing his enemies, in order to the making the best terms with them he could; the *presbyterians*, being in league with the Scots nation, were most numerous and powerful; but that which rendered their agreement with the king impracticable, was his majesty’s zealous attachment to this point, that *episcopal government was essential to christianity*, and that he was bound by his *coronation oath* to maintain it; whereas the others held themselves equally bound by their *solemn league and covenant* to abolish episcopacy, and establish presbytery in its room. Both parties were immovable, and therefore irreconcilable. His majesty’s agreement with the *army* was more open and practicable, because they would have set aside the *covenant*, and obliged the parliament to tolerate episcopal government as well as the sectaries; but the king could never forgive those officers, who had destroyed his armies, and driven him out of the field: Though he dreaded their military valor, he had a very mean opinion of their politics, and therefore affected to play them against the parliament, hoping to take advantage of their divisions, and establish himself upon the ruins of both; for it was his majesty’s maxim, which he did not scruple to avow, that *neither par-*



ty could subsist without him, and that those must be ruined whom he abandoned. By which unhappy principle he lost his interest, both in the parliament and army, and (as bishop Kennet observes) laid the foundation of his ruin.

The *presbyterians* were no less unhappy in an imagination, that as the majority of the house of commons, with the city of London, and the whole Scots nation, were firmly attached to their interest, no opposition could stand before them, and therefore would abate nothing of their demands, nor hearken to any other terms of accommodation with the king, than those of the *covenant*, which were the *entire abolishing of prelacy, and the establishing presbyterian uniformity throughout both kingdoms, with an absolute extirpation of all sectaries whatsoever*. This was not only an effectual bar to their union with the king (as has been observed,) but awakened the jealousy of the army, who were thoroughly convinced, that when the *presbyterians* were in the legal possession of their demands, they would exercise equal tyranny over the consciences of men with the bishops; and indeed nothing less was to be expected, considering their steady adherence to the *covenant* in all their treaties, their efforts in parliament to get the *power of the keys* into their own hands, their frequent addresses for the suppressing all sectaries by the civil authority, and their declarations both from the pulpit and press, against toleration and liberty of conscience. In all their treaties with the king, even to that in the Isle of Wight (except when the army was in possession of the cities of London and Westminster) this was one article of peace, *That an effectual course be taken by act of parliament, and all other ways needful or expedient, for suppressing the opinions of the independents, and all other sectaries*. To which his majesty had agreed in his private treaty with the Scots in the Isle of Wight, signed December 27, so that the army was left unsatisfied.

For although there were some few *presbyterians* in the army, the greatest part consisted of *independents, anabaptists*, and men of *unsettled principles* in religion, who, for want of regular chaplains to their regiments, had used their own talents among themselves in religious exercises. The Scots treaty of the Isle of Wight says, the army was made



up of *anti-trinitarians, arians, socinians, anti-scripturists, anabaptists, antinomians, arminians, familists, brownists, separatists, independents, libertines, seekers, &c.*

Mr. *Rapin*, contrary to the testimony of all other writers, calls them all *independents*, and represents the controversy between the parliament and them as a dispute, *Whether presbytery or independency should be uppermost*; whereas the grand controversy was, *presbytery with a toleration, or without one*. The army consented that presbytery should be the national religion, but insisted upon a *toleration of all christians* in the enjoyment of all their civil and religious rights. This (says lord *Clarendon*) was their *great charter*, and till they had obtained it by a legal settlement, they agreed not to lay down their arms: They had fought the parliament's battles, and therefore thought it unreasonable to be told openly, if they could not comply with the *presbyterian* settlement, they must expect to be punished as *sectaries*, and driven out of the land. To avoid this, they treated separately with the king, both before and after they had him in their hands; and when they apprehended he did not deal sincerely with them, they made proposals to the parliament to establish the *presbyterian* discipline, with a toleration to all protestants, without him; but when they found the *presbyterians*, even in their last treaty with the king, in the year 1648, insisted upon the *presbyterian* uniformity, without making the least provision for that liberty of conscience they had been contending for, they were exasperated and grew outrageous; they seized his majesty's person a second time, and having purged the house of commons, in a most arbitrary manner, of all who were not disposed to their desperate measures, they blew up the whole constitution, and buried king, parliament, and presbytery, in its ruins. This was not in their original intention, nor the result of any set of religious principles they embraced, (as *Rapin* insinuates) but was a violence resulting from *despair*, to which they had been driven by a series of disappointments, and a train of mistaken conduct in the royalists and *presbyterians*.

We left the king the beginning of the spring at his house at Holmby, where he continued under an easy restraint from the 16th of February to the 4th of June following.

The war being ended, the houses attempted to get rid of the army, by offering six months pay, and six weeks advance, to as many as would go over to Ireland; and by voting, that the remainder should be disbanded, with an act of indemnity for all hostilities committed by them, in pursuance of the powers vested in them by parliament; but the army, being apprehensive that the presbyterians would make peace with the king, upon the foot of *covenant uniformity*, and without a *toleration*, resolved to secure this as a kind of *preliminary point*; for which purpose they chose a *council of officers*, and a *committee of agitators*, consisting of two inferior officers out of each regiment, to manage their affairs; these met in distinct bodies, like the two houses of parliament, and came to the following resolutions, which they sent to Westminster by three of their number, who delivered them in at the bar of the house: "That they would 'not disband without their arrears, nor without full provision for *liberty of conscience*; that they did not look upon 'themselves as a band of *janizaries*, but as volunteers, that 'had been fighting for the liberties of the nation, of which 'they were a part, and that they were resolved to see those 'ends secured.'"\* It was moved in the house, that the messengers might be committed to the Tower; but, after a long debate, they were dismissed only with a reprimand for meddling in affairs of state, and for presuming to offer a petition to parliament without their *general*. Upon this the officers sent their petition by the general himself, but the parliament, instead of taking it into consideration, ordered, May 21, that all who would not list for the Irish service, should be immediately paid off and disbanded; upon which the officers, seeing the snare that was laid for them, bound themselves and the army by an engagement May 29, not to disband till the grievances above-mentioned were redressed. Whereupon the two houses ordered lieutenant-general *Cromwell* who was then in town, and suspected to be at the head of these counsels, to be seized; but being advertised of the design, he made his escape to the army. They then voted the petition seditious, and all those traitors who had promoted it; and having sent a message to the *gener-*

\* Rushworth, vol. vi. p. 425, 498. Rapin, vol. ii. p. 529, folio ed.



al, to remove the army further from London, they raised the city trained bands, and determined to put an end to the power of the army by a speedy conclusion of peace with the king.

His majesty's answer to the propositions at Newcastle were read in the house May 18, in which "he agrees to 'settle the presbyterian government for three years—to 'ratify the assembly of divines at Westminster, proposing 'a few of his own clergy to consider what government to 'settle afterwards—he yields the militia for ten years '—desires ministers of his own to satisfy him about the 'covenant—consents to the act against papists—and 'to an act of oblivion—and desires to come to London, 'in order to give the parliament satisfaction upon the other 'articles." Two days after the lords voted, that the king be removed to his house at Oatlands, and that it be immediately fitted for his reception.

Things being come to this crisis, the *agitators* considered, that the KING being a prize contended for, whoever had him in their power must be masters of the peace, and make their own terms; they therefore resolved, by the advice and direction of lieutenant-general *Cromwell*, to get possession of his majesty's person, which they accomplished by a bold stratagem, in the night of June 4, with very little opposition from his attendants or guards; cornet *Joyce* at the head of fifty resolute horse, having secured the avenues to Holmby-House, entered with two or three of his company, and going to the king's chamber, acquainted him with his design of carrying him to the army at New-Market; his majesty being surprised at so unexpected a visit, and so late at night, asked for his commission, who pointed to his troops drawn up before the gates; his majesty answered, *it was very legible*; and finding it in vain to resist, consented to go with the *cornet* next morning, on promise of safety to his person, and that he should not be forced to any thing against his conscience; the chief officers of the army met his majesty at Childerley, four miles from Cambridge, and were admitted to kiss his hand; from thence he was removed to New-Market, where he took the diversion of the Heath, had the liberty of four of his own chaplains to wait upon him, and was attended with all due ceremony and respect;



*Cromwell* being heard to say among his friends, that *now he had got the king into his hands he had the parliament in his pocket*.\*

The two houses received the news of the king's being carried off to the army with the utmost surprize and astonishment; the whole city was in confusion, and all persons within the lines of communication ordered to arms; the lobby at Westminster was thronged with the disbanded officers of the earl of *Essex's* army offering their service to the parliament; for every one imagined the army would be at the gates of the city in a few hours; when their panic was a little abated, commissioners were sent to the general, not to advance within forty miles of London; but being already at St. Albans, the general promised not to march his army nearer without due notice;† and assured the two houses, that *they would not oppose the presbyterial government, nor set up the independent*; but only insisted that some effectual course might be taken, that such who upon conscientious grounds differed from the establishment, might not be debarred from the common rights, liberties, or benefits belonging equally to all, while they lived soberly and inoffensively towards others, and peaceably and faithfully towards the state.§ June 10, another letter was sent to the lord-mayor, aldermen, and common-council of London, signed by *Fairfax, Cromwell*, and twelve other officers, assuring them, “they intended no alteration of the civil government; *nor to interrupt the settlement of presbytery*; nor to introduce a licentious liberty, under colour of obtaining ease for tender consciences, but that when the state had made a settlement they would submit or suffer. They wished that every peaceable subject might have liberty and encouragement, for the obtaining which (say they) we are drawing near the city.—We seek the good of all, and shall wait for a time to see if these things may be settled without us, and then we will embark for Ireland.—”‡

The commons took no notice of these remonstrances, but declared in print, that *his majesty was a prisoner, and bar-*

\* Rushworth, p. 545, 549. Rapin, vol. ii. p. 530, folio ed.

† Rushworth, p. 546, 561, 589, &c. § Rapin, vol. ii. p. 379, 531.

‡ Rushworth, p. 551.

*barously used*, because their commissioners could have no access to him, but in presence of some officers; the army replied, “that all suggestions of that nature were absolutely false, and contrary to their principles, which are most clearly for a *general right, and just freedom to all men*, and therefore upon this occasion they declare to the world, that they desire the same for the king, and others of his party, so far as can consist with common right and freedom, and with the security of the same for the future. And *we do clearly profess* (say they) *that we do not see how there can be any peace to this kingdom firm or lasting, without a due provision for the rights, quiet, and immunity of his majesty, his royal family, and his late partakers*; and herein we think, that tender and equitable dealings, (as supposing their cases had been ours) and a spirit of common love and justice diffusing itself to the good and preservation of all, will make the most glorious conquest over their hearts, to make them, and the whole people of the land, lasting friends.”\*

The leading members of the presbyterian party in the house of commons could not contain themselves within any reasonable bounds at these proceedings; they said it was insufferable that the parliament, instead of treating with the king, should be obliged to treat with their own servants, and therefore advised raising a new army, and opposing force with force, till those who had the king in their custody should submit to their superiors, and deliver him back. On the other hand, the officers and agitators resolved to get rid of these resolute gentlemen, and therefore impeached eleven of the members of high-treason, June 16, for obstructing the business of Ireland; for acting against the army and against the laws and liberties of the subject, &c. and desired they might be suspended from the house till they were legally acquitted;† Their names were *Denzil Hollis, Esq. Sir Phil. Stapleton, Sir William Lewis, Sir John Clotworthy, Sir William Waller, Sir John Maynard, Major-general Massey, Mr. Glyn recorder, Colonel Walter Long, Colonel Edward Hartley, Anthony Nichols, Esq.* The commons not only rejected their impeachment,

\* Rushworth, p. 589, 590.

† Rushworth, p. 570, 572. Rapin, vol. ii. p. 531.



but ordered the king to be brought to Richmond, and that four full companies of the militia should guard the two houses. This quickened the resentments of the army, who sent the following proposals, among others, June 23, — ‘That the king’s coming to Richmond be suspended; — that no place be appointed for his residence nearer London than the parliament will allow the quarters of the army; — that the impeached members be sequestered the house; — that the multitude of soldiers that flock together about the city be dispersed; and that no new forces be raised, nor any preparations made for a new war.’\* If these particulars are not complied with in a week’s time, they declare they will march to London, and do themselves justice. The houses, being terrified with the approach of the army, agreed to content them for the present, in order to gain time; and the impeached members having desired leave to withdraw, retired first into the city, and after some time left the kingdom. The other requests of the army were also complied with; whereupon, after returning thanks to the houses, they retreated to Wickham, and appointed commissioners to settle all remaining differences with the parliament.||

But the city of London, by the influence of the impeached members, kindled into a flame; for the parliament, by an ordinance of May 4, having put the nomination of the officers of the militia into the hands of the common council; *these* had discharged the *old ones*, and put in such as they could confide in for opposing the army, and establishing uniformity according to the *covenant*; the *officers* in order to defeat their design insisted, that the ordinance of May 4, be repealed, and the militia put into the hands of those who had conducted it during the course of the late war.† The houses, with much reluctance, consented to the repeal July 23, which alarmed the citizens, and occasioned those tumults which brought upon them the very mischiefs they were afraid of. *Denzil Hollis*, with the other impeached members who were retired into the city, prevailed with the common-council to oppose the repeal, and petition the house, that the ordinance of May 4, might

\* Rushworth, p. 585.

|| Whitlocke, p. 264. Rapin, vol. ii. p. 532.

† Ibid. p. 533.



remain in full force. At the same time some citizens met at Skinners-Hall, and subscribed a solemn *engagement* to endeavor with the hazard of their lives to procure “a personal treaty with the king;—that he might return to his two houses with honor and safety;—that his majesty’s concessions of May 11, might be confirmed, and the militia continue in the hands of the present committee.”\* How vain was all this bustle, when they knew the king was in the custody of those who would pay no regard to their demands. The houses indeed forbid the signing of the *engagement* by sound of trumpet; but such was the misguided zeal of the citizens, that they held assemblies, listed soldiers, and gave them orders to be ready on the first notice.

The parliament was now in great perplexity, considering the impossibility of contenting the presbyterians and the army at the same time; while the citizens, resolved to carry their point by one method or another, went up to Westminster July 26, with such a number of apprentices and young men, as terrified the houses by their tumultuous and insolent behavior; for they would scarce suffer the door to be shut; some thrust themselves into the house with their hats on, crying out, *vote, vote*; and when the *speaker* would have left the chair to put an end to the confusion, they obliged him to return, till the *militia* was settled to their mind, and the king voted to come to London.|| This (says Mr. *Baxter*) looked like a force upon the parliament; and indeed both houses were so terrified and pressed between the city presbyterians on one side, and the army on the other, that they adjourned immediately from *Monday* to *Friday*, in which interval the earl of *Manchester*, speaker of the house of lords, with eight peers, and the speaker of the house of commons, with about a hundred members,† withdrew privately from the city, and joined the army;—a surprising event in their favor! The *officers* received them with the utmost satisfaction and transport, paying them all imaginable honors, and assuring them, that they would re-establish them in their full power, or die in the attempt.† There must surely have

\* Rushworth, p. 637. Rapin, vol. ii. p. 533-4.

|| Rushworth, p. 642. Rapin, vol. ii. p. 534.

† Dr. Zach. Grey says there was but 59, but I don’t know his authority.

been some very pressing reasons for this conduct,\* otherwise so many zealous presbyterians, as were most of the members who quitted the parliament-house, would not have had recourse to the protection of the army. Lord *Clarendon* believes, that they apprehended the army designed to restore the king to all his rights at this time, and that they were willing to avoid his majesty's vengeance, by concurring with them in his restoration, which is not unlikely, if they could have brought him to their terms.

However, the presbyterian members that remained in London assembled on *Friday* according to adjournment, and having chosen a new speaker, voted that the king should come to London;—that the eleven impeached members should be restored;—that a committee of safety should join the city militia;—and that forces should be immediately raised under the command of *Waller*, *Massey*, and *Poyntz*; in all which they appeared so resolute, that no man could imagine but either that they had the king at their disposal, or intended a brave and valiant defence of the city.¶ The common-council gave orders for the trained bands to repair to the works, and for all capable of bearing arms to appear at the places of rendezvous.

\* *Rapin*, as well as *Mr. Neal*, expresses his surprise at this secession of these members of parliament; he supposes, that it proceeded from a disapprobation of the measures pursued by their brethren and the common-council of London; and from an apprehension, that they would be infallibly oppressed by the army. By joining the army they sought their security from the ruin which threatened their own party; and, says *Mr. Hume*, “paid their court in time to that authority, which began to predominate in the nation.” What *Whitlocke* reports concerning the reason which the earls of *Warwick*, *Manchester*, &c. assigned for their conduct, appears to have escaped the attention of these writers. He says, that they sent to the general to acquaint him, “that they had quitted the parliament, for that there was no free-setting for them, and they cast themselves into his protection.” *Memorials*, p. 265. *Dr. Grey*, in his *Appendix*, No. 72, has confirmed this account of the matter, by giving, at length, their letter to *Sir. Thomas Fairfax*, signed by the speaker of the house of lords and eight peers, and by the speaker and 58 of the commons. *Mr. Neal*, and since him *Mrs. Macaulay*, say an hundred commoners seceded. All, probably, did not sign the letter. *Dr. Grey* is rather severe here upon our author. *Ed.*

¶ *Rapin*, vol. ii. p. 399, 534. *Rushworth*, p. 737.



*Massey, Waller, and Poyntz*, were also busy in forming regiments and companies; and the committee of the militia were empowered to punish such as did not repair to their colors. At the same time they wrote to their brethren in Scotland, to return with their army immediately to their assistance; but alas! they were at too great a distance; however they published a declaration in the name of the kirk and whole kingdom, Aug. 13, wherein they engage, by a solemn oath, to establish the presbyterian government in England;—to redeem his majesty out of the hands of schismatics, and place him at the head of his parliament with honor;—to vindicate the honor of the eleven impeached members, and to settle the privileges of parliament against the overawing power of the army. A little after they declared against *toleration* and *liberty of conscience*, resolving to the last man to stand by the *covenant*, whatever the English parliament might submit to.

Pursuant to the order of the two houses, the general had removed his head-quarters above forty miles from the city, till, upon the representation of the members, who fled to them for protection from the outrageous violence of the city mob, they resolved to push their advantage, and bring the mutineers to justice; accordingly they resolved to march to London, and rendezvous the whole army on Hounslow-Heath, August 3, to the number of twenty thousand men, with a suitable train of artillery, accompanied with fourteen peers, and about one hundred members of the house of commons.† The citizens were no sooner informed of this, than their courage sunk at once, and, instead of defending the city they ordered the militia to retire from the lines, and sent their submission to the *general*, promising to open their passes, and give all assistance to the replacing of those members who had withdrawn to the army. Aug. 6, being appointed for this service, the mayor and aldermen met the general at Hyde-Park with a present of a gold cup, beseeching him to excuse what had been amiss; but his *excellency* refused the *present*, and having dismissed them with very little ceremony, conducted the members to their seats in parliament, who immediately voted all proceedings in their absence void, and gave thanks to the army for their safe conduct.||

† Rushworth, p. 745, 750.

|| Rushworth, p. 751, 756.



Next day the army marched through the city without any disorder, and constituted colonel *Titchburn* lieutenant of the Tower, contrary to the request of the lord-mayor and citizens; the militia was changed, and put into the hands of the old officers who had conducted it before; the fortifications and lines of circumvallation about the city were levelled, and sundry peers, who had been at the head of the late tumults, were impeached of high-treason, as the earl of *Suffolk*, *Middlesex*, *Lincoln*, lord *Willoughby* of *Parham*, *Hudson*, &c.; the lord-mayor, and some of the principal citizens, were sent to the Tower; and it was resolved to purge the house of all who had been active in the late unhappy riot; which put a full period to the presbyterian power for the present; and the army being quartered near the city all the next winter, there was a council of officers at their head-quarters at Putney, whose debates and resolutions had, no doubt, a very powerful influence upon the resolutions of the two houses.

The odium of this grand revolution, by which the army became masters of the city of London, and of the parliament itself, fell chiefly on the *presbyterians* themselves, whose intemperate zeal for *covenant* uniformity carried them to very impolitic excesses. The sermons of their ministers were filled with invective against the army while at a distance; in their public prayers they intreated the *Almighty* to incline the hearts of the Scots to return to their relief; and the conversation of their people was riotous and disorderly; however, lest the weight of this revolution should fall too heavily on the London ministers, § as the chief incendiaries of the people, they wisely prepared a vindication of themselves, and published it four days before the army entered the city; it was dated from Sion-college, August 2, 1647, and is to this purpose:

“We the ministers of London, whose names are subscribed, do profess in the presence of the Searcher of all hearts,

1. “That we have never done any thing purposely and

§ The assembly of divines also, Dr. Grey informs us, presented a petition for peace: which he has preserved, from the MSS. of Dr. Williams, No. 74, of his Appendix. *Ed.*

‘wittingly to engage the city against the army, or the army against the city, but have sincerely and faithfully endeavored to prevent it.

2. “That seeing both the parliament and city have declared the necessity of putting the city into a present posture of defence, yet protesting against any desires of a new war, and thereupon have called upon us to stir up the people to prepare for their defence : we accordingly have done, and shall do our duty therein, that the people may be encouraged to their own just and necessary preservation.

3. “But withal, we profess our abhorrence of the shedding any blood on either side ; and we humbly pray all whom it may concern, that they will be very careful in preventing it by a seasonable treaty.”

Signed by about twenty of the London ministers, and presented to a committee of both houses, sitting at Guildhall.

Let the reader now pause a little, and judge of the authors of this grand revolution, which brought the parliament under the power of the army, and how far the presbyterian ministers were concerned in it. Mr. *Baxter*, in a very angry stile, lays all the blame at the door of the *independents*. “A few dissenting members of the Westminster synod (says he) began all this, and carried it far on. Afterwards they increased, and others joined them, who, partly by stiffness, and partly by policy, increased our flames, and kept open our wounds, as if there had been none but they considerable in the world ; and having an army and *city-agents* fit to second them, effectually hindered all remedy, till they had dashed all into pieces as a broken glass. One would have thought, that if all their opinions had been certainly true, and their church-order good ; yet the interest of Christ and the souls of men, and of greater truths, should have been so regarded by the dividers in England, as that the safety of all these should have been preferred, and not all ruined, rather than their way should want its carnal arm and *liberty* ; and that they should not tear the government of Christ all to pieces, rather than it should want their *lace*.”† I am far from



clearing the *independents* from all manner of blame in their conduct; their principles might be too narrow and mistaken in some points, and their zeal for christian liberty betray them into some imprudencies. But on which side was the stiffness? on theirs who only desired a peaceable toleration; or, on theirs who were determined to make the whole nation stoop to presbyterian uniformity? Were not these the men who kept open the church's wounds? Had their discipline been ever so good, yet certainly they might have had some regard to men of piety and virtue, who had not equal discernment with themselves; could they not be content with being the established religion, and having most of the livings of the kingdom divided among them, without trampling on the religious rights of mankind, by enforcing an absolute uniformity, which can never be maintained but on the ruins of a good conscience, and therefore is no means of promoting the true interest of Christ and salvation of souls? Mr. *Baxter* had milder sentiments in his latter days; and it is for the honor of the present generation of those commonly called *presbyterians*, that they have not only abandoned and renounced these servile doctrines,\* but have appeared in defence of the civil and re-

\* "To know whether the presbyterians have indeed *abandoned* their 'persecuting principles,' says bishop Warburton, "we should see them 'under an establishment. It is no wonder, that a *tolerated* sect should 'espouse those principles of christian liberty, which support their toleration. Now the Scottish presbyterians are *established*, and we find 'they still adhere to the old principle of *intolerance*.'" His lordship's reflections are too well founded in fact and experience. The recent prosecution of Dr. M'Gill for his valuable and guarded "Essay on 'the Death of Christ,'" may be adduced as a new proof of the intolerance of Scotch presbyterianism. But, strictly speaking, presbyterianism hath no existence amongst the English dissenters; who form so many independent societies. The name is, indeed, applied to one part of them; but they are invested with no power but what arises from the management of a fund for the assistance of small congregations. This they are known to direct on a truly liberal plan, without demanding subscription to any articles, or making any inquisition into the sentiments, on doctrine or discipline, of the ministers or churches to whom they grant exhibitions. And the writings of those who have been called *presbyterians*, the bishop could not but know, were most able vindications of the principles of liberty. In this cause did a Browne, an Evans, a Grosvenor, a Chandler, and many others, argue and plead. His lordship's argument, I would add, applies to an extent to which it is conceived he did not wish to have it carried; it more



ligious liberties of mankind, upon the most solid and generous principles.

His majesty was obliged all this time to attend the removes of the army: from New-market he came to Royston, June 24; from thence to Hatfield; from thence to Windsor, and two days after to Caversham, where he had the pleasure of conversing with his children. But when the city of London threatened a new war, his majesty was removed to a greater distance; about the middle of July he was at Maidenhead; and towards the end of the month at *Latimer's* in Buckinghamshire; when the army had got possession of the city they brought his majesty back to Oatlands, Aug. 14, and two days after to Hampton-court, where he appeared in state and splendor about three months, being attended by the proper officers of the court, and a vast resort of people both from city and country.

While the king was with the army, lieutenant-general *Cromwell* and *Ireton* took sundry opportunities to confer with his majesty privately about his restoration. They offered to set him upon the throne with the freedom of his conscience upon point of episcopacy, or lose their lives in the attempt, if he would consent to their proposals to the parliament, and bestow some particular preferments on themselves and a few of their friends, wishing that God would deal with them and their families according to their sincerity.\* Nay, they engaged to indemnify his *whole party*, if they would be quiet.† *Sir J. Berkley*, the king's agent, intreated his majesty in the most importunate and submissive manner, considering the state of his affairs, to accept of the said proposals, but the king treated them with a haughty reserve, and said if they intended an accommo-

than implies that toleration and an establishment are incompatible: that when once the *tolerated* are possessed of power they of course become *intolerant*. If so, an establishment cannot exist without being inimical to the interests of truth and the rights of conscience. Could a severer reflection be passed on establishments, than is here conveyed by an episcopal pen? *Ed.*

\* Dr. Grey fills, here, four pages with authorities to prove the insincerity and hypocrisy of *Cromwell* and *Ireton*: by which nothing that Mr. Neal had advanced above is invalidated. *Ed.*

† *Dugdale's Troubles of England*, p. 264.

dation they would not impose such conditions upon him. Sir J. Berkley said, he should suspect they designed to abuse him if they had demanded less ; and that a crown so near lost was never recovered on easier terms. But Mr. Ashburnham, who came with instructions from France, fell in with the king's humour, and encouraged him to stand his ground, relying upon an ill-judged maxim which his majesty had imbibed, and which his best friends could not make him depart from, viz. that *it was in his power to turn the scale, and that the party must sink which he abandoned.*† This sealed his ruin, and made him play between both, till neither would trust him. When the parliament brought their propositions, he put them in mind of the offers of the army ; and when the proposals of the latter were tendered in the most respectful manner, he put on a frown, and said, " I shall see you glad, ere long, to accept more equal terms ; you cannot be without me ; you will fall to ruin if I do not sustain you ; no man shall suffer for my sake ; the church must be established according to law—" The officers were confounded at this language. " Sir (says Sir J. Berkley) you speak as if you had some secret strength, which, since you have concealed from me, I wish you had concealed from these men." After divers conferences of this kind to no purpose, Cromwell told him plainly, *Sir, we perceive you have a design to be arbitrator between the parliament and us ; but we now design to be the same between your majesty and the parliament.* This fluctuating temper (says bishop Kennet) was the king's ruin, which he repented of when it was too late. Mr. Whitlocke says, the king's bishops persuaded him against what he was inclined to in his own judgment, and thereby ruined him and themselves.

When the officers found they could make no impression on the king, and had discovered his secret correspondence with the queen, they withdrew from court, which raised suspicions in his majesty's mind of a secret design against his life, and put him on attempting to escape out of their hands. It is very certain that Cromwell withdrew his *parole of honor* for the king's safety, and sent him word a

† Rushworth, p. 807, 810.

\* History of the Stuarts, p. 330.

|| Memorials, p. 271.



few days before he left Hampton-court, that he would not be answerable any longer for what might befall him, which was owing to a discovery he had made of the king's insincerity in treating with him. Mr. *Coke* says, there was a report at that time, and he is confident that in time it will appear, that in the army's treaty with the king, *Cromwell* had made a private article of advantage for himself,\* but his majesty not allowing himself to conclude any thing without the queen, wrote her word, "that if he consented 'to those *proposals* it would be easier to take off *Cromwell* 'afterwards, than now he was at the head of the army."† Which letter *Cromwell* intercepted. Bishop *Kennet* says, "that it was reported, that *Cromwell* was to have ten thousand pounds and a garter; and that the bargain had certainly taken effect, if the king had not made an apology 'to the queen, and sufficiently implied that he did it by 'constraint, and that when he was at liberty, and in power, he should think himself discharged from the obligation. This letter was sewed up in the skirt of a saddle 'to be sent to France; but *Cromwell* and *Ireton*, having 'information of it, went to an inn in Holborn, and seized 'the letter——." Dr. *Lane* of the commons frequently declared, "that he had seen this original letter, that he knew 'it to be the king's own hand, and that the contents were 'as above." Another writer says, that the letter mentioned his majesty's being courted by the Scots presbyterians as well as the army, and that they that bid fairest for him should have him.‡ Upon the discovery of this letter, *Cromwell* went to Mr. *Ashburnham* who attended the king's person, and told him, that *he was now satisfied the king could not be trusted; that he had no confidence in the army, but was jealous of them and their officers — that he had treaties with the city presbyterians, and with the Scots commissioners, to engage the nation again in blood, and that therefore he could not be answerable if any thing fell out contrary to expectation.* Sir *Richard Baker*, Mr. *Coke*, and others, are of opinion, that till this time *Cromwell* and *Ireton* were hearty and zealous for restoring the king, and opposing the levellers who began to arise in the army, but

\* Detect. p. 323.

† Complete History, p. 270.

‡ History of the Stuarts, p. 390.



that after this discovery they forsook him, as did the rest of the chief officers, who seldom came to court; the *guards* also changed their language, and said that *God had hardened the king's heart, and blinded his eyes.*

Under these circumstances the insatuated king left Hampton-court, Nov. 11, at night, and having crossed the Thames, took horse in company with Sir *J. Berkley*, Mr. *Leg*, and Mr. *Ashburnham*, and next morning arrived at Titchfield-house, where he stayed while *Leg* went over to the Isle of Wight, to treat with colonel *Hammond* the governor, about the safety of his person, who, without any treaty, brought the governor to the house where his majesty was, upon which the king said, *he was betrayed*; as indeed he was in all his affairs.\* *Hammond* carried him over to the Isle Nov. 13, and after some time shut him up in Carisbrook castle, where his majesty remained almost a year with one or two servants only, having little conversation with the world, and time sufficient to contemplate on the uncertainty of all human affairs, and on the miserable circumstances to which Divine Providence had suffered his own imprudent conduct to reduce him.

Let us now attend to the projects of the several parties for restoring the public tranquillity: as soon as the army had got possession of the city of London, they made the following proposals to the two houses. With regard to religion; "that an act be passed to take away all coercive power and jurisdiction of bishops extending to any civil penalties upon any.—That there be a repeal of all acts, or clauses of acts, enjoining the use of the common-prayer, and imposing any penalty for neglect thereof, and for not coming to church, or for meeting elsewhere.—That the taking of the covenant be not enforced upon any, but that all orders and ordinances tending to that purpose be repealed." With regard to the state, "—that the militia and great officers be disposed of by parliament for ten years, and after that the houses to nominate three, out of which the king to choose one.—That there be acts of indemnity and revocation of all declarations against the proceedings of parliament.—That the present unequal and troublesome and contentious way of ministers'

\* Rushworth, p. 920, 960.

‘ maintenance by *tithes* be considered of, and some remedy  
 ‘ applied.—That none may be obliged to accuse them-  
 ‘ selves or relations in criminal causes ; and no man’s life  
 ‘ taken away under two witnesses.—That consideration  
 ‘ be had of all statutes, laws, or customs of corporations,  
 ‘ imposing any oaths tending to molest or ensnare religious  
 ‘ and peaceable people merely for non-conformity in reli-  
 ‘ gion.—That the arbitrary power given to committees,  
 ‘ and deputy-lieutenants, be recalled.”\*

After several debates upon these *proposals* with regard to religion, the lords agreed October 13, “ that the king be  
 ‘ desired to give his consent to the settling the presbyterial  
 ‘ government for three years, with a provision, that no per-  
 ‘ son shall be liable to any penalty for non-conformity to  
 ‘ the said government, or form of divine service ; but such  
 ‘ persons shall have liberty to meet for the service and wor-  
 ‘ ship of God, and for exercise of religious duties and or-  
 ‘ dinances in any fit and convenient places, so as nothing be  
 ‘ done by them to the disturbance of the peace of the king-  
 ‘ dom. Provided this shall not be construed to extend to a  
 ‘ toleration of the popish religion, nor to exempt popish  
 ‘ recusants from any penalties imposed upon them for the  
 ‘ exercise of the same. Nor shall it extend to the tolera-  
 ‘ tion of any thing contrary to the principles of the chris-  
 ‘ tian religion, contained in the *apostles creed*, as it is ex-  
 ‘ pounded in the fifteen first articles of the church of En-  
 ‘ gland, as they had been cleared and vindicated by the as-  
 ‘ sembly of divines now sitting at Westminster ; nor of  
 ‘ any thing contrary to such points of faith, for the ignor-  
 ‘ ance whereof men are to be kept from the sacrament, ac-  
 ‘ cording to the ordinance of Oct. 20, 1645. Nor shall it  
 ‘ extend to excuse any persons from the penalties of 1  
 ‘ *Elizabeth, cap. 2.* for not coming to hear the word of God  
 ‘ on the Lord’s day in any parish church or chapel, unless  
 ‘ he can shew a reasonable cause for his absence, or that  
 ‘ he was present to hear the word of God preached or ex-  
 ‘ pounded elsewhere.”||

The *commons* likewise agreed, “ That presbytery be es-  
 ‘ tablished till the end of the next sessions of parliament, or

\* Rushworth, p. 736. Rapin, vol. ii. p. 538, 9.

|| Rushworth, p. 840.



‘till the second sessions; that the tenths, and all other maintenance belonging to any church or chapel, shall be only for the use of them who can submit to the presbyterial government, and none other. The liberty of conscience shall extend to none who shall print, preach, or publish, contrary to the first fifteen articles of the thirty-nine, *except the eighth, relating to the three creeds*. That nothing contained in this ordinance shall extend to popish recusants.”§ Oct. 14, they agreed further, “That such tender consciences should be freed, by way of indulgence, from the penalty of the statute for the presbyterian government, for their non-conformity, who do meet in some other congregation for the worship of God on the Lord’s day, and do nothing against the laws and peace of the kingdom, and that none others shall be freed from the penalty of the statute of 1 *Eliz. cap. 2*.” October 16, the commons voted, “That the indulgence granted to tender consciences should not extend to tolerate the use of *common prayer* in any part of the kingdom.”\* Which was against the sense of the army, who were for a general indulgence, as appears from the declaration of the agitators, dated Nov. 4, in which they say, that “matters of religion, and the ways of God’s worship, are not at all intrusted by us to any human power, because therein we cannot omit, or exceed a tittle of what our consciences dictate to be the mind of God, without wilful sin; nevertheless, the public way of instructing the nation, so it be not compulsive, is left to their discretion.”|| Here was a fair plan of accommodation, but no ordinance was brought into the house to confirm these resolutions. November 8, both houses agreed to the addition of some new propositions. As,

1. “For the due observation of the Lord’s day.
2. “Against innovations in religion.
3. “A new oath for the conviction of papists.
4. “For the education of the children of papists in the protestant religion.
5. “Against pluralities.”

The proposals of the *presbyterians* were the same with those of Newcastle already mentioned; but whereas the

§ Rushworth, p. 841.

\* Ibid. p. 842.

|| Ibid. p. 460.



king declined to accept them without a personal treaty, they determined in the house of commons, to reduce them into four bills, which if his majesty refused to sign as preliminaries, they resolved to settle the nation without him; but before they were perfected, the king withdrew from Hampton-court and was secured in the Isle of Wight, where the commissioners from the two houses waited on him, and tendered him the following bills, December 24, the *first* was for settling the militia, as has been related; the *second*, for calling in all his majesty's declarations and proclamations against the two houses, and those that adhered to them; the *third*, to disqualify those peers from sitting in the house, that had been created after the great seal had been conveyed to Oxford; the *fourth*, to empower the two houses to adjourn, as they should think fit. In matters of religion they insisted peremptorily on the establishment of the *presbyterian* church-government upon the ruins of the *prelatical*; upon the extirpation of all *sectaries*; and upon *covenant uniformity* in both nations, as will appear more fully hereafter. But the king, instead of signing the preliminaries, insisted strenuously on a personal treaty, which it was hardly reasonable for him to expect, when he had so lately attempted to escape out of their hands, and now refused to yield any thing in a way of condescension.

It had not been possible to unriddle the mystery of this escape, if it had not appeared soon after, that the king was at that very time throwing himself into the hands of the Scots, who being offended with the parliament (now under the influence of the army) for not acting in concert with them in the present treaty, according to their *covenant*, determined on a *separate* negociation for themselves; and accordingly, by the mediation of some of their own nation, they concluded a secret treaty with the king, which was begun before his majesty left Hampton-Court, but not signed till the 27th of December following, three days after his majesty's refusal of the parliament's four bills.—‘This alliance (says lord *Clarendon*\*) was most scandalous, and derogatory to the honor and interest of the English nation, and would have been abominated if known

\* Vol. iii. p. 403.

‘and understood by all men.” But *Rapin* thinks it not so criminal on the part of the Scots as his lordship represents, since they yielded to the establishment of their beloved presbytery in England only for three years; however, it laid the foundation of the king’s ruin with the army.

In the preamble his majesty gives “a favorable testimony to the *solemn league and covenant*, and to the good intentions of those that entered into it.” In the treaty “he obliges himself to confirm the *covenant* by act of parliament as soon as he can do it with honor and freedom in both kingdoms; with a proviso, that none that were unwilling should be obliged to take it for the future. He engages further, to confirm by act of parliament the presbyterial government in England, the directory for public worship, and the assembly of divines for three years only, with liberty for himself and his household to use that form of divine service they had formerly practised; and that during the three years there should be a consultation with the assembly of divines, to whom twenty of the king’s nomination should be added, and some from the church of Scotland, to determine what form of church government should be established afterwards—.”\* Then follows a scourge for the army; “*Than an effectual course should be taken to suppress the opinions of the anti-trinitarians, arians, socinians, arminians, independents, brownists, antinomians, anabaptists, separatists, seekers; and in general, all blasphemy, heresy, schism, and other doctrines contrary to the known principles of christianity, whether concerning faith, worship, conversation, or the power of godliness, or which may be destructive to order and government, or to the peace of the church and kingdom.*”

In return for these concessions “the Scots engaged to raise an army to deliver his majesty out of captivity, to assert his right to the militia, the great seal, the negative voice in parliament; and in a word, to restore him to his throne with honor and freedom;” which occasioned a second civil war the next year.

As soon as his majesty arrived in the Isle of Wight from Hampton-Court, he sent a letter to the speaker of the

\* *Rapin*, vol. ii. p. 543-4.



house of lords, to be communicated to the commons, with the following concessions on his part, very inconsistent with the treaty last mentioned.—“ For the abolishing arch-bishops, bishops, &c. his majesty clearly professeth, that he cannot consent to it either as a *christian* or a *king* ; for the *first* he avows, that he is satisfied in his judgment, that this order was placed in the church by the apostles themselves, and ever since their time has continued in all christian churches throughout the world till this last century ; and in this church, in all times of change and reformation, it has been upheld, by the wisdom of his ancestors, as the great preserver of doctrine, discipline, and order in the service of God. As a *king*, at his coronation he not only swore to maintain this order, but his majesty and his predecessors, in their confirmations of the *great charter*, have inseparably woven the rights of the church into the liberty of the subject ; and yet he is willing that it be provided, that particular bishops perform the several duties of their callings both by their personal residence, and frequent preaching ; that in their personal exercise no act of jurisdiction, or ordination, be without consent of their presbyters ; and will consent, that in all things their powers be so limited, that they may not be grievous to the tender consciences of others ; his majesty sees no reason why he alone, and those of his judgment, should be pressed to a violation of theirs.

“ Nor can his majesty consent to the alienation of church-lands, because it cannot be denied to be the sin of *sacrilege* ; as also, that it subverts the intentions of so many pious donors, who have laid a heavy curse upon all such profane violations. And besides, his majesty believes it to be a prejudice to the public good ; many of his subjects having the benefit of renewing leases at much easier rates, than if those possessions were in the hands of private men ; not omitting the discouragement it will be to learning and industry, when such eminent rewards shall be taken away ; yet considering the present distempers concerning church-discipline, and that the presbyterian government is now in practice, his majesty to avoid confusion as much as may be, and for the satisfaction of his



‘two houses, is content, that the same government be legally permitted to stand in the same condition it now is for three years, provided that his majesty, and those of his judgment, or any others who cannot in conscience submit thereunto, be not obliged to comply with the presbyterial government, but have free practice of our own profession, without any prejudice thereby: and that free consultation be had with the divines at Westminster, twenty of his majesty’s nomination being added to them, to consider how to settle the church afterwards, with full liberty to all those who shall differ upon conscientious grounds from that settlement; always provided, that nothing aforesaid be understood to tolerate those of the popish profession, or exempt them from penal laws, or to tolerate the public profession of atheism, or blasphemy, contrary to the doctrine of the apostles, the *nicene* and *athanasian* creeds; they having been received by, and had in reverence of all christian churches, and more especially the church of England since the reformation.”† This was inserted to cajole the army, and was entirely reversed by the Scots treaty five weeks after.

From these inconsistent views of the contending parties, we may easily discern the precarious situation of the public tranquillity especially as there was a general distrust on all sides, and each party resolved to carry their point without any abatements: The king was held by ties of conscience and honor (as he said) to preserve *episcopacy*; the Scots and English presbyterians, though divided at present, thought themselves equally bound to stand by their *solemn league and covenant*; and the army was under a *solemn engagement* to agree with neither without a *toleration*. If the king could have submitted to *covenant uniformity*, he might have been restored by the presbyterians; or, if either king or parliament would have declared heartily for a toleration, they might have established themselves by the assistance of the military power; but his majesty seems to have been playing an unsteady, if not a double game. The reader will judge of the equity of the several proposals, and of the prudential conduct of each party, from the respective circumstances in which they stood; the king

† Rushworth, p. 880. Rapin, vol. ii. p. 541.

was a prisoner ; the parliament in possession of the whole legislative authority ; but the *sword* was in the hands of the army, who were determined not to sheath it till they had secured to themselves that liberty for which they had been fighting : This they had in vain solicited from the king, and were next determined to try their interest with the parliament.

The houses being informed of the king's design to make his escape out of the Isle of Wight, ordered the governor to put away his servants, and confine him a close prisoner in the castle, so that no person might be admitted to speak to him without leave. His majesty having also declared, when he rejected the parliament's four bills, that nothing which could befall him could ever prevail with him to consent to any one act, till the conditions of the whole peace were concluded, they began to despair of an accommodation. In this juncture the officers of the army sent a message to the houses, assuring them that they would live and die with them in settling the nation either with or without the king, and leave all transactions of state for the future to them alone. §

However, after the seclusion of the eleven impeached members, and the quartering of the *army* in the neighborhood of the city, the parliament, either from interest or fear, had a great regard to the opinion of those officers who were members of the house. Upon a motion that no more addresses be made to the king from the parliament, nor any messages received from him, IRETON and CROMWELL opened themselves very freely : *Ireton* said, "subjection to the king was but in lieu of protection from him, which being denied, we may settle the kingdom without him. Let us then shew our resolution (says he,) and not desert those valiant men who have engaged for us beyond all possibility of retreat." *Cromwell* said, "That the parliament should govern by their own power, and not teach the people any longer to expect safety from an obstinate man, whose heart God had hardened.—The army will defend you against all opposition. Teach them not, by neglecting your's and the kingdom's safety, in which their own is involved, to think themselves betrayed, and left hereafter



‘to the rage and malice of an irreconcilable enemy, whom they have subdued for your sake, lest despair teach them to seek their safety by some other means than adhering to you; [here he put his hand to his sword] and how destructive such a resolution will be (says he) I tremble to think, and leave you to judge!’ The question being then put, it was carried by a majority of fifty voices; *yea’s* one hundred forty-one, *no’s* ninety-one. Jan. 17, the lords concurred with the commons in their votes of *non-addresses*. Till this very time, says lord *Clarendon*, no man mentioned the king’s person without duty and respect. But now a new scene was opened, and some of their officers at their meetings at Windsor, began to talk of deposing the king, or prosecuting him as a criminal, of which his majesty was advertised by *Watson* the quartermaster, but it made no impression upon him.

The two houses having concurred in their votes for non-addresses, the army agreed to stand by the parliament in settling the nation without the king; and that the people might be satisfied with the reasons of their proceedings, a remonstrance was published by order of parliament Feb. 15, in which they recapitulate all the errors of his majesty’s government; his insincerity in the several treaties of peace he had entered into with them; and that though they had applied to him seven times with propositions, in all which the Scots had concurred except the last, yet he had never complied with any; from whence they conclude, either that the nation must continue under the present distractions, or they must settle it without him. In the posthumous works of lord *Clarendon*,\* there is a large reply to this *remonstrance*, in which his lordship endeavors to vindicate the king, and throw all the blame upon the parliament; but though there were ill instruments on both sides, and there might be no real occasion to rip up the misdemeanors of the king’s government from the beginning, yet it is hardly possible for the art of man to justify his majesty’s conduct before the war, or to vindicate his prudence and sincerity in his treaties afterwards; the design of commencing a new war being evidently at this time concerted and agreed upon, with his majesty’s allowance,

\* Vol. iii. p. 92, 93.



in pursuance of the Scots treaty, while he was amusing both the parliament and army with overtures of peace.

Among the ordinances that passed this year for reformation of the church, none occasioned so much noise and disturbance as that of June 8, for abolishing the observation of *saints days*, and the three grand festivals of *Christmas*, *Easter*, and *Whitsuntide*; the ordinance says, ‘Forasmuch as the *feast of the nativity of Christ*, *Easter*, *Whitsuntide*, and *other festivals*, commonly called *holy-days*, have been heretofore superstitiously used and observed; be it ordained, that the said feasts, and all other festivals, commonly called *holy-days*, be no longer observed as festivals; any law, statute, custom, constitution, or canon to the contrary, in any wise notwithstanding.\*

“And that there may be a convenient time allotted for scholars, apprentices, and other servants, for their recreation, be it ordained, that all scholars, apprentices, and other servants, shall, with the leave of their masters, have such convenient reasonable recreation, and relaxation from labor, every second *Tuesday* in the month throughout the year, as formerly they used to have upon the *festivals*; and masters of scholars, apprentices, and servants, shall grant to them respectively such time for their recreation, on the aforesaid second *Tuesday* in the month, as they may conveniently spare from their extraordinary necessary service and occasions; and if any difference arise between masters and servants concerning the liberty hereby granted, the next justice of peace shall reconcile it.”

The king was highly displeased with this ordinance; and therefore while the affair was under debate he put this query to the parliament commissioners at Holmby-House, April 23, 1647. I desire to be resolved of this question, *why the new reformers discharge the keeping of Easter*? My reason for this query is, “I conceive the celebration of this feast was instituted by the same authority which changed the Jewish sabbath into the Lord’s-day or Sunday, for it will not be found in scripture where *Saturday* is discharged to be kept, or turned into the

\* Scobel, p. 128.

‘*Sunday*; wherefore it must be the churches authority that  
 ‘changed the one and instituted the other; therefore my  
 ‘opinion is, that those who will not keep *this feast* may as  
 ‘well return to the observation of *Saturday*, and refuse the  
 ‘weekly *Sunday*. When any body can shew me that  
 ‘herein I am in an error, I shall not be ashamed to confess  
 ‘and amend it; till when you know my mind.† *U. R.*”

Sir *James Harington* presented his majesty with an answer to this query, in which he denies, that the change of the sabbath was from the authority of the church, but derives it from the authority and example of our Savior and his apostles in the new testament; he admits, that if there was the like mention of the observation of *Easter*, it would be of divine or apostolical authority; but as the case stands, he apprehends with great reason, that the observation of the christian sabbath, and of *Easter*, stand upon a very different foot.

The changing the festival of *Christmas* into a *fast* last winter, was not so much taken notice of, because all parties were employed in acts of devotion; but when it returned this year there appeared a strong propensity in the people to observe it, the shops were generally shut, many presbyterian ministers preached; in some places the *common-prayer* was read, and one or two of the sequestered clergy getting into pulpits prayed publicly for the *bishops*; several of the citizens of London, who opened their shops, were abused; in some places there were riots and insurrections, especially in Canterbury, where the mayor, endeavoring to keep the peace, had his head broke by the populace, and was dragged about the streets; the mob broke in divers houses of the most religious in the town, broke their windows, abused their persons, and threw their goods into the streets, because they exposed them to sale on *Christmas-day*.\* At length their numbers being increased to above two thousand, they put themselves into a posture of defence against the magistrates, kept guard, stopt passes, examined passengers, and seized the magazine and arms in the town-hall, and were not dispersed without difficulty. The like disorders were at Ealing in Middlesex, and in sev-

† Relig. Car. p. 370.

\* Rushworth, p. 948.



eral other counties. The parliament was alarmed at these disorders, and therefore commanded all papists and delinquent clergymen to retire without the lines of communication, and punished some of the principal rioters as a terror to the rest, it being apparent that the king's party took advantage of the holy-days to try the temper of the people in favor of his release, for during the space of the following twelve years, wherein the festivals were laid aside, there was not the least tumult on account of the *holidays*, the observation of *Christmas* being left as a matter of indifference.

The war being thought to be at an end, many of the clergy who had followed the camp returned home, and endeavored to repossess themselves of their sequestered livings, to the prejudice of those whom the parliament had put into their places ; they petitioned the king while he was with the army, and in a state of honor and dignity, to take their poor distressed condition into his gracious consideration. His majesty recommended them to the *general*, at the very time when the difference between the parliament and army was subsisting, upon which they represented their grievances to him in a petition, shewing, that “ whereas for divers years they had been outed of their livings, contrary to the fundamental laws of the land, by the arbitrary power of *committees*, whose proceedings have usually been by no rule of law, but by their own wills ; most of them having been turned out for refusing the *covenant*, or adhering to the king, and the religion establised, and of those, divers never called to answer, and scarce one had articles proved by oath, or other legal process ; by which means *your petitioners* are reduced to extreme want and misery ; and whereas those who are put into our places labor to stir up the people to involve the kingdom in a new war, and are generally men ignorant and unable to instruct the people ; and many of them scandalous in their practices, if impartially examined, and divers of them hold three or four of the best benefices, whilst divers other churches are void, and without any constant preacher. And forasmuch as the main profit of our benefices consists in the harvest which is now at hand, which many of the present possessors, if they could receive, would presently be gone, whereby the burthen of the cure will lie upon



‘ your petitioners, having nothing to live upon the next year.  
‘ Your petitioners therefore pray, that your excellency would  
‘ make stay of the profits of the harvest, that those of us that  
‘ are charged with any legal scandal may come to a just  
‘ trial, and if we are found innocent may enjoy our rights,  
‘ according to the known laws of the land.”\*

By this bold petition, it is evident these gentlemen were encouraged to hope, that the army would carry their resentments so far as to unravel all they had been doing for five years; that they would not only renounce the *covenant*, but disclaim the proceedings of their *committees*, and even countenance the clergy’s adhering to the king; and no doubt, if his majesty had complied with the proposals of the army, he might have made good terms for them; for the *general* received them with respect, and having debated their address in council, proposed it to the parliament, that the estates of all sequestered persons, including the clergy, should remain in the hands of the tenants till a general peace. Upon which the old incumbents grew very troublesome, forbidding the parishioners to pay their tithes, and threatening the present possessors of their livings with legal prosecutions.

On the other hand the presbyterian clergy addressed the *general* Aug. 12, a few days after the parliament and army were united, with a complaint, “ that divers delinquent ministers, who had been put out of their livings, did now trouble and seek to turn *out* those ministers, whom the parliament had put in; and particularly, that Dr. *Layfield*, by a counterfeit warrant from the *general*, had endeavored to remove a minister from his benefice in *Surry*.” The general and his council declared their dislike of these proceedings, and promised to write to the parliament, that such offenders may be brought to punishment, which he did accordingly. The difference between the parliament and army being now in a manner compromised, which cut off the expectations of the clergy, Aug. 19, the lords and commons acquainted the general, that they would take care for the punishment of those delinquent ministers and others, by whose practices ministers put into livings by the parliament had been disquieted and turned out;

\* Sufferings of the Clergy, p. 145.

and on the 23d of the same month they passed an ordinance, setting forth “that whereas divers ministers in the ‘several counties had been displaced by authority of parliament, for notorious scandals and delinquency, and godly, learned, and orthodox ministers had been placed in ‘their room; and whereas the said scandalous and delinquent ministers by force, or otherwise, had entered upon ‘the churches, and gained possession of the tithes, &c. the ‘lords and commons did therefore ordain, that all sheriffs, ‘mayors, committees, &c. do forthwith apprehend such ‘ministers, and all such persons as have been aiding, and ‘abetting to them, and commit them to prison, there to remain, till those they had thus dispossessed, and molested, ‘should receive satisfaction for their damages; and that ‘the said sheriffs. &c. do restore those molested ministers ‘to the quiet possession of their respective places, and do ‘in case of need raise the trained bands to put this ordinance in execution; and do also take effectual course that the tithes, profits, &c. be for the future duly paid to those ministers put in by parliament, &c. And if any such disturbance should hereafter be given, the offender was to suffer for every such disturbance one month’s imprisonment.”

However, some small favor was shewn, about this time, to those *bishops* and others, who had lived peaceably, and been little more than spectators of the distracting miseries of their country; the committee was ordered to make payment of the eight hundred pounds *per year* granted to the bishop of *Durham*; the real estate of the pious bishop *Hall*, who had lately published his *hard measure*, was discharged; archbishop *Usher* had an allowance of four hundred pounds *per annum*, till he could be otherwise provided for; and was soon after allowed to be preacher at Lincoln’s-Inn, only upon taking the *negative oath*. But the bishops were not much considered in these donations. The commissioners of the *great seal* were ordered to fill up the vacant livings in the gift of the crown, without obliging the incumbents to take the *covenant*; but the new disturbances which arose in favor of the captive king, brought down new severities upon the episcopal clergy, before the end of the following year.\*

\* Rushworth, p. 834, 937, 948, 958.



## CHAP. IX.

*The Visitation of the University of OXFORD. State of Religion at the End of the Year 1647.*

SAD and deplorable was the condition of the university of Oxford when it fell into the hands of the parliament; the colleges and halls were gone to ruin, five of them perfectly deserted, and the rest in a very shattered condition. The public acts had been discontinued for some years, the schools were turned into magazines for the king's army, and the chambers filled with officers and soldiers, or let out to townsmen: there was little or no instruction for youth, nor hardly the face of an university; poverty, desolation, and plunder, the sad effects of war, were to be seen in every corner; the bursaries were emptied of the public money, the plate melted down for the king's service, and the colleges involved in debts which they were not able to satisfy; there were few heads of colleges or scholars remaining, except such as were strongly prejudiced against the parliament, having employed their wits, during the course of the war, in writing *weekly mercuries*, and satirical pamphlets, in which they aspersed the proceedings of the two houses, and treated their divines as the most infamous, ignorant, and hypocritical traitors, nor were their tempers in the least softened, though their lives and fortunes were in the hands of their adversaries. It was therefore thought necessary to put the education of youth into such hands as the parliament could confide in, a power being reserved for that purpose in the articles of surrender.

But before they proceeded to extremes, the two houses, about the beginning of September 1646, appointed seven of their most popular divines to repair to Oxford, with authority to preach in any pulpits of the university for six months, in order to soften the spirits of the people,\* and

\* Suff. Cler. p. 125.



give them a better opinion of their cause, viz. the reverend Mr. *Robert Harris*, of Hanwell, Oxfordshire; Mr. *Edward Reynolds*, afterwards bishop of Norwich; Mr. *Henry Wilkinson*, of Magdalen-college; Mr. *Francis Cheynel*, Mr. *Edward Corbet*, of Merton-college; Mr. *Henry Cornish*, of New-inn, and Mr. *Henry Langley*, of Pembroke-college; men of reputation and character,\* sober divines, and popular preachers, though *A. Wood*, the Oxford historian, is pleased to say, "Their sermons were 'the contempt and scorn of the university, because they 'were too long and had too little learning; because they 'prayed very coldly for the king, but were very earnest 'for a blessing upon the councils and arms of the parliament, and did not always conclude with the *Lord's prayer*; because they reflected on some of the heads of 'the university, calling them dumb dogs, having a form of 'religion without the power; and, because their manner of 'delivery was rather theatrical than serious; nevertheless, 'their auditories were crowded, though none of the heads 'of colleges, or senior scholars attended."

The ministers were very diligent in the discharge of their trust, preaching twice every Lord's-day; and that they might gain the affections of the people, set up a weekly conference every Thursday, in which they proposed to solve such objections as should be raised against their new *confession of faith and discipline*, and to answer any other important cases in divinity: the *question* or *case* was to be propounded the week before, that it might be well considered; a *moderator* also was appointed to keep order, who began and concluded with a short prayer, and the whole was conducted with decency and gravity.† But several of the scholars ridiculed their proceedings, and by way of contempt called their place of meeting, *the scruple shop*; however, it was frequented by great numbers of people,

\* Dr. Grey would impeach the truth of this eulogium, and refers to Anthony Wood to support his invidious reflections on these men. The names and characters of Mr. Robert Harris, Dr. Reynolds, Mr. F. Cheynel, and Mr. Corbet, will again come before the reader in Mr. Neal's next volume: and we would refer him to Dr. Calamy, or Mr. Palmer's *Nonconformist's Memorial*, for Biography. *Ed.*

† Suff. Cler. p. 125. Minist. Account, p. 5. Vol. Pamph. No. 282.

some of whom were prevailed with to renounce the *Oxford oath* ; and others to take the *solemn league and covenant*. They met with some little disturbance from one *Erbury*, a turbulent *Antinomian*, and chaplain in the garrison ; but upon the whole, when the ministers returned to London they declared, that the citizens shewed them a great deal of respect, although the university poured all the contempt upon them imaginable, so that they apprehended themselves to have the same lot as *Saint Paul* had at Athens, *Acts* xvii. 32, 34. *Some mocked them, others slighted them, but certain clave to them, and believed.\**

There being no prospect of reforming the university by these methods, the two houses resolved to proceed upon a *visitation*, which they apprehended they might undertake without the king, by virtue of the fourteenth article of their recapitulation, which says, “That the chancellor, masters and scholars of the university, and all heads, governors, masters, fellows, and scholars of the colleges, halls, bodies corporate, and societies of the said university, and the public professors, readers, and orators thereof, and all other persons belonging to the said university, shall and may, according to their statutes, charters, and customs, enjoy their ancient form of government, *subordinate to the immediate authority and power of parliament*, and that all the rights, privileges, franchises, lands, tenements, houses, rents, revenues, libraries, debts, goods and chattels, &c. belonging to the said university, shall be enjoyed by them respectively as aforesaid, free from sequestrations, fines, taxes, and all other molestations whatsoever, under color of any thing relating to the present war. *And if any removal shall be made by the parliament of any head, or other members of the university, that they shall enjoy their profits for six months after the surrendering of Oxon, and shall have convenient time allowed them for the removal of themselves and their goods ; provided that this shall not extend to retard any reformation there intended by the parliament, or give them any liberty to intermeddle with the government.†*” But the heads of colleges did not think themselves obliged by this capitulation, nor any thing contained in it, because they were not made parties, nor

\* Minist. Account, p. 52.

† Rushworth, p. 283.



called upon to give their separate consent to the articles, though they took advantage of every thing that was stipulated in their favor.\*

May 1, 1647, an *ordinance* past both houses for visiting the university, and nominating the following gentlemen, lawyers, and divines, for that service, *viz.*†

Sir Nath. Brent	William Draper of Lincoln's-
Sir William Cobb	Inn, <i>Esq.</i>
William Pryne, of Lincoln's-	Gabriel Beck, of Lincoln's-Inn,
Inn, <i>Esq.</i>	John Cartwright, <i>Esq.</i> [ <i>Esq.</i>
John Pulliston, of Lincoln's-Inn	Mr. William Tipping
Barth. Hall, of the Middle-Tem-	Mr. George Greenwood
ple, <i>Esq.</i>	Mr. John Packer
Tho. Knight, of Lincoln's-Inn,	Mr. William Cope
Samuel Dunch, <i>Esq.</i> [ <i>Esq.</i>	Mr. John Heling, of Gray's-Inn.
The Rev. Dr. John Wilkinson	The Rev. Mr. Francis Cheynell
Mr. Henry Wilkinson	Mr. John Wilkinson
Mr. Edw. Reynolds	Mr. John Mills
Mr. Rob. Harris	Mr. Christopher Rogers.
Mr. Edw. Corbet	

The ordinance empowers the visitors, or any five of them, 'To hear and determine all crimes, offences, abuses, and disorders, which by the laws and statutes, of this realm, or by the customs and statutes, rightly established, of that university, or by the several statutes of the respective colleges or halls, may lawfully be enquired of, heard, or determined, in the course and way of visitation of the university, or of the colleges, halls, masters, scholars, fellows, members, and officers, or any of them, respectively. They are more particularly to enquire by oath concerning those that neglect to take the *solemn league and covenant*, and the *negative oath*, being tendered to them by such as are authorized by parliament; and concerning those who oppose the execution of the ordinance of parliament, concerning the discipline and directory; and those who shall teach or write against any point of doctrine, the ignorance whereof doth exclude from the Lord's-Supper. They are likewise to enquire upon oath, concerning all such who have taken up arms against the parliament, or who have been assisting to the forces raised against the parlia-

\* Fuller's Appeal, p. 70.

† Scobel's Collect. Part I. p. 116. Suff. Cler. p. 126.



'ment. And they are to certify to a committee of the house  
'of lords and commons mentioned in the ordinance, what  
'masters, scholars, fellows, members, or officers, have com-  
'mitted any of the offences above-mentioned, and the qual-  
'ity and condition of the offenders, that such further pro-  
'ceedings may be had thereupon as the committee of lords  
'and commons shall think fit. The *visitors* are further em-  
'powered, to examine and consider all such oaths as are  
'enjoined by the statutes of the university, or of any of the  
'halls and colleges, as are not fit to be taken, and present  
'their opinion to the committee above-mentioned; provid-  
'ed always, that if any of the masters, scholars, fellows,  
'&c. shall find themselves grieved by any sentence given  
'by the visitors, it shall be lawful for them to appeal to  
'the committee of lords and commons, who are authorised  
'finally to hear and determine every such case brought be-  
'fore them."

Before the vistration could take place the vice-chancellor, Dr. *Fell*, summoned a convocation [June 1,] wherein it was agreed not to submit to the *parliament visitors*. A paper of reasons against the *covenant*,\* the *negative oath*, and the *directory*, drawn up chiefly by Dr. *Sanderson*, was also consented to, and ordered to be published to the world both in *Latin* and *English*, against the time the visitors were to come down, under the title of *Reasons of the present judgment of the university of Oxford, concerning the solemn league and covenant, the negative oath, and the ordinances concerning discipline and worship, approved by general consent in a full convocation, June 1, 1647*; an abstract of which I shall now set before the reader.†

*To the preface of the covenant* [transcribed under the year 1643.]

They declare, "We cannot say *the rage, power, and*

\* Dr. *Sanderson* methodised and put into form this paper or manifesto; and added what referred to reason and conscience. The law part was drawn up by Dr. *Zouch*, a civilian. But, on the whole, twenty delegates, by the appointment of the university, were concerned in this composition. Amongst whom were Dr. *Shelden*, afterwards archbishop of Canterbury, Dr. *Hammond*, Dr. *Sanderson*, Dr. *Morley*, afterwards bishop of Winchester. *Walton's Life of Sanderson*, 1678. p. 78, 79. *Ed.*

† *Bp. Sanderson's Life*, Appendix, p. 169.

‘*presumption of the enemies of God in the sense there intended*) *is increased*. Nor that we have consented to any *supplication or remonstrance to the purposes therein expressed*. We do not think the taking the *covenant to be a lawful and probable means to preserve ourselves and our religion from ruin*; nor do we believe it to be *agreeing to the commendable practice of these kingdoms, or the example of God’s people in other nations.*”

*To the covenant in general.*

“We are of opinion, that a *covenant* ought to be a *voluntary contract*, and not imposed. Now we cannot *voluntarily consent to this covenant without betraying our liberties, one of which is not to be obliged to take any oath but what is established by act of parliament*; and *without acknowledging in the imposers a greater power than has been challenged in former time, or can subsist with our former protestation*. But if the *covenant* were *not imposed, but only recommended, we apprehend the taking it to be inconsistent with our loyalty to the king, especially since he has by proclamation forbid it.*”

*Objections to the several articles of the covenant.*

*To the first Article.*

“We cannot swear to preserve the religion of *another kingdom, (Scotland)* whereof we have very little understanding, which, as far as we are acquainted with it, is *much worse than our own in worship, discipline, and government, and in doctrine not at all better*; wherein there *are some things so far tending to superstition and schism, that it seems reasonable to us that we should call upon them to reform, rather than we should be bound to preserve it entire.*

“Neither are we satisfied in the present reformation of religion in *our own kingdom, in doctrine, worship, and discipline*, because, (1.) It gives a manifest scandal to the *papist and separatist*, by giving up the cause for which the martyrs and bishops have contended since the reformation; by justifying the papists in their recusancy, who reproach us, by saying, we know not what religion we are of; nor where to stop, since we have left them; and,

‘that ours is a *parliamentary religion*. Besides, *this would be a tacit acknowledgment, that there has been something in the Church of England not agreeable to the word of God, and so justify the separation, and condemn all the penal laws that have been made to oblige people to conform.\** (2.) By the intended reformation we should wrong ourselves, by swearing to reform that which we have formerly by our subscriptions approved, and which we do still believe to be more agreeable to the word of God than that which by *this covenant* we must swear to preserve; and to which, by the laws still in being, every clerk, at his admission to a benefice, is bound to give his consent. (3.) Besides, we should be in danger of perjury, because it is contrary to our former protestation, which obliges us *to maintain the doctrine of the church of England*, which may take in the whole establishment; and it is contrary to the oath of *supremacy*, which gives the sole power to the king in matters ecclesiastical.”

OBJECTIONS to the second Article.

“We are very much grieved to see the prelacy of the church of England ranked with popery, superstition, heresy, schism, and profaneness, with an intimation, that it is contrary to sound doctrine, or the power of godliness.† Nor can we swear to the extirpation of it, because, (1.) We believe it to be of apostolical institution. Or, (2.) At least that episcopal aristocracy hath a fairer claim to a divine institution than any other form of church government. (3.) That episcopal government has continued in the church without interruption for fifteen hundred years, therefore to extirpate it would give advantage to the papists, who are wont to charge us with a contempt of antiquity, and love of novelty, and it would diminish the just authority due to the consent and practice of the catholic church. (4.) Besides, we cannot swear to the extirpating this government, because we have subscribed the thirty-nine articles, one of which says, the book containing the form of *consecration* has nothing in it contrary to the word of God. We have been ordained by bishops; we have petitioned the parliament for the

\* Bp. Sanderson's Life, Appendix, p. 179. † Ibid. p. 181.



‘continuance of them; and some of us hold our liveli-  
‘hoods by the titles of deans, deans and chapters, &c.  
‘(5.) We are not satisfied that the inconveniences of the  
‘*new government* will be less than the *old*, the house of  
‘commons having remonstrated [*Dec, 15, 1641,*] that it  
‘was far from their purpose to abolish this government,  
‘but only to regulate it, and that it was a sign of *malig-*  
‘*nancy*, to infuse into the people that they had any other  
‘meaning. *Lastly*, In respect of our obligation to his  
‘majesty, having acknowledged him to be supreme gover-  
‘nor in all causes ecclesiastical, we cannot endeavor to ex-  
‘tirpate this government without the royal assent, which  
‘we are so far from desiring, that *we are continually pray-*  
‘*ing, that the king may not be prevailed with to do an act*  
‘*so prejudicial to his conscience and honor, and which, by*  
‘*his coronation oath, he is bound to preserve.\** By the  
‘laws of the land there are sundry privileges and emolu-  
‘ments arising to the crown from the ecclesiastical estate,  
‘which are a considerable part of the revenue, which by  
‘the extirpation of prelacy will be cut off; whereas we  
‘are bound by the oath of allegiance to maintain the king’s  
‘honor and estate. And after all, the prelatical govern-  
‘ment is best suited to monarchy, insomuch that King  
‘*James* used to say, *No bishop, no king.*

#### *Objections to the third Article.*

“We are dissatisfied with the limitation of our loyalty  
‘in these words, *in the preservation and defence of the*  
‘*true religion, and liberties of the kingdom*; because no  
‘such limitation is to be found in the oath of allegiance,  
‘nor in the word of God, because it leaves the duty of the  
‘subject loose, and the safety of the king uncertain. The  
‘conscience of a papist, or sectary, may swallow an oath  
‘with such a limitation, but the conscience of a good pro-  
‘testant cannot but strain at it.†”

#### *To the fourth Article.*

They reply, “That the imposing the covenant in this  
‘article may lay a necessity upon the son to accuse the  
‘father, in case he be a *malignant*, which is contrary to  
‘religion, nature and humanity; or it may open a way for

\* Bp. Sanderson’s Life, Appendix, p. 197. † Ibid. p. 204.

‘ children that are sick of their fathers, to effect their unlawful intentions, by accusing them of malignancy; besides the subjecting ourselves to an arbitrary punishment, at the sole pleasure of such uncertain judges as may be deputed for that effect, is betraying the liberty of the subject.’\*†

*Objections to the fifth Article.*

“ We cannot acknowledge the happiness of such a peace as in the articles is mentioned, for no peace can be firm and well grounded, unless the respective authority, power, and liberty of king, parliament, and subject, be preserved full and entire, according to the known laws, and respective customs of the kingdom, before the beginning of these distractions.”†

*Objections to the sixth Article.*

They say, “ We are not satisfied, that the cause of our joining in covenant for the prosecution of the late war, was the cause of religion, liberty, and peace of the kingdom, or that the glory of God, and the honor of the king, was concerned in it. And if it was, we are not satisfied that it ought to be supported and carried on by such means as are destitute of all warrant from the word of God, or the laws of the realm.‡”

In conclusion, say they, “ Our hearts tremble to think that we should be required to pray, that other christian churches may be encouraged by our example to join in the like covenant to free themselves from the anti-christian yoke, for we do not know any anti-christian yoke we were under; nor do we yet see such good fruits of this covenant among ourselves, as to invite us to pray, that other churches should follow our example; it is as if we should pray, that the God of love and peace would take away all love and peace, and set the christian world in a combustion; that he would render the reformed religion odious to the world; that christian princes might be provoked to use more severity towards those of the reformed religion, if not to root it out of their dominions; for the yoke

\* Bp. Sanderson's Life, Appen. p. 203. † Ibid. p. 206. ‡ Ib. p. 207.

‘ of antichrist, if laid upon subjects by their lawful sovereigns, is to be thrown off by christian boldness in confessing the truth, and suffering for it, not by taking up arms, or violent resisting of the higher powers.”

After these remarks upon the several articles, they take notice,

(1.) Of the following seeming contradictions in the *covenant*, as, “ the preserving, and yet reforming one and the same reformed religion. The reforming church government according to the word of God, and yet extirpating that government which we apprehend agreeable to it. The extirpating heresy and schism, and yet dissolving that government in the church, the want of the due exercise of which has been the occasion of the growth of these evils. The preserving the liberties of the kingdom, and yet submitting to a *covenant* and *oath* not established by law.\*

(2.) They observe some dark and doubtful expressions which they do not well understand ; as, “ Who are the *common enemies* ? Which are the *best reformed churches* ? Who are *malignants* ? How far the *hindering reformation* may be extended, &c.†

(3.) By the use that has been made of the *covenant*, they apprehend “ the conduct of the parliament to be contrary to the meaning of it, for instead of reforming the worship and service of the church they have quite abolished it ; instead of reforming the discipline of the church, it is quite destroyed, or put upon such a foot as is not agreeable to the word of God, or the example of any church since the creation. Instead of extirpating heresy and profaneness, little or nothing has been done towards it, but only the extirpation of prelacy, and something else that looks so like sacrilege (say they) that we do not venture upon it. And as for the *preservation of the king’s honor and estate in defence of the true religion, and liberties of the kingdom*, though we apprehend all other things should be subordinate to it, yet by some bold speeches that have been made we are afraid nothing less is intended.”

\* Sanderson’s Life, Appendix, p. 211.

† Ibid. p. 213.



*Of the salvoes for taking the covenant.*

(1.) “It has been said, that *we may take it in our own sense*. But this we apprehend contrary to the nature and end of an oath; contrary to the end of speech; contrary to the design of the covenant, and contrary to the solemn profession at the conclusion of it, (*viz.*) *That we shall take it with a true intention to perform the same, as we shall answer it to the searcher of all hearts at the great day*. Besides, this would be *jesuitical*; it would be taking the name of God in vain; and it would strengthen the objection of those who say, there is no faith to be given to protestants.\*

(2.) “It has been said, we may take the covenant with these salvoes expressed, *so far as lawfully I may, so far as it is agreeable to the word of God, and the laws of the land, saving all oaths by me formerly taken, &c.* which is no better than vile hypocrisy; for by the same rule one might subscribe to the *council of Trent, or the Turkish alcoran*.

(3.) “It is said, that *we may take the covenant in our present circumstances, notwithstanding our allegiance to the king, because protection and subjection are relatives, and the king being unable to protect us any longer, we are free from subjection to him*. But we answer, that the king’s inability to perform *his* duty does not discharge the subject from his, as long as he is able; much less when the *non-protection* on the king’s part, is not from want of will, but of power.

(4.) “It is said, that *the parliament being the supreme judicatory of the kingdom, wheresoever the king is in person he is always present with his parliament in power; as what is done in courts of justice is not done without the king, but by him, though not personally present*. But we deny the king to be always present with his parliament in *power*, for then his actual royal assent would not be necessary to the making of laws, but only a virtual assent included in the votes of both houses: the houses need not then desire the royal assent, nor can the king be supposed to have a *negative voice*. Besides, the statute which provides, that the king’s assent to any bill

\* Sanderson’s Life, Appendix, p. 221, &c.

‘ signified under his great seal shall be as valid as if he  
 ‘ were personally present, imports, that the *king’s power*  
 ‘ is not present with his two houses, otherwise than it ap-  
 ‘ pears in his *person*, or under his *great seal*. As to the  
 ‘ analogy of other courts we conceive it of no consequence ;  
 ‘ in other courts the judges are the king’s servants, and do  
 ‘ all in his name, and by his authority ; they sit there not  
 ‘ by any proper interest of their own, but in right of the  
 ‘ king, whose judges they are ; but the parliament is the  
 ‘ king’s council, and have their several proper rights and  
 ‘ interests distinct from the king’s, by virtue of which they  
 ‘ are distinct orders and conservators of their several in-  
 ‘ terests. Besides, the judges of other courts are bounded  
 ‘ by the laws in being, and therefore the king’s personal  
 ‘ presence is not necessary ; but the case is quite different  
 ‘ in making new laws, for the making of new laws is the  
 ‘ exercise of a *legislative* rather than a *judicial power* ;  
 ‘ now, no act of legislative power can be valid, unless it  
 ‘ be confirmed by such person or persons as the sovereign-  
 ‘ ty of that community resideth in. Upon the whole, since  
 ‘ all *judicial power*, is radically in the king, who is there-  
 ‘ fore called the *fountain of justice*, it seems to us, that  
 ‘ neither the judges in inferior courts, nor the lords and  
 ‘ commons assembled in parliament, may exercise any oth-  
 ‘ er power over the subjects of this realm, than such as by  
 ‘ their respective patents and writs issued from the king,  
 ‘ or by the established laws of the land, formerly assented  
 ‘ to by the kings of this realm, does appear to be derived  
 ‘ from them ; by which writs, patents, and laws, it does  
 ‘ not appear that the two houses of parliament have any  
 ‘ power without the king, to order, command, or transact ;  
 ‘ but only with him to treat, consult, and advise, concern-  
 ‘ ing the great affairs of the kingdom.”

*Concerning the Negative Oath,*

They say, “ We cannot take it without giving up our  
 ‘ liberties, without abusing our natural allegiance, and  
 ‘ without diminution of his Majesty’s just power and  
 ‘ greatness.\*”

*Concerning the Discipline and Directory.*

“ We are not satisfied to submit to the ordinance for

\* Sanderson’s Life, Appendix, p. 243.

‘ establishing the *directory*, because it has not the royal assent, and yet abrogates acts of parliament made by the joint consent of king, lords and commons, especially one, which annexes the whole power of ordering all ecclesiastical matters for ever to the imperial crown of this realm ; now we are not satisfied that a less power can have a just right to abrogate a greater.

“ If under the title of *discipline* be comprehended the government of the church also, we declare, we cannot consent to the eradication of a government of such reverend antiquity, which has from time to time been confirmed by the laws of the kingdom, and which the kings at their successive coronations have sworn to preserve. If the word *discipline* be distinguished from *government*, as in the first article of the *covenant*, yet are we not satisfied to place so much power in the hands of persons (many of whom may be of mean quality) for the keeping back thousands of well-meaning christians from the blessed sacrament, when Saint *Paul*, in a church abounding with sundry errors and corruptions in faith and manners, satisfies himself with a general declaration of the danger of unworthy communicating, and enjoins every particular person a *self-examination*, without empowering either ministers or lay-elders to exclude any from the communion upon their examination.

“ As to the *directory* itself, we cannot, without regret of conscience, and during the continuance of the present laws, consent to the taking away the *book of common-prayer*, which we have subscribed, and solemnly promised to use no other ; which we believe contains in it nothing but what is justly defensible ; and which we think ourselves able to justify against all papists and sectaries. Besides, we look upon the statute enjoining the use of the *common prayer* to be still in force, and will always remain so, till it shall be repealed by the same good and full authority by which it was made ; that is, by the free consent of king, lords and commons.\*”

By comparing these reasons with those of the parliament divines for taking the *covenant*, the reader will be capable of judging how far they are conclusive. Many of them

\* Bp. Sanderson’s Life Appendix, p, 244.



are unquestionably good, and had the constitution remained entire, and the laws had their free and ordinary course, as in times of peace, most of them would have been conclusive ; but how far the necessity of the war, and the right of self-defence, will vindicate the extraordinary proceedings of parliament, I shall not take upon me to determine for others. I am no advocate for the particulars of the *covenant* any more than for the high and arbitrary principles of *government*, contained in the *university's reasons*. The *consciences* of men are not under the direction of their *wills*, but of their *judgments*, and therefore ought not to be constrained by *oaths*, *protestations*, or *covenants*, to attempt those things in matters of religion for which their *own hearts* must condemn them. Religion and civil government stand upon a distinct foundation, and are designed for very different ends ; the magistrate may demand security for men's peaceable submission to the civil government, but ought not to force them to be active against the light of their consciences in matters of religion. The *university's reasons* are not built upon these principles ; for those gentlemen were as much for the coercive power of the magistrate in cases of conscience as the puritans ; and whereas they say, *the allegiance of the subject, and the protection of the king, are not relatives ; and that the king's inability to discharge his duty does not absolve the subject from his*, I shall only observe, that upon these principles the crown can never be forfeited ; a coronation oath is of very little significance ; nor may a nation submit to a conqueror, even when they can resist no longer. Inability alone in the prince, I grant, may not in all cases absolve us from our allegiance ; but tyranny, oppression, and open attempts to subvert the whole constitution and laws of the country, certainly may : upon what other ground can we justify the late revolution, and the present happy establishment of the protestant succession ? When the Oxford divines at the period of the revolution had taken the oath of allegiance to King *James II.* and the corporation oath, which says, *it is not lawful to resist, or take up arms against the king upon any pretence whatsoever ;* what could absolve them from these engagements, or justify their joining the *Prince of ORANGE* with a foreign force against

a king upon the throne? However, the stand now made by the university was a bold and adventurous attempt, for which they received the applause of the Oxford parliament in the year 1665, when it was resolved, “that the thanks of the house of commons be returned to the chancellor, masters and scholars, of the university of Oxford, for their bold opposition to the rebellious visitors; for refusing to submit to their *league and covenant*; and lastly, for the illustrious performance they printed, entitled, *the judgment of the university*, &c. in which they have learnedly maintained the king’s cause.” This was the fashionable doctrine of king CHARLES the second’s reign, when the laws were suspended and infringed, and arbitrary power in the prince rose to such a height as in the next reign issued in a revolution of government. The university of Oxford did all they could to countenance the triumphs of the prerogative; for in the year 1663 they passed a *decree* in full convocation, affirming the necessity of passive-obedience and non-resistance in the strongest terms; but how soon were the tables turned! when within five years these very gentlemen thought fit to enter into an association to adhere to the prince of ORANGE against the king upon the throne, and have since had the mortification to see that same decree burnt by the hands of the common hangman.

To return to the visitation, May 15, a citation was issued in the names of ten of the visitors then in London, to the proctors, and heads of houses, or their vice-principals, requiring them, and all the officers, scholars, &c. to appear in the convocation-house, on Friday June 4, between the hours of nine and eleven in the morning, and to bring with them a list of the several names of those who were absent, and of the colleges to which they belonged. At the time appointed the reverend Mr. Harris, Mr. Reynolds, Mr. Rogers, Mr. Henry Wilkinson, Mr. Cheynel, Mr. John Wilkinson, Mr. Dunce, and Mr. Draper, &c. opened the visitation with prayers and a sermon at St. Mary’s church, from whence they proceeded to the convocation-house, where the vice-chancellor [Dr. Fell] and a few of the scholars, had been waiting a considerable time; but perceiving the visitors were like to outstay the precise hour of summons, he ordered the sexton to set the clock exactly with

the sun, and as soon as it struck eleven he dismissed the scholars, marching away with the *beadles* before him; the visitors met them in their return at the *præscholium*, where the passage being narrow, the *beadle* cried out, *Make way for Mr. vice-chancellor*, which the visitors did. And the vice-chancellor having moved his hat, as he passed by said, *How do ye, gentlemen, it is past eleven o'clock*. But the visitors went forward, and having consulted about an hour upon the vice-chancellor's behavior, resolved to adjourn till *Michaelmas*, and return to London, in order to obtain further powers from the parliament. In the mean time Dr. *Fell* summoned a *committee of the heads of the several colleges*, who came to the following resolutions :

1. That no man should appear before the visitors unless the summons had five names.

2. That no one should appear upon an *holy day*.

3. That he should demand by what authority he was summoned; and, if denied an answer, should presently depart.

4. That if they declared their authority, he should answer with a *salvis juribus regni, academix & collegii*, &c.

5. That he should demand his accusation in writing, as also time to put in his answer, and should return it in writing, and no otherwise.

*Lastly*, That he should utterly refuse to answer on oath, because that would be to accuse himself, and would plainly revive the oath *ex officio*.

Such was the stout behavior of these few academics, 'who (according to Dr. *Walker*) poured upon the visitors 'all manner of contempt and scorn, though they knew their 'very lives and fortunes were at their disposal. The university (says he) held out a siege of more than a year and 'half; the convocation-house proved a citadel, and each 'single college a fort not easy to be reduced;''\* a clear evidence of the humanity of the visitors, and an unanswerable demonstration of the necessity of the parliament's acting with greater vigor.

The two houses having resolved to support their visitors, and enable them to go through their work, passed an ordinance August 26, empowering them "to administer the 'covenant, and the *negative oath*; to demand the perusal

\* *Sufferings of the Clergy*, p. 122, 123, 128, &c.



‘of the *statutes, registers, accompts, &c.* and of all other  
‘papers of the university, and of the respective colleges and  
‘halls; and to seize and detain in custody any person,  
‘who after a personal citation refused to appear, and pro-  
‘duce their books and papers after a second citation; a ju-  
‘ry was also to be impannelled, of members of the univer-  
‘sity, above the age of twenty-one, to enquire by oath on  
‘the articles contained in the ordinance of visitation;”§  
and a new commission was drawn up by Mr. Attorney-  
general *St. John*, with the great seal affixed to it (Septem-  
ber 27,) authorising the persons above-named, to visit the  
university without any further warrant; the commission  
began in the usual form, *Charles, by the grace of God, &c.*  
*to our trusty and well-beloved Sir Nath. Brent, &c. Know*  
*ye, that we intending the regulation and reformation of*  
*our university of Oxford, &c.* which was a very strange stile,  
considering the king was never consulted about the *visita-*  
*tion*, much less gave any consent; but the houses affected  
this form, from a mistaken supposition, that the king was  
always present with his parliament in his legislative capac-  
ity; though it served no other purpose than giving the adver-  
sary an opportunity to expose their proceedings, and charge  
them with assuming and acting under a *forged* authority.

Furnished with these new *powers*, the visitors returned  
to Oxford the latter end of September, the mayor, sheriffs,  
and other magistrates, being commanded to aid and assist  
them as there should be occasion. On *Michaelmas-day* a  
paper was fixed to the door of University church, giving no-  
tice, that the visitation would now proceed *de die in diem*.  
Next day a *citation* was issued to all the heads of houses,  
requiring them to bring in their statutes, registers, accompts,  
and all their public writings, to the warden’s lodgings at  
Merton-college. The *vice-chancellor* was ordered to ap-  
pear at the same time, to answer to such questions as should  
be demanded of him, and to send by the hands of the per-  
sons who served those orders, all the books and acts be-  
longing to the university. The *proctors* were likewise en-  
joined to bring in their books, keys, and other public things  
in their custody. But it is not enough to say (says the Ox-  
ford antiquary) that *every one of these orders were diso-*

§ Sufferings of the Clergy, p. 122. \* Wood’s Antiq. Oxon, p. 388.

*beyed ; they were also despised and contemned.* However, the vice-chancellor and heads of colleges condescended to appear at the second summons, October 6, when, instead of bringing their books and papers, they demanded to know by *what authority they were summoned ?* upon which the visitors produced their commission under the *broad seal*, at the same time serving them with a third citation, to appear four days after with their books and papers, or with their reasons in writing why they refused so to do. Next day they sent for the keys of the *convocation-house* and *school*, and for the *beadles staves*, but they were denied. The day following, the *proctors* appeared, and delivered a protestation, attested by a public notary, in the name of the vice-chancellor, delegates, and all the scholars, to this purpose, that “they could not own any visitor but the *king*, ‘and that having sworn to maintain his right, they could ‘not, without perjury, submit themselves to this visitation, ‘wherewith they desire them to acquaint the parliament.”§ Hereupon Dr. *Fell* the vice-chancellor, the very same day, was deprived of his vice-chancellorship, and public notice was given to the proctors, and other officers of the university, not to obey him any longer under that character ; but the doctor, without regard to his deprivation, or to the prorogation of the term, which the visitors had adjourned from the 10th to the 15th instant, proceeding on the 11th to hold a congregation, and open the term as usual, was taken into custody, and some time after, by order of parliament brought to London ; immediately upon which, Dr. *Potter*, president of Trinity-college, ordered the *beadles* with their staves to attend him as *pro-vice-chancellor*. Nov. 2d and 4th, the several heads of colleges then present appeared before the visitors, but *without their statute books and papers*, and being called in severally, were asked in their turns, Whether they approved of the *judicium universitatis* ; or the reasons of the university above-mentioned ? Whether they owned the power of the visitors ? Or whether they approved of the answer of the proctors in the name of the whole university ?\* And refusing to give a direct answer, were served with a citation to appear before the committee for the reformation of the university at Westmin-

ster the 11th instant, which they did accordingly; and having owned their approbation of the answer of the *proctors* in the name of the university, they tendered a paper to the *committee* in the name of all who had been cited, setting forth, "That what they had done was not out of obstinacy, but from conscience; and praying that in an affair of so much consequence they might be allowed time to advise with council." Their request being readily granted, two gentlemen of the long robe of their own nomination, viz. Mr. *Hale* and Mr. *Chute*, were appointed their council. The day of hearing was December 9; the position they offered to maintain was, that it was one of the *privileges of the university to be subject ONLY to a royal visitation*; the council for the university made a learned argument upon this head; but, as Mr. *Collier* observes, this question had been debated before the king in council in the year 1637, when archbishop *Laud* claimed a right of visiting the two universities *jure metropolitico*.† It was then admitted, that the king might visit when he pleased; yet after a full hearing, his majesty, with the advice of his council, declared and adjudged the right of visiting both universities, as universities, to belong to the archbishop and metropolitan church of Canterbury, by themselves or commissaries, and that the universities should from time to time be obedient thereunto. Which determination of his majesty, the archbishop moved might be drawn up by council learned in the law, and put under the *broad seal*, to prevent disputes for the future. And the same was accordingly done; the university therefore lost their question in the committee. The council for the visitors were further of opinion, that the *kingly power was always virtually present with his great council of parliament* and that therefore they might visit; but supposing this to be a mistake, they affirmed that the parliament had an undoubted right to reform the university *by the articles of capitulation*, in which they had expressly reserved this power to themselves. After a full hearing on both sides, the committee voted, that *the answer of the several heads of houses, and of others of the university, was derogatory to the authority of parliament*.

† Ecclesiastical History, p. 766.



The Oxford divines, not satisfied with this determination, appealed soon after to the public, in a letter to the learned Mr. *Selden* representative for the university, entitled *The case of the university of Oxford*; or the sad dilemma that all the members thereof are put to, to be perjured or destroyed.\* The letter says, “that the only question proposed by the visitors to every single person in the university is, *Whether he will submit to the power of the parliament in this visitation?* To which they reply, that unless they have the personal consent of the king, they cannot submit to any visitation without danger of perjury, as appears by the words of the oath, which are, *You shall swear to observe all the statutes, liberties, privileges, and customs of the university*; to which the scholar answers, *I swear*. Now it being one of our privileges to be visited by none but the king, or by the archbishop of *Canterbury*; the archbishop being dead, it follows we can be visited by none but the king; to submit therefore to another visitation, must be a breach of our liberties, and consequently downright perjury.—They urged further, the statutes of their several colleges, which bind them to certain rules in their electing of proctors, in the calling and meeting of convocations, in the choice of several officers in case of a vacancy, all which, instead of being referred to the members of the university, is now done by the arbitrary power of the visitors. Nothing (say they) can be alledged in answer to this, but the pretended sovereign power of the two houses to make and abolish laws, which we absolutely disbelieve. Upon the whole, they appeal to *any divine*, whether they ought to submit to the visitation as long as they believe their oaths to be in full force, and are confident, that the two houses cannot dispense with them? And consequently whether they ought to be turned out of their freeholds on this account?”

The committee at London having waited till the end of the month of December, to see if any of the heads of colleges would submit, voted Dr. *Fell* out of his deanery of Christ church for contumacy;|| and passed the same sen-

\* *Sufferings of the Clergy*, p. 130. Vol. Pamp. No. 34.

|| *Sufferings of the Clergy*, p. 131.

tence upon *Dr. Oliver*, president of Magdalen-college

*Dr. Potter*,———Trinity

*Dr. Bayley*, president of St. John's

*Dr. Radcliffe*, principal of Brazen-Nose

*Dr. Gardner*,

*Dr. Nes*,

*Dr. Morley*,

} Canons of Christ-church.

When these resolutions were sent to Oxford, the proper officers refused to publish them, and when they were pasted upon the walls of the colleges, they were torn down, and trampled under foot; upon which the *pro-vice-chancellor*, and the two proctors, were ordered into custody; but they absconded, and *Dr. Oliver* assumed the office of *pro-vice-chancellor*. The parliament, provoked at this usage, passed an ordinance Jan. 22, 1647-8, constituting the earl of *Pembroke* chancellor of Oxford, and March 8, they ordered him to repair thither in person, to support the visitors, and place the several persons whom the committee had chosen, in the respective chairs of those they had ejected.†

April 11, the chancellor made his public entrance into the city, attended with a great number of clergy, and gentlemen of the country, and about one hundred horse out of Oxford itself; the mayor welcomed him at his entrance into the city with a congratulatory speech; and when he came to his lodgings, *Mr. Button*, one of the new proctors, made a speech to him in Latin, but not one of the *heads of colleges* came near him; the *insignia* of the university were not to be found, and the scholars treated the *chancellor* and his retinue with all that rudeness they had been taught to express towards all who adhered to the parliament.

Next morning the *earl*, attended with a guard of soldiers, went to Christ-church, and having in vain desired *Mrs. Fell* the dean's wife, to quit the lodgings peaceably, he commanded the soldiers to break open the doors, and carry her out in a chair into the middle of the quadrangle; \* he then put the new-elected dean *Mr. Reynolds*, afterwards bishop of *Norwich*, into possession; from thence his lordship, with the visitors, went to the hall, and having got the *buttery-book*, struck out *Dr. Fell's* name, and

† Whitlooke, p. 290.

\* Sufferings of the Clergy, p. 123.

inserted that of Mr. *Reynold's*; the like they did by Dr. *Hammond*, sub-dean, and public orator; by Dr. *Gardner*, Dr. *Rayne*, Dr. *Iles*, and Dr. *Morley*,\* placing in their stead Mr. *Corbet*, who was made public orator; Mr. *Rogers*, Mr. *Mills*, Mr. *Cornish*, Mr. *Henry Wilkinson*, sen. and Mr. *Langley*; Dr. *Sanderson* being spared, because he was out of town when the last summons was issued.

In the afternoon they held a convocation, which was opened with an elegant Latin oration, pronounced by Mr. *Corbet* their new orator.† When the *chancellor* had taken the chair in the convocation-house, he declared Mr. *Reynolds* vice-chancellor, to whom an oath was administered that he would observe the statutes and privileges of the university, subject to the authority of parliament. Mr. *Button* and Mr. *Cross* were declared proctors, and all three returned their thanks to the chancellor in Latin speeches. On this occasion degrees were conferred upon divers learned men. Mr. *Chambers*, Mr. *Callicott*, and Mr. *Harris*, were made doctors of divinity; Mr. *Palmer* doctor of physic; Mr. *J. Wilkins*, [afterwards bishop] Mr. *Langley*, Mr. *Cornish*, and Mr. *Cheynell*, batchelors of divinity; the young earl of *Carnarvon*, the chancellors's two youngest sons, and several other gentlemen, masters of arts.||

Next morning, April 13, the chancellor and visitors, with a guard of musqueteers, went to *Magdalen-college*, and having broke open the doors of the president's lodgings, [Dr. *Oliver*] who was out of the way, they gave Dr. *Wilkinson* possession. In the afternoon they went to *All-Souls*, where Dr. *Sheldon* the warden appearing, and refus-

\* Dr. Grey, on the authority of bishop Sanderson's biographer and Mr. Wood, says that Dr. Morley was not turned out. But Dr. Richardson says, that being deprived of all his ecclesiastical benefices in 1648, he withdrew from the kingdom first to the Hague and then to Antwerp. *De Præsulibus Angliæ Commentarius*, p. 244. Dr. Grey appears to have mistaken the passage in Sanderson's life, which relates only the steps that a friend *would have taken* to secure Dr. Morley's continuance in the university, and concludes with his memorable and generous reply, which shews that he *declined* availing himself of his friend's kindness, saying; "that when all the rest of the college were turned out, except Dr. Wall, he should take it to be if not a sin, yet a shame to be left alive with him only." *Ed.*

† Rushworth, p. 1064.      || *Sufferings of the Clergy*, p. 133, 134.



ing to submit, returned to his lodgings, and locked the doors ; which being broke open, the doctor was taken into custody for contempt, and Dr. *Palmer* put in his place ; from thence they went to Trinity-college, and having broke open the lodgings, Dr. *Harris* was put into possession in the room of Dr. *Potter*. In like manner Dr. *Cheyne* had possession given him of St. *John's* in the room of Dr. *Bayly* ; Mr. *Wilkins* was appointed president of Wadham college in the room of Dr. *Pit* ; and Mr. *Greenwood* was put into possession of Brazen-nose college in the room of Dr. *Radcliffe*, allowing those they displaced a month's time to remove their effects. But some of the students of Christ's-church having got the *buttery-book*, impudently cut out the names of those whom the *visitors* had inserted ; so that they were forced to return the next day, and write over again the names of their new dean and canons. § The heads of colleges being thus fixed in their several stations, the chancellor took leave of the university, and departed for London ; and having reported his conduct April 21, received the thanks of the two houses.

But Dr. *Wilkinson*, sen. and Mr. *Cheyne*, who returned with the chancellor, having represented to the parliament, that the fellows, scholars, and under-officers, still refused to submit to their orders, it was resolved, “ that the ‘ visitors should cite all the officers, fellows, and scholars, ‘ before them, and that such as refused to appear, or upon ‘ appearance did not submit, should be suspended from ‘ their places, and their names returned to the committee, ‘ who were authorized to expel them the university ; and ‘ the *new heads* (on signification of such sentence from the ‘ committee) in conjunction with the visitors, were empowered to put others in their places. They resolved further, that the *bursars* should make no dividend of money ‘ till they had orders from the committee ; and that the ‘ tenants should pay their rents to none but the *heads* appointed by the authority of parliament.”\* But the *bursars* absconded, and were not to be found.

By virtue of these orders the visitors cited the fellows, scholars of houses, gentlemen commoners, and servitors, to appear before them at several times ; the only question de-

§ Sufferings of the Clergy, p. 134.

\* Ibid. p. 134.

manded of them was, *Will you submit to the power of the parliament in this visitation?* To which they were to give their answer in writing, and according to it were confirmed or displaced. Great numbers were absent from the university, and did not appear; others who disowned the power of the parliament at first, afterwards submitted, but the main body stood it out to the last; Dr. *Walker* says, that one hundred and eighty withdrew; § that of about six hundred seventy-six who appeared, five hundred forty-eight refused at first to own the authority of the visitation, but that afterwards many submitted and made their peace.\* In another place he supposes *one-fourth* submitted; and makes the whole number of fellows and scholars deprived three hundred and seventy-five; and then by a list of new elections in some following years, reduces them to three hundred fifty-six; but considering that some may have been omitted, he guesses the whole to be about four hundred. The Oxford historian Mr. *Wood* says, the number of those that refused to submit was about three hundred thirty-four, but that they were not presently expelled; for though the visitors were obliged to return their names to the committee, and were empowered to expel them, yet they deferred the execution of their power, in hopes that time might bring them to a compliance; which it is very likely it did, because it appears by the register, that in the eight succeeding years, *i. e.* between the years 1648 and 1656, there were no more than three hundred ninety-six new elections, which, allowing for deaths and removals, must infer the *deprivations* at this time could not be very considerable; however, had their numbers been much greater than they really were, the parliament were obliged, in their own defence, to dispossess them.

The few scholars that remained in the university treated the visitors with insufferable rudeness; scurrilous and invective satires, equal if not superior in raillery and ill language to *Martin-Mar-Prelate*, and the rest of the *brownistical* pamphlets in the reign of Queen *Elizabeth*, were dispersed in the most public places of the city every week; as *Mercurius Academicus*; *Pegasus*, or the *Flying Horse*

§ Life of Mr. Phil. Henry, p. 12.

\* Sufferings of the Clergy, part i. p. 135; and part ii. p. 138, 139.



from *Oxon* ; *Pegasus* taught to dance the tune of *Lachrymæ* ; *News from Pembroke and Montgomery, or Oxford Manches-tered*. *The Owl at Athens* ; or the *Entrance of the Earl of Pembroke into Oxford April 11*. *The Oxford Tragi-Comedy*, in heroic Latin verse. *Lord have mercy upon us* ; which is the inscription put upon houses that have the plague ; and many others ; which the visitors took no further notice of, than to forbid the booksellers to print or sell the like for the future.\* If the puritans had published such pamphlets against the exorbitances of the high-commission court in the late times, the authors or publishers must have lost their ears. as the *brownists* did their lives towards the latter end of queen *Elizabeth* ; and surely the university might have evinced their loyalty without offering such unmannerly provocations to gentlemen, who were disposed to behave towards them with all gentleness and moderation.

The visitors being informed that an insurrection was designed among the scholars in favor of the king, and in concert with the loyalists in other parts of the kingdom, acquainted the commanding officers of the garrison, who gave immediate orders to search the colleges for arms ; and on the 26th of May, 1648, the visitors ordered all the members of the university to deliver a peremptory answer in writing within seven days, *Whether they would submit to the authority of the parliament in this visitation or no* ? And that none should depart the university without leave from the *pro-vice-chancellor*. The day following both houses of parliament passed an order, “ that for as much ‘ as many doctors, and other members of the university, ‘ notwithstanding the example that had been made of some ‘ of them, did still persist in their contempt of the authority ‘ of parliament, which might be of dangerous consequence ; ‘ therefore the committee for reforming the university should ‘ have power to send for them under the custody of a guard, ‘ and commit them to prison.” When this order came to Oxford, the visitors declared, that whosoever should not plainly, and without reserve, declare his submission to the visitation, should be deemed as flatly denying its authority, and be taken into custody ; and that whosoever laid claim to any place in the university, should within fifteen days

\* *Sufferings of the Clergy*, p. 135.



declare his submission or be deprived ; accordingly, at the expiration of the time, such as did not appear were deprived of their fellowships, and expelled the university. But still the scholars would not remove, being too stubborn to be evicted by votes at London, or papers and *programma's* at Oxford. The visitors therefore, after having waited above six months, were obliged to proceed to the last extremity ; and July 5, 1649, ordered a serjeant, attended with some files of musqueteers, to publish by beat of drum before the gates of the several colleges, that “ if any of those who had been expelled by the visitors, should presume to continue any longer in the university, they should be taken into custody, and be made prisoners by the government.” This not answering the proposed end, the Oxford historian adds, that four days after they published a further order by beat of drum before the gate of every college, “ that if any one who had been expelled, did presume to tarry in the town, or was taken within five miles of it, he should be deemed as a spy, and punished with death.” And to enforce this order, general *Fairfax*, who was then in the field, gave public notice, that he would proceed accordingly with such as did not depart in four days, unless they obtained leave from the vice-chancellor and visitors to continue longer. At length their courage cooled, and the young gentlemen were prevailed on to retire. Thus the university of Oxford was cleared of the royalists, and the visitors at liberty to fill up their vacancies in the best manner they could ; in all which one cannot tell which most to admire the unparalleled patience and forbearance of a victorious parliament for almost two years, or the stubborn perverseness and provoking behavior of a few academics, against a power that could have battered their colleges about their ears, and buried them in their ruins in a few days.

About ten of the old heads of colleges and professors of sciences, submitted to the visitors, and kept their places, and about nineteen or twenty were expelled. Those who submitted were,

Dr. Langbain, <i>provost of Queen's</i>	} College
Dr. Hood, <i>rector of Lincoln</i>	

Dr. Saunders, <i>provost of Oriel</i>	} College
Dr. Hakewell, <i>rector of Exeter</i>	
Sir Nath. Brent, <i>warden of Merton</i>	
Dr. Zouch, <i>principal of Alban-Hall</i>	
Dr. Lawrence, <i>master of Baliol</i>	
Dr. Pocock, <i>Arabic professor,</i>	
Dr. Clayton, <i>anatomy professor,</i>	
Mr. Philips, <i>music professor.</i>	

The following characters of these gentlemen, with those of their predecessors and successors, I have taken for the most part from writers not to be suspected of partiality in favor of the puritans.

Dr. *Gerard Langbain*, provost of Queen's college, was a great ornament to his college; he was elected keeper of the archives or records of the university, being in general esteem for his great learning and honesty. He was an excellent linguist, an able philosopher and divine, a good common lawyer, a public-spirited man, a lover of learning and learned men, beloved of archbishop *Usher*, *Selden*, and the great *Goliaths* of literature. He was also an excellent antiquary, indefatigable in his studies, and of immense undertakings. He died Feb. 10, 1657-8, and was buried in the inner chapel of Queen's college.\*

Dr. *Paul Hood*, rector of Lincoln college, had been many years governor of this house, and continued in it through all changes till his death; he was vice-chancellor of the university in the year 1660, when he conformed to the established church, and died in the year 1668.†

Dr. *John Saunders*, provost of Oriel college, disowned the authority of the visitors at first, but afterwards complied; for as Dr. *Walker* observes, there was no other provost till after his death, which was in the year 1652.‡

Dr. *George Hakewell*, rector of Exeter college, had been chaplain to prince *Charles* and archdeacon of *Surry*; upon the promotion of Dr. *Prideaux* to the see of *Worcester*, he was chosen rector of this college, but resided little there, retiring during the war to his rectory of *Heanton* in

\* Wood's *Athen.* vol. ii. p. 140.      † Wood's *Fasti*, p. 127.

‡ Walker, p. 131.

Devon, where he led a recluse life, and died in April 1649. He was (according to Dr. *Walker*) a great divine, a very good philosopher, and a noted preacher.†

Sir *Nathaniel Brent*, warden of Merton-college, was probationer fellow in the year 1594, and proctor of the university in 1607, he afterwards travelled into several parts of the learned world, and underwent dangerous adventures in Italy to procure the History of the Council of Trent, which he translated into English, and therefore, says Mr. *Wood*,|| deserves an honorable mention. By the favor of archbishop *Abbot* he was made commissary of the diocese of Canterbury, and vicar-general to the archbishop, being doctor of laws, and at length judge of the prerogative. In 1629, he was knighted at Woodstock, and at the commencement of the civil war took part with the parliament, for which reason, he was ejected his wardenship of this college, but restored again when it came into the parliament's hands in 1646. He was one of the visitors of the university, and esteemed a very learned and judicious civilian. He resigned his wardenship in the year 1650, and died at London in 1652, after he had lived seventy-nine years.

*Richard Zouch*, L. L. D. principal of Alban-Hall, was of noble birth, and served in parliament for the borough of Hythe in Kent. He was chancellor of the diocese of Oxon, principal of St. Alban-hall, in 1625, and at length judge of the high court of admiralty; he was very able and eminent in his own profession, a subtle logician, an expert historian, and for the knowledge and practice of the civil law the chief person of his time. As his birth was noble (says Mr. *Wood*\*) so was his behavior and discourse; and as he was personable and handsome, so naturally sweet, pleasing and affable; he kept his principalship and professorship till his death, which happened March 4, 1660-1.

Dr. *Thomas Lawrence*, master of Baliol college, and *margaret professor of divinity*, had been chaplain to King *Charles I.* and prebendary of Litchfield, and by the interest of archbishop *Laud* preferred to the mastership of this

† Walker, p. 114.

|| Athen. Oxon. vol. ii. p. 92.

\* Athen. Oxon. vol. ii. p. 166.



college in 1637. He submitted to the authority of the visitors, and had a certificate under their hands, dated Aug. 3, 1648, wherein they attest, *that he had engaged to observe the directory in all ecclesiastical administrations, to preach practical divinity to the people, and to forbear preaching any of those opinions that the reformed church had condemned.*|| Dr. Walker says, he resigned all his preferments in the university in the year 1650, but does not say upon what occasion; only that he grew careless, and did much degenerate in his life and manners; that he died in the year 1657, but that if he had lived three years longer, he would notwithstanding have been consecrated an Irish bishop.†

The *professors of sciences* who submitted to the visitors, and were continued, were,

Dr. *Edward Pocock*, professor of the Hebrew and Arabic languages; one of the most learned men of his age, and justly celebrated at home and abroad for his great skill in the oriental languages, and for many works that he published. He was afterwards ejected from his canonry of Christ-church for refusing the engagement 1651,\* but was suffered to enjoy his professorship of Arabic and Hebrew; he conformed in the year 1660, and lived in great reputation till the year 1691.§

*Thomas Clayton*, M. D. king's professor of anatomy; which professorship he resigned to Dr. *William Petty*, in Jan. 1650. He was made warden of Merton-college upon the resignation of Dr. *Reynolds*, March 26, 1661, and the next day was knighted by the interest of his brother-in-law Sir *Charles Cotterel*.

Mr. *Arthur Philips*, professor of music, of whom I have met with no account.

|| Athen. Oxon. vol. ii. p. 136.

† Sufferings of the Clergy, p. 100.

\* He was very near being ejected from his living of Childrey for "ignorance and insufficiency;" but Dr. Owen, the learned independent, interested himself in his behalf, and prevented his ejection. When he was in the East, into which he made two voyages, the Mufti of Aleppo laid his hand upon his head, and said; "this young man speaks and understands Arabic as well as the Mufti of Aleppo." He was the first Laudian professor of Arabic. Granger's History of England, vol. iii. p. 276. 8vo. Ed.

§ Athen. Oxon. p. 868.

The heads of colleges ejected by the visitors, with their successors, may be seen in the following table.

<i>Heads of colleges turned out.</i>	<i>Colleges.</i>	<i>Succeeded by</i>
Dr. Fell, vice-chancellor, from	Deanry of Christ Church	{ Dr. Reynolds, afterwards bishop of Norwich
Dr. Pit, warden of	Wadham college	{ Dr. J. Wilkins, afterwards bishop of Chester
Dr. Walker	University college	Dr. Joshua Hoyle
Dr. Radcliffe	Brazen-Nose col.	Dr. D. Greenwood
Dr. Sheldon	All Souls college	Dr. Palmer, M.D.
Dr. Newlin	Corp. Christi coll.	Dr. Ed. Staunton
Dr. Bayly	St. John's coll.	Dr. Cheynel
Dr. Oliver	Magdalen coll.	Dr. Jn. Wilkinson
Dr. Han. Potter	Trinity coll.	Dr. Robert Harris
Dr. Mansell	Jesus coll.	Dr. Mic. Roberts
{ Mr. Wightwick, } B. D.	Pembroke coll.	Dr. H. Langley
Dr. Stringer, } Prof. Gr. Lang. }	New coll.	{ Mr. Geo. Marshall Mr. Harmar, Prof. Gr. Lang.
<i>Professors of Sciences turned out.</i>	<i>Professorships.</i>	<i>Succeeded by</i>
Dr. Rb. Sanderson	Reg. Pr. of Div.	Dr. Crosse
Mr. Birkenhead. } A. M. }	M. Philos. Prof.	{ Dr. Hen. Wilkin- } inson, jun.
Mr. Rob. Warin	Camb. Hist. Prof.	Dr. L. du Moulin
Dr. Jn. Edwards	Nat. Phil. Prof.	Dr. Joshua Crosse
Dr. Turner, M. D.	Savil Prof. Geo.	Dr. John Wallis
Mr. J. Greaves, A. M.	Profess. Astron.	{ Dr. Ward, after. } bp. Salisbury
Dr. Hen. Hammond	University orator.	{ Mr. Burton A. M. Mr. Corbet, who } quitted.

Dr. Gilbert Sheldon, warden of All-Souls college, was ejected April 3, 1648, and lived retired with his friends in

Staffordshire till 1659, when he was restored to his warden-ship upon the death of Dr. *Pulmer*. After the restoration he was successively bishop of London, chancellor of Oxford, and archbishop of Canterbury; he built the noble theatre at Oxford, and did a great many other works of charity,<sup>a</sup> but never gave any great specimens of his piety or learning to the world.<sup>b</sup>

Dr. *Samuel Fell*, vice-chancellor of the university, and dean of Christ-church, dispossessed of his deanry April 12, 1648.<sup>c</sup> He gave the visitors all the disturbance he could, and was therefore taken into custody for a time, but being quickly released he retired to his rectory at Sunningwell in Berkshire, where he died Feb. 1, 1648-9. He had been a *calvinist*, but changed his sentiments, and after great creepings and cringings to archbishop *Laud* (says Mr. *Wood*<sup>d</sup>) he became his creature, and if the rebellion had not broke out, would, no doubt, have been made a bishop. He left no remarkable traces of his learning behind him.

Dr. *Samuel Radcliffe*, principal of Brazen-Nose college, was elected to this headship 1614, and was in an infirm condition when he was ejected for disowning the authority of the visitors, April 13, 1648, and died the June following.<sup>e</sup> Neither Mr. *Wood* nor *Walker* say any thing of his learning, nor are any of his works extant.

Dr. *Robert Newlin*, president of Corpus-Christi college, and pro-vice-chancellor in the year 1648. He was restored to his presidentship again in the year 1660, and died in it 1687.<sup>f</sup> But neither *Wood* nor *Walker* have given him any character.<sup>g</sup>

Dr. *Richard Bayly*, president of St. John's college, a kinsman of archbishop *Laud*, and one of his executors; he had been president of this college twenty years when he was ejected; but was restored in 1660, and died at Salis-

<sup>a</sup> His benefactions, public and private, amounted to 66,000*l*. Much of this money was appropriated to the relief of the necessitous in the time of the plague, and to the redemption of christian slaves. The building only of the theatre in Oxford cost him 16,000*l*. Granger's History of England, vol. iii. p. 231, 8vo. *Ed*.

<sup>b</sup> Walker's Sufferings of the Clergy, p. 98. <sup>c</sup> Walker, p. 102.

<sup>d</sup> Athen. Oxon. vol. ii. p. 93. <sup>e</sup> Walker, p. 161.

<sup>f</sup> Walker, p. 111.



bury 1667.<sup>a</sup> He was hospitable and charitable, but very faulty (says Mr. *Wood*) in using some kind of oaths in common conversation.<sup>b</sup> I do not know that he published any thing.

Dr. *John Oliver*, president of Magdalen college, had been domestic chaplain to archbishop *Laud*, and was a man (says Dr. *Walker*) of great learning and sound principles in religion, (that is, of the principles of the archbishop;) he was restored to his preferments 1660, but died soon after October 27, 1661.

Dr. *Hannibal Potter*, president of Trinity college, elected 1643, and turned out with the rest who disowned the authority of the visitors, April 13, 1648. He afterwards accepted of a curacy in Somersetshire, and was ejected for insufficiency; but Dr. *Walker* says,<sup>c</sup> it was because he used part of the church service. He was restored in 1660, and died in 1664.

Dr. *John Pit*, warden of Wadham college, elected April 16, 1644, after that city was garrisoned for the king; he behaved very refractorily towards the visitors, and died soon after his ejection.<sup>c</sup>

Dr. *Francis Marsel*, principal of Jesus college, elected to this principalship in the year 1630, and ejected May 22, 1648. He was restored again in 1660, and died in 1665, having been an eminent benefactor to his college.

Dr. *Thomas Walker*, master of University college, elected 1632, and dispossessed by the visitors July 10, 1648. He was restored in the year 1660, and died in 1665. He was related to archbishop *Laud*, and was one of his executors, and (according to *Lloyd*) a deserving modest man and a great sufferer.<sup>d</sup>

Mr. *Henry Wightwick*, B. D. elected to the mastership of Pembroke college in direct opposition to the order of parliament, July 13, 1647, for which reason he was soon after removed. In the year 1660, he was restored, but turned out again in 1664, for what reasons Dr. *Walker* says he does not know. He died in Lincolnshire 1671.<sup>e</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Walker, p. 116.

<sup>b</sup> Dr. Grey asks, "where does Wood say this? No where that I can meet with." Nor can I find the passage. *Ed.*

<sup>c</sup> Walker, p. 122.

<sup>d</sup> Ibid. p. 133.

<sup>e</sup> Ibid. p. 126.

<sup>f</sup> Ibid. p. 114.

<sup>g</sup> Ibid. p. 132.

Dr. *Henry Stringer*, elected to the wardenship of New college, after the same manner, in direct opposition to the visitors, Nov. 18, 1647, for which reason he was deprived Aug. 1, 1648. He was professor of the Greek language, but resigned, and died at London 1657.<sup>i</sup>

The professors ejected by the visitors were,

Dr. *Robert Sandersen*, regius professor of *divinity*; a very learned man, and an excellent casuist;<sup>k</sup> he was nominated one of the *assembly of divines*, but did not sit among them. He had a very considerable hand in drawing up *the reasons of the university against the covenant, and the negative oath*. After his ejection he retired to his living at Boothby, where he continued preaching, though not without some difficulties, till the restoration, when he was preferred to the bishopric of Lincoln, and died 1662-3.<sup>l</sup>

Mr. *John Birkenhead*, A. M. moral philosophy reader; he was employed by the court to write the *Mercurius Aulicus*, a paper filled with most bitter invectives against the parliament, for which he was rewarded with this lectureship. After his ejection he lived privately till the restoration, when he was knighted, and chosen burgess in parliament for the borough of Wilton. He was also created L. L. D. and master of the faculties, and died in 1679, leaving behind him (according to *Wood*) a very sorry character.<sup>l</sup>

Mr. *Robert Waring*, *Cambden history* professor; he bore arms for the king in the garrison at Oxford, and was not elected to this professorship till after the visitation began. He was reckoned (says *Wood*) among the wits of the university, and was a good poet and orator. He died 1658.<sup>m</sup>

<sup>i</sup> Walker, p. 127.

<sup>k</sup> "He was, especially in the former part of his life, remarkable for 'his excessive modesty: an infirmity,' observes my author, 'oftener 'seen in men of the quickest sensibility, and of the best understanding, 'than in the half-witted, the stupid, and the ignorant.'" Granger's *History of England*, vol. iii. p. 238, 9. 8vo. He disapproved of and wrote against the usual mode of lending money on interest. But he adopted another way of advancing it more advantageous to the lender, and sometimes to the borrower. He would give 100l. for 20l. for seven years. Calamy's *Church and Dissenters compared as to Persecution*, p. 80. *Ed.*

<sup>l</sup> Athen. Oxon. vol. ii. p. 476.

<sup>m</sup> Walker, p. 106. Athen. Ox. vol. ii. p. 143.

*John Edwards*, M. D. *natural philosophy* lecturer; who behaved rudely towards the visitors, and was therefore not only dispossessed of his preferment, but expelled the university;<sup>a</sup> but neither *Wood* nor *Walker* give any character of him.

*Peter Turner*, M. D. *Savillian* professor of *geometry*; he served his majesty as a volunteer under the command of Sir *J. Byron*, and being a zealous loyalist, was expelled the university by the visitors, after which he retired to London, and died 1650. He was a good mathematician, well read in the fathers, an excellent linguist, and highly esteemed by archbishop *Laud*.<sup>o</sup>

*John Greaves*, A. M. professor of *astronomy*, was sent by archbishop *Laud* to travel into the eastern parts of the world to make a collection of books in those languages.<sup>p</sup> After his return he was preferred to this professorship, but was ejected by the visitors, and Nov. 9, 1648, expelled the university, for sending the college treasure to the king, and other offences of the like nature. He died at London 1653, with the reputation of a good scholar, having been well respected by Mr. *Selden* and others.<sup>q</sup>

*Dr. Henry Hammond*, university orator, was a very learned man, and a great divine, highly esteemed by King *Charles I.* He assisted at the treaty of *Uxbridge*, and attended the king as his chaplain when he was permitted. After his ejection he retired to the house of Sir *John Packington*, of *Worcestershire*, where he employed his time in writing several valuable and learned treatises in defence of the hierarchy of the church of England, and in the study of the New Testament. He died April 25, 1660.

The heads of colleges who succeeded those that were ejected by authority of parliament, were,

<sup>a</sup> Walker, p. 118.

<sup>o</sup> Wood, vol. ii. p. 81.

<sup>p</sup> This he did with indefatigable industry, and at the peril of his life. He also collected for archbishop *Laud* many oriental gems and coins. He took a more accurate survey of the pyramids than any traveller who went before him. During his stay at Rome, on his return from the East, he made a particular enquiry into the true state of the ancient weights and measures. He was a great man.

Granger's History of England, vol. iii. p. 119, 20. 8vo. Ed.

<sup>q</sup> Walker, p. 125.



Dr. *Edward Reynolds*, vice-chancellor of the university, and dean of Christ-Church in the place of Dr. *Fell*; he was probationer-fellow of Merton-college in the year 1620, which he obtained by his uncommon skill in the Greek tongue; he was a good disputant and orator, a popular divine, and in great esteem in the city of London, being preacher to the honorable society of Lincoln's-Inn. Mr. *Wood* confesses,<sup>r</sup> he was a person of excellent parts and endowments, of a very good wit, fancy, and judgment and much esteemed by all parties for his florid stile. Sir *Thomas Brown* adds, that he was a divine of singular affability, meekness and humility; of great learning, a frequent preacher, and a constant resident. He conformed at the restoration, and was made bishop of Norwich, and died 1676.

Dr. *John Wilkins*, promoted to the wardenship of Wadham college in the place of Dr. *Pit*. He was educated in Magdalen-hall, and was chaplain to *Charles* count *Palatine* of the Rhine. A little before the restoration he came to London, and was minister of St. Lawrence-Jury, and preacher to the society at Lincoln's-Inn. Mr. *Wood* admits,<sup>r</sup> that he was a person of rare gifts, a noted theologist and preacher, a curious critic, an excellent mathematician, and as well seen in mechanism, and the new philosophy, as any in his time. In the year 1656, he married the sister of *O. Cromwell*, then lord-protector of England, and had the headship of Trinity-college in Cambridge conferred upon him, which is the best preferment in that university. He was afterwards a member of the *royal society*, to which he was a considerable benefactor. Dr. *Burnet* says, that bishop *Wilkins* was a man of as great a mind, as true a judgment, of as eminent virtue, and as good a soul, as any he ever knew. Archbishop *Tillotson* gives him an equal character; and several members of the *royal society* acknowledge him to have been an ornament to the university, and English nation. He was created bishop of Chester in the year 1668, and died of the stone in the house of Dr. *Tillotson*, 1672.<sup>t</sup>

<sup>r</sup> Athen. Oxon. vol. ii. p. 421.

<sup>a</sup> Ibid. p. 371.

<sup>t</sup> To Mr. Neal's character of bishop Wilkins, it may be added: that he was a man of an enlarged and liberal mind, which shewed itself in his great moderation on the points agitated between the conformists and

Dr. *Joshua Hoyle*, preferred to the headship of University college in the room of Dr. *Walker*; he was educated at Magdalen-hall, Oxford, but being invited into Ireland became fellow of Trinity college, and professor of *divinity* in the university of Dublin. In the beginning of the Irish rebellion he came over to England, and was made vicar of Stepney, a member of the assembly of divines, and at length master of this college, and king's professor of *divinity* in the room of Dr. *Sanderson*. Mr. *Wood* says,† he was a person of great reading and memory, but of less judgment. He was exactly acquainted with the *schoolmen*, and so much devoted to his book, that he was in a manner a stranger to the world; he was indefatigably industrious, and as well qualified for an academic as any person of his time. He died 1654.

Dr. *Daniel Greenwood*, principal of Brazen-Nose college, in the room of Dr. *Radcliffe*; he had been fellow of the college for a considerable time, and had the reputation of a profound scholar and divine. Mr. *Wood* says,\* he was a severe and good governor, as well in his vice-chancellorship as in his principalship; he continued in his college with an unspotted character till the restoration, when he

non-conformists: and in his free, generous way of philosophizing. He disdained to tread in the beaten track, but struck out into the new road pointed out by the great lord Bacon. He formed institutions for the encouragement of experimental philosophy, and the application of it to affairs of human life, at each university: and was the chief means of establishing the royal society. His chimæras were those of a man of genius.\* His character was truly exemplary, as well as extraordinary. His great prudence never failed in any undertaking. Sincerity was natural to him. With a greatness of mind he looked down upon wealth as much as others admire it. What he yearly received from the church, he bestowed in its services: and made no savings from his temporal estates; acting up to his frequent declaration, "I will be no richer." Birch's Life of Tillotson, p. 405, 6. Granger's History of England, vol. iii. p. 247, 8, 8vo. and Lloyd's Funeral Sermon, p. 41, 2, 3. Ed.

\* Such was his attempt to shew the possibility of a voyage to the moon; to which the dutchess of Newcastle made this objection: "Doctor, where am I to find a place for baiting at, in the way up to that 'planet?'" Madam, said he, *of all the people in the world, I never expected that question from you, who have built so many castles in the air, you that may lie every night at one of your own.*

Granger, ut supra, the note. Ed.

† Athen. Oxon. vol. ii. p. 113.

\* Wood's Fasti, vol. iii. p. 770.

was ejected by the king's commissioners, after which he lived privately till 1673, when he died.

Dr. *John Wilkinson* had been principal of Magdalen-hall before the civil wars, but when that university was garrisoned by the king, he fled into the parliament's quarters, and was succeeded by Dr. *Thomas Read*, who was admitted by the king's mandate, October 16, 1643, but in 1646, Dr. *Wilkinson* was restored. The year following (1647) he was made president of Magdalen-college in the room of Dr. *Oliver*; he was a learned and pious man, died Jan. 2, 1649, and was buried in the church of Great-Milton, Oxfordshire.

Dr. *Henry Wilkinson*, jun. commonly called *Dean Harry*, principal of Magdalen-hall; he was a noted tutor, and moderator in his college before the commencement of the civil wars, upon the breaking out of which he left Oxford and came to London, but when that city was surrendered to the parliament he returned to the university, and was created *D. D.* made *principal* of his hall, and *moral philosophy* professor in the room of Mr. *Berkenhead*. Mr. *Wood* says,<sup>y</sup> that he took all ways imaginable to make his house flourish with young students; that he was a frequent and active preacher, and a good disciplinarian; for which reason the heads of the university persuaded him earnestly to conform at the restoration, that they might keep him among them, but he refused. After his ejectionment he suffered for his non-conformity, by imprisonments, mulcts, and the loss of his goods and books; though, according to the same author, he was very courteous in speech and carriage, communicative of his knowledge, generous, charitable to the poor, and so public spirited, that he always regarded the common good more than his own private concerns. He published several learned works, and died 1690, *Æt.* 74.

Dr. *Robert Harris*, president of Trinity college in the room of Dr. *Potter*, was educated in Magdalen-hall, and had been a famous preacher in Oxfordshire for about forty years; upon the breaking out of the war he came to London, where he continued till appointed one of the visitors of the university, and *head* of this college, over which he presided ten years, though he was now seventy. He was a

<sup>y</sup> *Athen. Oxon.* vol. ii. p. 646.



person of great piety and gravity, an exact master of the Hebrew language, and well versed in chronology, church-history, the councils and fathers. He governed his college with great prudence, and gained the affections of all the students, who revered him as a father, though he had been stigmatised by the royalists as a notorious pluralist.—To which the writer of his life replies, that whatever benefices he might have been nominated to, he declared he did not receive the profits of them. The inscription upon his tomb-stone says, that he was *Præses æternum celebrandus; perspicacissimus indolum scrutator, potestatis arbiter mitissimus, merentium fautor integerrimus, &c.* He died 1658.<sup>z</sup>

Dr. *Henry Langley*, master of Pembroke college in the room of Mr. *Wightwick*, was original fellow of his college, and made master of it in 1647. He kept his place till the restoration, after which he set up a private academy among the dissenters; having the character of a solid and judicious divine, and being a frequent preacher. He died 1679.<sup>a</sup>

Dr. *Francis Cheynel*, president of St. John's college in the room of Dr. *Bayly*, was probationer fellow of Merton college in the year 1629, and afterwards rector of Petworth, a member of the assembly of divines, and this year made president of that college, and *margaret professor* in the room of Dr. *Lawrence*, both which he quitted after some time for refusing the *engagement*, and retired to his living at Petworth, from whence he was ejected at the restoration. He was a person of a great deal of indiscreet zeal, as appears by his behavior at the funeral of the great Mr. *Chillingworth*, already mentioned. Bishop *Hoadly* says, he was exactly orthodox, and as pious, honest, and charitable, as his bigotry would permit; and Mr. *Eachard* adds, that he was of considerable learning and great abilities.<sup>b</sup>

Dr. *Michael Roberts*, principal of Jesus college in the room of Dr. *Mansel*, was a good scholar, and would, no doubt, have conformed at the restoration, had he been inclined to have accepted any preferment, but he had resigned his principalship into the hands of the protector, 1657, and being rich chose a private life.<sup>c</sup> He published a Latin

<sup>z</sup> Clark's Lives, p. 314.      <sup>a</sup> Wood's Fasti, vol. ii. p. 747, 771.

<sup>b</sup> Athen. Ox. vol. ii. p. 245.

<sup>c</sup> Fasti, vol. ii. p. 752.

elegy upon general *Monk*, duke of Albemarle, and died in Oxford 1679.

Dr. *Edmund Staunton*, president of Corpus-Christi college in the room of Dr. *Newlin*, was admitted fellow of this college 1616, and afterwards minister of Kingston-upon-Thames. He took the degrees in divinity 1634, and was afterwards one of the assembly of divines. He kept his principalship till he was ejected by the king's commissioners at the restoration; he was a diligent, popular preacher, a good scholar, and continued his labors among the non-conformists till his death, which happened 1671.\*

*John Palmer*, M. D. warden of All-Souls in the room of Dr. *Sheldon*, had been batchelor of physic of Queen's college, and was now created M. D. in presence of the chancellor; he was a learned man, and held his preferment till his death, which happened March 4, 1659; at which time, there being a near prospect of the restoration, Dr. *Sheldon* was restored to his wardenship.†

Upon the death of Dr. *Pink*, the visitors nominated old Mr. *White* of Dorchester to succeed him, but I think he refused it, being very much advanced in years.||

The professors of sciences, who succeeded the ejected ones, were,

Dr. *Seth Ward*, professor of astronomy in the place of Dr. *Greaves*, and according to Mr. *Wood*, the most noted mathematician§ and astronomer of his time; he was educated in Sidney-college, Cambridge, and in the year 1643, ejected for adhering to the king, but having afterwards

\* Athen. Ox. vol. ii. p. 352-3. † Fasti, vol. ii. p. 747.

‡ Wood's Fasti, p. 68.

§ He was the first who brought mathematicial learning into vogue in the university of Cambridge. He was a close reasoner and an admirable speaker, having, in the house of lords, been esteemed equal, at least, to the earl of Shaftesbury. He was a great benefactor to both his bishoprics: as by his interest, the deanry of Barian in Cornwall was annexed to the former, though it has been since separated from it; and the chancellorship of the garter to the latter. He was polite, hospitable, and generous. He founded in his life-time, the college at Salisbury for the reception and support of minister's widows; and the sumptuous hospital at Buntingford in Hertfordshire, the place of his nativity. Granger's History of England, vol. iii. p. 244-5, 8vo. Ed.

changed his mind, he made friends to the committee for re-forming the university of Oxford, and was nominated to this preferment; he was afterwards master of Trinity college, and upon his majesty's restoration preferred, first to the bishopric of Exeter, and then to that of Salisbury, where he died 1668.†

Dr. *John Wallis*, *Savillian* professor of geometry in the room of Dr. *Turner*; the fame of this gentleman's learning is well known to the world; he was of *Emanuel* college, Cambridge, and afterwards fellow of *Queen's* college in the same university, then minister of *St. Martin's*, *Ironmonger-lane*, London, one of the scribes in the assembly of divines, and now, by the appointment of the committee, geometry professor;\* he conformed at the restoration, and maintained his post, and was an ornament to the university, to a very advanced age.†

*Lewis du Moulin*, M. D. of the university of *Leyden*, *Cambden* professor of history in the place of Mr. *Robert Wareing*, was incorporated in the same degree at Cambridge, 1634; he was son of the famous *Peter du Moulin*, the French protestant, and kept his preferment till the restoration, when he was turned out by his majesty's commissioners, and persisted in his non-conformity till his death. He was a valuable and learned man, as appears by his writings; but Mr. *Wood* observes,§ he was a violent independent, and ill-natured: He died in London 1680.

*Joshua Crosse*, L. L. D. natural philosophy reader in the room of Dr. *Edwards*, and one of the proctors of the university; he was fellow of *Magdalen* college, and kept his reader's place till the restoration, after which he lived privately in Oxford till his death, which happened in 1676.

† Athen. Ox. vol. ii. p. 627-8.

\* Wood's Fasti, p. 72, 106.

† Mathematical science is greatly indebted to Dr. Wallis, for several important improvements and inventions. The modern art of decyphering was his discovery: and he was the author of the method of teaching deaf and dumb persons to speak, and to understand a language. His English grammar, in which many things were entirely his, shewed at once the grammarian and the philosopher. Granger's History of England, vol. iii. p. 286, 8vo. He is said to have applied his art of decyphering to the king's letters taken at *Nazeby*. Ed.

§ Wood's Fasti, vol. ii. p. 753-4.



He was a gentleman much honored for his becoming conversation.†

*Ralph Button*, A. M. university orator in the room of *Dr. Hammond*, and one of the proctors of the university; he was originally of Exeter college, where he made so great a progress in philosophy, and other literature, that when he was only batchelor of arts he was recommended by *Dr. Prideaux* to stand for a fellowship in Merton college, and was accordingly chosen 1633. He was afterwards a celebrated tutor in his house, but was obliged to quit Oxford in the beginning of the civil wars, because he would not bear arms for the king. When the war was over he resumed his employment as tutor, and upon the refusal of *Edward Corbet* was made canon of Christ-church, and university orator; he was ejected at the restoration, and afterwards taught academical learning at Islington, near London, till 1680, when he died. He was an excellent scholar, a most humble upright man, and a great sufferer for non-conformity.‖

*Mr. John Harman*, A. M. professor of the Greek language in the room of *Dr. Stringer*, was educated in Magdalen college, and took his degrees 1617, he was afterwards master of the free-school at St. Albans, and one of the masters of Westminster school; from thence he was removed to the Greek professorship in this university. He was (says *Mr. Wood\**) a great philologist, a tolerable Latin poet, and one of the most excellent Grecians of his time, but otherwise an honest weak man. He was turned out at the restoration, and afterwards lived privately at Steventon in Hampshire till the year 1670, when he died.

These were all the changes that were made among the heads of colleges, and professors at this time; and upon the whole, though it must be allowed, that many of the ejected loyalists were men of learning and great merit, it is certain, those that kept their places, and the successors of such as were ejected, were men of equal probity and virtue, and no less eminent in their several professions, as appears by the monuments of their learning, some of which are remaining to this day.

† Calamy's Abridg. p. 58.

‖ Ibid. p. 60.

\* Athen. Ox. vol. ii. p. 347, 8.

The very enemies of the new heads of colleges have confessed, that they were strict in the government of their several houses, that they kept a more than common watch over the morals of the students, and obliged them to an exact compliance with their statutes. The professors were indefatigable in instructing their pupils both in public and private ; drunkenness, oaths, and profanation of the Lord's-day were banished ; strict piety, and a profession of religion, were in fashion ; the scholars often met together for prayer and religious conference ; so that, as Mr. *Philip Henry*, who lived then in the university, observes, *If those of the old spirit and way were at first the better scholars, these were the better men.*

Let the reader now judge of the spirit and candor of those writers, who insinuate, “that the new professors could neither pronounce Latin, nor write English ; that in the room of the ejected loyalists there succeeded an illiterate rabble, swept up from the plough-tail, from shops, and grammar-schools, and the dregs of the neighboring university ; that the muses were driven from their ancient seats ; that all loyalty, learning, and good sense, were banished ; and that there succeeded in their room nothing but barbarism, enthusiasm, and ignorance, till the dawn of the restoration.”† *Lord Clarendon* was a declared enemy to these changes, and has painted them in the most odious colors, yet the force of truth has obliged him to confess, that “though it might have been reasonably expected, that this wild and barbarous depopulation (as he calls it) would have extirpated all the learning, religion, and loyalty, which had flourished there, and that the succeeding ill husbandry, and unskilful cultivation, would have made it fruitful only in ignorance, profaneness, atheism, and rebellion, yet by God's wonderful providence that fruitful soil could not be made barren by all that stupidity and negligence ; it choaked the weeds, and would not suffer the poisonous seeds that were sown with industry enough, to spring up, but after several tyrannical governors, mutually succeeding each other, and with the same malice and perverseness endeavoring to extinguish all good literature and allegiance, it yielded an harvest of extra-

† Walker's Suff. Cler. p. 140.



‘ordinary good knowledge in all parts of learning; and  
‘many who were wickedly introduced applied themselves  
‘to the study of good learning, and the practice of virtue,  
‘and had inclinations to that duty and obedience they had  
‘never been taught, that when it pleased God to bring  
‘king *Charles II.* back to his throne he found the univer-  
‘sity abounding in excellent learning, and devoted to duty  
‘and obedience little inferior to what it was before its des-  
‘olation.” Considering the ill-nature that runs through  
this paragraph, it must be acknowledged to be an unan-  
swerable testimony to the learning and application of the  
*new professors*, and with equal justice it may be added,  
that the university was in a much better state for learning,  
religion, and good sense, at the restoration, than before the  
civil wars, as all the eminent philosophers and divines of  
the establishment, who did so much honor to their country  
in the three succeeding reigns, owed their education to these  
professors, *viz. the Tillotsons, Stillingsfleets, Patricks,*  
*Souths, Caves, Sprats, Kidders, Whitbys, Bulls, Boyles,*  
*Newtons, Lockes, and others.* The university was in  
high reputation in foreign parts, and produced as many  
learned performances as in any former period. So that  
admitting the new professors were not introduced into their  
places in a legal way, according to the statutes, because of  
the *necessity of the times*, yet it is certain, they proved  
wise and watchful governors, strict observers of their stat-  
utes, and industrious promoters of piety and the liberal arts;  
and were far from deserving the brand of *ignorant, illiter-*  
*ate, hypocritical blockheads, enemies to the legal constitu-*  
*tion of their country*, or of being pronounced unworthy the  
high preferments they enjoyed.

There were no doubt, at first, very considerable va-  
cancies in the several colleges; many of the fellows and  
scholars being dead, or killed in the king’s service, and  
others having resigned their places in the university for  
benefices in the church, besides those who were expelled  
by the visitors as already mentioned; but to supply the de-  
ficiency of *fellows*, and *tutors*, the committee encouraged  
several learned graduates in the university of Cambridge  
to translate themselves to Oxford and accept of preferments  
according to their merits. Many who had deserted the



university when it became a garrison for the king, returned to their colleges, and were promoted according to their seniority. Great numbers of youth, who had been kept at home because of the public commotions, were now sent to Oxford by their parents, to perfect their education ; and if it be considered further, that there had been no admissions from Westminster, Eton, St. Paul's, Merchant-Taylors, and other public schools, for five or six years past, it is not to be wondered that there was an unusual flow of youth to the university at this time, so that the damage occasioned by this revolution of affairs was quickly repaired, and the muses returned to their ancient seats.

The long interruption of education in the university produced a very great scarcity of orthodox and learned ministers in the countries, some being silenced for refusing the covenant, and others dispersed, or killed in the wars. Many pulpits also were vacant by reason of the scandal or insufficiency of the incumbents, which was one occasion of the increase of lay-preachers, for the country people would go to hear any body rather than have no sermons ; besides, the presbyterian clergy would authorize none to preach, except such as would take the *covenant*, and consent to their discipline. To remedy these evils, the northern counties petitioned the houses to erect a new university in the city of York, but the confusion of the times prevented their prosecuting the design. The *independents*, who were less zealous about clerical orders, encouraged or at least connived at the lay-preachers, apprehending that in cases of necessity, pious men of good natural parts might exercise their gifts publicly to the edification of the church ; till under this cover they saw every bold enthusiast almost begin to usurp the office of a teacher. To bring things therefore into a little better order, the following petition was presented to both houses of parliament, Oct. 6, under the title of *The humble petition of many citizens of London, and others.*

“ YOUR petitioners are deeply sensible of the extreme want of preaching the gospel throughout this kingdom, there being many hundreds of towns and villages alto-

‘gether destitute of any preaching ministers, and many  
 ‘others are not well supplied; by reason whereof igno-  
 ‘rance, drunkenness, profaneness, disaffection to the par-  
 ‘liament and to others in authority, every where abounds;  
 ‘there being scarce so much as the face of religion in many  
 ‘places. There is a great cry of people from several coun-  
 ‘ties of the kingdom, for men to preach to them the word  
 ‘of eternal life; and there are many men of competent  
 ‘gifts and abilities, of good life and honest conversation,  
 ‘who being willing to employ their talents in the Lord’s  
 ‘work, and to submit themselves for approbation to moder-  
 ‘ate and judicious men, are yet, by occasion of some scru-  
 ‘ples about ordination, discouraged from engaging in this  
 ‘work of publishing the gospel, wherein they might be  
 ‘helpful to many. And seeing that in the days of Queen  
 ‘*Elizabeth*, upon occasion of people’s necessities, many  
 ‘such men were sent forth to publish the gospel, who had  
 ‘no formal act of ministerial ordination past upon them,  
 ‘whose endeavors the Lord blessed to the good of many  
 ‘souls, and the furthering of the kingdom’s peace; and  
 ‘since also we nothing doubt, but the propagation of the  
 ‘gospel throughout this kingdom, and the information of  
 ‘men in the things of their peace, and the peace and safety  
 ‘of the kingdom, are worthy of your greatest zeal, and are  
 ‘not the least of your care;

“Therefore your petitioners humbly pray, that those who  
 ‘shall be approved of as men meet to dispense the myste-  
 ‘ries of the gospel, by such judicious, moderate, and able  
 ‘men, whom you in wisdom shall appoint thereunto, may  
 ‘receive from this honorable house encouragement and pro-  
 ‘tection in preaching the gospel in any place of this king-  
 ‘dom, or dominion of Wales, where need requires, that so  
 ‘the word of the Lord may have free course and be glori-  
 ‘fied; ignorant men may be instructed; drunkenness, pro-  
 ‘faneness, and disaffection to the parliament, and to others  
 ‘in authority, may be abandoned; and both the temporal  
 ‘and spiritual peace and prosperity of all sorts of men be  
 ‘the more advanced.”\*

The houses thanked the petitioners for their good affec-  
 tion, but did nothing upon it.

\* Rushworth, p. 824.



By an ordinance of Feb. 11, this year “all stage-players were declared to be rogues punishable by the acts of the 39th of Queen *Elizabeth*, and 7th of King *James*, notwithstanding any licence they might have from the king, or any other person. All stage galleries, seats and boxes, are ordered to be pulled down by warrant of two justices of peace; all actors in plays for time to come being convicted shall be publicly whipped, and find sureties for their not offending in like manner for the future; and all spectators of plays for every offence are to pay five shillings.”†

The controversies about church-government, and liberty of conscience, ran still as high as ever; the *presbyterians*, who had the government of the city of London in their hands, were for pressing *covenant uniformity* in their sermons, which the *independents*, and others of more catholic principles, endeavored to oppose with all their might. Lord *Clarendon* is pleased to represent this in a ludicrous manner; “the pulpit skirmishes (says his lordship) were now higher than ever; the *presbyterians* in those fields losing nothing of their courage; having a notorious power in the city, notwithstanding the emulation of the *independents*, who were more learned and rational, who, though they had not so great congregations of the common people, yet infected and were followed by the most substantial citizens, and by others of better condition. To these men *Cromwell* and most of the officers of the army adhered; but the divinity of the times was not to be judged by the preaching and congregations in churches, which were now thought not to be the fit and proper places of devotion, and religious exercises, where the bishops had exercised such illimited tyranny, and which had been polluted by their consecrations. *Liberty of conscience* was now become the great charter, and men who were inspired preached and prayed when and where they would. *Anabaptists* grew very numerous, with whom the *independents* concurred, so far as to join with them for the abolishing of tithes, as of judaical institution—If any honest man could have been at so much ease as to have beheld the prospect with delight, never was such a scene of confu-



'sion as had spread itself at this time over the whole kingdom."\* And yet it is certain, that the laws against vice and immorality were strictly executed, the *Lord's day* was duly observed, the churches were crowded with attentive hearers, family devotion was in repute, neither servants nor children being allowed to walk in the fields, or frequent the public houses. In a word, notwithstanding the difference of men's opinions, and political views, there was a zeal for God, and a much greater appearance of sobriety, virtue, and true religion, than before the civil war, or after the blessed restoration.

Among the puritan divines who died this year, was the reverend Mr. *Herbert Palmer*, B. D. of whom mention has been made among the Cambridge professors; his father was Sir *Thomas Palmer*, of Wingham in Kent, his mother the eldest daughter of *Herbert Pelham*, of Sussex, esq.† Our divine was born at Wingham, and baptized there March 29, 1601, he had a polite education in his father's house, and learned the French language almost as soon as he could speak. In the year 1615, he was admitted fellow commoner in St. John's college, Cambridge. In 1622, he took the degree of *M. A.* In 1623, he was chosen fellow of Queen's college in that university; the year following he was ordained to the ministry, to which he had devoted himself from his infancy: his first exercise was at a lecture in the city of Canterbury, where he preached once a week, till it was put down with the rest of the afternoon sermons. In the year 1632, he was presented by archbishop *Laud* to the vicarage of Ashwell in Hertfordshire, where he preached twice every Lord's day, and catechised the children of his parishioners. The same year he was chosen one of the university preachers of Cambridge, by which he had authority to preach, as he should have occasion, in any part of England. In the year 1640, he and Dr. *Tuckney* were chosen clerks of the convocation for the diocese of Lincoln. In the year 1643, he was called to be a member of the assembly of divines at Westminster, and after some time chosen one of their *assessors*, in which

\* Clarendon, vol. v. p. 115, 116.

† Clarke's Lives in his Martyrology, p. 183.

place he behaved with great wisdom and integrity. April 11, 1644, he was constituted master of Queen's college, Cambridge, by the earl of *Manchester*; here he set himself industriously to the promoting of religion and learning, being very solicitous that none should be admitted to a scholarship or fellowship in his college, but such as were qualified in both these respects, the good effects of which appeared in the reputation and credit of that society, beyond most others of the university in his time. Mr. *Palmer* was a gentleman of a low stature, and a weekly constitution, but indefatigable in business; his leisure was employed in works of devotion and charity, and as he had a competent estate, and chose a single life, he had an opportunity of doing a great deal of good; he maintained several poor scholars at his own expence in the college, and when he died left a considerable benefaction to the same purpose. His last sickness was not long, his constitution being spent; but his behavior was uncommon; he looked the king of terrors in the face with an unshaken resolution, and resigned his life this summer with a firm expectation of the mercy of the God to eternal life, in the forty-sixth year of his age, and was buried in the new church at Westminster.

Mr. *Henry Wilkinson*, B. D. was born in Yorkshire, and educated at Merton-college, Oxford. In the year 1586, he was chosen probationer-fellow, and proceeded in arts; after some time he was made B. D. and in the year 1601, became pastor of Waddesdon in Bucks. He was a person of considerable learning and piety, and being an old puritan (says Mr. *Wood*\*) was elected one of the assembly of divines in 1643, but he spent the chief of his time and labors among his parishioners at Waddesdon, by whom he was greatly beloved; here he died in a very advanced age, March 19, 1647-8, and lies buried in his own church.

Mr. *John Saltmarsh*, descendant of an ancient family in Yorkshire, was educated in Magdalen-college, Cambridge, and graduated there; he was esteemed a person of a fine active fancy, no contemptible poet, and a good preacher;

\* Athen. Oxon. vol. ii. p. 59.



he was first minister at Northampton, afterwards at Braisted in Kent, and at length chaplain in Sir *Thomas Fairfax's* army, where he always preached up love and unity: he meddled not with presbytery or independency, but labored to draw souls from sin to Christ. He published some treatises, by which it appears he was of *antinomian* principles. The manner of his death was extraordinary; December the 4th, 1647, being at his house at Ilford in Essex, he told his wife he had been in a trance, and received a message from God which he must immediately deliver to the army. He went that night to London, and next day to Windsor; being come to the council of officers he told them, that the Lord had left them; that he would not prosper their consultations, but destroy them by divisions among themselves, because they had sought to destroy the people of God, those who had stood by them in their greatest difficulties. He then went to the *general*, and without moving his hat told him, that God was highly displeased with him for committing of saints to prison. The like message he delivered to *Cromwell*, requiring him to take effectual measures for the enlargement of the members of the army, who were committed for not complying with the general council. He then took his leave of the officers, telling them, he had now done his errand, and must never see them any more. After which he went to London, and took leave of his friends there, telling them his work was done, and desiring some of them to be careful of his wife. *Thursday* December 9, he returned to Ilford in perfect health; next day he told his wife, that he had now finished his work, and must go to his Father. *Saturday* morning Dec. 11, he was taken speechless, and about four in the afternoon he died.||

¶ Rushworth p. 944.



*The second Civil War. The Conclusion of the Assembly of Divines. The Progress of Presbytery. The Treaty of the Isle of Wight. Death and Character of King Charles I. His Works. And, the Authors of his unhappy Sufferings.*

ANNO 1648.

THE king was all last winter a close prisoner in Carisbrook castle, attended only by two servants of his own, and debarred of all other conversation, without the knowledge of the governor; nevertheless, by the assistance of some particular friends, he sent and received several letters from the queen, though his correspondence was discovered oftner than he was aware. His majesty made several attempts to escape, but was always prevented; captain *Burley* attempted to raise the island for him, but was apprehended and executed. However, in pursuance of the secret treaty with the Scots, already mentioned, an army was raising in that kingdom, to be commanded by duke *Hamilton*; but the English cavaliers, impatient of delay, without concerting proper measures among themselves, or with the *presbyterians*, took up arms in several counties, to deliver the king from his confinement, and to restore him without any treaty with his parliament. The Welsh appeared first, under major-general *Langhorn*, colonel *Poyer* and *Powel*, three officers in the parliament army, who had privately accepted commissions from the prince of *Wales*.\* These were followed by others in Dorsetshire, Devonshire, Sussex, Surrey, Lincolnshire, Norfolk, Kent, Northamptonshire, Essex, and in the city of London itself. The insurrection in the city began on *Sunday* April 9, in *Moorfields*, by a company of young fellows with clubs and staves, crying out, for *God and king Charles*. But after they had done some mischief in the night, and frightened the mayor into the Tower, they were dispersed next morning by the general at the head of two regiments. The Kentish

\* Rushworth, p. 1007.

men under the earl of *Norwich*, having plundered some houses, were defeated near Maidstone, and having a promise of pardon, the main body laid down their arms; notwithstanding which, the earl with five hundred resolute men, crossed the Thames at the Isle of Dogs, and came as far as Mile-end green, expecting assistance from the city; but being disappointed, he joined the Essex cavaliers under Sir *Charles Lucas* and Lord *Capel*, who surprized the parliament's committee at Chemsford, and then shut themselves up in Colchester, where they maintained themselves against general *Fairfax* for ten weeks, till being reduced to the last extremity, they were forced to surrender at discretion Aug. 28,† after which the general marched round about the country, and having quieted all insurrections in those parts, returned to his head-quarters at St. Albans about Michaelmas. While *Fairfax* was in Kent and Essex, lieutenant-general *Cromwell* reduced the Welch about the end of June. At the same time, the earl of *Holland* and duke of *Buckingham* appeared at the head of five hundred horse and some foot near *Kingston-upon-Thames*, but they were soon dispersed; the earl was taken prisoner at St. Neot's in Huntingdonshire by colonel *Scroop*, and

† Dr. Grey is displeased with Mr. Neal, that he does not inform his readers, what use general *Fairfax* made of the power with which this unconditional surrender invested him. He seized Sir *Charles Lucas* and Sir *George Lisle*, and made them instant sacrifices to military justice. All the prisoners exclaimed against this as an unusual piece of severity: and some historians have censured it as a bloody step. Mrs. Macaulay represents it as an instance of the humanity of the general, that, though he had been provoked by many irritating circumstances in the conduct of the besieged, he selected the two chief commanders only, to avenge the innocent blood they had caused to be spilt. The fact was, that these two gentlemen had shewnt themselves most implacable; had prevented the soldiers from accepting terms of indemnity offered by the parliament in the beginning; that the besieged had been exposed to the utmost extremities of famine; and that the independents regarded the engaging the kingdom in a second war as an unpardonable crime. When Sir *Charles Lucas* urged that the sentence of the general was unprecedented, a parliament soldier standing by, told him, "that he had put to death with his own hand some of the parliament's soldiers in cold blood." At which he was dismayed. A few days after, a gentleman in mourning for Sir *Charles Lucas* appearing in his presence, the king wept. Mrs. Macaulay's History, vol. iv. p. 362-3. Whitlocke's Memorials, p. 328, 29, 30. Ed.



the duke of *Buckingham*, with great difficulty, escaped into the Low Countries. About the same time several of the parliament's ships revolted to the prince of *Wales*, then in *Holland*, who went on board, and with prince *Rupert*, lord *Hopton*, and others, sailed to the coast of England, with a design to relieve *Colchester*; but although disappointed, he landed five hundred men about *Deal* and *Sandwich*, and blocked up the *Thames* mouth; but when the earl of *Warwick* came up with the parliament's fleet, he sailed back to *Holland*, and most of the ships returned to the obedience of the parliament.

It was not without great difficulty that the king's friends in *Scotland* prevailed with the parliament of that kingdom to consent to the raising an army against England, the commissioners of the kirk, and the whole body of their ministers, being vehemently against it; and when it was put to the vote, eighteen lords and forty commoners entered their protests, from a strong suspicion, that by the vast resort of loyalists to *Edinburgh*, there was a private agreement between *Hamilton* and that party, to lay aside the *covenant*, and restore the king without any conditions; to prevent which the Scots parliament gave express orders, that none should be received into their army, or join with them at their entrance into England, except such as should take the *covenant*; but *Hamilton*, who betrayed their cause, found means to evade the order, by which means he ruined himself, and the party he intended to serve.\*

The Scots army entered England July 11th, to the number of twenty thousand foot|| and six thousand horse, under

\* *Rapin*, vol. ii. p. 550, 553, folio. *Hamilton's Mem.* p. 339.

\* *Bishop Burnet* endeavors to exculpate the duke from such a charge, and imputes the miscarriage of the expedition, in which he was leader, to his yielding to the counsels of others. The bishop sets against the report of his betraying the army several instances of his generous and disinterested conduct, in his care to preserve the army, and to act for the king's advantage, to the risk of his own liberty and safety. *Memoirs of the Duke of Hamilton*, p. 365. *Ed.*

|| *Dr. Grey* here censures *Mr. Neal* for often speaking at random: because *bishop Burnet*, on the authority of *Turner*, the adjutant-general, says, that "the forces of the Scots amounted only to ten thousand foot and four thousand horse." *Memoirs of Hamilton*, p. 356. But



the command of duke *Hamilton*, and were afterwards joined by Sir *Marmaduke Langdale* at the head of four thousand foot, and seven or eight hundred horse; but these being Englishmen and cavaliers, who had not taken the *covenant*, were not incorporated with the Scots forces, but were obliged to march a day before them, which was *Hamilton's* contrivance to evade his orders; nevertheless, they composed one army, *Langdale* being to receive all his orders from *Hamilton*, and to act only by his directions. But though there was a private understanding between the *generals*, the subalterns and soldiers of both parties were not acquainted with it, and had the same incurable jealousy of each other as formerly; from the same motive, the presbyterians in the parliament at Westminster commissioned their army to oppose the Scots, though they came into England with an avowed intention of restoring the king upon the terms of the *covenant*; which was the supreme object of their wishes.

It may seem surprising, however, that there was no good understanding between the two parliaments, when those of England sent commissioners to Edinburgh to accomplish it; but the Scots, being strongly persuaded that the parliament at Westminster was still governed by an army of *independents*, all that Mr. *Marshall* and the rest could say was not sufficient to divert them from their enterprize, which is the easier accounted for, when the strength of the *Hamiltonian faction*, and their obligations to the king by their secret treaty, are considered. This engagement appears from the *duke's* letter to *Lambert*, in which he acquaints him, that he was commanded to enter England with an army, *for maintaining the solemn league and covenant; for settling religion; for delivering the king from his base imprisonment; and freeing the parliament from the constraint put upon them.\** The state of affairs had undergone a considerable change by the rising of the English cavaliers; the army was in the field, and divided into several distant parts of the kingdom, and the *presbyte-*

it may afford a sanction to Mr. Neal's representation, that, since he wrote, Mrs. Macaulay and Mr. Hume have given the same estimate of the army, led by Duke Hamilton into England. With these agree Whitlocke, *Memoirs*, p. 327. *Ed.* \* Rushworth, p. 1194.

*rians* in as full possession of the government as ever; they were renewing the treaty with the king, and sending propositions to the Scots to join with them; but the good understanding between the two nations having been interrupted last winter, by the growing influence of the army, who were no friends to *covenant uniformity*, the Scots would not be satisfied with the present diminution of their power, unless they were entirely disbanded, and therefore had not changed the instructions to their general. On the other hand, the parliament could not with safety disband their army while the *cavaliers* were in the field; nor could they forbid their opposing the Scots, who had joined the *common enemy*, and were marching into England with an armed force, to deliver the king from his imprisonment, although they had concerted no measures with the two houses, or communicated their secret treaty with his majesty in the Isle of Wight. Thus the two parliaments of England and Scotland opposed each other, when both had the same views, and were actuated by the same principles. If the Scots army had been commanded by a general the *presbyterians* could have confided in, and had marched directly for London, without joining the *cavaliers*, the parliament of England would have gladly received them, and the citizens of London have opened their gates; for the English *presbyterians* wished them well; but by joining the common enemy, who were in arms all over the kingdom, they were staggered; and duke *Hamilton*, who betrayed their cause, by trifling away a whole month in the north, gave the English army, which was distributed into various parts, time to re-unite and defeat all their enterprises.\*

The Scots, invading England in this hostile manner, and in the midst of so many insurrections, awakened men's fears, and made them apprehend the cause was to be fought over again. And while the parliament was alarmed on every side, the English army gave them strong assurances they would stand by them, and march wheresoever the committee of the two houses (appointed to manage their motions) should direct. However, general *Fairfax*, who engaged heartily against the *cavaliers*, refusing to march

\* *Hamilton's Memoirs*, p. 337, 345, 353, &c.



against the Scots, because they had openly declared for the *covenant*, colonel *Lambert* was ordered into the North, with a flying squadron to harrass them, till lieutenant-general *Cromwell* could come out of Wales to his assistance. The Scots having been joined by Sir *Marmaduke Langdale*, who had seized the important town of Berwick, marched through Cumberland and Westmorland into Lancashire without opposition; but upon the 17th of August, *Cromwell*, having joined *Lambert* and refreshed his troops, faced them near Preston with eight or ten thousand men, and after a sharp engagement with the *cavaliers* under Sir *Marmaduke Langdale*, who were almost a day's march before the *duke*, routed the whole Scots army, and took eight or nine thousand prisoners, with all their artillery and baggage; *Hamilton* fled with three thousand horse, but was so closely pursued by *Lambert*, that he surrendered without striking another stroke, and all his men were dispersed or made prisoners. *Cromwell*, after this action pursued his victory, marching directly for Edinburgh, which opened its gates; and having entered the city and changed the magistracy to his mind, he left three regiments of horse to keep the country quiet, and returned into England Oct. 11, laden with martial glory and renown†

Before the army left London, and while their influence over the parliament continued, the commons, having taken into consideration the affair of settling the government, voted unanimously, that the government of the kingdom should be still by *king*, *lords*, and *commons*, and that the propositions at Hampton-Court should be the ground-work for a settlement, which shews, that there was no design, as yet formed, of changing the government into a commonwealth, at least nothing appeared, though the *agitators*, who were the chief managers of the army, began to mutter, that if the king could not be brought to reason he must be set aside, and the duke of *Gloucester*, or one of his younger children, placed on the throne.\*

† "So he did," says Dr. Grey, "but 'twas in the same sense, that a company of *highwaymen*, or *banditti*, would return laden with *martial glory and honor*, after obtaining a good *booty* from the lawful owners of it." This remark shews the strain and spirit of Dr. Grey's examination of Mr. Neal. Lord Clarendon, speaking of this transaction, with more truth and candor calls it "this great victory." *Ed.*

\* Rushworth, p. 1074.



The army had no sooner left the neighborhood of the city, but the *presbyterians* resumed the management of public affairs. May 5, the parliament resolved to maintain the *solemn league and covenant*, and to unite with the kingdom of Scotland upon the propositions of Hampton-court. || The *militia* of the city of London was restored to the lord-mayor and common-council; the eleven impeached members, and the seven peers, were discharged; and, in short, all that had been done against the presbyterian greatness by the influence of the army last winter was reversed; so that as from Aug. 6, 1647, to the beginning of May, 1648, the parliament may be supposed to have lain under some restraint from the army; from that time to the end of the treaty of the Isle of Wight, it was at full liberty, and entirely under presbyterian direction.\* Petitions came now from divers counties, and from the city of London itself, for a personal treaty with the king; upon which the *commons* set aside their votes of non-addresses, and at the request of the lords consented to treat with the king, without his signing any preliminary propositions, hoping as matters then stood, his majesty would not delay a moment to grant their demands, that he might be released from his confinement, and placed upon his throne, before the army should be at leisure to throw further obstacles in the way; but here was the fatal oversight, the king and his friends would not condescend, nor the presbyterians relax, till both were driven out of the field, and the army become irresistible.

Let the reader pause a little, and reflect with grief upon the miserable distractions of this unhappy kingdom; in this *crisis* were three or four powerful parties with separate views striving for mastery. The KING, a close prisoner in the Isle of Wight, was the *prize* contended for; he had little or no weight to throw into either scale, though by signing the Scots treaty he was reputed the author of that invasion, and of the second civil war; the CAVALIERS were in arms to preserve the EPISCOPAL CHURCH of England; but having concerted no measures among themselves were easily dispersed. The SCOTS came into England in

|| Rapin, p. 504, 508, 511, 518.

\* Rushworth, p. 1127.

pursuance of the *covenant*, and the secret treaty in the Isle of Wight, but two mistakes ruined their enterprize; one was, their not communicating the contents of that *treaty* to the English *presbyterians*, which they might have done by their commissioners without the knowledge of the English army, before they had marched into England; the other was, duke *Hamilton's* acting in concert with the English *cavaliers*, allowing them to march in the *van*, which gave their enemies in the parliament at Westminster a fair opportunity of engaging the whole military power of England against them; for without all doubt, if the duke had prevailed, not only the *independent*, but the *presbyterian cause* had been betrayed into the hands of the *cavaliers*, which must in the end have been equally fatal to both parties, and lost them all the advantages of the war. This fatal conjunction broke the strength of the English *presbyterians*, and played the game into the hands of a third party, who destroyed the other two. The ARMY, with whom were the *independents*, *anabaptists*, and other sectaries, was governed by the *agitators*, who had given up the king, and had an incurable aversion to the *cavaliers*, and all who adhered to them, as their most determined enemies; nor could they confide in the *presbyterians*, because in all their past treaties they had seen themselves made a sacrifice to *covenant uniformity*. Upon the whole, all parties were stiff in their demands, disunited in their councils, and infinitely jealous of each other. Among the *presbyterians*, some were for fighting only with the *cavaliers*, and others for opposing the Scots as *invaders*. Some of the *cavaliers* were for restoring the king by their own valor, and others for availing themselves of the assistance of the Scots. The army was no less distracted; those who served under general *Fairfax* were unwilling to march against the Scots *presbyterians*; those under *Cromwell* were for encountering every power that would not secure them that liberty of conscience for which they had been contending; and despairing of this, not only from the king, but from the Scots and English *presbyterians*, they unhappily ran upon those extravagant measures which ended in the destruction of the king and overthrow of the whole constitution.

*Tantum religio potuit suadere malorum.*

But to return ; the assembly of divines having finished their main business, was reduced to a small number, most of the country ministers having returned home, and those who remained about London were employed chiefly in the examination of such ministers as presented themselves for ordination, or induction into livings ; thus they subsisted till Feb. 22, 1648-9, about three weeks after the king's death, having sat five years, six months, and twenty-two days, in which time they had one thousand one hundred and sixty-three sessions. They were afterwards changed into a committee for the purposes last-mentioned, and met every Thursday morning till March 25, 1652, when the long parliament being turned out of the house by *Oliver Cromwell*, they broke up without any formal dissolution.\*

The works of the assembly, besides some letters to foreign churches, and occasional admonitions, were,

1. Their humble advice to the parliament for ordination of ministers, and settling the presbyterian government.
2. A directory for public worship.
3. A confession of faith.
4. A larger and shorter catechism.
5. A review of some of the thirty-nine articles.

The annotations on the bible, which go under their name, were neither undertaken, nor revised by them, but by a committee of parliament, who named the *commentators*, and furnished them with books ; nor were they all members of the assembly, as appears by the following list.

Those with *asterisms* were not of the assembly.

WAS WRITTEN BY

The commentary on the five books of <i>Moses</i> — — —	}	Rev. Mr. <i>Ley</i> , subdean of Chester
The two books of <i>Kings</i> ,		
The two books of <i>Chronicles</i> ,	}	Dr. <i>Gouge</i>
<i>Ezra</i> , — — —		
<i>Nehemiah</i> , — — —		
<i>Esther</i> , — — —		
The <i>Psalms</i> , — — —	}	* Mr. <i>Meric Causabon</i>
<i>Proverbs</i> , — — —		Mr. <i>Francis Taylor</i>
<i>Ecclesiastes</i> , — — —		Dr. <i>Reynolds</i>

\* MS. penes me.



WAS WRITTEN BY

<i>Solomon's Song,</i>	— —	{	* <i>Mr. Smalwood</i> , recommended by archbishop <i>Usher</i>
<i>Isaiah,</i>	— —	}	<i>Mr. Gataker</i>
<i>Jeremiah,</i>	— —		
<i>Lamentations,</i>	— —		
<i>Ezekiel,</i>	— —	}	* <i>Mr. Pemberton</i> in the first edition
<i>Daniel, and the smaller prophets,</i>	— —		* <i>Bishop Richardson</i> in the second
<i>Matthew,</i>	— —	}	<i>Mr. Ley</i>
<i>Mark,</i>	— —		
<i>Luke,</i>	— —		
<i>John,</i>	— —		
<i>St. Paul's Epistles,</i>	— —	{	<i>Dr. D. Featley</i> ; but his notes are broken and imperfect, the author dying before he had revised them.

There were two other persons concerned in this work, who might probably have the other parts of scripture allotted them, not here mentioned, viz. *Mr. Downham* and *Mr. Reading*.

When posterity shall impartially review the labors of this assembly of divines, and consider the times in which they sat, they will have a just veneration for their memory; for though their sentiments in divinity were in many instances too narrow and contracted, yet with all their faults, amongst which their persecuting zeal for religion was not the least, they were certainly men of real piety and virtue, who meant well, and had the interest of religion at heart; and most of them possessed as much learning as any of their contemporaries; the names of *Lightfoot*, *Selden*,\* *Gataker*, *Greenhill*, *Arrowsmith*, *Twisse*, bishop *Reynolds*, *Wallis*, &c. will always meet with esteem from the learned world; and had they not grasped at coercive power, or jurisdiction over the consciences of men, their characters would have been unblemished. *Mr. Baxter*, who knew most of them, says, "They were men of eminent learning, godliness, ministerial abilities, and fidelity; and being not worthy to be one of them myself, (says he) I may

\* Bishop Warburton here asks, with a sneer, "What has *Selden* here to do with ministers, puritans, and persecutors?" The answer is, he was one of the Westminster assembly. *Ed.*

‘more fully speak the truth which I know, even in the face of malice and envy, that as far as I am able to judge by the information of history, and by any other evidences, the christian world, since the days of the apostles, had never a synod of more excellent divines than this synod, and the synod of Dort.”† The *divine right* of the *presbyterian government* first threw them into heats, and then divided them, engaging them first with the *parliament*, and then with the *independents* and *erastians*; their opposing a toleration raised them a great many enemies, and caused a *secession* in their own body; for after they had carried the question of *divine right* the *independents* and *erastians* deserted them, after which they found it very difficult to muster as many as would make a house. Had the parliament dissolved them at that juncture they had separated with honor, but they dwindled by degrees, as has been related; the business of the church being now translated to the provincial assemblies.

We have already remembered the two former of these assemblies; the third met May 3, this year, and chose the Rev. Mr. *Whitaker* moderator. In the fourth session they agreed to present a second petition to the parliament in the name of the province, humbly to desire, 1. “That they would renew the consideration of their former petition. 2. That they would establish the two catechisms of the assembly of divines, and appoint them to be publicly taught throughout the kingdom. 3. That they would add their civil sanction to the new confession of faith. 4. That the directory for public worship may be better observed; and that better care may be taken for the observation of the Lord’s-day.” In their twelfth session, Oct. 6. they agreed to the report of their *committee concerning the cause of the decay of religion*, and of the increase of wickedness, which they say was chiefly owing to the want of able and settled ministers, there being above forty parish churches and congregations within the province which had no ministers settled among them by allowance of authority, a catalogue of which churches was subjoined. The reason of this defect being chiefly want

† Baxter’s Life, p. 73.

of maintenance, they pray the houses, "to agree upon some method, that the dean and chapter lands, and the impropriations belonging to bishops, lying within this province, may be applied for the augmentation of the clergy's maintenance; and that there may be a fixed maintenance in every parish recoverable by the incumbent."

The fourth provincial assembly met Nov. 3, the reverend Mr. *Edmund Calamy* moderator. In their third session, Nov. 23, they ordered, that the several ministers of the province of London do begin the work of catechising; that they use the assembly's catechism, and no other; that the persons to be catechised be children and servants not admitted to the Lord's table; that the time be in the afternoon before sermon; and that they exhort their parishioners to encourage it. In their fourth session Nov. 30, they resolved, that the twelve classes of the province of London observe their course for ordination of ministers; and that at the close of every public ordination notice be given which *classis* is to ordain next. But the nation being in confusion, and the clouds gathering thick over their heads, they did little more this winter than keep a weekly fast\* among themselves, to avert the judgments of God, which threatened the life of the king, and the dissolution of the whole government.

The county of Lancaster being formed into another *presbyterian province* this year, assembled at Preston, Feb. 7, 1648, and published a kind of pastoral letter, or solemn exhortation to the several churches within their province, to the practice of those duties that were requisite to the supporting and carrying on the *presbyterian discipline*, subscribed by the reverend

Mr. *James Hyatt*, moderator,  
Mr. *Tho. Johnson*, assessor,  
Mr. *Edw. Gee*, scribe.†

\* Bishop Warburton's remark on this is, "These were glorious saints, that fought and preached for the king's destruction; and then fasted and prayed for his preservation, when they had brought him to the foot of the scaffold!" This remark goes on the supposition, that, to oppose the king's arbitrary views and measures was to fight and preach for his *destruction*. If it eventually proved so, from whence could it arise but from his adherence to his designs, till concessions came too late? *Ed.*

† Vol. Pamph. No. 73.



They likewise appointed a committee to examine the paper called *the agreement of the people*, [hereafter to be mentioned] and tendered to the *consideration of the nation by the officers of the army, with a desire that they would by subscription declare their concurrence to it*; but it was carried in the negative.\* The design of this paper was to change the form of government into a kind of commonwealth, without a king or house of lords. It was published by way of probation, that they might learn the sense of the nation; but the article relating to religion being peculiar, and giving great offence to the *presbyterian* clergy, shall be transcribed entire: "We do not empower our 'representatives (say they) to continue in force, or make 'any laws, oaths, or covenants, whereby to compel by penalties, or otherwise, any person to any thing, in or about 'matters of faith, religion, or God's worship; or restrain 'any person from professing his faith, or exercise of his 'religion according to his conscience, in any house or 'place, except such as are or shall be set apart for the 'public worship. Nevertheless, the instruction or direction of the nation in a public way, for matters of faith, 'worship or discipline, so it be not compulsive or express 'popery, is referred to their discretion." The *agreement* adds, "It is intended that the christian religion be held 'forth, and recommended as the public profession in this 'nation, which we desire may, by the grace of God, be reformed to the greatest purity in doctrine, worship, and 'discipline, according to the word of God. The instructing the people thereunto in a public way, provided it be 'not compulsive; as also the maintaining of able teachers 'for that end, and for the confutation and discovery of heresy, error, and whatsoever is contrary to sound doctrine, 'is allowed to be provided by our representatives; the 'maintenance of teachers may be out of a treasury, and we 'desire not by *tithes*." But besides these, "*All who profess faith in God by Jesus Christ, however differing in judgment from the doctrine, discipline, and worship publicly held forth, shall be protected in the profession of their faith, and exercise of their religion according to their*

\* Rushworth, p. 1258.

*‘consciencés, so as they abuse not this liberty to the civil injury of others, or the disturbance of the public peace.’*

These were just and generous sentiments; however the synod forbade their people to subscribe them, not only because the AGREEMENT imported a change in the civil government, but because of the mischiefs that would attend a *toleration*; their reasons for which they published to the world March 6, 1648, subscribed by fifty-nine ministers.

The provincial assemblies of London met regularly every half year, to the year 1655, when finding themselves without power, and not being willing to apply† to the *protector* and his parliament for support, they desisted; but there were none legally formed in any other counties of England. However, the country ministers entered into voluntary associations, and erected a sort of classes for ordination of ministers, and promoting friendship and peace among themselves, many of the *independent* ministers joining with them: the associations met once a month, at one or other church in the county, and, after prayers and a sermon, conferred upon the state of religion, and gave their advice upon such cases as were brought before them in a neighborly and friendly manner.

To return to the parliament, which was now recruited with such *presbyterian* members as had absconded, or deserted their stations, while the army was quartered in the neighborhood of the city; these gentlemen, finding they had the superiority in the house, resumed their courage, and took the opportunity of discovering their principles and spirit, in passing such a law against heretics as is hardly to be paralleled among protestants.§ It had been laid aside by the influence of the army for above nine months, till

† Bishop Warburton says, that they did apply to the protector, “and received such an answer as they deserved.” A deputation of the London ministers went to him to complain, that the cavalier episcopal clergy got their congregations from them, and debauched the faithful from their ministers. “Have they so?” said the protector: “I will take an order with them;” and made a motion, as if he was going to say something to the captain of the guards; when turning short, “But hold!” said he, “after *what manner* do the cavaliers debauch your people?” “By preaching,” replied the ministers. “Then preach BACK again,” said this able statesman; and left them to their own reflections. *Ed.*

§ Scobel’s Collect. cap. cxiv. p. 149.



May 1, when it was voted, that all ordinances concerning church government referred to committees, be brought in and debated; and that *the ordinance concerning blasphemy and heresy* be now determined, which was done accordingly. This was one of the most shocking laws I have met with in restraint of religious liberty, and shews, that the governing *presbyterians* would have made a terrible use of their power, had they been supported by the sword of the civil magistrate.\* The ordinance is dated May 2, 1648, and ordains, “That all persons who shall willingly ‘maintain, publish or defend, by preaching or writing, the ‘following heresies with obstinacy, shall, upon complaint, ‘and proof, by the oaths of two witnesses, before two justices of the peace, or confession of the party, be committed ‘to prison, without bail or mainprize, till the next gaol delivery; and in case the indictment shall then be found, and ‘the party upon his trial shall not abjure his said error, and ‘his defence and maintenance of the same, he shall suffer ‘the pains of death,† as in case of felony, without benefit ‘of clergy; and if he recant or abjure, he shall remain in ‘prison till he find sureties that he will not maintain the ‘said heresies or errors any more; but if he relapse, and ‘is convicted a second time, he shall suffer death as before. ‘The heresies or errors are these following:

\* Mr. Neal has done himself honor by the strong terms of reprobation, in which he speaks of this intolerant, iniquitous, and cruel ordinance. It cannot be condemned in too severe terms: though Dr. Grey insinuates, that there was *occasion* for it in the “monstrous opinions,” as he calls them, which prevailed in those times; and for which he refers to Edwards’s *Gangræna*. “Besides the severity of the penalties, ‘which this ordinance denounced, the mode of process which it appointed,” as I have observed in another place, “was arbitrary and repugnant to the constitution of this country in particular, as well as opposite to the general principles of equity and justice: for it allowed ‘neither the privilege of a jury, nor the liberty of an appeal. Such is ‘the operation of religious bigotry.” See a REVIEW of the life, character, and writings of the Rev. John Biddle, p. 52. The nature of this ordinance is fully considered from p. 48—56. *Ed.*

† Death under Constantius, the son of Constantine, was made the punishment of Idolatry: the like sentence is here inflicted upon the worshippers of the one only living and true God, the creator and governor of the world. “How fluctuating and convertible,” observes an excellent writer, “are all penal laws in religion.”

*Dr. Disney’s Life of Dr. Jortin, p. 136-7. Ed.*



1. "That there is no God.
2. "That God is not omnipresent, omniscient, almighty, eternal, and perfectly holy.
3. "That the father is not God, that the son is not God, that the Holy Ghost is not God, or that these three are not one eternal God; or, that Christ is not God equal with the Father.
4. "The denial of the manhood of Christ, or that the godhead and manhood are distinct natures; or, that the humanity of Christ is pure and unspotted of all sin.
5. "The maintaining that Christ did not die, nor rise again, nor ascend into heaven bodily.
6. "The denying that the death of Christ is meritorious on the behalf of believers; or, that Jesus Christ is the son of God.
7. "The denying that the holy scriptures of the old and new testament are the word of God.
8. "The denying of the resurrection of the dead, and a future judgment."

The ordinance proceeds to specify some other errors of less demerit, and says, "That whosoever shall maintain or defend them, shall, upon conviction by the oaths of two witnesses, or by his own confession before two justices of peace, be ordered to renounce the said error or errors in the public congregation of the parish from whence the complaint comes, or where the offence was committed, and in case of refusal he shall be committed to prison till he find sureties that he shall not publish or maintain the said error or errors any more. The errors are these following;

1. "That all men shall be saved.
2. "That man by nature hath free will to turn to God,
3. "That God may be worshipped in, or by pictures or images.
4. "That the soul dies with the body, or after death goes neither to heaven, or hell, but to purgatory.
5. "That the soul of man sleeps, when the body is dead.
6. "That the revelations, or workings of the spirit, are a rule of faith or christian life, though diverse from, or contrary to the written word of God.

7. "That man is bound to believe no more than by his reason he can comprehend.

8. "That the moral law contained in the ten commandments is no rule of the christian life.

9. "That a believer need not repent, or pray for pardon of sin.

10. "That the two sacraments, of baptism and the Lord's supper, are not ordinances commanded by the word of God.

11. "That the baptism of infants is unlawful and void ; and that such persons ought to be baptized again.

12. "That the observation of the Lord's day, as enjoined by the ordinances and laws of this realm, is not according, or is contrary to the word of God.

13. "That it is not lawful to join in public or family prayer, or to teach children to pray.

14. "That the churches of England are no true churches, nor their ministers and ordinances true ministers and ordinances ; or, that the church government by presbyters is antichristian or unlawful.

15. "That magistracy, or the power of the civil magistrate, by law established in England, is unlawful.

16. "That all use of arms, though for the public defence (and be the cause never so just) is unlawful."

This *black list of heresies* was taken from the speeches or writings of the *papists*, *arminians*, *antinomians*, *arians*, *baptists*, and *quakers*, &c. of those times. The ordinance was a comprehensive engine of cruelty,\* and would have tortured great numbers of good christians and good subjects. The presbyterians of the present age are not only thankful that the confusion of the times did not permit their predecessors to put this law into execution, but wish also that it could be blotted out of the records of time, as it is impossible to brand it with the censure equal to its demerits.

\* The indignation which the liberal mind feels at the principles and spirit of those, who, themselves recently suffering under the hard hand of intolerance, could frame and pass such a law, is somewhat relieved by finding that it did not pass without much opposition.

Whitlocke's Memor. p. 302. Ed.

June 21, the army being still in the field, and the parliament at liberty, the ordinance for the more effectual settling the *presbyterian* government, without limitation of time, was read the second time and committed, and on the 29th of August it was perfected, and received the sanction of both houses, under the title of *A form of church government to be used in the churches of England and Ireland.*|| It is a collection of the several ordinances for establishing the branches of presbyterial government already mentioned, and ordains, that “all parishes and places whatsoever within England and Wales shall be under the government of congregational, cassical, provincial, and national assemblies, except the houses or chapels of the king and his children, and of the peers of the realm, which are to continue free for the exercise of divine duties, according to the *directory*, and not otherwise; it gives directions for the choice of ruling elders in every parish, and for proper persons to be judges of the qualifications of the persons chosen; it appoints commissioners to divide the whole kingdom into distinct classical presbyteries; it gives direction about the constituting of provincial and national synods, with the extent of their several powers; it determines the method of ordination of ministers, of dispensing church censures, and suspension from the sacrament; and last of all, it gives direction for excommunication and absolution,” but lays no penalty upon *recusants*, or such as do not come to the sacrament, or submit to their discipline; which was the utmost length that *presbytery* obtained in this kingdom.

The parliament having agreed to treat with the king without any preliminary conditions, sent the earl of *Middlesex*, Sir *John Hippisly*, and Mr. *Bulkely*, to acquaint his majesty with their resolutions, and to desire him to appoint what place he pleased in the Isle of Wight for the congress: his majesty seemed pleased with the message, and sent a letter to the two houses Aug. 10, desiring them to recal their votes, which forbad the access of his friends, and to direct that men of neccessary use in this affair may be permitted to assist him; and that the Scots be parties in the treaty.\* His majesty then appointed Newport in

|| Scobel, cap. cxvii. p. 165.

\* Rushworth, vol. ii. p. 4236.



the Isle of Wight for the place of conference. To all which the lords agreed without any restriction ; but the commons insisted, that no person lately in arms against the parliament be of the number ; that the Scots be not included ; and that if his majesty be at liberty as at Hampton-Court, he pass his royal word not to go out of the island during the treaty, nor twenty-eight days after, without consent of parliament.

Upon these conditions his majesty was conducted to Newport, and left at liberty upon his *parole of honor*. Several noblemen, gentlemen, divines, and lawyers, were appointed to assist him in the treaty, who were to stand behind his majesty's chair, and hear the debates, but not to speak, except when the king withdrew into another room for their advice ; the names of his divines were,† Dr. *Juxon* bishop of London, Dr. *Duppa* bishop of Salisbury, Dr. *Sheldon*, Dr. *Hammond*, Dr. *Oldisworth*, Dr. *Saunderson*, Dr. *Turner*, Dr. *Haywood* ; and towards the end of the treaty Dr. *Usher* archbishop of *Armagh*, Dr. *Bramhall*, Dr. *Prideaux*, Dr. *Warner*, Dr. *Ferne*, and Dr. *Morley* ; Dr. *Brownrigge*, bishop of Exeter, was also sent for, but he was under restraint. And Dr. *Sheldon*, Dr. *Hammond*, and Dr. *Oldisworth*, being also under restraint, were not permitted to stand.

The parliament appointed five noblemen, and ten commoners, with four divines, to assist them in their debates touching religion, viz. Mr. *Vines*, Mr. *Caryl*, Dr. *Seaman*, and Mr. *Marshall*. The treaty was to continue forty days, and to proceed upon the propositions of Hampton-court. || Sept. 12, the parliament observed a day of public fasting and prayer, for a blessing ; and some days after, the king and his household did the like, when after the public ser-

† According to Dr. P. Williams's MS. collections, to which Dr. Grey pays great deference, the order was limited to Dr. Juxon and Dr. Duppa : and Dr. Sheldon, Dr. Hammond, and Dr. Oldisworth, were not permitted to go to the king, being under restraint. But Mr. Neal's list, except as to these three, is confirmed by Whitlocke, with this difference, that Dr. Usher, Bambridge, Prideaux, Warner, Fern, and Morley, were not included in the first appointment ; but were allowed to attend the king in consequence of a message from him on the 3d of November. Memor. p. 341. Ed. || Rapin, vol. ii. p. 559.

vice the following prayer was read, drawn up by his majesty's direction.

“O MOST merciful Father, Lord God of peace and truth, we, a people, sorely afflicted by the scourge of an unnatural war, do earnestly beseech thee to command a blessing from heaven upon this present treaty, begging for the establishment of an happy peace. Soften the most obdurate hearts with a true christian desire of saving those men's blood for whom Christ himself hath shed his ; or if the guilt of our great sins cause this treaty to break off in vain, Lord, let the truth clearly appear, who those men are, who under pretence of the public good do pursue their own private ends ; that this people may be no longer so blindly miserable as not to see, at least in this their day, the things that belong to their peace. Grant this, gracious God, for his sake, who is our peace itself, even Jesus Christ our Lord.” *Amen.*

The conferences opened on Monday September 18, about nine in the morning, at the house of Sir *William Hodges*. The first day the commissioners presented the king with a draught of three bills ; the first to establish the *presbyterian* government‡ for ever in the church of England ; the second to relinquish the *militia* to the two houses for thirty years ; and the third to recall all his majesty's declarations against the parliament. To the last of these the king readily consented, but excepted to the preamble, in which were these words, *that the two houses of parliament had been necessitated to enter into a war in their just and lawful defence.*§ Instead of which, the king proposed an act of indemnity ; but the commissioners insisting peremptorily upon the words as those with-

‡ “The utter extinction of episcopacy, and their setting up their own idol in its stead, was the superior consideration for which, it is plain, the presbyterians had entered into the hazard of war : This was the chief cause of their quarrel with their old associates, the independents ; and the not being fully gratified on this article by the king, was, in their eyes, losing the best fruits of their success. The parliament's commissioners with earnestness, and even tears, assured the king, that all his concessions would be useless, unless he gave up the point of episcopacy : he absolutely refused farther yielding on this article, and the parliament voted his concessions unsatisfactory.”

*Macaulay's History of England, 8vo. vol. iv. p. 365, 66. Ed.*

§ *Rushworth, p. 1263.*



out which they could not be safe, his majesty with great reluctance consented, having first protested in writing, that *no concession of his should be binding if the treaty broke off without effect.* His majesty yielded the *militia* to the parliament for twenty years; and the management of the Irish war. He conceded to vacate those titles of honor that had been conferred since the carrying away the *great seal*, and to confirm the parliament's *great seal*. He agreed to the payment of the public debts, provided they were stated within two years; to confirm the charter of the city of London; to empower the parliament to confer offices, and constitute magistrates for twenty years; and to take away the court of wards, provided he might have fifty thousand pounds a year in lieu of it.\* His majesty consented further, that those of his party whom they call *delinquents*† should submit to a fine, or be proscribed the court, if the parliament saw fit; but he abhorred the thought of charging them with treason who had acted by his commission, and therefore absolutely refused to consent to it.

With regard to religion, his majesty agreed, October, 2, that “the assembly of divines at Westminster be confirmed for three years; that the *directory* and *presbyterian* government be confirmed for the same time, provided that neither himself, nor those of his judgment be obliged to comply with it; that a consultation in the meantime be had with the assembly, and twenty divines of his majesty's nomination, what form of church government shall be established afterwards, with a clause for the ease of tender consciences. His majesty consented further, that legal estates for lives, or for a term of years not exceeding ninety-nine, should be made out of the

\* It appears, by Dr. Grey's authority, Williams's MS. collection, whose account is confirmed by the representations which Mr. Hume and Mrs. Macaulay give of this matter, that Mr. Neal is mistaken about the sum granted in lieu of the wards; which was not 50,000*l.* but 100,000*l.* Since this was written, I find the matter put out of all doubt by Whitlocke, p. 341, who says, that 100,000*l.* was the sum. *Ed.*

† Dr. Grey has given at length the act proposed by the parliament's commissioners relative to delinquents: whom the king absolutely refused to give up. “The severe repentance, which he had undergone for abandoning Strafford, had no doubt,” remarks Mr. Hume, “confirmed him in the resolution never again to be guilty of the like error.” *Ed.*



‘bishops’ lands and revenues, for the satisfaction of them  
 ‘that have purchased them, provided that the inheritance  
 ‘may still remain to the church, and the rest be preserved  
 ‘for their maintenance. His majesty will consent further,  
 ‘to an act for the better observation of the *Lord’s-day*; for  
 ‘suppressing innovations in churches and chapels; for the  
 ‘better advancing of preaching God’s holy word; and  
 ‘against pluralities and non-residence. To an act for reg-  
 ‘ulating and reforming the universities, and the colleges  
 ‘of Westminsier, Winchester, and Eton; for the better  
 ‘discovery of papists, and for the educating their children  
 ‘in the protestant religion. To an act for better putting  
 ‘the laws in execution against papists, and to prevent the  
 ‘hearing and saying mass; but as to the *covenant*, his ma-  
 ‘jesty is not as yet satisfied to sign or swear to it, or con-  
 ‘sent to impose it on the consciences of others.”†

These concessions about church government being de-  
 clared not satisfactory, as amounting only to a sort of *inte-*  
*rim*, his majesty desired to confer with the parliament di-  
 vines for the satisfaction of his conscience, having been bred  
 and instructed (as he said) in the way he stands for, by his  
*father*, the wisest king and best man in the world, and  
 therefore could not easily yield. There is hardly any thing  
 to be met with in this conference but what has been already  
 taken notice of in his majesty’s debate with Mr. *Henderson*,  
 and in the answer of the *smectymnuan* divines to bishop  
*Hall*, in the *first volume* of this history; and therefore it  
 will be the less necessary to enter into the particulars of  
 the debate. His majesty proposed some scruples in law  
 about the obligation of his *coronation oath*, which the com-  
 missioners undertook to answer themselves; but the papers  
 relating to the *unalterable institution of episcopacy* were  
 referred to the *divines* on both sides, and were as follow :

*The king’s first paper.*

“CHARLES REX,

Newport, Oct. 2, 1648.

“I conceive that *episcopal government* is most consonant  
 ‘to the word of God and of an apostolical institution, as it

† Rushworth, p. 1231.

‘appears by the scripture to have been practised by the  
 ‘apostles themselves, and by them committed and derived  
 ‘to particular persons as their substitutes or successors  
 ‘therein, (as for ordaining presbyters and deacons, giving  
 ‘rules concerning christian discipline, and exercising cen-  
 ‘sures over presbyters and others)† and has ever since, till  
 ‘these last times, been exercised by bishops in all the  
 ‘churches of Christ; and therefore I cannot in conscience  
 ‘consent to abolish the said government.

“Notwithstanding this my persuasion, I will be glad to  
 ‘be informed, if our Savior and his apostles did so leave  
 ‘the church at liberty, as they might totally alter or change  
 ‘the church government at their pleasure, which if you  
 ‘can make appear to me, then I will confess that one of  
 ‘my great scruples is clean taken away, and then there  
 ‘only remains,

“That being by my coronation oath obliged to maintain  
 ‘episcopal government, as I found it settled to my hands,  
 ‘whether I may consent to the abolishing thereof until the  
 ‘same shall be evidenced to me to be contrary to the word  
 ‘of God.”\*

The parliament divines, in answer to the first part of his  
 majesty’s paper, admit, that the apostles did exercise the  
*extraordinary powers* his majesty mentions; but deny, that  
 they conferred them upon any particular persons as their  
 substitutes or *successors*, and insist, that in scripture there  
 are only two orders of officers, viz. *bishops* and *deacons*; *Phil. i. 1, To the saints at Philippi that are in Christ Je-*  
*sus, with the bishops and deacons*; and that the *name, office,*  
*and work* of a *bishop* and a *presbyter* is the same, as in  
*Titus i. 5, and 7; For this cause left I thee in Crete—that*  
*thou shouldst ordain presbyters in every city; for a bishop*  
*must be blameless. Acts xx. 27, 28; Paul called the*  
*presbyters together, and charged them to take heed to the*  
*flock over which the Holy Ghost had made them bishops. ||*  
*1 Pet. v. 1, 2. The presbyters among you I exhort, who*

† Acts vi. 6. xiv. 23. 1 Cor. v. 3. xiv. and xvi. 1. 3 John ix. 10.  
 1 Tim. v. 19, 22. Titus i. 5. iii. 10. Rev. ii. 3.

\* Rel. Carol. vol. ii. p. 245.

|| Episcopous.



also am a presbyter, feed the flock of God among you, performing the office of bishops.\* As the apostles were extraordinary officers, so were *Timothy* and *Titus*, (viz.) evangelists, but neither of them are called *bishops* in scripture, much less were they fixed to Ephesus or Crete, but travelled up and down to settle churches in several countries. They observe further, that in the same order of officers there was not any one superior to another; no apostle above an apostle, no presbyter, above a presbyter, nor one deacon above another. They add, that the *angels* of the churches in the revelations are never called *bishops*, nor is the word used in any of *St. John's* writings, who calls himself a *presbyter*; from whence they argue the identity of these offices in scripture, and the equality of the officers. They admit, that not long after the apostles' times bishops are reported to have some superiority above presbyters, but this was not a divine, but an *ecclesiastical* institution, as is evident from the testimony of the most ancient fathers and the most considerable writers in the Romish church; to which they add the suffrage of the first reformers in king *Henry the Eighth's* reign. The *erudition of a christian man*, printed 1643, says expressly, that the scripture mentions but two orders, *i. e. bishops or priests, and deacons*. They conclude with observing, that the modern episcopacy is very different from that which began to obtain in the second and third ages of the church, insomuch that the present hierarchy, being an *human institution*, might be abolished, and the other remain.

After three days his majesty, with the assistance of his learned divines, replied to the foregoing paper, and acknowledges, "that the words *bishop* and *presbyter* are 'sometimes confounded in scripture; he admits, that presbyters are *episcopi gregis*, bishops of the flocks; but 'that *bishops* are *episcopi gregis & pastorum* within their 'several precincts, *i. e. bishops of the flock and of the pastors too*; and that soon after, common usage appropriated '*bishop* to the ecclesiastical governor, leaving *presbyter* 'to signify the ordinary minister or *priest*, as appears 'from the ancient fathers and councils. He admits the 'calling of the apostles and their gifts to be extraordinary,

\* *Episcopantes.*



“but adds, that their mission to *govern* and *teach* was ordinary and perpetual; that the bishops succeeded them in the former, and presbyters in the latter function.\*

“His majesty still insists, that *Timothy* and *Titus* were *bishops*, as appears from antiquity, and by a catalogue of twenty-seven bishops of Ephesus lineally descending from *Timothy*, as is avouched by Dr. *Reynolds* against *Hart*; and therefore the distinction between an *evangelist* and a *bishop* is without foundation, the work of an evangelist being no more than *diligence in preaching the word, notwithstanding all impediments*, according to the apostle, 2 *Tim.* ii. 4, 5. His majesty observes, that the parliament divines had said nothing to prove that the angels of the churches were not *personæ singulares*, and such as had a prelacy over pastors, *i. e. bishops*, but that they dealt only in generals, and seemed unwilling to speak their opinions about them.

His majesty affirms, “that *bishops* are the successors of the apostles in all things not extraordinary, such as *teaching* and *governing*; and the reasons why they are not mentioned as a *distinct order* in the *new-testament*, are, 1. Because the apostles reserved to themselves the government of those churches where they appointed presbyters, and so it is probable the *Philippians* had no bishop when *Paul* wrote to them. 2. Because in the epistles to *Timothy* and *Titus*, the persons to whom he wrote being themselves bishops, there was no need to write about the qualifications of any other officers than those they wanted, which were presbyters and deacons only.

His majesty admits, concerning the ages after the apostles, “That they are but a human testimony, and yet may be infallible in matter of fact, as we infallibly know that *Aristotle* was a Greek philosopher, &c. he avers the genuineness of those epistles of *Ignatius*, which give testimony to the superiority of a bishop above a presbyter; and though his majesty’s royal progenitors had enlarged the power and privileges of bishops, he conceives the government to be substantially the same.”

\* Rel. Carol. p. 260.

Eleven days after the parliament divines replied to the king's second paper, in which they say, that they can find no such partition of the apostolical office in scripture, as his majesty mentions, (viz.) that the *governing part* should be committed to bishops, *the teaching and administering the sacraments* to presbyters; but that the whole work, *per omnia*, belongs to presbyters, as appears from the two words used in the *Acts* of the *Apostles* and *St. Peter's* epistle, *poimainein*, and *episcoperein*, under the force of which words the bishops claim their whole right of government and jurisdiction; and when the apostle *Paul* was taking leave of the Ephesian presbyters and bishops, he commits the *government* of the church, not to *Timothy*, who was then at his elbow, but to the *presbyters*, under the name of bishops made by the Holy Ghost: from whence they conclude, that bishops and presbyters must be only two names of the same order.\* They observe, that the obscurity of church history in the times succeeding the apostles made the *catalogue makers* take up their succession upon report; and it is a blemish to their evidence, that the nearer they come to the days of the apostles, they are the more doubtful and contradictory. These divines are therefore of opinion, that human testimony on both sides ought to be discharged, and the point in debate be determined only by scripture. And here they take hold of his majesty's concession, that in scripture the names of bishops and presbyters are not distinguished; and that there is no mention but of two orders, bishops and deacons. They desire his majesty to shew them, where the scripture has assigned any particular work or duty to a *bishop* that is not common to a *presbyter*, for they apprehend his majesty's asserting that a bishop is an ecclesiastical governor, and a presbyter an ordinary minister, is without any demonstration or evidence; a few clear passages of scripture for the proof of this (they say) would bring the point to an issue. They deny his majesty's distinction of *episcopi gregis & pastorum*, *bishop of sheep and shepherds*, as being the point in question, and affirmed without any evidence.—That the office of *teaching* and *governing* was ordinary in the apostles, because continued in the church (we crave leave to say) is that great

\* Rel. Carol. p. 277.



mistake which runs through the whole file of your majesty's discourse ; for though there be a succession in the work of teaching and governing, there is no succession in the *commission or office*, by which the apostles performed them ; a succession may be to the same work, but not to the same commission ; and since your majesty cannot produce any record from scripture warranting the division of the office of *teaching* and *governing* into two hands, we must look upon it as an invention of men to get the power into their hands.

These divines go on with a long proof that *Timothy* and *Titus* were evangelists ; that is, not fixed to one place, but travelling with the apostles from one country to another to plant churches, and accordingly have drawn out an account of their travels from the *Acts of the apostles*, and *St. Paul's epistles*. They observe the weakness of his majesty's reasons, why bishops are not mentioned as a *distinct order* in scripture, and add a third of their own, viz. because really, *they were not*. As for the apostles reserving in their own hands the *power of governing*, they admit, that they could no more part with it than with their apostleship. Had they set up bishops in all churches, they had no more parted with their power of *governing*, than in setting up presbyters ; presbyters being called *rulers, governors, and bishops* ; nor could the apostles reasonably be supposed to commit the government of the church of Ephesus to the presbyters, when he was taking his last farewell of them, and yet reserve the power of governing (in ordinary) to himself. His majesty's other reason (they say) is inconclusive, and in sort begging the question. They add, that it is very unaccountable, that if there had been two sorts of bishops, one *over presbyters*, and the other *over the flock*, that there should be no mention, no mark of difference, no distinct method of ordination, by which they might be distinguished, throughout the whole *new testament*.

As to the ages after the apostles, they admit there were *presbyter bishops*, but not of divine institution ; that the catalogues of succession are undoubtedly defective, but if they were not, it remains still to be proved, that the *bishops* in the catalogue were vested with the *jurisdiction* which the modern bishops claim.



These divines profess to honor the pious intentions of his majesty's ancestors, and admit, that ornamental accessions to the person make no substantial change in the office, but that the primitive episcopacy, and the present hierarchy, are essentially different. They acknowledge a subordination of the exercise of jurisdiction to the civil power, and the laws of the land; and conclude with thanks to his majesty's condescension, in allowing them to examine his learned reply, clothed in such excellence of stile, and pray, that a pen in the hand of such abilities may ever be employed on a subject worthy of it.

Some days after his majesty offered his last paper, wherein "he acknowledges the great pains of these divines to inform his judgment, and takes particular notice of the decency of their manner, and of their respectful address to him upon this occasion, but says they mistook him, when they spoke of a writ of partition of the episcopal office; whereas his meaning was, that the office of *teaching* was common both to the bishop and presbyter, but that *government* was peculiar to the bishop."† His majesty declines answering to all the particulars, because he would not draw out the dispute into a greater length, but seems unconvinced by any thing that had been offered; he affirms, that *Timothy* and *Titus* were *episcopi pastorum*, bishops over presbyters; and that *Timothy* had a distinct work from presbyters, that is, that he *might know how to behave himself in the exercise of his episcopal office*. His majesty relies on the numerous testimonies of ancient and modern writers, for the scripture original of bishops, and adds, that the testimonies of an equal number of equal credit to the contrary will signify nothing, because one witness for the *affirmative* ought to be of more value than ten for the *negative*.—In conclusion his majesty put them upon evidencing one of these three things, (1.) Either that there is no form of church government prescribed in scripture. Or, (2.) If there be, that the civil power may change it as they see cause. Or, (3.) If it be unchangeable, that it was not *episcopal*, but some other that they will name, for till this is done he shall think himself excusable for not consenting to

† Rel. Carol. p. 324.

the abolishing that government which he found settled at his coronation ; which is so ancient, has been so universally received in the christian world, has been confirmed by so many acts of parliament, and subscribed by all the clergy of the church of England. But the ministers declined entering into so large a field, which must have brought on a debate concerning the whole ecclesiastical polity of the church.

These were all the papers which passed on both sides, and deserve the notice of those who would enter into this controversy. His majesty saying, that one witness for the affirmative, that *episcopacy is of divine institution*, ought to be of more value than ten for the negative, is (I apprehend) one of the weakest and most frivolous arguments of his letter ; for it is only changing the form of the question, and making the presbyterian say, that *presbytery is of divine institution*, and then asking his majesty, or any episcopal divine, whether *one affirmative* testimony ought not to be of more value than *ten negative ones* of equal merit. His majesty's stile is strong and masculine, and that of the parliament divines decent and respectful. Sir *Phil. Warwick* read the king's papers before the commissioners, and Mr. *Vines* those of the ministers : all was managed with the greatest propriety, which makes it hard to excuse lord *Clarendon's* account of the behavior of these divines, who says,\* “ they all behaved with that rudeness, as if they ‘meant to be no longer subject to a king any more than to ‘a bishop ; that they inveighed bitterly against the pride ‘and lustre of lord bishops ; that two of them very plainly ‘and fiercely told the king, that if he did not consent to the ‘utter abolishing of bishops he would be damned ; the men ‘were *Spurstow* and *Jenkins*, who, after the return of King ‘*Charles II.* according to the modesty of that race of people, came to kiss his majesty's hand.” And yet neither of the divines above-mentioned were nominated to assist at the treaty, nor had any share in the debates. Mr. *Baxter* says, *all the parliament divines came off with great honor*. But such is his lordship's or his editor's candor towards any thing that looks like a presbyterian !

The king's second difficulty, relating to his coronation

*oath*, by which he apprehended himself bound to maintain episcopal government as he found it settled when he received the crown, the commissioners did not think so proper for the discussion of divines, because it depended upon the law of the land, and therefore took this part of the debate upon themselves. The king conceived, *that the consent of the clergy themselves in convocation assembled, was necessary, before they could be deprived of those possessions and privileges of which they were legally possessed.* But the commissioners maintained, that the legislature alone was to determine in this case, as it had done at the reformation; that it was not to be supposed, that any body of men would consent to part with their possessions if they could keep them; but *if the legislature judged any part of the king's coronation oath hurtful to the public, it was certainly in their power, with the consent of the king, to alter or annul it.*—One may justly ask how this branch of the coronation oath should stick so much with the king, when it was notorious that his government for almost fifteen years had been one continued breach of *magna charta*, and an encroachment upon the civil liberties of his subjects?

But neither party would accede to the other, though the article of religion was almost the only point that hindered the conclusion of the treaty; his majesty wondered at the shyness and reluctance of the parliament divines to debate his three questions, and told them plainly, that their endeavors to give him satisfaction in them, would have added to the reputation of their ingenuity in the whole undertaking, it not being probable that they should work much upon his judgment, while they were fearful to declare their own; or possible to relieve his conscience but by a free declaring of *theirs*.† But what was all this to the point? the only question before them was, *whether diocesan episcopacy was of divine institution?* if they had satisfied his majesty in that, they had discharged their duty; to launch out farther was to lose time, and protract the treaty beyond its limits. If *diocesan episcopacy* was not *scriptural*, it might be abolished, which was all the parliament contended for at present.\* But the king's divines encouraged

† Rushworth, p. 1291.

\* Ibid. p. 1301, 1302.



him to dispute every inch of ground, and instead of yielding any one point to the ministers, to start new difficulties, till his ruin was inevitable. However, towards the close of the treaty, when the victorious army was returning towards London, and things almost come to an extremity, his majesty told the *commissioners*, “that though he could not with a good conscience consent to the abolishing of episcopacy, because he believed the substance of it to be of apostolical institution, he was willing to reduce it to the primitive usage; and if his two houses should so advise, he would be content to lessen the extent, and multiply the number of dioceses. He still apprehended the entire alienation of the bishops lands by sale to be sacrilege.—He was willing to assent to the calling and sitting of the assembly of divines as desired.—He would also confirm the public use of the *directory* in all churches and chapels, and would repeal so much of all statutes as concerned the book of *common prayer* only; provided the use thereof might be continued in his majesty’s chapel for himself and his household; and that the same [*i. e.* the *directory*] should be confirmed by act of parliament for three years, provided a consultation be had in the meantime with the assembly of divines as before mentioned.—Touching the articles of religion [*the assembly’s confession*] his majesty desired further time to examine them before he bound up himself and his subjects in matters of faith and doctrine.—His majesty will consent to an act for better observation of the Lord’s-day, and to prevent saying of mass.—But as to the *covenant*, his majesty was not satisfied to take it, nor to impose it upon others.”

These concessions being voted unsatisfactory by the two houses at Westminster, his majesty consented further, October 21. 1st, “That archbishops, chancellors, deans, and the whole hierarchy, be abolished, except *bishops*. 2. That none but the *presbyterian* government be exercised for *three years*. 3. That in case no settlement should be agreed upon within that time, that then for the future the power of ordination should not be exercised by *bishops* without the counsel and assistance of *presbyters*; that no other episcopal jurisdiction should be exercised but such as should be agreed upon in parliament;

‘and if within that time his majesty should be convinced that *episcopacy* is not agreeable to the word of God, or that Christ commanded any other government, he will embrace it, and take *episcopacy* quite away.” The houses being still dissatisfied with these concessions, his majesty added, Nov. 4, “That he would make no new bishops for three years ; and for further satisfaction of the parliament, he would not insist upon the use of the *common-prayer* in his own chapel for that time, but would make use of some other form of divine service for himself, and forbid mass to be said in the queen’s chapel.” This was his majesty’s final answer, which the commons voted unsatisfactory, and ordered the commissioners to acquaint him with their votes.

The treaty was prolonged three weeks after this, in which time the commissioners did all that was in their power to obtain his majesty’s consent, beseeching him with tears upon their bended knees, since matters were brought to so narrow a compass, to yield up the point of *religion*. In their last paper, of Nov. 20, they beseech him to consider, “that it is not the *apostolical bishop* which the parliament desire him to abolish, but that *episcopacy* which was formerly established by law in this kingdom, and has been found by experience to be an hindrance to piety, a grievance to the subject, an encroachment upon the power of the civil magistrate, and so a burthen to the persons, purses, and consciences of men. They do not meddle with the *apostolical bishop*, nor determine what that bishop was whom the apostles mention in the scripture ; but they are for putting *him* down by a law *who* was set up by a law ; and certainly nothing can be more proper for parliaments, than to alter, repeal, or make laws, which appear to them for the good of the commonwealth.

“But admitting *apostolical bishops* were within the purport of this bill, we humbly conceive it does not follow, that therefore in conscience it must not be passed, for we may not grant, that no occasion can make that alterable which has foundation only in the *practice* of the apostles, and not in a *precept*.\* Some things have certainly

\* For the king’s answer, see Dr. Grey’s examination, p. 342, &c. *Ed.*



‘been altered which the apostles practised ; circumstances  
‘many times change the nature of moral actions ; for the at-  
‘taining a great good, or the avoiding a great evil, that  
‘which singly considered is not fit to be done, and per-  
‘haps would be a fault if it were, may become a duty,  
‘and a man may be bound in conscience to do it. And if  
‘ever circumstances could have a more powerful and  
‘considerable influence than in this juncture, we leave to  
‘your majesty’s consideration. But this is said only  
‘for argument sake, admitting but not granting the grounds  
‘on which your majesty is pleased to go, in refusing to  
‘pass this bill.”§ The strength of the commissioners,  
reasoning upon this head may be seen at once in this  
short syllogism ; *whatsoever is not of divine institution*  
*may be very lawfully altered, changed, or reversed. But*  
*the episcopacy which is established in the church of Eng-*  
*land is not that episcopacy mentioned in scripture ; there-*  
*fore the laws which established it may take it away.*

The commissioners go on, “As for the sale of bishops  
‘lands, which your majesty conceives to be sacrilege, we  
‘humbly offer that, bishoprics being dissolved, their lands  
‘revert to the crown, which is their foundation and patron,  
‘and heretofore held it no sacrilege to dispose of bishops  
‘lands to its own and other uses by act of parliament, which  
‘was an ordinary practice in your majesty’s predecessors,  
‘kings and queens of this nation. Besides, in all ages, even  
‘under the ceremonial law, imminent and urgent necessity  
‘has dispensed with the alienation of consecrated things.†

“Your majesty is pleased to say, *You cannot communi-*  
‘*cate in a public form of divine service, where it is uncer-*  
‘*tain what the minister will offer to God.* But we be-  
‘seech your majesty to be informed, that the *directory* sets  
‘down the matter of the prayer which the minister is to use ;  
‘words and expressions for enlargement being left to his  
‘discretion. But give us leave to add, that this ought to  
‘be no objection with your majesty, for then one must not  
‘hear any prayer before sermon, for here every minister  
‘has a several form, which he varies according to occasion.

§ Rushworth, p. 1335. Whitlocke, p. 351.

† Dr. Grey, p. 345, has given his majesty’s reply. *Ed.*



“ Upon the whole therefore we humbly hope, that your majesty, after a most serious consideration, will discern the just cause which the two houses have for remaining unsatisfied with your majesty’s concessions, *with relation to the church*, for they are apprehensive that after the expiration of the three years in which episcopal government is to be suspended, a bishop so qualified as your majesty expresses will rise again; for if you should not in the mean time agree with your parliament upon any other form of government, which depends wholly upon your majesty’s pleasure, no other government can be set up; and then this episcopacy will return with so great power, that the bishop may choose whether any minister at all shall be made in the church of England, and those that shall must be at his devotion, he having the negative voice in ordination, which we humbly conceive is no where declared in scripture to be the prerogative of an *apostolical bishop*.

“ We humbly say further, that the charging bishops lands with leases for ninety-nine years is not sufficient, because there is a rent reserved to the bishop, and the property will continue as before; so that it cannot be expected that the *presbyterian government* should be complied with, and exercised with profit or comfort to the church, as long as a door is left open for the return of a superior power upon the first opportunity.

“ We hope your majesty will pardon our pressing in this manner; our intention is not to offer violence to your majesty’s conscience, but to endeavor to inform it in a matter that appears to the two houses of so great consequence. We again humbly beseech your majesty to review our former papers; call to mind those reasons and arguments which in debate have been used upon this subject, with such others as your own wisdom shall suggest, and then be pleased to give your royal consent to the particulars above specified, that both yourself and your people may have cause to rejoice.”

The committee of states in Scotland joined with the parliament commissioners in beseeching his majesty to accede

to the *proposition about religion*, which they understood to be the point his majesty most stuck at, and which they in honor and interest were obliged most to insist upon, and without which (they add) *his throne cannot be established in righteousness*.\* They also wrote to the *prince of Wales* to mediate with his father. The *general assembly*, and the commissioners of the kirk of Scotland, sent at the same time two angry letters, for (it was said) *they* would speak more plainly in the name of their *master*, than the commissioners of estates would venture to do in their own. But his majesty was deaf to all remonstrances and persuasions, being determined, if his two houses did not think fit to recede from the rigor of their demands in these particulars, to cast himself (as he said) on his *Savior's* goodness to support and defend him from all afflictions, how great soever, which might befall him, rather than upon politic considerations deprive himself of the tranquillity of his mind; and therefore, excepting his majesty's *consent to license the assembly's lesser catechism with a proper preface*, in all other matters in difference he resolved to abide by his former answers.

At the close of the treaty the king made a short speech to the commissioners, in which he reminds them how far he had condescended for the sake of peace. He desired them to put a good interpretation on his vehement expressions on some part of the debates, there being nothing in his intentions but kindness; and that as they had used a great deal of freedom, and shewed great abilities in their debates, which had taken him off from some of his opinions, that they would use the same freedom with his two houses, to press them to an abatement of those things in which his conscience was not yet satisfied, which more time might do, his opinions not being like the laws of the Medes and Persians unalterable or infallible; adding his very hearty thanks for the pains they had taken to satisfy him, professing that he wanted eloquence to commend their abilities.† He desired them candidly to represent all the transactions of the treaty to his two houses, that they might see nothing of his own interest, how near or dear soever,

\* Rushworth, p. 1304.

† Clarendon, p. 224. Rushworth, p. 1326, 1334.

§ Vol. Pam. No. 82.



(but that wherein his conscience is not satisfied) can hinder, on his part, an happy conclusion of the treaty.

The king's concessions were certainly a sufficient foundation for peace with the *presbyterians*, if they could have been relied upon, and were so voted by the parliament when it was too late. His majesty had given up the main pillars of the hierarchy, by consenting to abolish archbishops, deans, and chapters, and that a bishop should not act without his presbyters; which was archbishop *Usher's* scheme, and all that the *puritans* at first contended for; but the Scots and the English *presbyterians*, grown lofty in power, and being less apprehensive of danger from the army, than they ought, concluded they could not fail of their whole establishment in a few weeks, though there was not the least provision for *liberty of conscience for dissenters*, which they might have been sensible would occasion high discontents in the army. The commissioners were disposed to an accommodation, and took all opportunities to assure his majesty, that if he would but yield for a time, things should be made easy to him afterwards. But the truth is, as the king would not trust the parliament, so neither would they the king, because they observed, (1.) His dilatoriness in the treaty, as if he waited for some advantageous turn of affairs to revoke his concessions. (2.) His resolute disputing every inch of ground without yielding a single proposition, or none of any considerable moment. (3.) His majesty's maxim, *that what was yielded out of necessity was not binding when the restraint was taken off*. (4.) They suspected his sincerity, because the duke of *Ormond* was at this very time treating with the Irish rebels by his majesty's commission, which he would not recal. §

§ The preceding assertions of Mr. Neal much displease Dr. Grey; he contradicts them, and endeavors to confront them with facts. He challenges Mr. Neal to produce one single well-attested fact to support his reflection on the king's sincerity. The appeal, for the truth of the charge may be made to the reader, who has accompanied Charles through his reign, and observed his conduct on various occasions. The appeal may be made to the facts, that have been collected in Dr. Harris's "Historical and Critical account of Charles I." p. 72. 83, and in "An Essay towards a true Idea of the character of king Charles I." p. 93-102. We may also refer to what has been before advanced on this point. It suffices to add here the authority of Ludlow only; who says, "that the duplicity of the king's dealings with the parliament



(5.) They remembered his majesty's artful manner of interpreting away his concessions. (6.) They gave out that he was not his own master, but that his conscience was under the direction of his *divines*, who would put him upon all extremes for their support. (7.) They were incensed at the murders and depredations of the cavalier soldiers, even after they were beaten out of the field, and were afraid of their recovering the management of public affairs. And *lastly*, They were as firmly persuaded of the divine institution of presbytery, and the obligation of the *covenant*, as the king and his divines were of the *jus divinum* of episcopacy.

'manifestly appeared in his own papers, taken at the battle of Naseby 'and elsewhere.'" Ludlow's Memoirs, 4to. 1771, p. 114.—Dr. Grey asserts against Mr. Neal, that "from the MS. treaty it is manifest, that 'there was not the last delay on the king's part.'" But he forgets the *duration* of the treaty, which was to continue forty days only; and, commencing on the 18th of September, did not close till towards the end of November: and would not have ended then, if the army had not seized his majesty. For the answers of the king were voted "to be a 'ground only for the house to proceed on to settle the peace of the king-'dom.'" Whitlocke's Memoirs, p. 353.—But the length of the treaty could arise only from the king's not at first yielding to the propositions made by the commissioners. Mr. Neal's next assertion, that the king 'disputed every inch of ground' is implied in the duration of the treaty, and it is proved by the quotation, which Mr. Neal, a little farther on, makes from Whitlocke. But Dr. Grey attempts to disprove it, by bringing forward three concessions made in one day, the 21st of October, by the king. The reader will determine, whether an exception drawn from the transactions of *one* day can disprove an assertion which applies to a treaty depending more than seventy days: and those concessions, he will consider, were not yielded till the forty days, originally appointed for the continuance of the treaty, were drawing to an end. In opposition to our author's fourth reason, Dr. Grey produces from William's MS. collections, a letter of the king, 25th of November, to the commissioners, in which he informs them, (sending at the same time the letter itself for their perusal) that he had written to the marquis of Ormond, "acquainting him with such informations as he had 'received from the two houses concerning his proceedings in that king-'dom, and requiring him to desist from any farther prosecution of the 'same. And in case he shall refuse, his majesty will then make such 'publique declaration against his powers and proceedings as is desired.'"—Notwithstanding this, Mr. Neal spoke on authority. For on the 21st of November, the house received letters from the Isle of Wight, "that 'the king refused to pass any thing against the marquis of Ormond, un-'till the treaty be wholly ended." Whitlocke's Mem. p. 350. See also Lord Clarendon, vol. iii. p. 222. *Ed.*

Yet under all these prepossessions, lord *Clarendon* observes some of the commissioners found means to advertise the king in private, “that they were of his majesty’s judgment about church government, which they hoped might be preserved, but not by the method his majesty pursued; that all the reasonable hope of preserving the crown was in dividing the parliament and the army, which could be done no other way than by giving satisfaction with reference to the church. This might probably unite the parliament and the city of London, and enable them to bring his majesty to London with honor, where he might have an opportunity of gaining more abatements than he could ever expect by refusing to sign the preliminaries. Many advertisements came from his majesty’s friends in London, and other places, that it was high time the treaty was at an end, before the army drew nearer London, which it would shortly do, as soon as those in the north had finished their works.” Sir *J. Browning* intreated his majesty, in his closet, to make all his concessions in one declaration, at one instant, and in one day. The parliament commissioners were no less importunate with the king, but he was inflexible, and usually out of humor. Remarkable are the words of Mr. *Whitlocke*, speaking of the above-mentioned concessions: “More than this could not be obtained, though most earnestly begged of his majesty by some of the commissioners (great persons) with tears, and upon their knees, particularly as to the proposition concerning *religion*, wherein church government, public worship, and chiefly the revenues of the church, swayed more with the *king’s chaplains* than about him; and they more with his majesty (continually whispering matters of conscience to him) than the parliament, and all his commissioners, could prevail with him for an agreement, though possibly his own judgment (which was above all theirs) might not be so fully convinced by his eager divines about him.”\* But *these* had possession of his majesty’s conscience, and directed his answers:§ and though they

|| Book xi. p. 217.

\* *Whitlocke’s Memoirs* p. 325.

§ Dr. Grey is displeased with this representation, and impeaches the truth of it. He says, that when Mr. Vines took the freedom to observe,



abhorred the thoughts of deposing the king, or putting him to death, it ought to be considered, whether their stiff and imprudent behavior did not manifestly contribute to that catastrophe.

His majesty being thus entangled, was pleased, before the breaking up of the treaty, to send for archbishop *Usher*, and asked him this question, *Whether he found in all antiquity, that presbyters alone ordained any?* To which the archbishop replied frankly, that he could shew his majesty more than that, *even that presbyters alone had successively ordained bishops*, and instanced in *St. Jerom's* words, in his *Epist. ad Evagrium*, where he says, the presbyters of Alexandria chose and made their own bishops from the days of *Mark* the apostle till *Heracelus* and *Dionysius*.\* At the same time the archbishop offered his majesty his own scheme for the reduction of episcopacy to the form of presbytery, which his majesty had formerly rejected, but was now at length willing to accept, as the archbishop himself told *Mr. Baxter*; but the Scots and English *presbyterians* were grown so stubborn that they would not acquiesce.

Though the commissioners had no power to recede from their instructions, the treaty was prolonged from time to time, in hopes that something or other might gain upon the king; but his majesty was frequently out of temper, and treated the commissioners with no degree of confidence. The forty days to which the treaty was limited being ended Oct. 28, it was enlarged for fourteen days, and then for seven, and so on to the 28th of November, for which (says lord *Clarendon*†) his majesty was nothing glad; nor did his friends in the house desire the prolongation, it being moved by those that wished the treaty might have no good effect, to give the army time to finish their summer's work, and return to London. On the last day of the treaty, when the commissioners pressed his majesty to consider, that

‘that possibly his majesty’s scruples were not so much in his own as other men’s,’ the king a little warmly replied; ‘That it was a mistake; for his scruples were really his own. and contained in his first paper.’ The doctor did not reflect, that few men are willing to have it supposed, and more unwilling to own, *that they are led*. But however this was, *Mr. Neal* is supported by the authority of *Mr. Whitlocke*. *Ed.*

\* *Baxter's Life*, p. 206.

† *Vol. iii. p. 322.*



there was not one whole day to determine the fate of the kingdom, and that nothing could save his majesty from the growing power of the army, but giving his two houses satisfaction in the particular of the church, "then (says lord *Clarendon*\*) his majesty's own council, and the divines, besought him to consider the safety of his person, even for the church's sake, which had no prospect of being preserved but by his life, that the unavoidable necessity that lay upon him obliged him to do any thing that was not sin." And why did they not do this sooner? However, it seems *they could only prevail for a suspension of the episcopal power in point of ordination and jurisdiction, till he and the two houses should agree what government should be established for the future.* Which was the substance of all his majesty intended by his concessions. After supper the *commissioners* took their leave, and having kissed his majesty's hand, began their journey next morning towards London. It is intrepid language that Mr. *Warwick* puts into the king's mouth on this occasion: His majesty said to him one night, "I am like a captain that has defended a place well, and his superiors not being able to relieve him he had leave to surrender it: but though they cannot relieve me in the time, let them relieve me when they can, else (says he) I will hold it out till I make some stone in this building my tombstone; and so I will do by the church of England."

Lord *Clarendon* is of opinion, "that the major part of both houses, as well as the *commissioners*, were at this time so far from desiring the execution of all their concessions, that if they had been able to have resisted the wild fury of the army, they would themselves have been suitors to have declined the greatest part of them." And were not the king's counsellors and divines sensible of this? Why then did they trifle away a month in fruitless debates, when it was evident to all men that the king's condition became more desperate every day?

Thus ended the famous treaty at Newport, which like all the former proved unsuccessful, chiefly from an incurable jealousy between the contending parties, which how reasonable it was on either side must be left with the reader.

\* Book xi. or vol. iii. p. 227.

The noble historian observes, that the king sent the prince of *Wales* a journal of the proceedings of the treaty, and an exact copy of all the papers that had passed to the 29th of November, together with a letter of six sheets of paper written with his majesty's own hand, containing the reasons and motives of all his concessions. The conclusion of the letter, his lordship says, deserves to be preserved in letters of gold, as it gives the best character of that excellent prince; but the copy does not, in my opinion, resemble the original. Some passages of it are these: "—We have labored long in search of peace, do not you be disheartened to tread in the same steps.—Prefer the way of peace—conquer your enemies by pardoning rather than by punishing—Never affect more greatness or prerogative than that which is really and intrinsically for the good of your subjects, not the satisfaction of favorites. You may perceive that all men entrust their treasure where it returns them interest. If princes, like the sea, receive, and repay all the fresh streams the rivers intrust them with, they will not grudge, but pride themselves to make them up an ocean—If God restore you to your right, whatever you promise keep—Don't think any thing in this world worth obtaining by false and unjust means."—These are excellent maxims of government; and if his majesty had conducted himself by them he could not have been reduced to such a low and destitute condition, as to have hardly a place in the world to hide himself in; "for, says lord *Clarendon*,† there was at that time no court in christendom so honorably or generously constituted, that it would have been glad to have seen him, and they who wished him well, did not wish his escape, because they imagined imprisonment was the worst that could befall him."

I am unwilling to suspect the genuineness of this letter, though there were so many forgeries obtruded upon the world about this time to advance his majesty's piety and virtue, that one can hardly feel the ground he treads on. If such a letter was sent to the *prince*, it is very strange he should never see it; or that his lordship, who lived in the prince's family, and extracted his account of the treaty

\* Book xi. or vol. iii. p. 239.

† *Clarendon*, vol. iii. p. 231.



of Newport from these papers, (as he declares) should never shew it his master; and yet these are the words of bishop Burnet, in the *History of his Life and Times*: “The duke of York suffered me to talk very freely to him about religion, and he told me among other things, that *the letter to the prince of Wales was never brought to him.*”

The army had been six months in the field this summer engaged against the *cavaliers* and Scots, who being now reduced and subdued, they began to express a high dissatisfaction with the *present treaty*, because no provision had been made for their darling point, *liberty of conscience*. Here they had just reason of complaint, but ought not to have relieved themselves by the methods and at the expence they did. They were thoroughly incensed against the king and his *cavaliers* on one hand, and the *high presbyterians* on the other. It appeared to them, that the king's sentiments in religion and politics were not changed; that he would always be raising new commotions till things returned to their former channel; and in the present treaty he had yielded nothing but through constraint; and that when he was restored to his throne, after all the blood that had been shed, they should neither be safe in their lives or fortunes. On the other hand, if *presbyterian uniformity* should take place by virtue of the present treaty, their condition would be little mended; for (said they) if the king himself cannot obtain liberty to have the *common-prayer* read privately in his own family, what must the *independents* and *sectaries* expect? What have we been contending for, if after all the hazards we have run, *presbytery* is to be exalted, and we are to be banished our country or driven into corners?

While the resentments of the army were thus inflamed, their officers, who were *high enthusiasts*, though men of unblemished morals,|| observed several days of fasting and

|| The character of virtuous morals, bishop Warburton considers as inconsistent with their being, as Mr. Neal says, “high enthusiasts:” “when,” his lordship adds, “they all acted (as almost all enthusiasts do) on this maxim, that the end sanctifies the means, and that the elect (of which number they reckoned themselves chief) are above ordinances:” Mr. Neal, I presume, is to be understood as speaking of their personal virtue, with regard to sensual indulgences, in opposition to drunkenness and debauchery. *Ed.*



prayer at their head-quarters at St. Alban's, till at length in a kind of despair, and under the influence of a *religious phrensy*, they entered upon the most desperate measures, resolving to assume the SOVEREIGN POWER into their own hands; to bring the king to justice; to set aside the *covenant*; and change the government into a commonwealth. To accomplish these monstrous resolutions, which were founded (as they alledged) upon SELF-PRESERVATION, though prosecuted by measures subversive not only of the rights of parliament, but of the fundamental laws of society, the officers agreed upon a *remonstrance*, which was presented to the parliament by six of their council, Nov. 20, eight days before the expiration of the treaty with the king, together with a letter from general *Fairfax* to the house, desiring it might have a present reading.

The remonstrance sets forth the miscarriages of the king's government;\* his double and dilatory proceedings in treaties, particularly in that now on foot; and then desires the house to return to their votes of non-address; to lay aside that bargaining proposition of compounding with delinquents, and bring them to punishment; and among these offenders they propose, “(1.) That the KING be brought to justice as the capital cause of all. (2.) That a day be set for the prince of *Wales* and the duke of *York* to surrender themselves, or be declared incapable of the government; and that for the future, no king be admitted but by the free election of the people.”†

The commons upon reading this remonstrance were struck with surprise, and being in the utmost consternation deferred the debate for ten days, *i. e.* to the end of the treaty. But the officers, being apprehensive of what might hap-

\* Lieutenant-General Ludlow apprehended that the dispute between the king's party and the parliament turned upon this simple question, “whether the king should govern as a God by his will, and the nation be governed by force like beasts: or whether the people should be governed by laws made by themselves, and live under a government derived from their own consent?” Ludlow's *Memoirs*, 4to 1771, p. 114. On this point rests the difference between free and despotic governments, and in the *degree* in which a government deviates from the former, it approximates to the latter state. *Ed.*

† Clarendon, vol. iii. p. 236. Rapin, vol. ii. p. 564, folio.

pen in that time, sent colonel *Ewer* to the Isle of Wight with a party of horse to secure the person of the king, and ordered colonel *Hammond* to quit the island, and attend the council of officers at their head-quarters at Windsor; the king was secured the very day after the expiration of the treaty, and next morning [Nov. 30,] conveyed by a party of horse to Hurst-Castle, where he continued till he was conducted by colonel *Harrison* to Windsor, in order to his trial. The same day the officers sent a declaration to the house to enforce their late *remonstrance*, complaining that they were wholly neglected, and desiring the majority of the house to exclude from their councils such as would obstruct justice, or else withdraw from them.† This occasioned warm debates among the members, and a motion that the principal officers who had a share in the remonstrance might be impeached of high treason.‡ Upon which the army marched directly to London, with general *Fairfax* at their head, who wrote to the lord-mayor and common-council, that he was marching to Westminster in pursuance of the late remonstrance, and desired 40,000*l.* of the city in part of their arrears. Dec. 2, he quartered his troops about Whitehall, the Mews, Covent-Garden, and St. James's, assuring the citizens; that they should disturb no man in his property.

Though the houses were now environed with an armed force, they had the courage to vote, that the *seizing the person of the king, and carrying him prisoner to Hurst-Castle, was without their advice and consent*; and next day, after having sat all night [Dec. 5,] it was carried without a division, that *the king's concessions to the parliament's propositions were a sufficient ground for the houses to proceed upon for settling the peace of the kingdom*; two hundred forty-four members being present. But the officers being determined to carry their point discharged the city trained bands, and placed a regiment of horse and another of foot, the very next day, at the door of the parliament-house, and colonel *Pride*, having a list of the disaffected members in his hand, took about forty of them into custody, and denied entrance to about an hundred

† Rushworth, p. 1341. Rapin, vol. ii. 565, folio.

‡ Clarendon, vol. iii. p. 237.

more, which determined several others to withdraw, inso-much that the house of commons was left in the possession of about one hundred and fifty or two hundred persons, most of them officers of the army, who conducted every thing according to the plan concerted in their council at St. Alban's.—*Oliver Cromwell* was not yet come to London from his northern expedition, but wrote from Knottingsley, Nov. 20, that the officers of his regiments were deeply sensible of the miseries of the kingdom, and had a great zeal for impartial justice to be done on offenders, with whom he concurred. December 6, he came to London, and next day had the thanks of the house thus garbled for his faithful services to the public.<sup>a</sup> December 11, a paper called the *Agreement of the People* was presented to the general and council of officers, as a rule for future government. It was supposed to be drawn up by *Ireton*, and proposed a dissolution of the present parliament, and a new one to be chosen, consisting of three hundred members,<sup>b</sup> who were to elect a *council of state* from among themselves, for the management of all public affairs, under certain restrictions; one of which is, that *they do not lay any restraints on the consciences of men for religious differences*, (as has been mentioned) but no proceedings were had upon it, nor did it ever take place.

In the mean time, the house of commons (if they now deserved that name) voted his majesty's concessions at the Isle of Wight not *satisfactory*,<sup>c</sup> and "that no member who 'had been absent when that vote was passed should sit 'again in the house till he had subscribed it;<sup>d</sup> that no more 'addresses be made to the king for the future;<sup>e</sup> that no

<sup>a</sup> Dugdale, p. 363.

<sup>b</sup> According to the authority, Williams's MS. Collections, on which Dr. Grey relies, it was proposed, that the representatives should be four hundred; and the ground of the motion was, that the people of England (being very unequally distributed by boroughs for election of their representatives) were indifferently proportioned. How has the disproportion increased since that time! *Ed.*

<sup>c</sup> They also reversed the vote of the 5th of December, viz. "That 'the king's answer was a ground on which to proceed upon for the settlement of the peace of the kingdom," as dishonorable to parliament, destructive to the peace of the kingdom, and tending to the breach of the public faith of the kingdom. Dr. Grey, p. 357. *Ed.*

<sup>d</sup> Rushworth, p. 1300.

<sup>e</sup> *Ibid.* 1365.



‘ malignant, who had assisted against the parliament in the  
 ‘ first or second civil war, or that had abetted the late tu-  
 ‘ mults, should be capable of being chosen lord-mayor or  
 ‘ alderman of the city of London, or be capable of any place  
 ‘ of profit or trust, or so much as of giving his vote for choos-  
 ‘ ing persons into such offices, for the space of one year.”<sup>r</sup>  
 The secluded members published a protestation<sup>s</sup> against all  
 these proceedings as null and void till they were restored  
 to their places; but the lords and commons who remained  
 in the houses voted their protestation false, scandalous,  
 and seditious.

The army, having vanquished all opposition, went on  
 with irresistible violence to change the whole frame of gov-  
 ernment; and, to make way for it, determined to impeach  
 the king of high treason, as having been the cause of all  
 the blood that had been spilt in the late war.<sup>i</sup> This un-  
 heard-of motion met with some opposition even in that *pack-*  
*ed assembly*; <sup>k</sup> *Oliver Cromwell* was in doubt, and said,  
 ‘ if any man moved this of choice or design he should think  
 ‘ him the greatest traitor in the world; but since PROVI-  
 ‘ DENCE and NECESSITY had cast them upon it, he should  
 ‘ pray GOD to bless their councils, though he was not pro-  
 ‘ vided on the sudden to give them advice.” Some said,  
 there was no need to bring the king to a trial; others, that  
 there was no law to try him, nor any judicatory to call him  
 to account; but all this was over-ruled; and because the  
 lords rejected the ordinance for the king’s trial, lord *Clar-*  
*endon* tells us, they shut up their doors; but Mr. *Whit-*  
*locke* says, they entered their house, and although several  
 ordinances past, the commons would not own them any lon-  
 ger. Thus the constitution was dissolved, and all that en-

<sup>f</sup> Clarendon, p. 240.

<sup>g</sup> Bishop Warburton observes, “ that these very secluded members  
 ‘ had voted the bishops guilty of high-treason, for protesting in the same  
 ‘ manner, when under the like force.” The reader will turn back to vol.  
 ii. p. 494-499, compare the two cases, and decide whether they were en-  
 tirely similar. Not but it is too common for men not to discern the na-  
 ture of oppression till they come to feel it: and to condemn in others  
 what they allow in themselves. *Ed.*

<sup>h</sup> Rushworth, p. 1362.

Rapin, vol. ii. p. 567.

<sup>k</sup> Dugdale, p. 366.

sued must be considered as effected by the *military power*.\*

Though some few petitions had been procured from divers counties, and even from the common-council of London, *that justice might be done upon the authors of our troubles, and bloodshed, in an exemplary way, and without respect of persons*; yet the general voice of the nation was against such violence, as appears by the petitions and protestations of all orders of people.

The prelatical clergy lay still, either because they could not assemble in a body, or because they apprehended they could do no service by appearing; but Dr. *Gauden*, afterwards bishop of Exeter, published a *protestation against the declared purposes and proceedings of the army, and others, about trying and destroying our sovereign lord the king*, dated January 5, and sent it to a colonel to be presented to lord *Fairfax* at the council of war. Dr. *Hammond* sent an *humble address also to the general and council of war, to prevent the horrid design of putting the king to death*, dated January 15. Both these papers insisted on the *divine right* of kingly government, and that to call the king before the tribunal of the people was contrary to the laws of the land. The famous Mr. *Prynne*, one of the secluded members, published a *brief memento to the present unparliamentary junto, touching their present intentions and proceedings to depose and execute CHARLES STUART, their lawful king of England*, dated from the King's-head in the Strand, Jan. 1, 1648.

The officers of the army attempted by their creatures to gain over the London ministers to their measures, or at least to persuade them to a neutrality. *Hugh Peters*, one of their chaplains, was sent to the remains of the assembly of divines at Westminster, for this purpose, but they *declared unanimously for the release of the king*. He then invited several of the London ministers, as Mr. *Marshal, Calamy, Whitaker, Sedgwick, Ash, &c.* to a conference with some officers of the army, upon the subject of the *coercive power of the magistrate in matters of religion*, which was foreign to the present purpose; but instead of meeting them, these divines assembled with their brethren at

\* Memor. p. 361.



Sion-college, and published a paper entitled, *A serious and faithful representation of the judgment of the ministers of the gospel within the province of London, whose names are subscribed, contained in a letter to the general, and his council of war, delivered to his excellency by some of the subscribers, Jan. 18, 1648.*

In this address, after assigning reasons why they would not consult with the officers upon matters of religion, they complain of their imprisoning the members of parliament; ‘We remember (say they\*) that when the king with a multitude of armed men demanded but a small number of the members of parliament, it was deemed an unparalleled breach of the privilege of parliament, and was one reason that an army was raised by their authority, and for their preservation; but that this very army should so far exceed that act, which was then esteemed without parallel, is what we could not believe, had not our eyes been witnesses of it!

“And though both houses of parliament saw reason to take up arms in their own defence, and in defence of the protestant religion, and the fundamental laws of their country, yet this cannot be pleaded in justification of your usurping an authority over king and parliament, who are but so many private persons and no part of the legislature.

“Moreover, though the parliament took up arms in defence of the laws, it was never their intention to do violence to the *person of the king*, or divest him of his royal authority, much less to overthrow the whole constitution.

“We therefore think ourselves bound by our protestation, and by our *solemn league and covenant*, to appear for our excellent constitution against arbitrary and tyrannical power in the king, on the one hand, and against the illegal proceedings of private persons, tending to subvert the constitution and introduce *anarchy* and *confusion*, on the other.

“Instead therefore of consulting with you, we earnestly intreat you, as the ambassadors of Christ, that you would consider of the evil of your present ways, and turn from them. You cannot but know, that the word of God com-



‘mands obedience to magistrates, and consonant to scripture this has been the judgment of protestant divines at home and abroad, with whom we concur ; disclaiming, detesting, and abhorring the practices of jesuits, concerning the opposing of lawful magistrates by any private persons, and the murdering of kings by any, though under the most specious and colourable pretences. Examine your consciences, if any number of persons of different principles from yourselves had invaded the rights of parliament, imprisoned the king and carried him about from place to place, and attempted the dissolution of the whole government, whether you would not have charged them with the highest crimes.

“ We desire you not to infer the justice of your proceedings from the success, but to distinguish between God’s permission and approbation, and that God’s suffering men to prosper in their evil courses is one of the severest judgments ; the providence of God therefore, which is so often pleaded in justification of your actions, is no safe rule to walk by, in such actions which the word of God condemns.

“ Nor is it safe to be guided by the *impulses of the spirit*, when they are contrary to the written word of God ; we are to try the spirits, and to have recourse to the law and the testimony ; if they speak not according to them, there is no light in them.

“ If you plead *necessity* for doing that which yourselves confess to be irregular, we answer, no necessity can oblige men to sin ; besides, it is apparent, you were under no necessity, the parliament (till forced by you) being full and free ; besides, you have engaged by oath to preserve his majesty’s person, and the privileges of parliament, and no necessity can justify perjury, or dispense with lawful oaths.

“ We therefore beseech you to recede from this your evil way, and learn *John Baptist’s* lesson to soldiers, *Do violence to no man, neither accuse any man falsely, and be content with your wages.* But if you persist in this way, *be sure your sin will find you out.* If our exhortation prevail not, we have discharged our duty, and we hope delivered our own souls. If it be our portion to suffer, as

‘we are told, we trust we shall suffer as christians ; but we  
 ‘hope better things of you, and subscribe ourselves your  
 ‘servants in the Lord ;

James Nalton, <i>pastor</i> , Foster-lane	Ralph Robinson, <i>pastor</i> , St. Mary
Thomas Cawton, St. Bartholomew-Exchange	Woolnoth
John Fuller, Bishopsgate	William Blackmore, St. Peter, Cornhill
Francis Roberts, St. Austin	Francis Peck, St. Nic. Acorns
Wm. Jenkin, Christ-Church	Stephen Watkins, St. Savior, Southwark
Elidad Blackwell, Alhall. Under-shaft	William Wickers, St. Andrew Hubbard
Wm. Harrison, Grace-Church	John Wallis, Ironmonger-lane
John Sheffield, St. Swithins	Tho. Manton, Stoke-Newington
Matth. Haviland, Trinity	Thos. Gouge, St. Sepulchres
George Smallwood, Poultry	Thos. Watson, Walbrook
Wm. Taylor, Coleman-street	Nathaniel Staniforth, St. Mary-Bothaw
Christ. Love, Aldersgate	Jno. Halk, Alhallows on the Wall
Robt. Mercer, St. Brides	John Glasecock, St. Andrew-Under-shaft
Thos. Gataker, Rotherhithe	Thos. Whately, St. Mary-Wool-church
George Walker, St. J. Evang.	Jacob Tice, Billingsgate
Arthur Jackson, M. Wood-street	Jonat. Lloyd, Garlickhithe
Charles Offspring, St. Antholine's	John Morten, Newington-Butts
Hen. Rodborough, East-cheap	Joshua Kirby
Nic. Profet, Foster-lane	Arth. Barham, St. Helens
Thomas Case, Milk-street	Benjamin Needler, St. Margaret-Moses
Stanly Gower, Ludgate	John Wells, St. Olave-Jury
Andrew Janeway, Alhall. on the Wall	Robert Matthew, St. Andrew-Wardrobe."
Sam. Clark, St. Bene't Fink	
Thos. Clenden, Alhall. Barkin	
John Wale, St. M. Cornhill	
James Crawford, St. Christ,	

Notwithstanding this seasonable and explicit remonstrance, the episcopal divines, in order to throw of all the guilt of the king's misfortunes from themselves, who by their obstinate behavior had in reality reduced him to the last extremity, resolved to fix it upon the *presbyterians* ; as their successors have done even till this day. It was therefore given out among the people, that the *presbyterians* had brought the king to the block, and that the *independents* would cut off his head. To wipe away this calumny the presbyterian clergy published another paper, entitled, *A*



*vindication of the London Ministers from the unjust aspersions cast upon their former actings for the parliament, as if they had promoted the bringing of the king to capital punishment.* It was addressed to the people, and after they had repeatedly declared their dislike of the proceedings at Westminster against the king, they conclude in words to this purpose: "Therefore according to our *covenant* we 'do, in the name of the great God, warn and exhort all that 'belong to our respective charges, or to whom we have administered the said *covenant*, to abide by their vow, and 'not suffer themselves to be persuaded to subscribe the 'AGREEMENT OF THE PEOPLE, which is subversive of the 'present constitution, and makes way for the toleration of 'all heresies and blasphemies, and will effectually divide 'the two kingdoms of England and Scotland. We earnestly beseech them to mourn for the sins of the parliament and city, and for the miscarriages of the king himself in his government, which have cast him down from his excellency into an horrid pit of misery, almost beyond example; and to pray, that God would give him effectual repentance, and sanctify the bitter cup of divine displeasure which divine Providence has put into his hands; and that God would restrain the violence of men, that they may not dare to draw upon themselves and the kingdom the blood of their sovereign."

This was signed by fifty-seven ministers, among whom were the following nineteen, whose names were not to the above-mentioned representation.

Corn. Burges, <i>D. D.</i> at St. Paul's	Simeon Ash, Bassishaw
Wm. Gouge, <i>D. D.</i> Blackfriars	Thos. Thoroughgood, of Crayford
Edm. Stanton, <i>D. D.</i> Kingston	Ed. Corbet, Croydon
Thos. Temple, <i>D. D.</i> Battersea	John Viner, Aldgate
Edmund Calamy, <i>B. D.</i> Aldermanbury	John Crosse, Friday-street
Jer. Whitaker, St. Mary-Magd. Bermondsey	Peter Witham, St. Alban, Woodstreet
Dan. Cawdrey, St. Martin in the Fields	John Stileman, Rotherhithe
Wm. Spurstow, <i>D. D.</i> Hackney	Josias Ball, North-Grey
Laz. Seaman, Bread-street	Jonathan Devereux, late of St. Andrew, Holborn
	Paul Russel, Hackney.



It was not possible for the few *independent ministers* in London to join the *presbyterians* in these addresses, (1.) Because they were not possessed of parochial livings, nor members of the provincial assembly of London, nor admitted to their weekly consultations at Sion-college, but were a sort of dissenters from the public establishment. (2.) Because they did not believe themselves so far bound by the *covenant* as to oppose a toleration, nor to support any constitution that was not consistent with christian liberty, which the *presbyterians* would not admit. None of their ministers, that I know of, declared their approbation of the proceedings of the council of officers in the trial of the king, except Mr. *Hugh Peters*, and Mr. *John Goodwin*. Some of the independent ministers in the country joined the *presbyterians* in protesting against it; those of Oxford and Northampton of both denominations published their *humble advice and earnest desire*, presented to general *Fairfax* and the council of war, Jan. 25, subscribed by nineteen or twenty names, in which they declare their utter disapprobation of all proceedings against his majesty's crown and life, as contrary to scripture, to the laws of the land, the *solemn league and covenant*, and tending to destroy the constitution, and involve the nation in a war with their neighbors. They declare their dissent from the late violence upon the parliament—but with reference to religion they say, "Though our souls abhor 'that grand design of the devil and his agents to decry all 'religious and zealous professors under the names of *sectaries* and *independents*, we willingly grant, and heartily desire, that the interest of all godly and honest men 'may be carefully provided for, and secured, as far as is 'consistent with the word of God, our *covenant*, and the 'public peace; and that men of different apprehensions in 'matters of religion may not be utterly incapable of all 'offices of power and trust, though we cannot agree to an *universal toleration*." They conclude with beseeching the *general* to suspend all further prosecution against the king, and to endeavor a right understanding between the king, parliament, and army; but if they cannot prevail, they desire to wash their hands of the blood of their *dread sovereign*, and to approve themselves innocent of all that

confusion and misery in which the deposing and taking away his majesty's life will involve them, their posterity, and all men professing godliness in the three kingdoms.<sup>a</sup>

It must be confessed, the *independents* were a sort of mal-contents, and had reason to be dissatisfied with the treaty of Newport, because they were not only excluded the *new establishment*, but debarred of a *toleration*; and yet, as Mr. *Eachard* and Dr. *Bates* the physician observe, several of them joined with their brethren in declaring against the design of putting the king to death, in their sermons from the pulpit, in conferences, monitory letters, petitions, protestations, and public remonstrances.<sup>b</sup>

The Scots kirk, by their commissioners, declared and protested against the putting the king to death, as absolutely inconsistent with their *solemn league and covenant*. They published a *protestation*, directed to the ministers of the province of London meeting at Sion college, Jan. 25, 1648-9, with a letter, exhorting them to courage and constancy in their opposition to the proceeding of the house of commons, and to an *universal toleration*.

Sundry foreign princes and states, by their ambassadors, interceded for the king; some from their respect to his person, and others from a regard to the honor that was due to crowned heads. But it was impossible to stop the impetuous wildfire of the army, who, having brought the king from Hurst-Castle to Windsor, obtained a vote in the parliament (if we may so call it) that all ceremonies due to a *crowned head* be laid aside; and then came to the following resolutions, Jan. 4: First, *that the people under God are the original of all just power*. Secondly, *that the house of commons are the supreme power of the nation*. Thirdly, *that whatever is declared for law by the commons in parliament is valid, though the consent of the king and the house of peers be not had thereto*.<sup>c</sup> The house of lords, which was reduced to sixteen peers, having unanimously rejected the ordinance of the commons for the king's trial, and adjourned for a fortnight, the commons resolved to act without them, and having named a committee of thirty-eight

<sup>a</sup> Vol. Pamp. 108.

<sup>b</sup> Each. Hist. p. 654, Elench. Cot. Narr. 4<sup>ma</sup>. p. 418.

<sup>c</sup> Rapin, vol. ii. p. 568, folio.



persons to receive informations, and draw up a charge against the king, they constituted a *high court of justice* for his trial,† consisting of one hundred forty-five persons, of whom twenty or more might proceed to business; but *not above one half* would act under this authority; Mr. serjeant *Bradshaw* was president; Mr. *Cook*, solicitor-general; and Mr. *Steel*, Mr. *Dorilaus*, and Mr. *Aske*, were to support the charge. The form of process being settled by the commissioners, the king, who had been conducted to St. James's, Jan. 15, appeared before his judges in Westminster-Hall, the first time on Saturday Jan. 20, 1648, when being seated at the bar in a chair of crimson velvet, and covered, as were all his judges, Mr. *Cook* the solicitor exhibited a charge of high-treason against him; which being read, the king, instead of pleading to the charge, excepted to the jurisdiction of the court, which was overruled, the *president* replying, that they would not suffer their authority to be disputed, and therefore required the king to think better of it against Monday; but his majesty persisting in his refusal to plead both on Monday and Tuesday, the clerk was ordered to record the default; Wednesday the court sat in the painted chamber, and examined witnesses

† The reader may be amused by the relation of an accident which befel the king at Oxford, which appeared to affect his spirits, and may be deemed, by superstition, a prognostic of the calamities that befel him and were now thickening on him. On visiting the public library, he was shewed among other books a *Virgil*, nobly printed, and exquisitely bound. Lord Falkland, to divert him, would have his majesty make trial of his fortune by the *Sortes Virgilianæ*, a kind of augury in use for some ages. On the king's opening the book, the period which presented itself, was *Dido's* imprecation on *Æneas*, thus translated by Mr. Dryden:

“Yet let a race untam'd and haughty foes  
His peaceful entrance with dire arms oppose;  
Oppress'd with numbers in th' unequal field,  
His men discouraged, and himself expell'd,  
Let him for succour sue from place to place,  
Torn from his subjects, and his son's embrace.  
First let him see his friends in battle slain,  
And their untimely fate lament in vain:  
And when at length the cruel war shall cease,  
On hard conditions may he buy his peace.  
Nor let him then enjoy supreme command,  
But fall untimely by some hostile hand,  
And lie unburied on the barren land.” }

Welwood's Memoirs, p. 90, 1. Ed.



against the king;\* Thursday and Friday they consulted how to proceed; and on Saturday his majesty was brought the last time to the bar, when, persisting to disown the jurisdiction of the court, he desired to be heard in the painted chamber by the lords and commons, but his request was denied, and the *president* pronounced sentence of death against him as a traitor, fifty-nine being present, and signifying their concurrence by *standing up*, as had been agreed. Sundry indignities and insults were offered to the king by the soldiers, as he passed along Westminster-Hall, but the far greater number of people deplored his unhappy condition. Tuesday Jan. 30, being appointed for his execution, his majesty was offered the assistance of Mr. *Calamy*, *Vines*, *Caryl*, *Dell*, and *Goodwin*, but he refused them, and chose Dr. *Juxon*, bishop of London, who, according to bishop *Burnet*, performed his office with such a dry coldness as could not raise the king's devotion. On the fatal day he was conducted on foot by a strong guard through St. James's park, to a scaffold erected in the open street before the banqueting-house at Whitehall, where he made a short speech to the people, in which he made no acknowledgement of the mistakes of his government, but declared himself a martyr for the laws and liberties of the people; after which he laid down his head on the block, which was severed from his body at one blow† by some bold execu-

\* The evidence of Henry Goode, on this examination, proved the king's insincerity in the treaty of Newport: for he deposed, that on observing to his majesty, to whom he had access, that he had justified the parliament's taking up arms, the king replied, that though he was contented to give the parliament leave to call their own war what they pleased, yet he neither did then, nor should, decline the justice of his own cause. Rushworth in Macaulay's History, vol. iv. p. 388, note. *Ed.*

† Mr. Philip Henry was a spectator of this event, and noticed two remarkable circumstances which attended it. One was, that at the instant when the blow was given, there was such a dismal universal groan among the thousands of people that were within sight of it, (as it were with one consent) as he never heard before, and desired he might never hear the like again. The other was, that immediately after the stroke was struck, there was, according to order, one troop marching from Charing-Cross towards King street, and another from King-street towards Charing Cross, purposely to disperse and scatter the people, and to divert the dismal thoughts which they could not but be filled with, by driving them to shift every one for his own safety. P. Henry's Life p. 26. *Ed.*

tioner in a mask, in the forty-ninth year of his age, and twenty-fourth of his reign. His body was interred privately at Windsor, February 28th, following, without ceremony, and with no other inscription on the coffin, than **KING CHARLES, 1648.**

The reader will collect the character of this unfortunate prince rather from the preceding facts, than from the keen reflections of his determined enemies, or the flattering encomiums of his friends and admirers, which latter, in their anniversary sermons,\* have almost equalled his sufferings with those of our blessed Saviour. It must be admitted, that king *Charles I.* was sober, temperate, chaste, an enemy to debauchery and lewdness, and very regular in his devotions. But these excellent qualities were balanced with some of a very different nature; his temper was distant and reserved to a fault; he was far from being generous, and when he bestowed any favor did it in a very disagreeable and uncourtly manner; his judgment in affairs of government was weak and unsteady, and generally under the direction of a favorite. In his treaties with the parliament, he was chargeable with great insincerity, making use of evasive and ambiguous terms, the explication of which he reserved for a proper place and season. He had lofty notions of the absolute power of princes, and the unlimited obedience of subjects; and though he was very scrupulous about his *coronation oath* in regard to the church, he seems to have paid little attention to it as it respected the *laws and liberties of his subjects*, which he lived in the constant violation of for fifteen years.† He was a perfect dupe to his queen, who had too much the direction of public affairs both in church and state; no wonder therefore that he had a determined aversion to the *puritans*, and leaned

\* It is the remark of bishop Warburton, that "blackened characters on the one hand, and impious comparisons on the other, equally offensive to charity and religion, in the early days of this returning solemnity, turned an act of worship into a day of contention. But these," he adds, "were the unruly workings of a storm just then subsided. Time, which so commonly corrupts other religious institutions, hath given a sobriety and a purity to the returning celebrations of this." Sermon on the 30th of January, 1760, to the house of lords, p. 7, 8. *Ed.*

† Clarendon's Hist. p. 430,



so much to the pomp and ceremony of the church of Rome, that though a protestant in judgment he was for meeting the papists half way, and for establishing one motley religion throughout Great-Britian, in which both parties might unite. He told Dr. *Sanderson*, that if God ever restored him to his crown, he would go bare-foot from the tower of London, or Whitehall, to St. Paul's, by way of penance, for consenting to the earl of *Strafford's* death, and to the abolishing of episcopacy in Scotland, and desire the people to intercede with God for his pardon.\* Such was his majesty's superstition! Upon the whole, though king *Charles I.* had virtues that might have rendered him aimable as a private gentleman, his foibles were so many as entitle him to the character of a very weak and impolitic prince; far from appearing truly great in any one scene of his whole life except the last. Mr. *Coke* says,† he was wilful, and impatient of contradiction; his actions sudden and inconsiderate, and his councils without secrecy. He would never confess any of his irregularities in government, but justified them all to his death. If any gave him advice contrary to his inclination, he would never be friends with him again. He was unaffable and difficult of address, requiring such strained submissions as were not usual to his predecessors. The sincerity of his promises and declarations were suspected by his friends as well as enemies,|| so that he fell a sacrifice to his arbitrary principles, the best friends of the *constitution* being afraid to trust him. Bishop *Burnet*§ adds, “that he affected in his behavior the ‘solemn gravity of the court of Spain, which was sullen ‘even to moroseness; this led him to a grave reserved deportment, in which he forgot the civilities and affabilities ‘which the nation naturally loved; nor did he, in his outward deportment, take any pains to oblige any persons ‘whatsoever. He had such an ungracious way of shewing ‘a favor, that the manner of bestowing it was almost as

\* Life of Sanderson, p. 79.

† Detect. p. 336.

|| Bishop Warburton grants, that “the king made his concessions with so ill a grace, that they only served to remind the public of his former breaches of faith, and to revive their diffidence in the royal word.”

Sermon before the house of lords, 30th Jan. 1760, p. 16. *Ed.*

§ His Life, vol. i. p. 23, 64, *Edin. Ed.*



‘mortifying as the favor was obliging. He loved high and rough measures, but had neither skill to conduct them, nor height of genius to manage them. He hated all that offered prudent and moderate counsels, and even when it was necessary to follow such advices he hated those that gave them. His whole reign, both in peace and war, was a continued series of errors, so that it does not appear that he had a true judgment of things. He was out of measure set upon following his humor, but unreasonably feeble to those whom he trusted, chiefly to the queen, and (it may be added also) to the clergy. He had a high notion of the regal power, and thought that every opposition to it was *rebellion*. He minded little things too much, and was more concerned in drawing up a paper than in fighting a battle. He had a firm aversion to popery, but was much inclined to a middle way between protestants and papists, by which he lost one without gaining the other. At his death he shewed a calm and composed firmness which amazed all people, and so much the more, because it was not natural to him, and was therefore by his friends imputed to an extraordinary measure of supernatural assistance.”

After his majesty’s death, the episcopal clergy did all they could to canonize him for a *martyr*; they printed *his sayings, his prayers, his meditations, and forms of devotion under his sufferings*, and drew his portrait in the most devout and heavenly attitude. His works, consisting of sundry declarations, remonstrances, and other papers, have been published in a most pompous and elegant form; among which *one* is of very suspected authority, if not absolutely spurious, I mean his *Eikoon Basilike, or the portraiture of his sacred majesty in his solitude and sufferings*, said to be written with the king’s own hand: It was first printed in the year 1649, and passed through fifty editions in divers languages within twelve months.\* No book ever raised the king’s reputation so high as this, which obliged the new

\* It has gone through forty-seven impressions in England. The number of copies are said to have been 48,500. It produced, at home and abroad, the most favorable impressions for the king’s piety and memory. Lord Shaftesbury supposed that it contributed, in a great measure, to his glorious and never-fading titles of saint and martyr. Dr. Grey is displeased with Mr. Neal for suspecting the authenticity of the book and

*council of state* to employ the celebrated *Milton* to destroy its credit, which he attempted in a treatise under the title of *Eikono Clastese* or an answer to a book entitled *Eikoon Basilike*, printed by *Du Garde*, 1652; but the fraud was not fully detected till some years after.

The grounds and evidences of the spuriousness of this book are these, 1. That lord *Clarendon*, in his history of the *grand rebellion*, makes no mention of it.\* 2. Bishop *Burnet* says,† the duke of *York*, afterwards King *James II.* told him in the year 1673, that the book called *Eikoon Basilike* was not of his fathers writing, but that Dr. *Gauden* wrote it; that after the restoration, the doctor brought the duke of *Somerset* to the king and to the duke of *York*, who both affirmed, they knew it to be his [the doctor's] writing, and that it was carried down by the earl of *Southampton*, and shewed the king during the treaty of *Newport*, who read and approved it. 3. The earl of *Anglesey* gave it under his hand, that King *Charles II.* and the duke of *York* declared to him, in the year 1675, that they were very sure the said book was not written by the king their father, but by Dr. *Gauden* bishop of *Exeter*. 4. Dr. *Gauden* himself, after the restoration, pleaded the merit of this performance in a letter to lord chancellor *Hyde*, who returned for answer, that the particular he mentioned [*i. e.* of his being the author of that book] was communicated to him as a secret; I am sorry (says his lordship) that it was told me, for when it ceases to be a secret it will please nobody but Mr. *Milton*.† 5. Dr. *Walker*, a clergyman of the church of *England*, after invoking the great God, the searcher of hearts, to witness to the truth of what he declares, says, in his treatise entitled *A true account of the*

has bestowed ten pages to establish the king's right to be considered as its author. Since Dr. *Grey* and Mr. *Neal* wrote, the evidence for. and against, its spuriousness has been fully stated by Dr. *Harris*, in his *Critical History*, p. 106—116. Mr. *Hume's* remark with regard to the genuineness of that production, is, that "it is not easy for an historian to fix any opinion which will be entirely to his own satisfaction." He afterwards adds, "many have not scrupled to ascribe to that book the subsequent restoration of the royal family." *History of Great-Britain*, vol. vii. 8vo. 1763, p. 159, 160. *Ed.*

\* Vide Bayle's Diet. Title *Milton*. † His Life, p. 51.

† Crit. Hist. p. 191.



author of *Eikoon Basilike*, "I know and believe the book 'was written by Dr. Gauden, except chap. 16th and 24th 'by Dr. Duppa. Dr. Gauden (says he) acquainted me 'with his design, and shewed me the heads of several 'chapters, and some of the discourses. Some time after 'the king's death, I asked him whether his majesty had 'ever seen the book? He replied, I know it certainly no 'more than you; but I used my best endeavors that he 'might, for I delivered a copy of it to the marquis of Hert- 'ford, when he went to the treaty of the Isle of Wight."\* Dr. Gauden delivered the MS. to this Walker, and Walker carried it to the press; it was copied by Mr. Gifford, and both the doctor's son and his wife affirm that they believe it was written in the house where they lived.

Notwithstanding all this evidence Mr. archdeacon Eucharde says, the book is incontestibly the king's; and bishop Kennet adds, that those who pretend *Eikoon Basilike* was a sham put upon the world, are a set of men that delight to judge and execute the royal martyr over again by murdering his name. Dr. Hollingworth, Dugdale, Wagstaff, and others, have endeavored to invalidate the above-mentioned authorities, by shewing that Dr. Gauden was not capable of writing such a book; but surely the evidence already produced is as strong and convincing as any thing of this nature can possibly be.†

The king's trial and execution, in such an illegal and unheard-of manner, struck the whole christian world with astonishment. The prince of Wales, then in Holland, encouraged the learned *Salmasius* to write a Latin treatise, entitled, *Defensio Regia*, or a *Defence of King Charles I.*

\* Crit. Hist. p. 189. Hist. Stuarts, p. 283.

† "There is full as strong evidence on the other side;" says bishop Warburton; "all of which this honest historian conceals; evidence 'of the king's bed-chamber, who swear they saw the progress of it; 'saw the king write it; heard him speak of it as his; and transcribed 'parts of it for him." It seems that Mr. Neal considered the evidences of its spuriousness to be so strong, as to supersede entering into a detail of the evidences for its authenticity. The bishop, it is to be remarked, though he judges the strongest and most unexceptionable evidence is on that side which gives it to the king, yet owns that the question "is the most uncertain matter he ever took the pains to examine." No such great blame, then, can lie on Mr. Neal for taking the other side of the question. Ed.



dedicated to his son Charles II. which was answered by Milton, in a book entitled, *Defensio pro Populo Anglicano*, or a *Defence of the people of England*, written in an elegant but severe stile. This book, says Mr. Bayle, made the author's name famous over all the learned world. Another performance appeared about the same time, entitled, *Clamor Regii Sanguinis ad Cœlum*; or, *The Cry of the King's Blood to Heaven*. It was written in Latin by Peter du Moulin, jun. and answered by Milton in the same language. But to satisfy the English reader, Mr. John Goodwin published a small treatise, which he called *A Defence of the Sentence passed upon the late King by the High Court of Justice; wherein the justice and equity of the said sentence is demonstratively asserted, as well from clear texts of scripture as principles of reason, grounds of law, authorities and precedents, as well foreign as domestic*; a very weak and inconclusive performance! for admitting our author's principles, that *the original of government is from the people, and that magistrates are accountable to them for their administration*, they are not applicable to the present case, because the officers of the army had neither the voice of the people, nor of their representatives in a free parliament; the house of commons was purged, and the house of peers dispersed, in order to make way for this outrage upon the constitution. Our author was so sensible of this objection, that in order to evade it, he advances this ridiculous conclusion, that *though the erecting an high court of justice BY THE HOUSE OF COMMONS ALONE be contrary to the LETTER, yet it being for the people's good it is sufficient that it is agreeable to the SPIRIT of the law.\** But who gave a few officers of the army authority to judge what was for the *people's good*, or to act according to the *spirit* of a law in contradiction to the *letter*? This would expose every man's life and estate to the will and pleasure of an arbitrary tyrant, and introduce a *rule of government*, so justly complained of in the former part of this reign, in opposition to a *rule of law*. The president Bradshaw, in his speech at pronouncing sentence, goes upon the same general topics, that *the people are the origin of civil power*, which they transfer to their magistrates under what limitations they

think fit, and *that the king himself is accountable to them for the abuse of it*; but if this were true, it is not to the present purpose, because, as has been observed, the *king's judges* had not the consent of the people of England in their diffusive or collective capacity. His majesty's own reasons against this *high court of justice*, which he would have given in court, if he might have been heard, are, in my opinion, a sufficient answer to all that can be said on the other side.

——“Admitting, but not granting (says his majesty) that the people of England's commission could grant your pretended power, I see nothing you can shew for that, for certainly you never asked the question of the tenth man of the kingdom; and in this way you manifestly wrong even the poorest ploughman, if you demand not his free consent; nor can you pretend any color for this your pretended commission without consent, at least of the major part of the people of England, of whatsoever quality or condition, which I am sure you never went about to seek, so far are you from having it.——Nor must I forget the privileges of both houses of parliament, which this day's proceedings do not only violate, but likewise occasion the greatest breach of the public faith that I believe ever was heard of, with which I am far from charging the two houses.——Then for any thing I can see, the higher house is totally excluded; and for the house of commons it is too well known, that the major part of them are detained, or deterred from sitting.——And after all, how the house of commons can erect a *court of judicature*, which was never one itself, as is well known to all lawyers, I leave to God and the world to judge.——”

King *Charles* therefore died by the hands of violence, or by the *military sword*, assumed and managed in an arbitrary manner by a few desperate officers of the army and their dependents, of sundry denominations as to religion, without any regard to the ancient constitution of their coun-

|| They have been described as “a third party, rising out of the ferment of the SELF-DENYING ORDINANCE; a swarm of armed enthusiasts, who out-witted the patriots, out-prayed the puritans, and out-fought the cavaliers.” Bishop Warburton's sermon before the house of lords, 30th of January 1760, p. 22. Ed.



try, or the fundamental laws of society ; for by the former, the king cannot be tried for his life before any inferior court of justice ; nor could they feign any pretence for the latter, without the express consent of the majority of the nation, in their personal or representative capacities, which these gentlemen never pretended. But since all parties have endeavored to throw off the odium of this *fatal event* from themselves, it may not be improper to set before the reader the sentiments of our best historians upon this head, leaving every one to draw what conclusion from them he pleases.

Not to insist upon the king's servile fondness for his queen and her friends ; his resolute stiffness for his old principles of government in church and state ; his *untimely* and ungracious manner of yielding to what he could not avoid ; his distant and reserved behavior towards those who were only capable of serving him ; and his manifest doubling between the parliament and army, which some very reasonably apprehend were the principal causes of all his misfortunes, Mr. *Whitlocke* and Mr. *Coke* lay a good deal of blame upon his majesty's chaplains : the *latter* reproaches them with insisting peremptorily to the last upon the divine right of episcopacy ; and the *former* for continual whispering in the king's ears the importance of preserving the revenues of the church to the hazard of his person and kingdom ; and surely if *these warm and eager divines* could have disentangled his majesty's conscience (which Mr. *Whitlocke* apprehends was not fully satisfied,) as soon as the cavaliers had been dispersed, and the Scots beaten out of the field, the mischief that followed might have been prevented. I will not take upon me to say how far their influence might reach, though his majesty's profound deference to their judgment was notorious ; but the conviction does not seem impracticable, when it is remembered the king was of opinion, that *what he yielded through the necessity of his affairs was not binding when he should be at liberty* ; but neither his majesty nor his clergy foresaw the issue.\*

Most of the writers on the king's side, as well as the preachers since the restoration, in their anniversary sermons, have with great injustice charged the presbyterians

\* *Whitlocke's Mem.* p. 335. *Coke's Detect.* p. 331-32.



with bringing the king to the block, contrary to the strongest and most convincing evidence ; for though their stiffness for the *divine right of presbytery*, and their antipathy to *liberty of conscience*, is not to be vindicated, yet I apprehend enough has been said in the foregoing pages, to clear them from this unrighteous charge ;\* if the zeal of the presbyterians for their discipline and covenant were culpable, the behavior of the king and his divines in the opposition was no less so, considering he was a prisoner, and in the hands of a victorious parliament ; neither side were sensible of the danger till it was too late, but when the storm was ready to burst on their heads, I do not see what men could do more in their circumstances to divert it, than the presbyterians did ; they preached and prayed, and protested against it in the most public manner ; many of them resigned their preferments because they would not take the engagement to the new commonwealth ; they groaned under all the preceding changes of government, and had a principal share in the restoration of the *royal family* in the year 1660, without which these anniversary declaimers would never have had an opportunity of pelting them with their ecclesiastical artillery, in the unwarrantable manner they have done.

The forementioned writers, together with Mr. *Rapin*, in his late history of England, load the independents, as a religious sect, with all the guilt of *cutting off the king's head* ; and with being in a plot, from the commencement of the civil war, to destroy equally king, monarchy, episcopacy, and presbyterianism ; but this last-named writer, not being acquainted with their religious principles, constantly confounds the independents with the army, which was compounded of a number of sectaries, the majority of

\* Bishop Warburton with Mr. Neal acquits the presbyterians from being parties in the execution of the king : but then he will not allow them merit or virtue, in this instance ; but would ascribe it to their not uniting with the independents in other matters, and the opposition which that party made to their two darling points, the *divine right of presbytery*, and the *use of force in religious matters*. The reader will judge, how far this is a candid construction of the conduct and motives of the presbyterians ; and, at the same time, he will lament, that there should have been any ground for the severe reflection which the bishop subjoins : " Those who were capable of punishing *Arians* with death, were capable of doing any wickedness for the cause of God." *Ed.*

whom were not of that denomination. There were no doubt among the independents, as well as among other parties, men of republican principles, who had a large share in the reproach of this day; but besides what has been observed, of some of their number joining with the presbyterians in protesting against the king's execution, the divines of this persuasion had no difference with the presbyterians, or moderate episcopalians, about forms of civil government; the leading officers would have contributed their part toward restoring his majesty to his throne, when he was with the army, upon more equal terms than some other of his adversaries, had they not discovered his designs to sacrifice them when it should be in his power. In their last propositions they consented to the restoring the king, upon the foot of a toleration for themselves and the episcopal party; leaving the presbyterians in possession of the establishment. Both *Whitlocke*\* and *Welwood*† observe, that at the very time of the king's trial the prevailing party were not determined what form of government to set up, 'many having thoughts of making the duke of *Gloucester* 'king;' which his majesty being informed of, forbade the duke, in his last interview, to accept the crown while his elder brothers were living. And though Mr. *Rapin* says, that after the force put upon the members of parliament on the 6th and 7th of December, the house consisted of none but independent members, it is certain to a demonstration, that there were then remaining in the house men of all parties, episcopalians, presbyterians, independents, anabaptists, and others: so little foundation is there for this writer's conclusion, that the independents, and *these only*, put the king to death.

Dr. *Lewis du Moulin*, history professor in Oxford, who lived through these times, says, that "no party of men, as a religious body, were the actors of this tragedy, but that it was the contrivance of an army, which, like that of king *David's* in the wilderness, was a medley or collection of all parties that were discontented; some courtiers, some presbyterians, some episcopalians; few of any sect, but most of none, or else of the religion of *Thomas Hobbes* and Dr. *Scarborough*; not to mention the papists, who

\* *Memor.* p. 358. † *Ibid.* p. 90, vol. ii. p. 367, folio.



‘had the greatest hand in it of all.’\* The same learned professor, in his book entitled *The Conformity of the Independent discipline, with that of the primitive Christians*, published 1680, had a chapter, entitled, *An Answer to those who accuse the Independents for having an immediate hand in the death of King CHARLES I.* But the times were such that the author was advised not to publish it.†

Mr. *Baxter* says, “Many that minded no side in religion thought it was no policy to trust a conquered king, and therefore were wholly for a parliamentary government without a king; of these (says he) some were for an aristocracy, and others for a democracy, and some thought they ought to judge the king for all the blood that had been shed; the vanists, the independents, and other sects, with the democratical party, being left by *Cromwell* to do the business under the name of the parliament of England.”||

Bishop *Burnet* says, that “*Ireton* was the person that drove it on, for *Cromwell* was all the while in suspense about it; *Ireton* had the principles and temper of a *Cassius*, he stuck at nothing that might turn England into a common-wealth; *Fairfax* was much distracted in his mind, and changed purposes every day; the presbyterians, and the body of the city were much against it, and were every day fasting and praying for the king’s preservation. There were not above eight thousand of the army about the town, but those were the most engaged in enthusiasm, and were kept at prayer in their way almost day and night, except when they were upon duty, so that they were wrought up to a pitch of fury which struck terror into all people.”‡

Mr. *Eachard* and some others are of opinion, that great numbers of papists, under hopes of liberty of conscience, or of destroying episcopacy, joined with foreign priests

\* “There is doubtless,” says bishop Warburton, “a great deal of truth in all this. No party of men, as a religious body, further than as they were united by one common enthusiasm, were the actors in this tragedy. (See what Burnet says.) But who prepared the entertainment, and was at the expence of the exhibition, is another question.” *Ed.*

† Vind. Prot. Relig. p. 53, 59.

|| Baxter’s Life, p. 63.

‡ Hist. Life and Times, vol. i. p. 63, Edin. edition.



and "jesuits against the king. The celebrated author of *Foxes and Firebrands* has this remarkable passage;\* *'Let all true protestants, who desire sincerely to have an happy union, recollect what a blemish the emissaries of Rome have cast upon those protestants named presbyterian and independent, Rome saying the presbyterians brought Charles the first's head to the block, and independents cut it off; whereas it is certain, that the members and clergy of Rome, under dissenting shapes, contrived this murder.* Nay, the good king himself was informed, that the jesuits in France, at a general meeting, resolved to bring him to justice, and to take off his head by the power of their friends in the army.'† Bishop *Bramhall* in a letter to archbishop *Usher*, dated July 20, 1654, adds, "Thus much to my knowledge have I seen and heard, since my leaving your lordship, which I myself could hardly have credited, had not mine eyes seen sure evidence of the same, (viz.) that when the Romish orders, which were in disguise in the parliament army, wrote to their several convents, and especially to the *Sorbonists*, about the lawfulness of taking away the king's life, it was returned by the *Sorbonists*, that it was lawful for any Roman catholic to work a change in governments for the mother church's advancement, and chiefly in an heretical kingdom, and so lawful to make away with the king."‡ Mr. *Prynne* adds, "that Mr. *Henry Spotswood* saw the queen's confessor on horseback among the crowd in the habit of a trooper, with his drawn sword flourishing it over his head in triumph, as others did, when the king's head was just cut off; and being asked how he could be present at so sad a spectacle, answered, there were above forty more priests and jesuits there besides himself, and when the fatal blow was given, he flourished his sword and said, *Now the greatest enemy we have in the world is dead.*" But this story does not seem to me very probable, nor is it easy to believe that the papists should triumph in the death of a king, who was their friend and protector in prosperity,

\* Part iii. p. 188.

† Ib. p. 168, 169.

‡ Necess. Vind. p. 45.

and whose sufferings are in a great measure chargeable upon his too great attachment to their interests. §

But the strongest and most unexceptionable testimony, is *the act of attainder of the king's judges passed upon the restoration of King Charles II.* the preamble to which sets forth, that the " execrable murder of his royal father was committed by a party of wretched men, desperately wicked, and hardened in their impiety, who having first plotted and contrived the ruin of this excellent monarchy, and with it of the true protestant religion, which had long flourished under it, found it necessary, in order to carry on their pernicious and traiterous designs, to throw down all the bulwarks and fences of law, and to subvert the very being and constitution of parliament.—And for the more easy effecting their attempts on the person of the king himself, *they first seduced some part of the then army into a compliance, and then kept the rest in subjection, partly for hopes of preferment, and chiefly for fear of losing their employments and arrears, till by these, and other more odious arts and devices, they had fully strengthened themselves in power and faction; which being done, they declared against all manner of treaties with the person of the king, while a treaty with him was subsisting; they remonstrated against the parliament for their proceedings; they seized upon his royal person while the commissioners were returned to London with his answers, which were voted a sufficient foundation for peace; they then secluded and imprisoned several members of the house of commons, and then there being left but a small number of their own creatures (not a tenth part of the whole) they sheltered themselves under the name and authority of a parliament, and in that name prepared an ordinance for the trial of his majesty; which being rejected by the lords, they passed alone in the name of the commons of England, and pursued it with all possible force and cruelty till they murdered the king, before the gates of his own palace. Thus (say they) the fanatick rage of a few miscreants, who were neither true protestants nor good subjects, stands imputed by our adversaries to the*

‘whole nation; we therefore renounce, abominate, and  
‘protest against it.——’\*

If this be a true state of the case, it is evident, from the highest authority in this kingdom, that the king’s death was not chargeable upon any religious party, or sect of christians; nor upon the people of England assembled in a free parliament, but upon the *council of officers and agitators*, who, having become desperate by the restless behavior of the *caviliers*, and ill conduct of the several parties concerned in the treaty of Newport, plotted the overthrow of the king and constitution, and accomplished it by an act of *lawless violence*; that it was only a small part of the army who were seduced into a compliance, and these kept the rest in subjection till the others had executed their desperate purposes; so that though the wisdom of the nation has thought fit to perpetuate the memory of this fatal day by an anniversary fast, as *that which may be instructive both to princes and subjects*, yet if we may believe the declaration of his majesty at his trial, or of the act of parliament which restored his family, the king’s murder was not the act of the people of England, nor of their legal representatives, and therefore ought not to be lamented as a national sin.

\* 12 Car. ii. chap. 30.



## SUPPLEMENT.

IT does not appear to have fallen within the design of Mr. Neal's history to enter into the detail of the different sects, which rose up during the periods of which he writes the transactions. His object was to give a view of the origin and progress of that great body of Separatists from the church of England, who first bore the name of Puritans and Nonconformists, and have been, since called Protestant Dissenters. The sufferings to which their principles exposed them, and the share they had in the political contests of the reigns of the *Stuarts*, furnished him with ample materials, without going into a full account of the parties into which they divided. This may be considered as excusing the cursory manner in which he has passed over the history of those parties, against the censures that have on this ground been cast on him.\* If, when he hath touched upon their history, he have not preserved candor and liberality in the views he has taken of their principles and conduct, it is not so easy, here, to offer an apology for him. It is to his honor that he was the advocate for liberty and toleration. But his just sentiments concerning the rights of conscience might not, perfectly, secure his mind from prejudice. He may be supposed to have looked on some sects of christians with a less favorable eye than they deserved : he might not have given due attention to their history, or may have considered it with partiality. But much allowance must be made, in his as in other cases, for the influence of education, and of prevailing, general opinion : yet after every deduction which, some may think should be made from his character for impartiality and liberality, still great praise is due to him. The *baptists* and the *quakers*† have made their complaints against our historian : and the editor has pointed out, in the course of the

\* Crosby's History of the English Baptists, vol. i. Preface ; and Robinson's Translation of Claude on the Composition of a Sermon.

† See the former references, and Gough's History of the Quakers, vol. i. p. 83, 4, 5.

notes, some instances where, he conceives, the antitrinitarians were entitled to more candor from his pen. It will be proper, therefore, with respect to these parties to review their history, as certain periods close, and to endeavor to do that justice to them which, it may be thought, they have not received from his hands.

The tumultuous reign of *Charles I.* was not very favorable to free enquiry and theological discussions. Other matters arrested the attention, and agitated the minds of men. But yet this period was not unfruitful of sects and opinions. *Edwards*, in his *Gangræna*, gives a list of 176 propositions, which he characterises as errors, heresies, and blasphemies. They were reduced, as *Mr. Neal* observes, to sixteen general heads. To all these, in general, the powers who were contending for the supremacy were equally inimical: nor, which ever side gained the ascendancy, was a toleration to be expected.

The *antitrinitarians*, we have seen under the reign of *King James*, were the marked objects of persecuting indignation. But the execution of a *Legatt*, and of a *Wightman*, was not sufficient to suppress their opinions. Others rose up, in the room of these sufferers, to embrace and propagate their sentiments, or tenets similar to theirs: and, if they were not burnt, they did not escape the animadversion of the ruling powers.

One *Thomas Webb*, between 20 and 21, about *Sept. 27th*, 1644, was complained of to the assembly, who sent up articles of accusation against him to the house of lords: on which he was imprisoned, and remained for some time confined, till he gained his liberty by signing a form of recantation. But he is represented as, after this, propagating his opinions in *Sumersetshire*, *Suffolk*, *Essex* and *Kent*; and as asserting, that “we might not use these expressions, ‘God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Ghost, for that was to make three Gods.’”\*

The case of *Paul Best* is represented by *Mr. Neal*: to which it may be added, that *Edwards* charges him with having said, in some manuscript, that the doctrine of the trinity was a mystery of iniquity, the three-headed

\* *Edwards’s Gangræna*, vol. i. part ii. p. 21.



**Cerberus**, a fiction, a tradition of Rome, and *monstrum biforme, triforme*.

Another person, who, in these times, became amenable for the sentiments and language he held concerning the doctrine of the trinity, was *John Fry*, who was charged before the house of commons, 3d of February 1643, with saying, that "he did not believe Jesus Christ to be God:" and adding, "he is no more God than I am; it is true, he hath more of God in him than I have, but so far as God giveth forth himself unto me, I am as much God as he is." To this charge he solemnly replied, as in the presence of God and to the best of his recollection, that what he said was this: "That he did not believe Jesus Christ to be God in that manner which he conceived some held; for, if he mistook not their expressions, they made Jesus Christ a distinct God from God the Father and God the Holy Ghost: and that so they did of the Father and the Holy Ghost, and so held forth three Gods. This was not his opinion alone of them, but he met with others of the same judgment." As to the second charge, he denied it totally. "It was never in my thoughts," said he, "to think Jesus Christ God is not God, or that I shall ever partake of the essence of God: so I do abominate the opinions charged on me."\*

By these proceedings it appears, that any supposed deviations from the common doctrine of the trinity, or from the language of the established creeds concerning it, were watched with jealousy, and exposed those who were criminated, on this ground, to the resentment of the dominant powers.

Notwithstanding this, there were assemblies held in several parishes of *London*, where it was openly preached, that "Christ was a prophet and did miracles, but was not God." And Mr. *Nye* declared, that "to his knowledge the denying the divinity of Christ was a growing opinion."† Their opinions were, also, more publicly advanced from the press; particularly, under the recommendation of Mr. *John Bachiler*, who gave to various publications, in support of *antitrinitarianism* and other opinions

\* Dr. Grey's Examination of Mr. Neal, vol. ii. App. p. 133, 134.

† Edwards's *Grangæna*, vol. i. part i. p. 26.



deemed heretical, his *Imprimatur*. Many of the pieces, which had the sanction of his licence, were not so much in support of particular sentiments, as in defence of universal and general toleration. Among these was a pamphlet entitled "*Religious Peace*," by *Leonard Busher*, first printed in 1614: presented to King *James I.* and the high court of parliament, then sitting. The design of it was to plead for a toleration of *Papists*, *Jews*, every person and persons differing in religion; and that it might be lawful for them to "write, dispute, confer, print and publish any matters, touching religion, either for or against whomsoever."\* So early did just and enlarged sentiments on religious liberty break forth: but so long, even to the present times, have they been struggling against every opposition from prejudice, and have not yet gained an universal reception, nor established themselves on undisputed grounds.

But the person, whose name, character, and writings, entitle him to particular notice, as the oppugner of the doctrine of the trinity, was Mr. *John Biddle*, whose history will come before the reader in the next volume. Suffice it to say, that the opinions of such laid under a great odium, of which *Edwards's* "*Gangræna*" is a proof: for it was intended, and calculated, to blacken the character of all who differed from the presbyterian uniformity.

Amongst these, scarcely any sects were looked upon with such strong disgust as were the *baptists*, or as they were called, by way of reproach, the *anabaptists*. We are told, that the materials which had been collected to form an history of this sect were put into the hands of Mr. *Neal*: but that he made no more use of them than to comprise within five pages a partial account of this people. Mr. *Robinson*, on the grounds of this representation, thought that no party, except that of the *baptists*, had any just cause to complain of his fidelity.† It is not necessary to offer any thing, besides the above general reflections, to repel this censure: it is our province, rather, to preclude its being alledged against this edition of Mr. *Neal's* work.

\* *Edwards*, vol. ii. p. 102.

† *Crosby's History of the English Baptists*, vol. i. preface, p. 2; *Robinson's Translation of Claude*, vol. ii. p. 81, note.

In our supplemental pages to the reign of *James I.* we have said, that the first *English baptists*, on embracing their discriminating opinions, sent over Mr. *Blount* to Amsterdam to receive baptism from the *Dutch baptists*. This step was, however, looked upon by the more judicious, and the greater number of the *English baptists* as a needless trouble, and proceeding from the old popish doctrine of a right to administer the sacrament by an uninterrupted succession. For though the true practice of baptism was, in their opinion, lost, they judged that it might be revived, and a reformation begun, by an unbaptised person baptising others.\*

In the year 1644, Mr. *Neal* states, that there were 47 congregations of this denomination in the country, and seven in London. It cannot be doubted, that they gradually rose into such a number. Mr. *Crosby* says, that the *baptists*, who had hitherto been intermixed with other nonconformists, began to form themselves into separate societies in 1633. The first instance of this secession was that of part of the independent congregation, then under the ministry of Mr. *John Lathorp*, which had been gathered in 1616, and of which Mr. *Henry Jacob* was the first pastor. The minister of these separatists was Mr. *John Spilsbury*; their number is uncertain, because, after specifying the number of about 20 men and women it is added—with divers others. In the year 1638, Mr. *William Kiffin*, Mr. *Thomas Wilson*, and others, adopted the same opinions concerning baptism; and having been, at their own request, dismissed from the independent church, joined the new congregation. Mr. *Neal* is mistaken, when he represents this separation as taking place under Mr. *Jessey*; who did not settle with it as a pastor, till about Mid-summer 1637: and did not change his sentiments on the questions concerning baptism till the summer of 1645, when he was baptised by Mr. *Knowles*. The division of the people into two congregations, one continuing with him and the other joining themselves to Mr. *Praise-God Barebones*, on the 18th of May 1640, arose not from any difference of sentiment about baptism, but from their becoming so numerous, that they could not meet together in one place without being discovered.†

In 1639 another congregation of *baptists* was formed;

\* Crosby, vol. i. p. 148, 9. † Jessey's Life, p. 7, 11, 83.



which met in Crutched-Fryars; the chief promoters of which were Mr. *Green*, Mr. *Paul Hobson*, and Captain *Spencer*.

But there are accounts of some societies existing in the country, long before these congregations in London were formed. There is great reason to believe that the baptist society at Shrewsbury has subsisted, through all the revolutions of time to this day, from the year 1627.\* The congregation at Bickenhall, now at Hatch, six miles from Taunton, in Somerset, had, according to the opinion of its oldest members about 20 years ago, subsisted near 200 years; and they had a clear tradition of its assemblies having been held, so early as 1630, in the woods and other places of concealment, on account of the severity of the times.† Even in 1457 there was a congregation of this sort at Chesterton, near Cambridge: six of them were accused of heresy, and condemned to abjure and do penance, half naked, with a faggot to their backs and a taper in their hands, in the public market-places of Ely and Cambridge.‡

But, notwithstanding this early appearance of the sect, it labored under such difficulties, from the odium with which it was regarded by the people, and from the severities practised against it by the ruling powers, that its progress was for many years impeded. From what bishop *Jewel* says, in the “Defence of his Apology,” written about the 7th year of Queen *Elizabeth*, it appears that it was then almost totally suppressed in these kingdoms: for while he speaks of them as finding harbor in Austria, Silesia, and Moravia, he adds, “they have no acquaintance with us in England, ‘or any other place, where the gospel of Christ is clearly ‘preached.’” This is to be concluded also from a passage in Dr. *Featly*, who says, “This fire in the reigns of Queen *Elizabeth*, King *James*, and our gracious sovereign, till now, was covered in England under the ashes: or if it broke out at any time, by the care of the ecclesiastical or civil magistrate it was soon put out.”

But in the times of the civil war, so difficult or so impossible is it to extirpate opinions, this sect revived; held

\* A Letter from the Rev. Josiah Thomson to the Editor.

† MSS. Collections concerning the History of Protestant Dissenters, communicated by Mr. Thomson.

‡ Robinson’s *Claude*, vol. ii. Dissertation on Preaching, p. 51.



its weekly assemblies for religious worship ; and printed various pieces in defence of their sentiments and practice ; the number of converts to it rapidly increased, and it boasted in that prophecy, “ that many should run to and fro, and ‘ knowledge shall be increased.’ ”\*

Amongst the publications in their own vindication was a piece, in 1641, by *Edward Barber*, entitled “ A Treatise of Baptism, or Dipping ; wherein is clearly shewed, that our Lord Christ ordained dipping : and that sprinkling of children is not according to Christ’s institution ; and also the invalidity of those arguments that are commonly brought to justify that practice.” In the next year came out another treatise, written by A. R. called “ The Vanity of Children’s Baptism.” Mr. *Francis Cornwell*, M. A. published, in 1643, a small tract, dedicated to the house of commons, with this title : “ The Vindication of the Royal Commission of Jesus.” It was given to divers members at the door of the house, which caused it to make a great noise, and to be much circulated. Its design was to shew, that the practice of christening children opposes the commission granted by our Lord and Savior ; that it was a Romish or anti-christian custom ; and was established by pope *Innocent III.* who made a decree, that the baptism of the infants of believers should succeed circumcision. This piece gave great offence. Dr. *Featley* made several remarks upon it ; and a piece called “ A Declaration against *Anabaptists*” was published in answer to it.† As they were frequently inveighed against, not only on account of their peculiar sentiments concerning the subjects and mode of baptism, but were also loaded with all the opprobrium which fell on the opinions deemed *heretical*, and were often reproached, both from the pulpit and the press, with being *Pelagians*, *Socinians*, *Arminians*, *Soul-Sleepers*, and the like, they published, in 1643, a “ Confession of their Faith,” mentioned and quoted by Mr. *Neal*, to vindicate themselves from these reflections, and to shew their general agreement with other protestants in all points except that of baptism. It was the first that was ever published by the

\* Crosby, vol. i. p. 160-61 ; Wall’s History of Infant-Baptism, vol. ii. p. 212-13-14.

† Crosby, vol. i. p. 151-2, and 345.

English *baptists*, and extends to fifty-two articles, which we shall give in the Appendix, No. XI. It passed through several editions in 1644, and 1646. One of which was licensed by authority, dedicated to the high court of parliament, and put into the hands of several members. Their greatest adversaries, and amongst them *Dr. Featley* and *Mr. Marshall*, one of the assembly of divines, acknowledged, that it was an orthodox confession.\*

This confession must be understood as expressing the sentiments of those baptists only who joined in it, and not as applying to all who differed from other christians on the questions concerning baptism. For, from the beginning of the reformation, there was a difference between the baptists themselves on doctrinal points: and they divided, particularly, into two parties; one embracing the *Calvinistic* scheme of doctrines, and from the particular point therein, viz. personal election, called *particular baptists*; the others, professing the *Arminian* or remonstrant tenets, from their leading principle, viz. universal redemption, were stiled *general baptists*.

It is remarkable, that some eminent men, who did not join their communion, were strongly in favor of their sentiments. *Robert Lord Brook* censured applying to this people the opprobrious name of schismatics: and gave it as his judgment that it was very easy for those who held that we should go no further than the scriptures for doctrine or discipline, to err on this point, since the scriptures seem not to have clearly determined it. He went even so far as to call into question the accuracy and conclusiveness of the argument, urged against them, from circumcision: which he looked upon as a fine rational argument to illustrate a point well proved before; but he doubted whether it was proof enough for that which some would prove by it; because, besides the difference in the ordinances, the persons to be circumcised were stated by a positive law, so expressly as to leave no room for scruple: “but it was otherwise with baptism, where all the designation of persons fit to be partakers for ought I know,” said his lordship, “is only such as *believe*: for this is the qualification which, with exactest search, I find the scriptures require in per-

\* Crosby, vol. i. p. 170-71.



sons to be baptised : and this it seems to require in all such persons. Now how infants can properly be said to believe, I am not yet fully resolved." A divine also, of great fame in that age, Mr. *Daniel Rogers*, candidly declared, in a book on the sacrament, that he was unconvinced by any determination of scripture for infant-baptism. The learned and eminent Dr. *Jeremiah Taylor*, bishop of *Down and Connor*, published, in 1647, his treatise on "The Liberty of Prophecyng;" in which he stated the opinion of the *antipædobaptists* with such advantages of style and elaborate chain of argument, that he was thought to have said more for the *baptists* than they were able to offer for themselves.\* The design of this excellent prelate, in exhibiting the weight of the arguments they could alledge and the great probability of truth on their side, was to abate the fury of their adversaries ; and to shew that they were, if in an error, still entitled to candor and indulgence.†

But neither their own vindications, nor the pleas of so generous an advocate, could screen them from that spirit of intolerance which actuated the predominant parties of those times. One of the 17 canons, which were passed by the convocation of 1640, viz. the 5th canon, particularly decreed, that another canon which was directed against the papists should be in full force against all *anabaptists*.‡ In the following years they were inveighed against from the press and the pulpit. Dr. *Featley* owned, that in writing against them he could hardly dip his pen in any thing but gall. The severe ordinances of the day were aimed at them as well as the other sectaries. *Edwards*, in his "*Gangræna*," proposed a public disputation with them, and that on their being found in an error, the parliament would forbid all dipping, and take some severe course with all dippers, as the senate of *Zurich* did. In this he referred to an edict, published at *Zurich* in 1530, which made it death for any to baptize by immersion.§ On this law some, called *anabaptists*, were tied back to back, and

\* This part of his treatise was reprinted in a detached form under the title of "Thoughts upon Infant Baptism," by the late Rev. and learned Dr. *Jeremy Taylor*, for Ward, in 1754.

† Crosby, vol. i. p. 165—169.

‡ Mr. Neal, vol. ii. p. 331.

§ *Gangræna*, part iii. p. 177.



thrown into the sea: others were burnt alive, and many starved to death in prison.\* But this was not the wish of *Edwards* alone. There was a general cry against toleration, especially of these people. In the petition of the lord-mayor, court of aldermen and common council, in 1646, that a speedy course might be taken to suppress all private and separate congregations, the *anabaptists* were by name specified.†

Sentiments against the rights of conscience, advanced by writers of reputation, and sanctioned by public acts, must be supposed to be productive of sufferings to individuals. It is proper to enter into the detail of these, as Mr. *Neal* has been thought to pass them over too generally, or to have represented them too partially.

Amongst others who felt the rage of bigotry was Mr. *Vavasor Powell*: who was often attacked and assaulted by violent men, and repeatedly exposed to the danger of his life by those who laid in wait, or bound themselves by oath, to kill him; or made an attempt on it. In 1640, he, and fifty or sixty of his hearers, when he was preaching in an house in Brecknockshire, were seized, about ten o'clock at night, by fifteen or sixteen men, under the pretence of a warrant from justice *Williams*, and secured in a church. The next morning they were conducted to the justice's house, who committed them to the hands of the constable. On the following day they were examined before that justice and two or three more, and six or seven clergymen: but, after much conference and many threats, were at that time dismissed. After this Mr. *Powell*, preaching at Launger in Radnorshire in the field, because the house was not large enough to hold the auditory, was seized and committed by the high-sheriff, Mr. *Hugh Lloyd*. The constables, sixteen or seventeen, who were charged with the execution of the *mittimus*, except one, refused it. This man, taking Mr. *Powell* to his own house, and permitting him to lodge there that night, because the prison was at a great distance, was so affected with his devotions in the family, that he would proceed no further; but absconded himself, leaving Mr. *Powell* in his house; who, to prevent damage to the man, bound himself with two

\* Crosby, vol. i. p. 183.

† Id. p. 184.

sufficient sureties to appear at the next assizes at Radnorshire. Accordingly he delivered himself up at that season, and three bills of indictment were preferred against him. But, after the traverse, he was acquitted, and invited to dine with the judge ; who desiring him to give thanks, one of them said, "It was the best grace he had ever heard in his life." But the high-sheriff was so offended at the lenity shewn to him, and the impressions made by his conduct and preaching, that on the commencement of the war he persecuted him out of the county.\*

In 1641 Mr. *Edward Barber*, minister to a small congregation of *baptists* in London, was kept eleven months in prison for denying the baptism of infants, and that to pay tithes to the clergy was a divine ordinance under the gospel.

In 1643 some pious persons, at Coventry, who had embraced the opinion of *antipædobaptism*, invited Mr. *Benjamin Cox*, an aged minister of good reputation for learning and piety, the son of a bishop, and sometime minister at Bedford, to come to them and assist them in forming themselves into a distinct church. Several presbyterian ministers, amongst whom was Mr. *Baxter*, had taken refuge in that city : who being alarmed at the spread of baptistical sentiments, Mr. *Baxter* challenged Mr. *Cox* to dispute with him about the points in difference between them. This was done *viva voce* and by writing : but it was broken off by the interference of the committee, who required Mr. *Cox* to depart from the city, and to promise not to return to it. As he refused this, he was immediately committed to prison, and remained there for some time ; till, in consequence of Mr. *Pinson's* application to Mr. *Baxter*, his release was procured.†

Another sufferer on this side was Mr. *Henry Denne*, who had been ordained by the bishop of *St. Davids*, and held the living of *Pyrton* in Hertfordshire for ten years. In 1644 he was apprehended in Cambridgeshire by the committee of that county, and sent to gaol, for preaching against infant-baptism, and baptising those who had received no other. After he had been confined some time, his case, through the intercession of some friends, was refer-

\* Crosby, vol. i. p. 217—219 ; Vavasor Powell's Life, p. 125, 6. 7.

† Crosby, p. 220, 21 ; and Baxter's Life, p. 46.



red to a committee of parliament, and he was sent up to London, and detained in the lord *Petre's* house, in Aldersgate-street, till the committee had heard his cause and released him. In June 1646, he was committed a second time, at Spalding in Lincolnshire. He was apprehended on a *Lord's-day*, and kept in custody to prevent his preaching. Upon hearing the charge against him, which was for baptizing, as but one witness appeared to support it: and according to the maxim of law, *nemo tenetur seipsum accusare*, he refused to be his own accuser. The ceremony had been performed in the night, which indicates the severity of the times, against such as held his principles and acted upon them: just, as the primitive christians, under persecution, held their assemblies at that season.\*

About the same time Mr. *Coppe*, a minister in Warwickshire, and preacher to the garrison in Compton-house in the said county, for rebaptising, was committed to Coventry gaol. On publishing the ordinance of parliament in 1645, against unordained ministers, the lord mayor sent his officers, on a Sunday, to the baptist meeting in Coleman-street, on information that laymen preached there. The officers found the religious exercises conducted by Mr. *Lamb*, the elder of the church, and a young man who was a teacher amongst them. Some of the congregation, incensed at the disturbance given to their worship, used rough language to them: but Mr. *Lamb* behaved respectfully, requested leave to finish the religious service, and engaged to appear before the lord-mayor at 6 o'clock. The officers acquiesced, and withdrew: and at the time appointed Mr. *Lamb* and his assistant met at his lordship's house. He was interrogated on what authority he presumed to preach, and was told that he had transgressed the ordinance of parliament. Mr. *Lamb* replied, "No: for that he was called and appointed to the office by as reformed a church as any in the world," alluding to the words of the ordinance. But he acknowledged, that he rejected the baptism of infants as invalid. After the examination, they were bound over to answer before the committee of the parliament: who, after hearing them, committed both to gaol,

\* Crosby, vol. i. p. 221—224; where are the examinations taken on the occasion.



where they laid till the intercession of friends procured their liberty.†

In the same year, Mr. *Paul Hobson*, a baptist minister, was taken into custody by the governor of Newport-Pagnel, for preaching against infant-baptism, and reflecting on the order against the preaching of laymen. After a short confinement he was sent prisoner to London. He was soon cited before the committee, and having several friends of rank and influence, he was immediately discharged, and preached, publicly, at a meeting-house in Moorfields.\*

The case of Mr. *Hanserd Knollys* runs into more particulars. He was a man of piety and learning, and had received holy orders from the bishop of *Peterborough*, but was afterwards a zealous opposer of episcopacy and the liturgy. Preaching one Lord's day, at the earnest and repeated request of the church wardens, when they wanted a minister, in Bow-church, Cheapside, he was led by his subject to speak against the practice of infant-baptism. This gave great offence to some of the auditory, a complaint was lodged against him with the parliament, and, by a warrant from the committee for plundered ministers, he was apprehended by the keeper of Ely-house and kept several days in prison and a bail refused. At length he was brought to an hearing before the committee, when about thirty of the assembly of divines were present. The answers which he gave on his examination, about his authority to preach, the occasion of his appearing in the pulpit at Bow-church, and the doctrine he had there advanced, being satisfactory, he was discharged without blame, or paying fees; and the gaoler was sharply reproved for refusing bail, and threatened to be turned out of his post.

Soon after this Mr. *Knollys* went into Suffolk, and preached in several places, as opportunity offered, at the request of friends. But as he was accounted an *antinomian* and *anabaptist*, his supposed errors were deemed as criminal as sedition and faction, and the virulence of the mob was instigated against him by the high-constable. At one time he was stoned out of the pulpit: at another time the doors of the church were shut against him and his hearers. Upon

† Crosby, vol. i. 225, 26.

\* Edwards's *Gangræna*, vol. i. p. 34-27.

which he preached in the church-yard, which was considered as a crime too great to be connived at, or excused. At length he was taken into custody, and was first prosecuted, at a petty sessions, in the county, and then sent up a prisoner to London with articles of complaint against him to the parliament. On his examination he proved, by witnesses of reputation, that he had neither sowed sedition, nor raised a tumult, and that all the disorders which had happened were owing to the violence and malignity of his opposers, who had acted contrary both to law and common civility. He produced copies of the sermons he had preached, and afterwards printed them. His answers were so satisfactory, that on the report made by the committee to the house, he was not only discharged, but a vote passed, that he might have liberty to preach in any part of Suffolk, when the minister of the place did not himself preach there. But, besides the trouble which this business occasioned to him, it devolved on him an expence of sixty pounds.

Mr. *Knollys*, finding how much offence was taken at his preaching in the church; and to what troubles it exposed him, set up a separate meeting in Great St. Helens, London; where the people flocked to hear him, and he had, generally, a thousand auditors. Great umbrage was taken at this, the landlord was prevailed upon to warn him out of the place, and Mr. *Knollys* was summoned before a committee of divines, who used to sit in the room called the Queen's Court, Westminster, to answer for his conduct in this matter. The chairman asked, why he presumed to preach without holy orders? To which he replied, he was in holy orders. The chairman, on this, was informed, that he had renounced episcopal ordination: this Mr. *Knollys* confessed, but pleaded, that he was now ordained, in a church of God, according to the order of the gospel, and then explained the manner of ordination amongst the *baptists*. At last he was commanded to preach no more: but he told them, that he would preach the gospel, both publicly, and from house to house; saying, "it was more equal to obey Christ who commanded him, than those who forbade him:" and so went away. A letter, which Mr. *Knollys* wrote to Mr. *Dutton*, of Norwich, in which were some reflections on the persecuting measures of those times, and which com-



ing into the hands of the Suffolk committee was sent up to London, and presently published by one of the chief promoters of persecution, is supposed to have inflamed the proceedings against him.\* As it is short, I will give a copy of it below.† It was too common a practice, then, to seize and publish the letters of those who were called sectaries.

This happened to Mr. *John Sims*, who preached at Hampton. He was prevailed on, in a journey to Taunton, to preach in the parish church of Middlesoy. On this he was seized by virtue of the act against unordained ministers, and the letters, which he was to deliver to some pious friends were taken from him. These with the examination were sent to London, by way of complaint against him, and printed. The charges specified in the examination were for preaching and denying infant-baptism. He admitted the latter, and pleaded against the former, that “as Peter was called, so was he.”†

The next name on the list of sufferers is Mr. *Andrew Wyke*. On his examination he refused to answer to the questions concerning the doctrines he held, or his authority for preaching; alledging, that as a freeman of England

\* Crosby, vol. i. p. 226-230; and a very short and partial account in Edwards’s *Gangræna*, vol. i. p. 39.

† “*Beloved Brother,*

“I salute you in the Lord. Your letter I received the last day of the week; and upon the first day I did salute the brethren in your name, who re-salute you and pray for you. The city presbyterians have sent a letter to the synod, dated from Sion-College, against any *toleration*; and they are fasting and praying at Sion-College this day, about further contrivings against God’s poor innocent ones; but God will doubtless answer them according to the *idol* of their own hearts. To-morrow there is a fast kept by both houses, and the synod at Westminster. They say it is to seek God about the establishing of worship according to their covenant. They have *first vowed, now they make enquiry*. God will certainly “take the crafty in their own snare, and make the wisdom of the wise foolishness;” for “he chooseth the foolish things of this world to confound the wise, and weak things to confound the mighty.” My wife and family remember their love to you. Salute the brethren that are with you. Farewell.

*Your brother in the faith and fellowship of the gospel,*

HANSERD KNOLLYS.”

“*London the 13th day of the 11th Month called January, 1645.*”

† Crosby, vol. i. p. 232, 3; and Edwards’s *Gangræna*, vol. ii. p. 50, &c. where four of the letters are printed.



he was not bound to answer to any interrogatories, either to accuse himself or others : but if they had ought against him, they should lay their charge, and produce their proofs. This conduct was looked upon as great obstinacy, and expressive of high contempt of authority ; and he was therefore sent to gaol, 3d June 1646. The duration of his imprisonment is not known ; but while he was under confinement a pamphlet, drawn up by himself or some friend, entitled “*The Innocent in Prison complaining,*” being a narrative of the proceedings against him, was published : in which the committee and some members of it did not escape severe reflection.\*

The last person, whom I shall mention as suffering in this period, is Mr. *Samuel Oates* ; whose name is brought forward by Mr. *Neal*, in a manner that has provoked, not wholly without reason, the severe censure of Mr. *Crosby* : for it leaves the reader to confound this *Oates* with *Titus Oates*, so noted in our historians with a brand of infamy upon him ; and uninformed of the *issue* of the proceedings against him on the heavy charge of murder.

This Mr. *Samuel Oates* was a popular preacher, and great disputant. On a journey into Essex, in 1646, he preached in several parts of that county, and baptised by immersion a great number of people, especially about Bocking, Braintree, and Tarling. Amongst the hundreds he baptised, one died within a few weeks after, and her death was imputed to her being dipped in cold water. The magistrate was prevailed upon to apprehend Mr. *Oates* on this charge, and to send him to prison, and to put him in irons as a murderer, in order to his trial at the ensuing assizes. The name of the woman was *Ann Martin*, and the report spread against Mr. *Oates* was, that in the administration of baptism “he held her so long in the water, that she fell presently sick ; that her belly swelled with the abundance of water she took in ; that, within a fortnight or three weeks, she died ; and on her death-bed expressed this dipping to be the cause of her death.” He was arraigned for his life at Chelmsford assizes. But on the trial, several credible witnesses, amongst them the mother of the deceased, deposed on oath, that “*Ann Martin* was in better health for

\* Edwards, vol. ii. p. 169 ; Crosby, vol. i. p. 235.

several days after her baptism than she had been for some time before, and that she was seen to walk abroad afterwards very comfortably." So that, notwithstanding all the design and malignity which discovered themselves in the trial he was brought in *Not guilty*. But this verdict was not sufficient to disarm the rage of the populace against him. For a little time after, some who were known to have been baptized going, occasionally, to Wethersfield in Essex, on alarm being given that Mr. *Oates* and his companions were come, the mob arose and seized upon these innocent persons, dragged them to a pump, and treated them like the worst of villains: though *Oates*, against whom they were chiefly enraged, was not of the party. Not long after this the mob, without any provocation, but because he dared to come to the place, drew him out of a house at Dunmow, and threw him into a river, boasting that they had thoroughly dipped him.\*

The preceding facts shew, that obloquy attached itself to the principles of the *baptists*, and that they were marked out as objects for the virulence of the populace and the animadversion of the magistrate. Next to the *quakers*, observes a late historian, "they were perhaps the most hated and persecuted sect."† But it should be owned, in mitigation of the conduct of their persecutors, that at least in some instances they inflamed the spirits of men against them, as Mr. *Neal* suggests, by their own imprudence and the impetuosity of their zeal. Much enthusiasm appears

\* Edwards's *Gangræna*, vol. i. p. 121; and Crosby, vol. i. p. 236—38, and p. 240. In the preceding detail the disturbance given to an assembly, at Deadman's place, January 18, 1640, mentioned by Fuller, is omitted; because he is mistaken in calling it an *anabaptistical* congregation; and the matter has been stated, before, by Mr. Neal, vol. ii. p. 375, 76. But it may be added to what is there said, either in the text or the notes, concerning this congregation and its ministers, that Mr. Hubbard, or Herbert, its first pastor, was a learned man, and had received episcopal ordination; that in his time, the church accompanied him to Ireland, where he died; that it then returned to England; that Mr. Stephen Moore, its minister in 1640, who had been a deacon of it, was possessed of an estate, a man of good reputation, and endowed with a considerable share of ministerial abilities; that, from the beginning or very early, it practised mixed communion: and that it was severely persecuted by the clergy and the bishops' courts. Crosby, vol. i. p. 163—5.

† Gough's *History of the Quakers*, vol. i. p. 52, note.



to have animated the profession of their opinions ; and it was the fashion of the times for every party to advance its peculiar sentiments in coarse and irritating language ; each assumed this licentiousness of speech, but none took it patiently from others. The baptist incurred censure, and excited jealousy and resentment, by disturbing congregations and dispersing challenges to dispute with any minister or ministers on the questions relative to baptism. This was much according to the practice of the times. Mr. *Baxter*, we have seen, challenged Mr. *Cox* : and Dr. *Gunning*, afterwards regius professor of divinity at Cambridge and bishop of *Ely*, in the year 1656, went into the congregation of Mr. *Biddle*, and began a dispute with him. But while the members of the dominant parties did this uncensured, it was considered, and treated, as insolence in the minority to advance their opinions, even in their own assemblies only. When the public peace is broken, men are justly amenable to the civil magistrate : but for the breach of the peace merely, and not for the sentiments they may at the time avow. Violence, penalties, and imprisonments, on account of religious tenets, are, in no view, justifiable. Against *error* they are needless ; for *that*, not being founded in reason and proof, will of itself die away : against *truth* they are ineffectual ; for *that* will finally prevail, by its own weight and evidence, above all opposition. Every person, against whom they are directed, feels them to be in his own case iniquitous and cruel.

The only good effect which persecution hath ever produced, has been opening the eyes of men to see the iniquity of it, and raising in their hearts an abhorrence of it. The severities, of which the *baptists* were the marked objects, led them to be advocates for liberty and toleration. So far back as the year 1615, Mr. *Helwise* and his church, at London, published a treatise, entitled “ Persecution for ‘ religion judged and condemned.” The dedication to which was subscribed thus ; “ By Christ’s unworthy witnesses, his Majesty’s faithful subjects, commonly, but ‘ falsely, called *Anabaptists*.” In this piece they asserted, “ That every man hath a right to judge for himself in



‘ matters of religion, and that to persecute any one on that account is illegal and antichristian.’\*

In a book called “*The Bloody Tenet*,” printed in 1644, and in another entitled “*The Compassionate Samaritan*,” they advanced this principle; “That it is the will and command of God, that since the coming of his Son, a permission of the most paganish, jewish, turkish, or antichristian consciences and worships be granted to *all men in all nations*; that the doctrine of *persecution* in case of conscience maintained by *Calvin, Beza, Cotton*, and the ministers of New-England, is guilty of all the blood of the souls, crying for vengeance under the altar.” They besought the parliament “to allow public protection to *private* as well as public congregations; to review and *repeal* the laws against the separatists; to permit a *freedom* of the press to any man, who writes nothing scandalous or dangerous to the *state*; to prove themselves loving fathers to *all good men*, and so to invite equal assistance and affection from all.” These opinions were in those times censured as most damnable doctrines, and the parliament was invoked, by the pen of Dr. *Featley*, *utterly to exterminate* and banish out of the kingdom the *baptists*, because they avowed and published them.† But the good sense and liberality of more modern times will not only admit these principles as maxims of good polity and sound christianity, but *respect the despised people* who brought them forward and stated them, at a period when they were scarcely received by any others, and were held by the generality as most highly obnoxious: when even the great and good Mr. *Baxter* could declare, “I abhor unlimited liberty, or toleration of all.”‡

It remains to take notice of some of the more distinguished preachers among this denomination of Christians, who died in the period of which we are speaking.

Mr. *Thomas Helwse*, according to the order of time, seems to deserve the first mention: a man of good natural parts, and not without some acquired ones, though he had not the advantage of a learned education. He was a member of the antient church of the separatists in the beginning of

\* Crosby, vol. i. p. 272.

† Robinson’s Translation of Claude, vol. i. p. 250, note.

‡ Plain Scripture Proof, p. 246.

Queen *Elizabeth's* reign, and accompanied them, when they transported themselves out of England into Holland to escape persecution. He was of great service to them, and esteemed a man of eminent faith, charity, and spiritual gifts. When Mr. *Smith*, whose history we have given before,† raised the controversy about infant-baptism, Mr. *Helwise* became a convert to his sentiments, received baptism from him, and was one of the first in the constitution of his church, of which after his death he had the pastoral care. He and his people, soon after Mr. *Smith's* decease, published a confession of their faith, entitled “The Confession of Faith, published in certain conclusions, by the remainder of Mr. *Smith's* Company.”\* At the end of it there was an Appendix, giving some account of Mr. *Smith's* last sickness and death. Three years after, Mr. *Robinson*, the pastor of the English congregation of Brownists; at Leyden, published remarks upon it. About the same time Mr. *Helwise* began to reflect upon his own conduct, and that of the other *English* dissenters, in leaving their friends and country to avoid persecution: whether it did not proceed from fear and cowardice; and whether they ought not to return to bear their testimony to the truth, and to countenance and encourage their suffering brethren? The result was, that he and his church quickly left Amsterdam, and removed to London, where they continued to preserve their church state, and to hold their assemblies for worship, as the times would permit. He wrote a piece in justification of this conduct, entitled “A short Declaration:” wherein he stated in what cases it was lawful to fly in times of persecution. To which Mr. *Robinson* replied. The conduct of Mr. *Helwise* and his friends displeased the *non-conformists* in exile, who censured it as vain-glorious, and imputed it to natural confidence under the appearance of religious fortitude. It is not known when Mr. *Helwise* died, but from the publications of the day, it appears that he went on with great courage and resolution; and the church, under all the severities they experienced from the civil powers, increased in numbers.†

Mr. *John Morton*, another of Mr. *Smith's* disciples, ap-

† Vol. ii. p. 45-6, and notes.

\* See Crosby, vol. ii. Appendix, No. 1. † Id. vol. i. p. 269-275.



pears to have been a man of note and reputation, of considerable learning and abilities. He was conversant with the oriental languages and the writings of the fathers, and was a zealous remonstrant. After his return from Holland he settled in the country. These circumstances are concluded from a manuscript, written by *J. Morton*, supposed to be the same person; which was found at the beginning of the civil wars, on demolishing an old wall near Colchester. It was printed by the general baptists, and passed through several impressions. Its title was "*Truth's Champion.*" It discussed the questions concerning baptism, and the points disputed between the *Arminians* and *Calvinists*. The piece was written in good stile, and the argument managed with much art and skill; and, not without reason, held in considerable estimation by the *remonstrants*.\*

A more particular and full account of some, whose names have been brought forward in the preceding narrative, will fall under the following periods of this history. The learning and abilities of whom, it will appear, did credit to the sect to which they belonged. *Mr. Neal* has asserted, that "its advocates were for the most part of the meanest of the people; their preachers were generally illiterate, and went about the countries making proselytes of all that would submit to their immersion, without a due regard to their acquaintance with the principles of religion, or their moral character." It is to be regretted, that our respectable author, by this general representation, without producing any authority, or alledging attested facts to justify it, hath laid himself open to severe animadversion. *Mr. Crosby* exclaims, "What a malicious slander is this, cast upon a whole body of christians, consisting of fifty-four congregations, according to his own acknowledgments!"† It may be supposed that *Mr. Neal* has here paid too great a deference to such writers as the author of the "*Gangræna*;" and on the other hand, *Mr. Crosby* has been too partial to his own sect; has not allowed for the operation of a precipitate and injudicious zeal, by which a new and persecuted sect is generally actuated; and has forgotten that a great number of its preachers would of course be unlearned and ignorant men, when the liberty of prophesy-

\* Crosby, vol. i. p. 276, 7, 8.

† Vol. i. preface, p. 5.



ing, as any individual was authorised and qualified by the gift or influence of the holy Spirit, was a received principle; for such gift would, where it was supposed to exist and display itself, supersede acquired abilities and human literature.

Another sect, which began to make its first appearance in the course of the civil wars, was that of the QUAKERS : but as Mr. *Neal* merely touches on their origin in this volume, any remarks which may offer on their history should be reserved to the next; only hinting, that it has been observed to the Editor by a respectable member of that society, that Mr. *Neal* has, when introducing this people to public notice, placed them in an *unfavorable point* of view, by insinuating that they *originated in error*, without giving them an opportunity to clear or defend themselves : because, alluding to the opinions of the separatists, who cemented in the people afterwards known by the name of QUAKERS, he calls them, in the words of Mr. *Baxter*, *mistakes*. In doing this he is considered as prepossessing the mind of his reader. The language, however, of Mr. *Neal* must, in this instance, be allowed to be very temperate ; while the remark may serve to shew how feelingly alive men are to what affects the reputation of themselves, or their party ; and to teach us to be cautious and tender of hurting the minds of sincere and upright persons.

END OF THE THIRD VOLUME.

It is the duty of every citizen to support the laws of the country, and to pay the taxes imposed by them. It is also the duty of every citizen to obey the laws of the country, and to respect the rights of others. It is the duty of every citizen to vote in the elections, and to elect the best men for office. It is the duty of every citizen to be honest, and to do his duty to his country.

It is the duty of every citizen to be loyal to the country, and to support the government. It is the duty of every citizen to be brave, and to defend the country in time of war. It is the duty of every citizen to be industrious, and to work hard for the support of his family. It is the duty of every citizen to be temperate, and to avoid the use of intoxicating liquors. It is the duty of every citizen to be clean, and to keep his person and his property in good order. It is the duty of every citizen to be kind, and to treat others as he would be treated. It is the duty of every citizen to be true, and to tell the truth. It is the duty of every citizen to be faithful, and to keep his promises. It is the duty of every citizen to be obedient, and to follow the laws of the country. It is the duty of every citizen to be patriotic, and to love his country. It is the duty of every citizen to be virtuous, and to live a life of honor and integrity. It is the duty of every citizen to be a good neighbor, and to help others in need. It is the duty of every citizen to be a good citizen, and to do his duty to his country.

THE DUTY OF A CITIZEN

